Family Record

Family No.

Surname

Father – John Hopkins

Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	ca 1548? ○			England	Hopkins families lived there	○
Death	bef. Oct 1593 admin ○	Winchester	Hampshire	"	as early as 1553	○
Buried	○				Brother William executor	○
Married	(2) 28 July 1579 ○	Upper Clatford	"	"	(All Saints church)	○

Occupation (Military yeoman as archer in militia? weapons + equipment in will) Church Anglican (Had bro Edward?) ○

Places Lived ○

Other Wives (1) 28 Oct 1574 Agnes Borrow (Many beds in several rooms - indicates servants, etc?) ○

His Father's Name Hopkins ○

His Mother's Maiden Name ○

Mother – Elizabeth Williams

Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	○					○
Death	after 1593 ○	at Winchester?	Hampshire		administratrix J will	○
Buried	○					○

Occupation Military Church ○

Places Lived ○

Other Husbands ○

Her Father's Name Williams ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name ○

Children #1 & 2 of First Marriage, Last #3 & 4 with Elizabeth

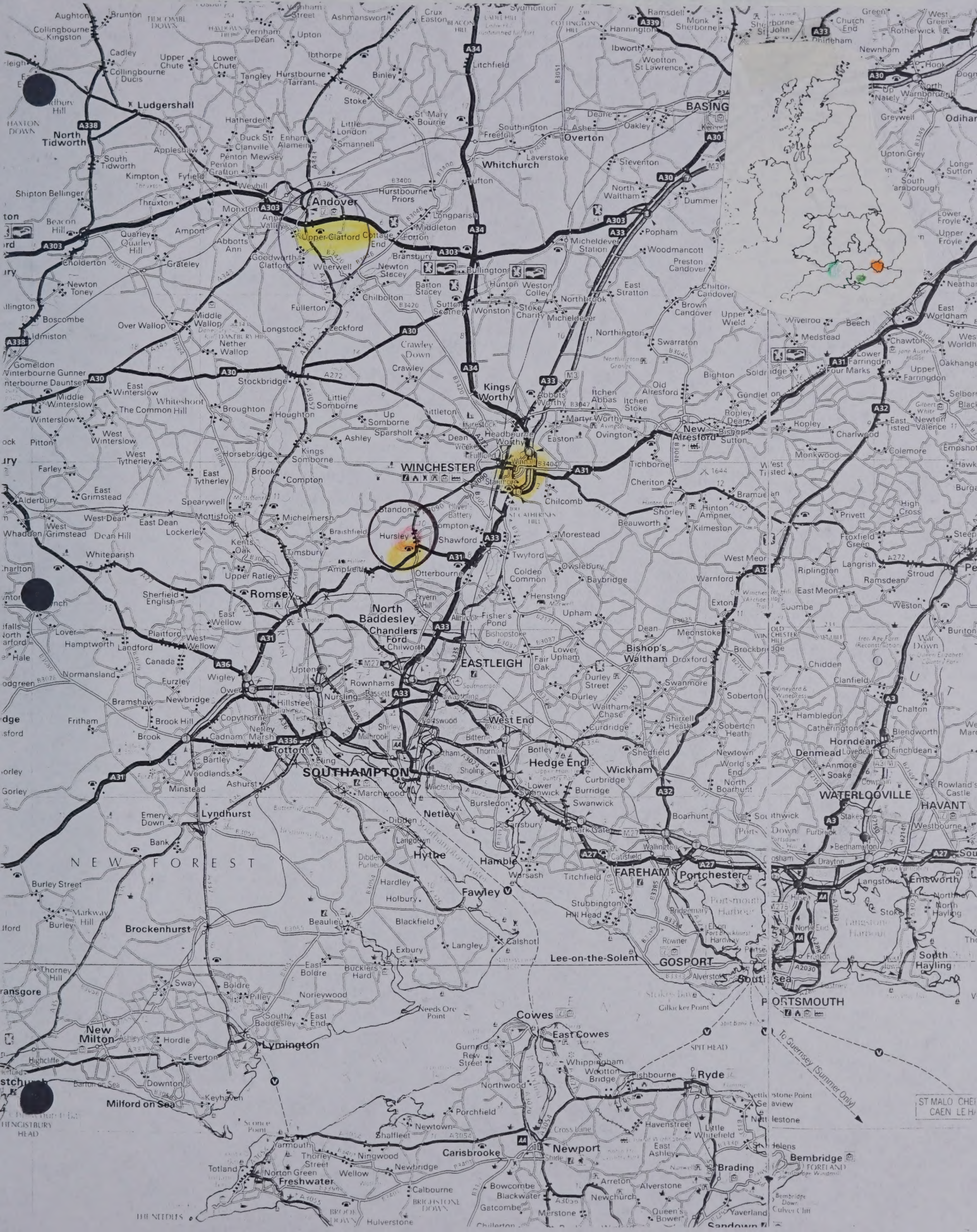
not the 16??

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. William Hopkins (Gov Bradford says he sold nails to Pilgrims) ○	bp. Birth	15 June 1575	Upper Clatford,	Hampshire,	England	○
		Death					○
	Spouse - (Constance Medinas?) ○	Married	16 April 1591	St. Swithin over Kingsgate, Winchester			○
	2. Alice Hopkins ○	Birth	30 Mar 1577/8	Upper Clatford			○
		Death					○
	Spouse - ○	Married					○
	3. Stephen Hopkins ○	Birth	30 April 1581	Upper Clatford			○
		Death	bet. 6th June & 17 July 1644		Plymouth	MA	○
	Spouse - (1) Mary c d 1613 (2) Elizabeth Fisher ○	Married	19 Feb 1617/8	Hursley	Middlesex		○
	4. Susanna Hopkins ○	Birth	24 June 1584	Upper Clatford			○
		Death					○
	Spouse - ○	Married					○
	5. ○	Birth					○
		Death					○
	Spouse - ○	Married					○
	6. ○	Birth					○
		Death					○
	Spouse - ○	Married					○
	7. ○	Birth					○
		Death					○
	Spouse - ○	Married					○
	8. ○	Birth					○
		Death					○
	Spouse - ○	Married					○
	9. ○	Birth					○
		Death					○
	Spouse - ○	Married					○
	10. ○	Birth					○
		Death					○
	Spouse - ○	Married					○

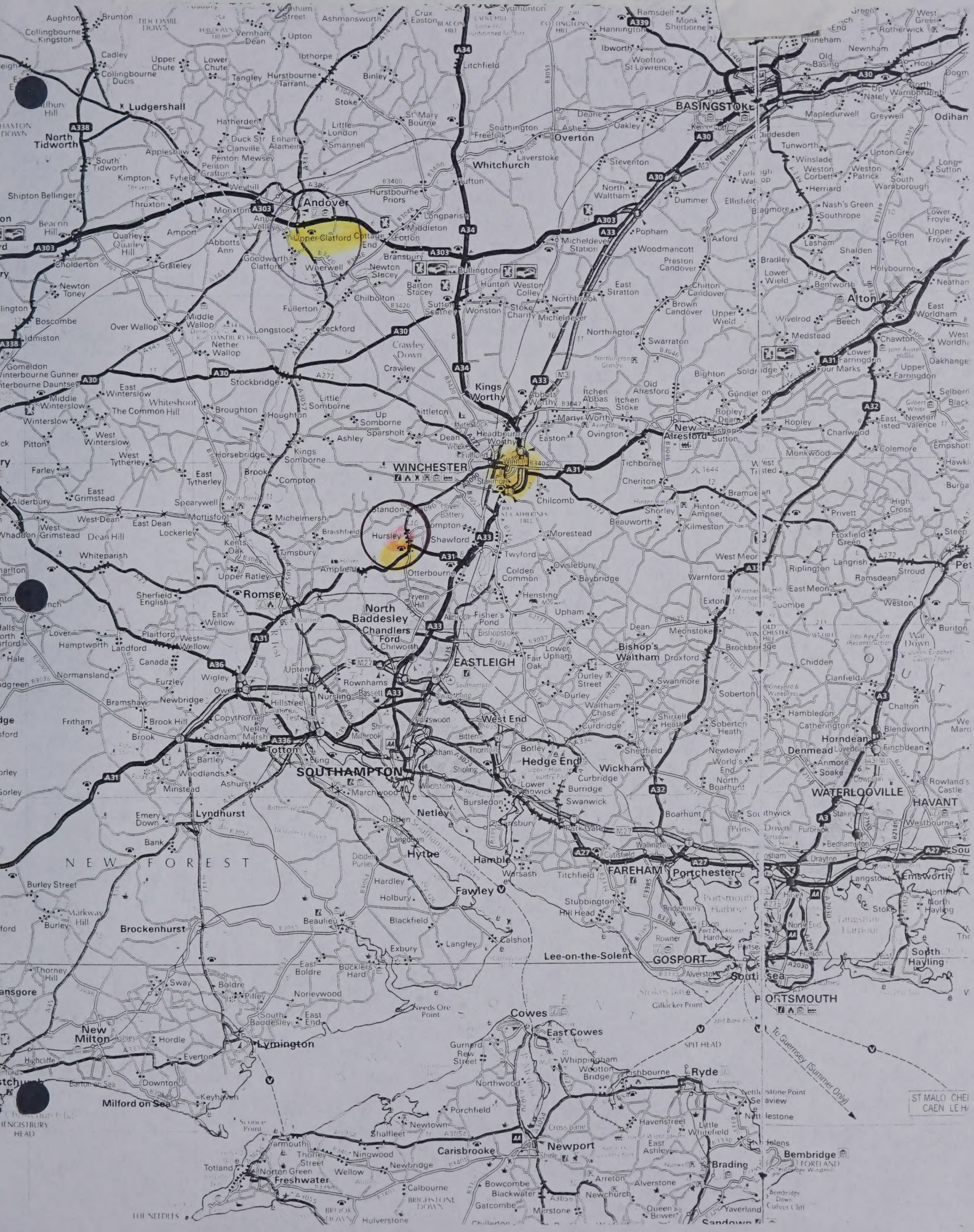
○ In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

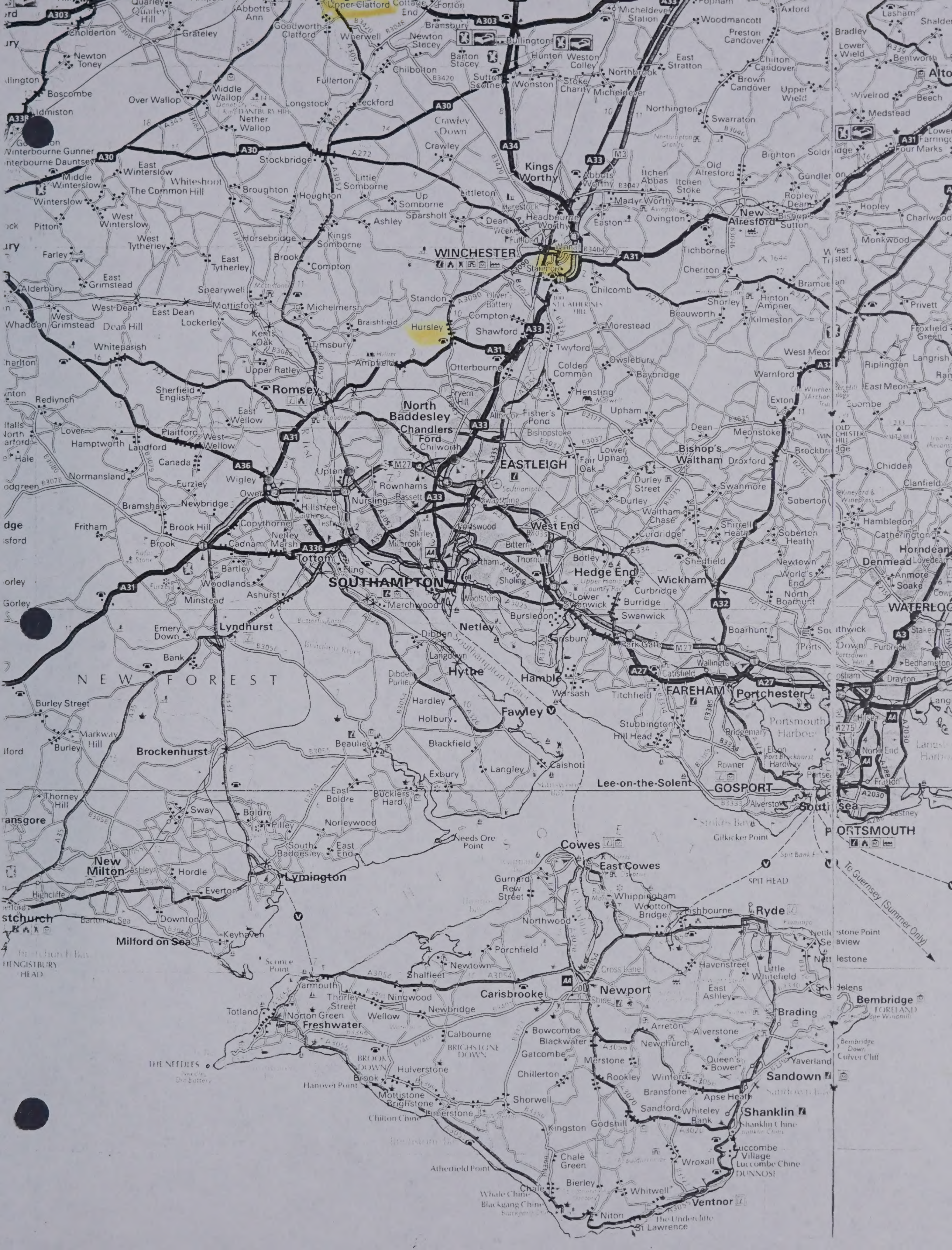
Stephen Hopkins was christened 30 April 1581 at Upper Clatford, Hampshire


Andover
Upper Clatford
Ludgershall
Whitchurch
BASING
Overton
Stockbridge
WINCHESTER
Hursley
Romsey
EASTLEIGH
SOUTHAMPTON
NEW FOREST
Lymington
Fareham
GOSPORT
PORTSMOUTH
WATERLOOVILLE
HAVANT
Cowes
Ryde
Newport
To Guernsey (Summer Only)

Stephen Hopkins was christened 30 April 1581 at Upper Clat



Andover
Upper Clatford
Goodworth Clatford
Wherwell
Ludgershall
North Tidworth
Basingstoke
Overton
Whitchurch
Stockbridge
Kings Worthy
Winchester
St Catherine's Hill
Hursley
Standon
Shawford
Otterbourne
Ampfield
Romsey
Chandlers Ford
Eastleigh
New Alresford
Alton
Southampton
Totton
Lyndhurst
New Forest
Hedge End
Hamble
Fawley
Hythe
Fareham
Portchester
Gosport
Portsmouth
Southsea
Waterlooville
Havant
Emsworth
Lymington
New Milton
Milford on Sea
Cowes
East Cowes
Ryde
Newport
Carisbrooke
Yarmouth
Freshwater
Brading
Bembridge
To Guernsey (Summer Only)
St Malo Cherbourg Caen Le Havre



Upper Clatford
Abbotts Ann
Goodworth Clatford
Wherwell
Forton
Bransbury
Newton Stacey
Barton Stacey
Bullington
Hunton
Weston Colley
Micheldever Station
Woodmancott
Axford
Preston Candover
Chilton Candover
Brown Candover
East Stratton
Northbrook
Micheldever
Stoke Charity
Wonston
Sutton Scotney
Chilbolton
Fullerton
Leckford
Longstock
Middle Wallop
Nether Wallop
Over Wallop
Grateley
Cholderton
Newton Toney
Boscombe
Idmiston
Winterbourne Gunner
Winterbourne Dauntsey
East Winterslow
Middle Winterslow
Winterslow
West Winterslow
The Common
Whiteshoot Hill
Broughton
Stockbridge
Houghton
Little Somborne
Up Somborne
Crawley Down
Crawley
Sparsholt
Ashley
Kings Somborne
Horsebridge
Littleton
Kings Worthy
Abbots Worthy
Headbourne Worthy
Martyr Worthy
Itchen Abbas
Itchen Stoke
Easton
Ovington
New Alresford
Old Alresford
Swarraton
Northington
Bighton
Ropley
Ropley Dean
Bishop's Sutton
Tichborne
Cheriton
Hinton Ampner
Kilmeston
Bramdean
West Tisted
Privett
Froxfield Green
WINCHESTER
Winnall
St Catherines Hill
Chilcomb
Shorley
Beauworth
Morestead
Twyford
Owslebury
Colden Common
Baybridge
Warnford
West Meon
East Meon
Exton
Oliver's Battery
Compton
Shawford
Hursley
Standon
Michelmersh
Braishfield
Timsbury
Ampfield
Otterbourne
Fryern Hill
Allbrook
Fisher's Pond
Bishopstoke
Horton Heath
Upham
Lower Upham
Fair Oak
Durley
Durley Street
Bishop's Waltham
Droxford
Meonstoke
Corhampton
Swanmore
Soberton
Soberton Heath
Shirrell Heath
Waltham Chase
Curdridge
Shedfield
Newtown
World's End
North Boarhunt
Denmead
Hambledon
Clanfield
Chidden
Catherington
Horndean
Lovedean
Anmore
Soake
WATERLOOVILLE
Purbrook
Widley
Bedhampton
Drayton
Cosham
Hilsea
North End
Fratton
Eastney
Southsea
PORTSMOUTH
Portsmouth Harbour
Portchester
FAREHAM
Catisfield
Titchfield
Stubbington
Hill Head
Lee-on-the-Solent
Elson
Bridgemary
Hardway
Rowner
GOSPORT
Alverstoke
Stokes Bay
Gilkicker Point
Spit Head
To Guernsey (Summer Only)
Boarhunt
Southwick
Park Gate
Wallington
Wickham
Hedge End
Botley
Curbridge
Burridge
Swanwick
Lower Swanwick
Bursledon
Sarisbury
Warsash
Hamble
Netley
Sholing
Thornhill
Bitterne
West End
Portswood
Swaythling
Bassett
EASTLEIGH
Chandlers Ford
Chilworth
North Baddesley
Rownhams
Nursling
Upton
Hillstreet
Shirley
Millbrook
SOUTHAMPTON
Woolston
Eling
Totton
Netley Marsh
Cadnam
Copythorne
Ower
Romsey
Sherfield English
East Wellow
West Wellow
Plaitford
Landford
Hamptworth
Lover
Redlynch
Whiteparish
Upper Ratley
Kents Oak
Mottisfont
Lockerley
East Dean
West Dean
West Grimstead
East Grimstead
Alderbury
Whaddon
Dean Hill
Farley
Pitton
East Tytherley
West Tytherley
Brook
Spearywell
Canada
Wigley
Newbridge
Bramshaw
Brook Hill
Fritham
Furzley
Normansland
Bartley
Woodlands
Ashurst
Minstead
Emery Down
Lyndhurst
Bank
NEW FOREST
Marchwood
Dibden
Dibden Purlieu
Hythe
Langdown
Fawley
Hardley
Holbury
Blackfield
Langley
Calshot
Beaulieu
Exbury
Bucklers Hard
East Boldre
Norleywood
Needs Ore Point
Boldre
Pilley
South Baddesley
East End
Lymington
Brockenhurst
Sway
Burley
Burley Street
Markway Hill
Thorney Hill
Bransgore
Hordle
Everton
New Milton
Ashley
Highcliffe
Christchurch
Barton on Sea
Downton
Keyhaven
Milford on Sea
Christchurch Bay
HENGISTBURY HEAD
Sconce Point
Yarmouth
Totland
Norton Green
Freshwater
THE NEEDLES
Thorley Street
Shalfleet
Newtown
Ningwood
Wellow
Newbridge
Calbourne
Brighstone Down
Brook Down
Brook
Hanover Point
Hulverstone
Mottistone
Brighstone
Limerstone
Chilton Chine
Atherfield Point
Whale Chine
Blackgang Chine
Chale
Chale Green
Kingston
Shorwell
Bierley
Niton
St Lawrence
Whitwell
The Undercliffe
Ventnor
Wroxall
Luccombe Village
Luccombe Chine
DUNNOSE
Shanklin
Shanklin Chine
Godshill
Sandford
Whiteley Bank
Apse Heath
Branstone
Winford
Rookley
Merstone
Queen's Bower
Sandown
Yaverland
Culver Cliff
Bembridge Down
Bembridge
FORELAND
Brading
Alverstone
Newchurch
Arreton
Blackwater
Gatcombe
Chillerton
Bowcombe
Carisbrooke
Newport
Shide
Cross Lane
East Ashley
Havenstreet
Little Whitefield
Ryde
Binstead
Fishbourne
Wootton Bridge
Whippingham
Northwood
Gurnard
Rew Street
Porchfield
Cowes
East Cowes
Seaview
Nettlestone Point
St Helens
Nettlestone
A303
A30
A34
A33
M3
A31
A272
A3057
A3090
A27
M27
A32
A35
A36
A336
A337
A326
A3054
A3020
A3055
A3
A2030
M275

(Dodge Ancestors)

Family Record

Family No. Hopkins – 2

Surname

Father – Stephen HOPKINS

Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Notes
Birth	bp 30 April 1581	Upper Clatford	Hampshire	England	"Sea Venture" 1609 Bermuda 1610 Jamestown VA
Death	betw 6 June & 17 July	Plymouth	Plymouth Colony		1620 Mayflower Plymouth
Buried	1644				fined 06 May 1608 at Merdon Manor, Hursley
Married ①	ca 1602/3	Hursley?	Hampshire	England	

Occupation Tavern business in England? Military Church Anglican ?

Places Lived

Other Wives ① Elizabeth Fisher – see separate sheet d.1593

His Father's Name ? John Hopkins of Winchester

His Mother's Maiden Name Elizabeth Williams

Mother – Mary

Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Notes
Birth	ca 1580		Hampshire?	England	inventory 10 May 1613 – admin granted to Robert Lyfe & Thos. Syms – guardian of children
Death	06 May 1613	Hursley	Hampshire	"	
Buried					

Occupation Military Church

Places Lived

Other Husbands

{ Stephen had been unable to communicate with his family in England
NOTE: In 1613 it was assumed Mary Hopkins was a widow – Stephen, yet in VA, was assumed to have died (as most had) and there had also been Indian massacres)

Her Father's Name

Her Mother's Maiden Name

For children of Nicholas + Constant (Hopkins) Snow see SNOW family

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State
	1. Elizabeth Hopkins	Birth bp	13 May 1604	Hursley	Hampshire	England
	Spouse –	Death	living 1613	– no further record		
		Married				
+	2. Constant Hopkins	Birth bp	11 May 1606	Hursley	Hampshire	"
	Spouse – Nicholas Snow (1600–15 Nov 1676)	Death	Oct 1677	Eastham	Plymouth Colony	
		Married	before 22 May 1627	Plymouth	"	
	3. Giles Hopkins (10 children)	Birth bp	30 Jan 1607/8	Hursley	Hampshire	England
	Spouse – Catherine Wheldon dau. Gabriel	Death	bef 26 Apr 1690	Eastham	Plymouth Colony	
		Married	09 Oct 1639	(Yarmouth?)	"	
	4.	Birth				
	Spouse –	Death				
		Married				
	5.	Birth				
	Spouse –	Death				
		Married				
	6.	Birth				
	Spouse –	Death				
		Married				
	7.	Birth				
	Spouse –	Death				
		Married				
	8.	Birth				
	Spouse –	Death				
		Married				
	9.	Birth				
	Spouse –	Death				
		Married				
	10.	Birth				
	Spouse –	Death				
		Married				

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

Second marriage

Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors)

Family No.

Hopkins

Surname

Father – Stephen HOPKINS, Jr.

Ⓟ 1609/10 Bermuda/VA 1620 Mayflower

Event	Day Month Year	○	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth bp	30 April 1581	○	Upper Clatford	[illegible]	England	All Saints Church	
Death bu	4 June 1644-ca	○	Plymouth	Plymouth Colony	New "		
Buried		○					
Married ②	19 Feb 1617/8	○	St. Mary Matfellon (Whitechapel) London		England		

Occupation

Military

Church Anglican ○

Places Lived Before going to New England, couple lived at Whitechapel near Aldgate - not far from ○

Other Wives ○

His Father's Name John Hopkins, Sr. ○

His Mother's Maiden Name Elizabeth Williams ○

Mother – Elizabeth (FISHER ?)

Ⓟ 1620 Mayflower

Event	Day Month Year	○	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		○			England	(It is possible she was a different relative fam trees, where other Hopkins married Fishers - or a relative of the first wife, according to Margaret Hodges)	○
Death	by 1651	○	Plymouth	Plymouth Colony			○
Buried		○					○

Occupation

Military

Church Anglican?

Places Lived

Other Husbands ○

Her Father's Name Fisher ○

Our decent is through first wife, Constance (Dudley) Hopkins

Her Mother's Maiden Name ○

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	○	Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Damaris Hopkins (on Mayflower)	○	Birth	1618/19	London			○
			Death	after 1627	Plymouth	- Plymouth Colony		○
	Spouse - died as child	○	Married					○
	2. Oceanus Hopkins	○	Birth	betw 16 Sept & 11 Nov 1620	born at Sea			○
			Death	before 1623	Plymouth			○
	Spouse - died as baby or toddler	○	Married					○
	3. Caleb Hopkins - no children	○	Birth	before 1623	Plymouth			○
			Death	before 1651	Barbadoes			○
	Spouse - he was exec of father's est - 1644 probably unmarried	○	Married	?				○
	4. Deborah Hopkins	○	Birth	ca 1625?	Plymouth			○
			Death	after 1666				○
	Spouse - Andrew Ring (ca1615-	○	Married	23 Apr 1646				○
	5. Damaris (again) Hopkins	○	Birth	after 1627	Plymouth			○
			Death	betw Jan 1666 & 18 Nov 1669 after	"			○
	Spouse - Jacob Cooke as #1 wife (1618 Holland - Dec 1675)	○	Married	ca 20 Jun 1646/7	Plymouth			○
	6. Ruth Hopkins	○	Birth		"			○
			Death	after 8 Oct 1644	"			○
	Spouse - Jacob Cooke	○	Married					○
	7. ? Elizabeth Hopkins (NEHGR - Oct 18 152:416-8 p 387)	○	Birth		"			○
			Death	1659	"			○
	Spouse - did not marry	○	Married					○
	8.	○	Birth					○
			Death					○
	Spouse -	○	Married					○
	9.	○	Birth					○
			Death					○
	Spouse -	○	Married					○
	10.	○	Birth					○
			Death					○
	Spouse -	○	Married					○

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side. ○

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

The American Genealogist

Whole Number 316 Vol. 79, No. 4
October 2004

THE PROBABLE PARENTAGE OF STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS OF THE *MAYFLOWER*

By Ernest Martin Christensen

In his seminal article, "The True Origin of Stephen[1] Hopkins of the *Mayflower*," Caleb Johnson proved that Hopkins came from Hursley, Hampshire, England, where the baptisms of his first three children are found.[1] In the same article, he mentioned a John Hopkins who is found in the lay subsidies of 1586, 1589, and 1590 for the cathedral city of Winchester, which is next to Hursley.[2] The administration on the estate of John Hopkins was granted on 4 October 1593 to his widow Elizabeth, with William Hopkins signing the bond.[3] William may have been the man who married Constance Marline at St. Swithin-over-Kingsgate, Winchester, on 16 April 1592.[4] Caleb Johnson suggested that this William Hopkins was John Hopkins's son, and added that "Stephen Hopkins of Hursley" and of the *Mayflower* "may also be a son of John, though no direct evidence for this has been found."[5] (William Hopkins could, of course, have been a different relation of John rather than his son; it would, for example, be quite possible for, say, a brother to have been appointed administrator if John's sons were still minors.)

---

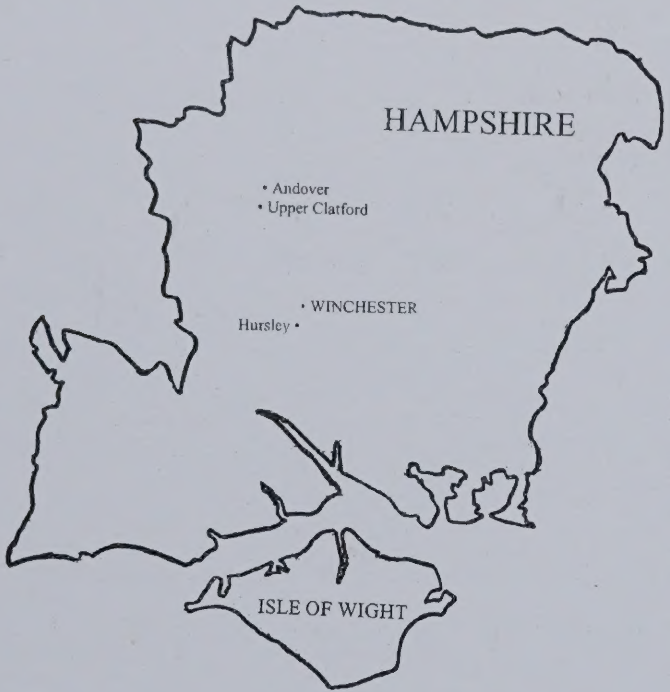
[1] Caleb Johnson, "The True Origin of Stephen[1] Hopkins of the *Mayflower*," TAG 73(1998): 161–71.

[2] According to C. R. Davey, ed., *The Hampshire Lay Subsidy Rolls, 1586*, Hampshire Record Ser., 4(Winchester, 1981):1, "[t]he subsidy was a grant to the Crown, authorized by Act of Parliament, of a tax to support its necessary expenditures—including the payment of the forces and building of naval ships. It was 'lay' in that the clergy were subject to a separate clerical assessment (although they did appear in the lay subsidies in respect to their privately owned land), and separate arrangements were similarly made for peers. . . . The basic form of the tax from the 14th century to the early 17th century was the 'fifteenth and tenth'—an assessment based on a person's moveable goods (including crops), which was levied at a fifteenth of the valuation in rural areas, and at a tenth in cities and boroughs. By the early 16th century revenue had dropped . . . and the needs of the 16th century tended to require a different kind of supplement."

[3] Winchester, Hampshire, Index to Administrations 1561–1616 (1593) [Family History Library (FHL), Salt Lake City, film #187,324].

[4] Given incorrectly as 1591 in Johnson, "Stephen Hopkins," TAG 73(1998):168.

[5] Johnson, "Stephen Hopkins," TAG 73(1998):168.



To follow through on Caleb Johnson's hypothesis, I made a lengthy search for a family that included John Hopkins and wife Elizabeth, with at least two sons, William and Stephen—or perhaps some other combination of the final two names. The *Hopkins* surname is found frequently in Hampshire, but the name combination *Stephen Hopkins* is rare. In my search of some 137 parish records and other sources, I found the name *Stephen Hopkins* only in the parish registers of Upper Clatford and Hursley, and in the court records at Merdon Manor, which was included in the parish of Hursley.

Upper Clatford is a charming old English village with its river scenery; above it stands Bury Hill, fortified by prehistoric man and still wearing the natural diadem he placed about its brow. All Saints Church, located in a meadow watered by the River Anton, is approached by a delightful tunnel of lime trees leading to its eighteenth-century brick porch. It has walls with a mass clock carved on them, a blocked doorway built in the twelfth century, and a sixteenth-century tower.[6]

---

[6] Arthur Mee, ed., *The King's England: Hampshire with the Isle of Wight* (London, 1939), 369.

Passing motorists see little of the beauty of Upper Clatford; their main concern is to negotiate the twists and turns of the roadway.[7] It is adjacent to Andover and located on the Andover Road, some twelve to fifteen miles from Winchester, which, as a trade center, attracted people from throughout the region. In that parish, we find not only the name *Stephen Hopkins* but also a family that provides a near match for Caleb Johnson's hypothesis.

The surname *Hopkins* is found in the village of Upper Clatford as early as 1553 [*emphasis added*]:

Pages 20–21 "Court Book 50, pp. 94–95 6 Feb. 1579 GATTENBYE v. TWYNE
The tithing of common fields"

THOMAS ASHRIDGE, miller, of Wonston 20 years, before of Upper Clatford 5 or 6 years, native of Chute, Wilts: "This deponent . . . came out of that parish [Upper Clatford] about 26 years past, and that time were in that parish but three common fields, which yearly were accustomed to be sown as is articulated, viz. one field with wheat, and another with barley and the third lay for a [summer] field."

EMMA ASHRIDGE, wife of the last deponent: "Whilst this deponent was in that parish [Upper Clatford], one Margaret Williams,[8] this deponent's mother, was a farmer of the parsonage there. And in those years *one Hopkyns* and one Guy, being farmers of the farm articulate called Normans Court Farm, did subtract from her certain tithe wheat and barley growing in the common fields belonging to that farm by a space of two years. Whereupon this deponent's mother sued them in the law for the said tithe and recovered it against them. And after that recovery, whilst this deponent dwelt in that parish, the said farmers and their successors in that farm did quietly and justly pay their tithe of all their corn grown in the common fields. . . ."[9]

This Hopkins family is found in the parish register covering the years 1571 to 1624 of All Saints Church, Upper Clatford, as follows:[10]

"A Register of the Baptisms, Marriages and Buriales of Up-Clatforde"

Baptisms:
1575: "Wm the son of Jon Hopkins the 16th of June"
1577[/8]: "Alice the daughter of John Hopkins the 20th of March"
1581: "Stephen the son of John Hopkins the last of Aprill"
1584: "Susanna ye daughter of John Hopkins the 24 of June"
1601: "Edward the son of Edward Hopkins the 24th of May"

Marriages:
1574: "The 28th day of October Was married John Hopkns and Agnis Borrowe"
1579: "John Hopkines to Elizabeth Williames the 28th day [*interlined*: of] July"
1599: "Edwarde Hopkines to Alice Sweetaple the 12th of November"

---

[7] *Where the Burdock Grows: A History of the Clatfords in Hampshire* (Andover: Upper Clatford and Goodworth Clatford Parish Councils, n.d.), no pagination.

[8] Margaret Williams might be related to John Hopkins's 2nd wife, Elizabeth Williams.

[9] Arthur J. Willis, ed., *Winchester Consistory Court Dispositions 1561–1602* (Winchester, 1960), 20–21.

[10] Upper Clatford, Parish Register, 1570–1624, Hampshire Record Office, Winchester, Volume/S 11M69/PR1.

In the burial section of the Upper Clatford register, there is no entry for Agnes (Borrowe) Hopkins. But it should be noted there were no burials recorded for the year 1579. It is possible that she was buried in one of the neighboring parishes or that burial entries were omitted for the year she died.

The parish register for Upper Clatford begins in 1570. The only entries for *Hopkins/Hopkines* are those for the families of John Hopkins and Edward Hopkins. All entries found appear above. No probate, administration, or inventories were found for any Edward Hopkins of Upper Clatford.[11]

It is highly probable that Stephen[1] Hopkins, the *Mayflower* passenger, is the child of that name who was baptized in the parish of Upper Clatford, Hampshire, England, "the last of April 1581," a son of John[A] Hopkins and his second wife Elizabeth (Williams) Hopkins. Note that the *Mayflower* passenger named his first-born child Elizabeth, probably after his mother. On that assumption, we have prepared the following genealogical summary:

JOHN[A] HOPKINS was born, probably in Hampshire, England, say 1550, probably related to "one Hopkins" of Upper Clatford, Hampshire, mentioned in the deposition above. He first appears in Upper Clatford when he was married in 1574. By 1586 he was living in Winchester, where his name is found in the lay subsidies for that year.[12] He died, probably in Winchester, before 4 October 1593, when the

administration on his estate was granted to his widow Elizabeth, with her bor supported by William Hopkins; the inventory of goods for John Hopkins of Wi chester appears in the appendix of this article. If the relationships suggested i this article are correct, this William Hopkins may have been John Hopkins brother or other close relation; he was probably not the son William who wa baptized in Upper Clatford in June 1575. The latter William would have been 1 in 1593 and probably could not legally have signed the bond; it is also unlike that the William baptized in 1575 was the man of that name who married Co stance Marline in April 1592, when he would have been younger than 17.

John[A] Hopkins married first in Upper Clatford on 28 October 1574, AGNI BORROWE. She died before 28 July 1579, when he married there, ELIZABET WILLIAMS. She was probably living in Winchester in 1594.

Children of John[A] and Agnes (Borrowe) Hopkins, bp. Upper Clatford:

i WILLIAM HOPKINS, bp. 16 June 1575.
ii ALICE HOPKINS, bp. 20 March 1577[/8].

Children of John and Elizabeth (Williams) Hopkins, bp. Upper Clatford:

iii STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS, bp. "last of Aprill" 1581. He was, we believe, the passenger on tl *Mayflower* who d. Plymouth, now Mass., between 6 June 1644 (will) and 17 Ju 1644 (inventory). He m. (1) ca. 1603, MARY —, who was bur. Hursley, Hampshire, May 1613; m. (2) ELIZABETH —. He has been considered the Stephen Hopkins wl m. St. Mary Matfellon, Whitechapel, Middlesex, 19 Feb. 1617/8, ELIZABETH FISHE Yet, other than identical names, no genealogical proof connecting the *Mayflow* Stephen Hopkins to the Stephen Hopkins who married at St. Mary Matfellon has sı faced. Only her first name is given in the early records of Plymouth.[13] A baptism at Mary Matfellon for Damaris Hopkins, the 1st child of Stephen's 2nd marriage, wou clinch the identification, but a careful search of the parish register did not produce aı such baptism.[14]
iv SUSANNA HOPKINS, bp. 24 June 1584.

---

[11] "Mr." Edward Hopkins arrived in Boston in 1637 and soon after removed to Hartford, Conn., where he served for many years as Deputy Governor and Governor (Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England 1620–1633*, 3 vols. [Boston 1995], 2:985 (hereafter cited as Anderson, *Great Migration Begins*). He was of considerably higher social rank than the Upper Clatford Hopkinses. Mary K. Talcott states that he was born in Shrewsbury, co. Salop, in 1600 ("The Original Proprietors," *The Memorial History of Hartford County, Connecticut*, ed. J. Hammond Trumbull, 2 vols. [Boston, 1886], 1:227–72, at 246; see also his sketch in *Dictionary of American Biography*).

[12] Douglas F. Vick, ed., *Central Hampshire Lay Subsidy Assessments, 1558–1603* (Farnham, Surrey, 1987), 29–30 (hereafter cited as Vick). This same work includes the following later assessments for the Soke of Winchester and City of Winchester:

Soke of Winchester:

1589	The libertie	John Hopkins	G[oods] £4	(Vick, 29)
1590	The libertie	John Hopkins	G £4	(Vick, 30)

City of Winchester:

1563	St. Thomas Parish	John Hopkins	G £4	(Vick, 66)
1594	St. Thomas Parish	Elizabeth Hopkins wid	L[and] £1	(Vick, 66)
1594	The parishe of our Ladie of Calender [or the parishe of our Lady Kalender and Ladie Kalender]	John Hopkins	G £3	(Vick, 64)

It seems likely that the John Hopkinses listed in the Soke of Winchester and City of Winchester are two separate individuals. The Elizabeth Hopkins mentioned as a widow taxed for land in the parish of St. Thomas is probably the widow of John Hopkins and the mother of Steph Hopkins.

[13] *Editors' Note:* We know from *Mourt's Relation* (1622) that Stephen[1] Hopkins came fro London. The basic discussion is in Banks, who says that this Whitechapel marriage "places Hopki in the parish on the highroad entering London at Aldgate near which Bradford, Carver, Cushman aı Southworth lived in or near Heneage House, Aldgate Ward" (Charles E. Banks, *The English Ance try and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers* [New York, 1929], 61). That this marriage belongs to t *Mayflower* passenger is accepted in John D. Austin, FASG, *Mayflower Families Though Five Ge erations*, 6: Stephen Hopkins, 2nd ed. (Plymouth, Mass., 1995), 4, 7; in Anderson, *Great Migrati Begins*, 2:998; and in Anderson's recent revision of his *Great Migration* sketch of Stephen Hopki (*The Pilgrim Migration* [Boston, 2004], 273).

[14] St. Mary Matfellon, Whitechapel, 1558–1875, parish register [FHL fiche #6,903,657]. Mary Matfellon, Whitechapel, was a chapel of ease for St. Dunstan's Parish until the 14th centu but a search of the parish records of St. Dunstan's did not reveal any baptism for a Damaris Hc kins (St. Dunstan's, Stepney, Middlesex, baptisms 1568–1656 [FHL film #595,417]).

SUMMARY

A Stephen Hopkins was baptized at All Saints Church, Upper Clatford, Hampshire, England, on "the last of Aprill" 1581 to John Hopkins and his second wife, Elizabeth Williams. It is probable that this Stephen Hopkins is the same man who joined the Mayflower Company and landed at Plymouth in 1620.

While the surname *Hopkins* appears in hundreds of parish records in Hampshire, when it is coupled with the Christian name *Stephen* only six instances were found in a seven-year search of over 137 parish registers and other available records from the sixteenth- and seventeenth-century time period:

1. Stephen Hopkins was baptized "last of Aprill" 1581 in Upper Clatford.
2. Three children were recorded as being baptized at Hursley, all explicitly as children of Stephen Hopkins:
    - i ELIZABETHA, bp. 13 May 1604.
    - ii CONSTANCIA, bp. 11 May 1606.
    - iii EGIDIUS [GILES], bp. 30 Jan. 1607[/8].
3. Stephen Hopkins was replaced as a tenant by the widow Kent on 6 May 1608 at Merdon Manor [the manor included the parish of Hursley].[15] Stephen Hopkins of the *Mayflower* would have been 27 years of age in 1608. Note that this was a year before Stephen Hopkins, minister's clerk, was the ringleader in a mutiny after the *Sea Venture* was shipwrecked on Bermuda; Caleb Johnson has presented strong circumstantial evidence that this man was later the *Mayflower* passenger.[16]
4. Mary, wife of Stephen Hopkins, was buried at Hursley, 9 May 1613.
5. Inventory of Mary Hopkins's estate was taken 10 May 1613, in which she was called, incorrectly, a "widow."
6. Administration of Mary's estate was granted on 12 May 1613, during the minority of her three children: Constancia, Elizabetha, and Egidius.

A John Hopkins died in 1593 at Winchester, Hampshire, and administration of his estate was given to widow Elizabeth, with William Hopkins signing the bond. The Stephen Hopkins baptized at Upper Clatford had a father named John, a mother named Elizabeth, and an older brother William. Although this William was probably not the man supporting Elizabeth's administration bond, the presence of all these names and the supporting chronology forge a strong probable link.

All of the evidence presented above occurs in a small geographical area. Upper Clatford is approximately twelve to fifteen miles from the city of Winchester and Hursley, which adjoins the cathedral city.

---

[15] Johnson, "Stephen Hopkins," TAG 73(1998):168.

[16] Johnson, "Stephen Hopkins," TAG 73(1998):165–67.

APPENDIX

On 4 October 1593, administration on the estate of John Hopkyns of Winchester was granted to widow Elizabeth with William Hopkines posting bond.[1] Hursley historian S. C. Rawdon arranged to have the following transcriptio made by Mrs. Barbara Burbridge of Ampfield (near Romsey), Hampshire, whic we have checked against a copy of the original:

[*In margin*] 1593
Joh[anne]s Hopkines
de civitate Winton'
Ad[ministraci]o

4° october

[*Translation*: 1593 John Hopkines of the City of Winchester Administration 4th October]

The 4th of septembe[r] 1593
a invy[n]tory taken of John Hopkings
goods late decesed by John Paye
& Henry Grene & Wyllyam Colsoune

in the hall i tabell bord w[i]t[h]	}
a frame i form & gyn stoles [*joined stools*] &	} vj s viij d
i chayre	}
ij cobards w[i]t[h] ij cobards clothes	xiij s iiij d
in the p[ar]lar i gyne [*joined*] bedsted	}
& i trokell [*truckle*] bedsted	} iij s
i fether bed & i fether bolstar i covarlet	}
& i flockbed w[i]t[h] a flockbolstar &	} xxx s
i ould covarlete	}
i squar[e] tabell w[i]t[h] a frame and i forme	iiij s
ij chests	ij s viij d
ix cosshyngs [*cushions*]	iij s iiij d
iiij payre of locrom chets [*sheets*]	} xlvj s
& iij payre of canvas shets	}
vj canvas tabell clouthes	xij s
ij diap[er] clothes	} xij s
w[i]t[h] a [—] twells [*towells*]	}
ij doz[en] of tabell napkyngs	viij s
v holon pellobars [*holland pillowberes*]	v s vj d
his waryn parell [*wearing apparel*] ij payre of	}
brechaers [*breeches*] ij pair of stockings i hat	} xxx s
ij doblats ij cols [*cowls*] i old goune	}
in the fore chambar i gyne [*joined*] bedsted	}
i trockell bedsted ij fether beds	}
& i covarlete i Ruge [*rug*] & i payre	} iij li x s
of blankats ~~& ij fether bolstars~~	}

---

[17] Hampshire Record Office Ref: 1593 AD/42.

& i payr of cortens [*curtains*] & iij corten Rods	}
i tabell bord w[i]t[h] a frame and ij formes	viij s
in the second chamber i tabell	} iiij s
& i form & i syd [*side*] table & i chare	}
i gyn [*joined*] bedsted & i trokell bedsted	}
i fether bedsted & i fether bolstar	}
i payr of blankats i ould	} iij li
covar let of oryst [*arras*, *tapestry*] & i flock	}
bed and i fether bolstar i ould	}
covarlet	}
vij fether pelous [*pillows*] & iij quylts	xxj s
stayn clothes in [*interlined*: the] ij chambars	} x s
& in the parlar	}
in a letell chambar ij ould	} v s
bedsted i old side tabele	}
in the chechan [*kitchen*] chambar	}
ij ould bedsted i flockbed	} v s
i ould chest i vollon [*valence*] torn	}
i le[—] bolstar torn i han[d]baskat	}
i buo [*bow*] & i sheff of arous [*arrows*] i sored [*sword*]	}
i daggar i skoll i gries [*grieves*] & warbras	} vj s
in the chechun ij tabel boards i	} xx d
ould co[p]bard i ould stole [*stool*]	}
ij basens & i youar [*ewer*]	v s
viij platars & vj potengres vj sasars [*saucers*]	} xv s vj d
iij poryg [*porridge*] dishes iiij watar pots	}
iij saltsilars & ~~v~~ iij wt [*white metal*] can[dle]styks & ij [*interlined*: of] brase	}
iiij flour pots i drynkyng cope [*cup*]	} ix s
ij pewtar pots	}
ij brase pots and i posnat	vj s
iij ceteles [*kettles*] two letel pans i skellat [*skillet*]	}
i chavyngdyshe [*chafing dish*] i brase mortar	} xj s
i skemar [*skimmer*] i frying pann	}
ij broches ij andyres [*andirons*] ij dogs [*fire dogs*]	}
i frar [*frier*] panne i pare of tongs	}
i drypyng panne ij payr of	}
cottrell i payr of pothocks [*pothooks*]	} xj s
i gyrdyar [*gridiron*] i old travat [*trivet*] i	}
ould boll [*bowl*]	}
i wellbokat [*well bucket*] & i chayn ij bokyng	}
tobes [*baking tubs?*] iij cevars [*kivers?*] a sope boll i	} viij s
grensas [*grain?*] mortar i chopyng	}
bord	}
i c[or]d & d[midia] [*half*] of wod	xxx s
vj lode of haye	iij li xij s
i grot [*great*] cetele [*kettle*]	v s
Vaches & mangres [*vetches & mangels?*]	x s
Sum[ma]	xxxvij li ix s viijd

John Paye Henry Grene
William Colson

Quarto die Octobris Anno d[o]m[ini] 1593 p[er] m[agist]rum William Say vicar[ium] generalem etc. Commissa fuit Admi[nistraci]o bonorum h[uius]mod[i] def[unc]t[i] Elizabethe R[e]lic[t]e d[i]c[t]I def[unc]t[i] de bene etc iruat etc salvo iure cuiuscunque

Ips vid[ua] et W[illia]m Hopkines

[*Translation*: On the fourth day of October in the year of the lord 1593 by master William Say vicar general etc. Administration was granted of all the goods of this deceased to Elizabethe widow of the said deceased etc. to her being sworn etc. saving whatsoever right.

The same widow and W[illia]m Hopkines

Particularly interesting items in John Hopkyng's inventory are his military uniform and equipment kept in the kitchen: "1 bow & sheaf of arrows, 1 sword, 1 dagger, 1 skull [i.e., helmut], greave & warbrace [i.e., armor for arms, hands and lower legs]." Most likely he was a yeoman archer serving in the militia. From his military apparel, one can form a graphic picture of an Elizabethan bowman fully dressed and ready for battle.

From the variety of beds included in all rooms of the house, we can conclude that it was full with family members and perhaps some servants. There were thirteen bed spaces: four in the parlor, two in the fore chamber, four in the second chamber, three in the kitchen. While it is impossible to determine if all beds were in use, the number certainly indicates that the four rooms provided a large number of bed spaces and this does not include two more in the little chamber, which was probably used for storage.

Stan Rawdon, former Hursley church warden and local historian, has been of immense assistance in the preparation of this article. My thanks also go to librarians Ann Fields, Maggie Hargrove, and Marsha Bancroft all of Fort Myers, Fla., for finding hard-to-locate books; Barbara Burbridge of Amfield, Hampshire, England, for transcribing John Hopkins's inventory; Diana Codicott of Moxton, Andover, Hampshire, an Andover historian, for sending information on Hampshire Hopkinses; Jean C. Nobel, Whitley Bay, Tyne & Wear, England, for her kind comments and suggestions about London, Whitechapel, and Stepney, Middlesex; and Hershel Lewellyn, with his crew of volunteers at the Fort Myers Family History Center, for their generous support to genealogists by providing microfilm readers and fiche readers at no charge to the general public.

Ernest M. Christensen (P.O. Box 3925, North Fort Myers FL 33918; <MouseMHS51@aol.com>) is an 11th-generation descendant of Stephen[1] *Hopkins through daughter Constance Hopkins, who married Nicholas Snow. Now retired in Florida, he spent two decades working in higher education as a director student affairs dean, and professor, and another two decades in small business in the State of Maine.*

THIS SUPERSEDES ALL OTHER RECORDS
About Stephen Hopkins origins + Constanta's birthdate & place

The following article shows that Stephen Hopkins was a Horsley, Hampshire England man (at least as of 1604) and not of Wotton-under-Edge as commonly speculated. He was, however the man shipwrecked on the Sea Venture. His widow Mary died in Horsley in 1613 believing herself a widow since so many of the Virginians had perished.

The American Genealogist

Whole Number 291 Vol. 73, No. 3

July 1998

THE TRUE ORIGIN OF STEPHEN[1] HOPKINS OF THE *MAYFLOWER*

With Evidence of His Earlier Presence in Virginia

By Caleb Johnson

It has been claimed for nearly seventy years that Stephen[1] Hopkins, a passenger on the *Mayflower* in 1620, was born at Wortley, Wotton-under-Edge, Gloucestershire, England. Additionally, it has been claimed that his first wife was Constance Dudley, though this claim was made without any supporting evidence. This article will show that Stephen Hopkins was, in fact, from an entirely different part of England, and will disprove the long-standing Constance Dudley myth. Additionally, evidence will be presented supporting the conclusion that Stephen Hopkins of the *Mayflower* was indeed the same man as the Stephen Hopkins who sailed for Jamestown, Virginia, on the *Sea Venture* in 1609 and was wrecked in Bermuda, as has long been speculated.

Since the Wotton-under-Edge origin of Stephen Hopkins has been so widely accepted, it will be necessary to review how this theory came about. In 1929 Charles Edward Banks first published the suggestion that Stephen Hopkins might be from a Hopkins family he had located at Wortley, Wotton-under-Edge.[1] He based his suggestion on the fact that the name *Stephen* occurred within the family, and presented his findings simply as possible clues. The much less careful George F. Willison in his popularized but frequently inaccurate book, *Saints and Strangers*, took Banks's few clues as absolute proof, and stated outright that Stephen Hopkins was from Wotton-under-Edge.[2]

Ralph D. Phillips furthered the theory in his "Hopkins Family of Wortley, Gloucestershire: Possible Ancestry of Stephen Hopkins" published in TAG for

---

[1] Charles Edward Banks, *The English Ancestry and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers* . . . (New York, 1929), 61–64, at 63–64; hereafter cited as Banks, *English Ancestry*.

[2] George F. Willison, *Saints and Strangers* . . . (New York, 1945), 441.

April 1963. He proposed that the unnamed child of a Stephen Hopkins baptized at Wotton-under-Edge on 29 October 1581 might have been named Stephen (since that was the father's name), and thus was possibly the *Mayflower* passenger. Two Stephen Hopkinses were then located in a 1608 Wortley "Men and Armour" list.[3] Phillips did not comment upon the fact that this Hopkins family carried the names of *Robert*, *Thomas*, *George*, *Edward*, *Gillian*, *Joan*, *Alice*, and *Agnes*—names which do not occur among the *Mayflower* passenger's children or grandchildren. Hence, the identification of Stephen Hopkins of the *Mayflower* with the Gloucestershire family depends entirely upon chronology and the name *Stephen*. Nonetheless, the theory became widely accepted.

In 1972 Margaret Hodges contributed greatly to its promotion by making the speculative Wotton-under-Edge origin the keystone to her biography, *Hopkins of the Mayflower: Portrait of a Dissenter*. She claims in her book that Stephen Hopkins was born [*sic*] on 29 October 1581 at Wortley, married Constance Dudley, was living in Wortley in 1608 (the "Men and Armour" list), and had children William and Stephen along with Constance and Giles.[4]

The alleged son William is based on Wotton-under-Edge records and does not need further comment since the Wortley origin will be disproven. The alleged son Stephen, however, should be mentioned. Hodges claims that Stephen, son of Stephen Hopkins, the *Mayflower* passenger, was baptized at St. Stephen's, Coleman Street, London, on 22 December 1609.[5] This baptism actually occurred on 3 December 1609 at St. Katherine Coleman, London (not 22 December at St. Stephen's, Coleman Street). This child was buried at St. Katherine Coleman on 19 February 1609/10, and John, son of Stephen Hopkins, was baptized there on 14 April 1611.[6] This second baptism eliminates the possibility that this is the correct family, for, as will be shown below, when the second child was conceived in 1610, the *Mayflower* passenger was in Virginia. The name *Stephen Hopkins* is fairly common, and I encountered no fewer than twelve individuals with this name living in England during the early 1600s, including four who were living in London.

The origin of the Constance Dudley myth is harder to explain, since there has never been any evidence to support it. It receives mention in Hodges's book, and even as recently as November 1997 an article in the *Mayflower Quarterly* accepts the Wortley origin as fact and adds that "it is the general consensus that she [Constance Dudley] was his wife," though "what seems to be in question is her relationship" to Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester.[7] Even the Internet web pages of the Plimoth Plantation Museum (http://www.plimoth.org/hopkins.htm) have been tainted with this myth, claiming Stephen Hopkins was born [*sic*] at Wortley on 29 October 1581, and that his first wife "may have been named Constance." In the midst of all this, it is well to note that the best modern genealogy of this family, by John D. Austin, FASG, in the *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations* series, mentions the claimed Gloucestershire origin as only a possibility and states that "no authority has been found for the oft-repeated identification of her [Stephen's first wife] as Constance Dudley."[8]

Now it is time to set the record straight and present documented evidence that Stephen Hopkins was not from Wortley, Wotton-under-Edge, Gloucestershire, but instead from Hursley, Hampshire, England. The parish registers of Hursley, searched and photocopied by Leslie Mahler at my request, contain the following baptismal entries, literally transcribed from the original Latin with my own translation appearing below:[9]

[1604] decimo tercio die maij Elizabetha filia Stephani Hopkyns fuit baptizata
[13th day of May, Elizabeth daughter of Stephen Hopkins was baptized]
[1606] undecimo die Maij Constancia filia Steph Hopkyns fuit baptizata
[11th day of May, Constance daughter of Steph[en] Hopkins was baptized]
[1607/8] tricesima die Januarij Egidius filius Stephani Hopkyns fuit baptizatus
[30th day of January, Giles[10] son of Stephen Hopkins was baptized]

The following burial record was also discovered, entered in English:

[1613] Mary Hopkines the wife of Steeven Hopkines was buried the ix day of May

Governor William Bradford, in the *Mayflower* passenger list he wrote in the spring of 1651,[11] recorded the following:

---

[3] Ralph D. Phillips, "Hopkins Family of Wortley, Gloucestershire: Possible Ancestry of Stephen Hopkins," TAG 39(1963):95–97.

[4] Margaret Hodges, *Hopkins of the Mayflower: Portrait of a Dissenter* (New York, 1972), 7, 12–13, 66–67, 142; hereafter cited as Hodges, *Hopkins*.

[5] Hodges, *Hopkins*, 142.

[6] St. Katherine Coleman, London, parish register [Family History Library (FHL), Salt Lake City, film #560,022, item 1]. The mistake in the date of the 1609 baptism and in attributing it to St. Stephen's, Coleman Street, apparently originated in Banks, *English Ancestry*, 61.

[7] Marian L. Worthen, "In Search of an Ancestor," *The Mayflower Quarterly* 63(1997):345–47, at 345; other recent articles accepting the Wotton origin include Jack Curry Redman, "Stephen Hopkins, Triple-Founder," *Mayflower Quart.* 51(1985):168–71; and Virginia W. Shaw, "A Visit to the Birthplace of Stephen Hopkins," *Mayflower Quart.* 51(1985):172.

[8] *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations*, 15 vols. to date (Plymouth, 1975–), hereafter cited as *Mayflower Fams. 5Gs.*, 6: Stephen Hopkins, by John D. Austin, 2nd ed. (Plymouth, 1995), 3–4, 7. Caution is also expressed in other careful works, including Mary Walton Ferris, *Dawes–Gates Ancestral Lines*, 2 vols. (n.p., 1931–43), 2:443 n.; Eugene Aubrey Stratton, *Plymouth Colony: Its History and People, 1620–1691* (Salt Lake City, 1986), 309; and Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration Begins: Immigrants to New England, 1620–1633*, 3 vols. (Boston, 1995), 2:988 (hereafter cited as Anderson, *Great Migration Begins*). See also Robert S. Wakefield, "Wrestling' Brewster: An Old Hoax Resurfaces and Other Mayflower Family Fables," *The Mayflower Descendant* [MD] 43(1993):13–14, at 14; and Alicia Crane Williams, review of Hodges, *Hopkins of the Mayflower*, MD 43:88.

[9] Hursley, Hampshire, parish register [FHL film #1,041,201].

[10] *Egidius* is the Latin form of the English name *Giles*.

[11] George Ernest Bowman shows that it was written between 24 Feb. 1650[/1] and 24 March 1651, which Bowman shifts to New Style: 6 March 1651 and 3 April 1651 ("The Date of Governor Bradford's Passenger List," MD 1[1899]:161–63).

> Mr. Steven Hopkins, and Elizabeth, his wife, and ·2· children, caled Giles, and Constanta, a doughter, both by a former wife; and ·2· more by this wife, caled Damaris and Oceanus; the last was borne at sea; and ·2· servants, called Edward Doty and Edward Litster.[12]

And in his "decreasings and increasings," written about the same time, Bradford stated that:

> Mr. Hopkins and his wife are now both dead, but they lived above ·20· years in this place, and had one sone and ·4· doughters borne here. Ther sone became a seaman, and dyed at Barbadoes; one daughter dyed here, and ·2· are maried; one of them hath ·2· children; and one is yet to mary. So their increase which still survive are ·5· But his sone Giles is maried and hath ·4· children.
>
> His doughter Constanta is also maried, and hath ·12· children, all of them living, and one of them maried.[13]

Bradford's comments accord exactly with these parish register records. Stephen and Mary Hopkins of Hursley, Hampshire, were the parents of Elizabeth, Constance, and Giles. It should also be noted that both Constance and Giles named their first daughter Mary.

At my request, the Hampshire Record Office undertook a search for Hopkins probate records, and uncovered only one at Hursley—an administration on the estate of Mary Hopkins in 1613. Her estate inventory was dated 10 May 1613, and administration was granted on 12 May 1613 to "Roberto Lyte [vir] gard de hursly" and "Thome Syms vir supra[vi]sor p[er] pauper' " during the minority of "Constance, Elize[beth] et Egidij" (in that order).[14] The inventory follows [*the lineation of the heading and of the Latin statement of probate is indicated by slashes (/)*]:

> An inventory of the goods and Chattells of / Mary Hopkins of Hursley in the Countie of / South[amp]ton widowe deceased taken [*interlined*: & prized] the tenth day / of May 1613 as followeth vizt.

Inprimis certen Beames in the garden & wood in the back side	ix^{s}
It[e]m the ymplem[en]ts in the Be[–]ehouse	vj^{s}
It[e]m certen things in the kitchin	iij^{s}
It[e]m in the hall one table, one Cupboorde & certen other things	vj^{s}
It[e]m in the buttry six small vessells & some other small things	vj^{s}
It[e]m brasse and pewter	xxij^{s}
It[e]m in the Chamber over the shop two beds one table & a forme wth some other small things	xxj^{s}
It[e]m in the Chamber over the hall one fetherbed & 3 Chests & one box	x^{s}
It[e]m Lynnen & wearing apparrell	xij^{s}
It[e]m in the shop one shopborde & a plank	xij^{d}
It[e]m the Lease of the house wherin she Late dwelled	xij^{li}
It[e]m in ready mony & in debts by specialitie & wthout specialitie	xvij^{li} xij^{s}
S[umm]^{a} total[is]	xxv^{li} xj^{s}

Gregory
his mark [*star*] horwood
William toot
Rychard Wolle

> Commissa fuit Admi:^{o} bonorum at Callorum' / Marie Hopkins nuper de Hursley vid' defunc[tae] / Roberto Lyte [vir] gard de hursly et / Thome Syms vir supra[vi]sor p[er] pauper' / [—] [—] de par[—] duran' minor' / Constance, Elize[beth] et Egidij liberor' / d[i]c[t]i deft' duodecimo die maij / Anno Dni' 1613 de bene &c p[er]sonalir' iur' &c / salve iure cuiuscumq' salvaq' potestate &c'

There are several important observations to be made about this inventory. One is the reference to the shop and the "shopborde" (what we would call a counter),[15] which tells us that Mary and presumably her husband Stephen were shopkeepers. In addition, Mary is stated as having the lease on her dwelling at the time of her death, which may be a clue to her identity. Most striking, however, is that the estate inventory calls Mary Hopkins a widow, although her burial record calls her "wife," not widow. It would have been very unusual for an administration to have been granted on the estate of a woman whose husband was living (i.e., a *feme covert*), and Stephen was not dead, as he came on the *Mayflower* in 1620 with his children Constance and Giles. The solution to this odd puzzle is found in the facts that Stephen and Mary Hopkins stopped having children in 1608, and that there was a Stephen Hopkins aboard the *Sea Venture* which left for Virginia in 1609. If Mary's husband Stephen was in Virginia in 1613 and his condition was unknown, the court or the parish might well have found it expedient to assume he was dead in order to make the property available for his children's support. And that assumption was not an unlikely one: Mortality rates at Jamestown were extremely high.

Circumstantial evidence has always pointed to the likelihood that Stephen Hopkins of the *Mayflower* was the same man as Stephen Hopkins of the *Sea Venture*,[16] and even as early as 1768 Thomas Hutchinson was speculating that the two men might be one and the same.[17] These parish register entries and probate records provide the first historical documentation to support this belief.

The voyage of the *Sea Venture* in 1609 would be one for the history books. Wrecked by a hurricane in the "Isle of Devils" (i.e., the Bermudas), the one hundred fifty castaways survived for ten months on the abundant sea turtles, flightless birds, shellfish, and wild hogs. After about six months, Stephen Hopkins began to challenge the authority of the governor, and went as far as to organize a mutiny.[18] What happened next, as Stephen was sentenced to death, is described by fellow *Sea Venture* passenger William Strachey [*emphasis added*]:

---

[12] William Bradford, *History of Plymouth Plantation, 1620–1647*, ed. Worthington Chauncey Ford, 2 vols. (Boston, 1912), 2:400; hereafter cited as Bradford, *History of Plymouth*.

[13] Bradford, *History of Plymouth*, 2:406–7.

[14] Estate of Mary Hopkins 1613, Hampshire Record Office, Winchester, 1613AD/046.

[15] *Shop-board*: "A counter or table upon which a tradesman's business is transacted or upon which his goods are exposed to sale" (*Oxford English Dictionary*).

[16] Rev. B. F. de Costa, "Stephen Hopkins of the Mayflower," *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register* [NEHGR] 33(1879):300–5. This identification is accepted in Virginia M. Meyer, and John Frederick Dorman, eds., *Adventurers of Purse and Person, Virginia, 1607–1624/5*, 3rd ed. (n.p., 1987), 374–75.

[17] Thomas Hutchinson, *The History of the Colony and Province of Massachusetts–Bay*, ed. Lawrence Shaw Mayo, 3 vols. (Cambridge, Mass., 1936), 2:353.

> . . . therein did one Stephen Hopkins commence the first act or overture [of mutiny]: A fellow who had much knowledge of Scriptures, and could reason well therein, whom our Minister therefore chose to be his Clarke, to reade the Psalmes, and Chapters upon Sondays . . . it pleased the Governour to let this his factious offence to have a publique affront, and contestation by these two witnesses before the whole Company, who (at the toling of a Bell) assemble before a Corps du guard, where the Prisoner was brought forth in manacles, and both accused, and suffered to make at large, to every particular, his answere; which was onely full of sorrow and teares, pleading simplicity, and deniall. But hee being onely found, at this time, both the Captaine, and the follower of this Mutinie, and generally held worthy to satisfie the punishment of his offence, with the sacrifice of his life, our Governour passed the sentence of a Martiall Court upon him, such as belongs to Mutinie and Rebellion. *But so penitent hee was, and made so much moane, alleadging the ruine of his Wife and Children in this his trespasse*, as it wrought in the hearts of all the better sorts of the Company, who therefore with humble intreaties, and earnest supplications, went unto our Governor, whom they besought . . . and never left him untill we had got his pardon.[19]

The castaways would eventually manage to work together to complete construction of two ships, which they used to sail to Jamestown, Virginia, the next year.[20] Strachey's account would shortly thereafter come into the hands of William Shakespeare, and it became partly responsible for inspiring his play *The Tempest*, which was first performed in November 1611. *The Tempest* relates the story of a shipwrecked group stranded on an enchanted island. A side plot includes a drunken and mutinous butler, whom Shakespeare named Stephano.

There are a number of indications that Stephen[1] Hopkins of the *Mayflower* had had previous contact with American Indians. *Mourt's Relation* (1622) tells us that Hopkins was a member of an exploring expedition on Cape Cod in November 1620. The group "came to a tree where a young sprit [i.e., sapling] was bowen down over a bow, and some acorns strewed underneath. Stephen Hopkins said it had been to catch some deer."[21] The same source says that in March 1620/1, the

---

[18] William Thorndale points out that Strachey identifies Humfrey Reede and Samuel Sharpe as the two men to whom Hopkins broached the mutiny; given the tendency of "countrymen," as the word was used then, to associate with each other, we may have a clue to Reede's and Sharpe's origins.

[19] William Strachey, *A True Reporatory of the Wracke and Redemption of Sir Thomas Gates, Knight. . . .* in Samuel Purchas, *Hakluytus Posthumus or Purchas His Pilgrimes*, 4 vols. (London, 1625), 4:1744; repr. 20 vols. (Glasgow, 1905), 19:30–32. A modernized version can be found in Louis B. Wright, ed., *A Voyage to Virginia in 1609* (Charlottesville, Va., 1964).

[20] The basic story of the *Sea Venture* is related in Avery Kolb, "The Tempest," *American Heritage* 34 no. 3(1983):26–35.

[21] Dwight B. Heath, ed., *A Journal of the Pilgrims at Plymouth: Mourt's Relation* (New York, 1963), 23 (hereafter cited as Heath, *Mourt's Relation*); Da Costa, "Stephen Hopkins," NEHGR 33:304.

Pilgrims lodged the Indian Samoset with Hopkins,[22] and Bradford states that in July 1621, Edward Winslow and Hopkins were sent with Squanto to visit Massasoit.[23] Thereafter he undertook such missions frequently.[24] The English evidence, the presence of a Stephen Hopkins in Virginia, the indication that shortly after landing the *Mayflower* man was able to recognize an Indian deer trap, and his being made one of the colony's representatives to deal with the natives, all support the conclusion that the *Mayflower* passenger and the man who was earlier in Virginia were identical. And, while it does not prove the connection, the man we now know led a mutiny in Bermuda managed to get into trouble with the Plymouth authorities several times in the 1630s, despite his high social standing.[25] On one of these occasions, we learn the sort of retail business Hopkins may have had when he was in Hampshire: On 4 September 1638, "M^{r} Steephen Hopkins" was fined "for selling wine, beere, strong waters, and nutmeggs at excessiue rates."[26]

Now that Stephen Hopkins's claimed origin in Gloucestershire has been disposed of, the Hursley records given above provide most of the information known about his immediate family in England. However, a letter written by William Bradford on 8 September 1623 and brought to my attention by John C. Brandon shows that Stephen Hopkins had a brother in England who provided nails to the Pilgrims [*emphasis added*]:

> About Hobkins and his men [Edward Doty and Edward Leister] we are come to this isew, the men we retain in the generall according to his resignation and equietie of the thinge, and about that reconing of .20. ode pounds, we have brought it to this pass, he is to have . 6 . ^{li} . payed by you ther, and the rest to be quite; *it is for nails and shuch other things as we have had of his brother here for the companies use*, and upon promise of paymente by us, we desire you will accordingly doe it.[27]

Paul C. Reed was brought in at this point to conduct a thorough search of Hampshire records for information on Stephen Hopkins or his wife Mary's ancestry. Unfortunately, the search failed to turn up any conclusive proof on either count. The Hopkins families of Hampshire are found in three main regions: Andover and surrounding parishes, Isle of Wight, and Hursley–Winchester. The parish registers of Hursley, unfortunately, do not begin until January 1599/1600, and there is no mention of Hopkinses in the eleven wills surviving from the Peculiar Court of Hursley, 1566–1705; no wills in this court survive between 1599 and

---

[22] Heath, *Mourt's Relation*, 52.

[23] Bradford, *History of Plymouth*, 1:219.

[24] Anderson, *Great Migration Begins*, 2:989.

[25] Anderson, *Great Migration Begins*, 2:989.

[26] Nathaniel B. Shurtleff and David Pulsifer, eds., *Records of the Colony of New Plymouth, in New England*, 12 vols. in 10 [Boston, 1855–61], 1:97; hereafter cited as Shurtleff and Pulsifer, *Plymouth Colony Records*.

[27] R. G. Marsden, "A Letter of William Bradford and Isaac Allerton," *American Historical Review* 8(1903):294–301. This portion of Bradford's letter is a response to a specific piece of business recorded in Charles Deane, "Records of the Council for New England," *Proceedings of the American Antiquarian Society* (Cambridge, Mass., 1867), 93–94.

1682. Hursley wills in the Consistory Court of Winchester and the Prerogative Court of Canterbury from this period were also read without finding any mention of Hopkinses; there are no Hursley wills in the indexes of the Archdeaconry Court of Winchester from 1590 through 1613. Some significant clues were discovered, however, and are briefly summarized below.

Hursley had one manor at the time, Merdon; and Stephen Hopkins is mentioned in these records on "xx^{19}" May 6 James I [1608] as one of the men who were penalized or fined.[28] The records are not clear as to why he was penalized. The name *Giles* was somewhat uncommon in the area. There were three men of that name in the 1598 lay subsidy of Hursley: Giles Hobby, Giles Kinge, and Giles Machilde;[29] no connections have yet been found to Stephen Hopkins or his wife Mary.

The name *Constance* was extremely rare in Hampshire, and only one occurrence of the name was found during the course of this research: the marriage of William Hopkins to Constance Marline at St. Swithin-over-Kingsgate, Winchester, Hampshire, on 16 April 1591.[30] The Soke of Winchester borders Hursley. The lay subsidies of Winchester list a John Hopkins in 1586, 1589, and 1590.[31] On 4 October 1593, administration on the estate of John Hopkyngs of Winchester was granted to the widow Elizabeth, W^m^ Hopkines posting bond; the inventory had been taken on the previous 10 September.[32] It seems probable that William Hopkins was the son of John Hopkins of Winchester and that he was the William who married Constance Marline. Stephen Hopkins of Hursley and Plymouth may also be a son of John, though no direct evidence for this relationship has been found. Listed in the lay subsidies in 1589 and 1590 is Rainold Marlin, who may have been the father of the Constance Marline who married William Hopkins.[33]

A Stephen Hopkins was named as a son in the 1636 will of Thomas Hopkins of Blashford in the parish of Ellingham on the Isle of Wight.[34] No records were found that could tie this Stephen Hopkins to the *Mayflower* pilgrim.

One additional clue deserves mention. On 20 September 1614, a letter was written to Sir Thomas Dale, Marshal of the Colony of Virginia, requesting that he "send home by the next ship Eliezer Hopkins."[35] It seems possible that Eliezer Hopkins of Jamestown in 1614 was related to Stephen.

---

[28] Merdon manorial court rolls [FHL film #1,471,826].

[29] Douglas F. Vick, *Central Hampshire Lay Subsidy Assessments, 1558–1603* (Farnham, Hants., n.d.); hereafter cited as Vick, *Central Hants. Subsidies*.

[30] St. Swithin-over-Kingsgate, Winchester, Hampshire, parish register [FHL film #1,041,221].

[31] Vick, *Central Hants. Subsidies*, 29–30.

[32] Winchester administrations [FHL film #197,336].

[33] Vick, *Central Hants. Subsidies*, 29–30.

[34] Archdeaconry Court of Winchester, original wills [FHL #186,925].

[35] Alexander Brown, comp., *The Genesis of the United States: A Narrative of the Movements in England Which Resulted in the Plantation of North America by Englishmen. . .*, 2 vols. (Cambridge, Mass., 1890), 2:736.

This article has shown that Stephen Hopkins was actually from Hursley, Hampshire, England, and that his first wife was named Mary. The baptisms of Constance and Giles have been revealed, and the additional child Elizabeth has been here identified for the first time. Evidence has been provided to document the long-standing belief that Stephen Hopkins of the *Mayflower* was the same man as Stephen Hopkins of the *Sea Venture*. And lastly the results of Paul C. Reed's search of Hampshire records have been presented, which provide some solid clues for future researchers.

SUMMARY

STEPHEN^{1} HOPKINS was born probably in Hampshire, England, say 1578; the possibility that he was a son of John Hopkins of the city of Winchester merits further investigation. He died in Plymouth, now Massachusetts, between 6 June 1644, when he executed his will, and 17 July 1644, when the inventory of his estate was taken (see below). He married first, by 13 May 1604 (baptism of a child), MARY —, who was buried at Hursley, Hampshire, on 9 May 1613. He married secondly, at St. Mary Matfellon, Whitechapel, Middlesex, on 19 February 1617/8, ELIZABETH FISHER,[36] who died in Plymouth in the early 1640s, since Bradford stated that both Stephen Hopkins and his wife had "lived above ·20· years in this place."[37] She was certainly dead when her husband executed his will.

"Steuen Hobkins" received six acres in the 1623 division of land, indicating five people in his household (since Stephen should have had an extra share).[38] In the Division of Cattle, 22 May 1627, the seventh lot "fell to Stephen Hopkins & his companie Joyned to him": wife Elizabeth Hopkins, Gyles Hopkins, Caleb Hopkins, Debora Hopkins, Nickolas Snow, Constance Snow, Wil[l]iam Pallmer, Frances Pallmer, Wil[l]iam Pallmer Jr., John Billington Sr., Hellen Billington, and Francis Billington.[39]

Stephen Hopkins, "being weake," executed his will on 6 June 1644. He asked to be "buryed as neare as convenyently may be to my wyfe Deceased," and mentioned his son Giles; Giles's son Stephen; daughter Constanc[e] Snow, wife of Nicholas Snow; daughter Deborah Hopkins; daughter Damaris Hopkins; daughter

---

[36] Banks, *English Ancestry*, 61. Given Banks's confusion between the London parishes of St. Stephen's, Coleman Street, and St. Katherine Coleman, and his providing an erroneous date (22 Dec. 1609 rather than 3 Dec.), it might be worthwhile to reconfirm this entry.

[37] Bradford, *History of Plymouth*, 2:406. *Mayflower Fams. 5Gs.*, 6:7, states that she died after 4 Feb. 1638/9. We have not been able to find a primary source that she was alive on this specific date. 4 Feb. 1638/9 is the date of the Plymouth court session that weighed the situation of Stephen Hopkins's pregnant servant, Dorothy Temple; Stephen's wife is not mentioned (Shurtleff and Pulsifer, *Plymouth Colony Records*, 1:111–13).

[38] Shurtleff and Pulsifer, *Plymouth Colony Records*, 12:4; Robert S. Wakefield, "The 1623 Plymouth Land Division," *Mayflower Quart.* 40(1974):7–13, 55–59, at 10.

[39] Shurtleff and Pulsifer, *Plymouth Colony Records*, 12:11.

Ruth, daughter Elizabeth, and Caleb Hopkins, "my sonn and heire apparent." The inventory was taken on 17 July 1644, and the will was proved on 20 August 1644. Verbatim transcripts of both the will and inventory are readily available.[40]

The portions of the estate for the daughters Deborah, Damaris, Ruth, and Elizabeth were divided "equally by Capt Myles Standish [and] Caleb Hopkins their brother" at a date not given, and an agreement was reached on 30 9th month [Nov.] 1644 between Capt. Myles Standish and Caleb Hopkins with Richard Sparrow that Sparrow would have "Elizabeth Hopkins as his owne child untill the tyme of her marryage or untill shee be nineteene years of age," noting "the weaknes of the Child and her inabillytie to p[e]rforme such service as may acquite their charge in bringing of her up and that shee bee not too much oppressed now in her childhood w^th hard labour. . . ." On 15 8th month [Oct.] 1644, Richard Sparrow acknowledged receiving "the half of a Cow from Capt Miles Standish w^ch is Ruth Hopkins," and on 19 May 1647, Myles Standish acknowledged receiving "two young steers in full Satisfaction for halfe a Cow which was Ruth hopkins which Richard Sparrow bought of me. . . ."[41]

The "Cattle that goeth under the Name of Elizabeth hopkinses" were valued on 29 7th month [Sept.] 1659, and an inventory of her estate was taken on 6 October 1659. On 5 October, the court ordered that, "incase Elizabeth hopkins Doe Come Noe more," the cattle be awarded to Gyles Hopkins, and that he not "[d]emaund of; or molest . . . Andrew Ringe or Jacob Cooke in the peacable enjoyment of that which they have of the estate of Elizabeth hopkins."[42]

Children of Stephen[1] and Mary (—) Hopkins, all baptized at Hursley:[43]

i ELIZABETH[2] HOPKINS, bp. 13 May 1604, living in 1613 when she was mentioned in her mother's estate records; no further record found.

ii CONSTANCE HOPKINS, bp. 11 May 1606; m. NICHOLAS[1] SNOW, by 22 May 1627, when they appeared in Stephen Hopkins's "companie" in the division of cattle.

iii GILES HOPKINS, bp. 30 Jan. 1607/8; m. Plymouth, 9 Oct. 1639, CATHERINE[2] WHELDEN (*Gabriel*[1]).[44]

Children of Stephen and Elizabeth (Fisher) Hopkins:

iv DAMARIS HOPKINS, b. say 1618, d. before 22 May 1627 (division of cattle). Either Damaris or Oceanus must have d. before the 1623 land division, which indicates, as Robert Wakefield has shown, that there were then five members in Stephen[1] Hopkins's family.[45]

v OCEANUS HOPKINS, b. on the *Mayflower* between 6 Sept. and 11 Nov. 1620 (Old Style), the dates that the ship was at sea, d. before 22 May 1627 (division of cattle) and possibly before the 1623 land division.

vi CALEB HOPKINS, b. say 1623, living Plymouth, 30 Nov. 1644, when he signed an agreement with Richard Sparrow to rear his sister Elizabeth, d. Barbados, before spring 1651, when Bradford called him deceased.

vii DEBORAH HOPKINS, b. Plymouth, say 1626; m. Plymouth, 23 April 1646, ANDREW[2] RING (*widow Mary*[1]).[46]

viii DAMARIS HOPKINS (again), b. Plymouth, say 1628 (after 22 May 1627 [division of cattle]); m. shortly after 10 June 1646 (antenuptial agreement), JACOB[2] COOKE (*Francis*[1] of the *Mayflower*).[47]

ix RUTH HOPKINS, b. say 1630 (after 22 May 1627 [division of cattle]), d. unmarried after [30 Nov.?] 1644 (distribution of father's estate) and before spring 1651 (since Elizabeth must be the unmarried sister mentioned by Bradford).

x ELIZABETH HOPKINS (again), b. say 1632 (after 22 May 1627 [division of cattle]). She had left Plymouth by 29 7m [Sept.] 1659, when the process of settling her estate began; the records, however, are careful not to state that she was dead.

I would like to thank to thank Leslie Mahler of San Jose, Calif., for searching and photocopying the Hopkins entries in the Hursley parish register and for assisting in locating Mary Hopkins's probate records; Paul C. Reed of Salt Lake City for extensive research in Hampshire records; John C. Brandon of Columbia, S.C., for providing significant bibliographical references; and Robert S. Wakefield, FASG, of Redwood City, Calif., John D. Austin Jr., FASG, of Queensbury, N.Y., Neil D. Thompson, FASG, of Salt Lake City, and William Thorndale of Salt Lake City for valuable comments.

Caleb Johnson is the author and webmaster of the Mayflower Web Pages (http://members.aol.com/calebj/mayflower.html), through which he can be contacted. He graduated this spring from Texas Tech University with B.A. degrees in both History and English and minors in Computer Science and Archaeology.

---

[40] George Ernest Bowman, "The Will and Inventory of Stephen Hopkins," MD 2(1900):12–17; C. H. Simmons Jr., ed., *Plymouth Colony Records*, 1(Camden, Maine, 1996):129–33 (hereafter cited as Simmons, *Plymouth Colony Records*).

[41] George Ernest Bowman, "The Portions of Stephen Hopkins' Daughters, and the Estate of Elizabeth[2] Hopkins," MD 4(1902):114–19, at 114–17; Simmons, *Plymouth Colony Records*, 1:137–39.

[42] Bowman, ". . . Estate of Elizabeth[2] Hopkins," MD 4:118–19.

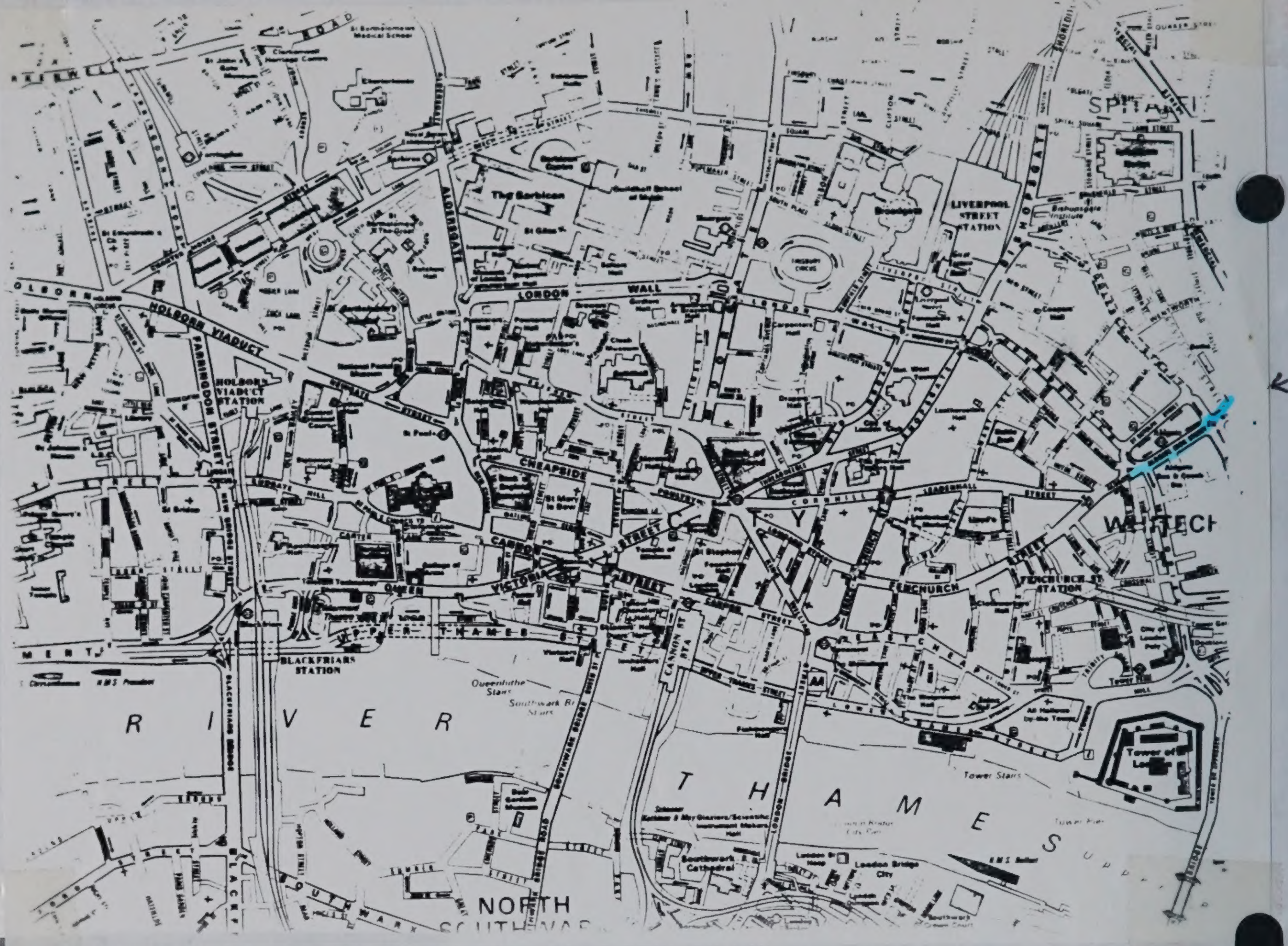
[43] For further details on the children of both marriages, see *Mayflower Fams. 5Gs.*, 6:7–14, and Anderson, *Great Migration Begins*, 2:986–89; we have followed Anderson's "say" birth years, except for Caleb, whose birth year Anderson places as "say 1624." Researchers should also consult George Ernest Bowman's discussion of the Hopkins children ("The Mayflower Genealogies: Stephen Hopkins and His Descendants," MD 5[1903]:47–53).

[44] Shurtleff and Pulsifer, *Plymouth Colony Records*, 1:134. For the Wheldens, see Maclean W. McLean, "John and Mary (Folland) Whelden of Yarmouth, Mass.," TAG 48(1972):4–11, 81–88; McLean accepts Catherine (Whelden) Hopkins as a daughter of Gabriel[1] Whelden of Yarmouth, Lynn, and Malden, Mass., but points out that explicit evidence for this relationship has not been found (TAG 48:4–5).

[45] Wakefield, "1623 Plymouth Land Division," *Mayflower Quart.* 40:8, 10.

[46] Shurtleff and Pulsifer, *Plymouth Colony Records*, 2:98. For the Rings, see John Insley Coddington, "The Widow Mary Ring, of Plymouth, Mass., and Her Children," TAG 42(1966):193–205; and Anderson, *Great Migration Begins*, 3:1586–88.

[47] "Plymouth Colony Deeds," MD 2(1900):27–28. For this Cooke family, see *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations*, 12: Francis Cooke, by Ralph Van Wood Jr. (Camden, Maine, 1996); and Anderson, *Great Migration Begins*, 1:467–71.


The Barbican
LONDON WALL
HOLBORN VIADUCT
HOLBORN VIADUCT STATION
FARRINGDON STREET
ALDERSGATE
CHEAPSIDE
St Paul's
CANNON STREET
QUEEN VICTORIA STREET
UPPER THAMES STREET
BLACKFRIARS STATION
BLACKFRIARS BRIDGE
SOUTHWARK BRIDGE
LONDON BRIDGE
CANNON ST STN
LIVERPOOL STREET STATION
Broadgate
Finsbury Circus
BISHOPSGATE
CORNHILL
LEADENHALL STREET
FENCHURCH STREET
FENCHURCH ST STATION
Tower of London
Tower Hill
Tower Stairs
Queenhithe Stairs
Southwark Cathedral
London Bridge City
HMS President
HMS Belfast
SPITAL
WHITECH
R I V E R T H A M E S
NORTH SOUTHWARK

after returning from Virginia after 1613 & finding wife Mary dead, Stephen took his 3 children & moved to London.

Get maps of Bermuda & the literature on the VA massacre by the Indians & add them here.

Heathrow Airport
London
RUNNYMEDE
Kingston upon Thames
Chertsey
Meopham
Brands Hatch
Biggin Hill
M25
M26
M3
M23
M27
SURREY
EPSOM DOWNS
WISLEY GARDEN
Guildford
THE VYNE
Basingstoke
Farnham
Abinger Hammer
Leith Hill + 965 ft
Friday Street
North Downs
KNOLE
CHARTWELL
PENSHURST PLACE
Andover
Chawton (JANE AUSTEN'S HOME)
New Alresford
Winchester
HAMPSHIRE
Test
Itchen
Meon
Wey
Arun
Ouse
Gatwick Airport
NYMANS GARDEN
Royal Tunbridge Wells
WEST SUSSEX
EAST SUS
PETWORTH HOUSE
Buriton
Hambledon
Fordingbridge
Lyndhurst (SWAN GREEN)
Southampton
New Forest
BEAULIEU
Beaulieu
Bucklers Hard
Lymington
Avon
Portsmouth
Bosham
Chichester
Arundel
FISHBOURNE ROMAN PALACE
South Downs
SOUTH DOWNS
Lewes
Glyndebourne
UNIVERSITY OF SUSSEX
Brighton (ROYAL PAVILION)
Newhaven
MICHELHAM PRIORY
BATEMAN'S
Cowes
OSBORNE HOUSE
Yarmouth
Newport
Medina
The Needles
Sandown
Shanklin
Hayling Island
ISLE OF WIGHT
To Cherbourg and Le Havre, Fr.
To Cherbourg, Le Havre and St.-Malo, Fr. and Channel Is.
To Dieppe, Fr.
English Channel

MAYFLOWER FAMILIES
Through
Five Generations

* * *

DESCENDANTS OF THE PILGRIMS
WHO LANDED AT
PLYMOUTH, MASS. DECEMBER 1620

VOLUME SIX

FAMILY
STEPHEN HOPKINS — *John D. Austin, F.A.S.G.*

Published by
General Society of Mayflower Descendants
1992

Though this is the official Mayflower Society Hopkins line, the American Genealogist Vol. 73 article supersedes this as to Hopkins Origin !

STEPHEN HOPKINS

Stephen Hopkins sailed in the Mayflower in 1620, one of the "Londoners" or "strangers" recruited for the voyage. He was called "Master," and only two others of the 17 free men on the voyage were so styled. He seems to have originated from the family of Hopkins, alias Seborne, located for several generations at Wortley, Wotton Underedge, co. Gloucester. The Wortley historian has conjectured, after a thorough study of the family, that Stephen of the Mayflower may well have been son of Stephen Hopkins, a clothier of Wortley who also had son Robert Hopkins of London.

Stephen Hopkins was probably the young man of that name who served as minister's clerk on the vessel Sea Venture which sailed from London 2 June 1609, bound for Virginia. The ship was severely damaged in a hurricane, and the company was washed ashore on the Bermudan "Ile of Divels" on 28 July. The 150 survivors were marooned on the island for nine months, building two vessels which ultimately took them to Virginia. During the sojourn Stephen Hopkins encouraged an uprising by his fellows upon grounds that the Governor's authority pertained only to the voyage and the regime in Virginia, not to the forced existence in Bermuda. For his remarks he was placed under guard, brought before the company in manacles and sentenced to death by court-martial. "But so penitent hee was and made so much moane, alleadging the ruine of his Wife and Children in this his trespasse," according to William Strachey's record of the voyage, that friends among his cohorts procured a pardon from the Governor. The two newly built vessels, the Patience and the Deliverance, arrived at Jamestown on 24 May 1610, but no evidence has been found of Hopkins' residence there, and it is presumed he soon returned to his family in England. Strachey noted that while Hopkins was very religious, he was contentious and defiant of authority and possessed enough learning to undertake to wrest leadership from others.

The home in England of Stephen Hopkins was just outside of London Wall on the high road entering the city at Aldgate in the vicinity of Heneage House. In this neighborhood lived John Carver and William Bradford of the Mayflower company; Robert Cushman, the London agent for the Pilgrims; and Edward Southworth, who later came to New England. Stephen was called a tanner or leathermaker at the time of the Mayflower voyage.

The name of Stephen's first wife remains unknown. No authority has been found for the oft published identification of her as Constance Dudley. His second wife was named Elizabeth, and it seems certain that the marriage of Stephen Hopkins and Elizabeth Fisher on 19 Feb. 1617/18 at St. Mary Matfellon, Whitechapel, London, pertains to them.

Stephen, wife Elizabeth and children Giles and Constance by first wife and daughter Damaris by second wife, and two men servants, Edward Doty and Edward Lister, came on the Mayflower. Son Oceanus was born during the voyage. Upon the ship's arrival at Cape Cod 11 Nov. 1620, Stephen was among the men signing the Mayflower Compact in the cabin. He was one of three men designated to provide counsel and advice to Captain Myles Standish on the first land expedition of the Pilgrims in the New World. During the third day out, the company chanced upon an Indian deer trap, and Stephen was able to explain its function and danger to his fellows. In February of 1620/21, when Indians appeared on a neighboring hilltop, Captain Standish took Stephen Hopkins with him to negotiate with the savages. Thereafter, Stephen was invariably deputized to meet the Indians and act as an interpreter. In July of 1621 he served as envoy to friendly Chief Massasoit, and he made a friend for the colonists of Samoset, another Indian whom Stephen entertained in his home.

Despite the mortality caused by tribulations of the first Pilgrim winter in New England, Stephen Hopkins' household of eight persons was one of only four households that escaped loss.

Stephen Hopkins was referred to as a merchant and a planter in Plymouth records, also as "Gentleman" and "Master." He received a six-acre lot in the division of land in 1623 and later had other plots by grant or purchase. It is stated that he kept for his home throughout his life at Plymouth the lot on the easterly corner of Main and Leyden Streets that had been assigned to him on arrival. He built and owned the first wharf in Plymouth Colony of which there is record, selling it for sixty pounds in July of 1637. He built a house at Yarmouth on Cape Cod but returned to Plymouth and gave the Yarmouth dwelling to son Giles, who remained there.

Stephen Hopkins was made freeman by 1633 and served with sons Giles and Caleb and son-in-law Jacob Cooke as "Voluntary" in the Pequot War of 1637. He held the position of Assistant in the Colony from at least 1633 to 1636.

Probably because of his status in the Colony as a "stranger," Stephen Hopkins found himself on occasion in official difficulty. In June of 1636, while serving as Assistant, he was fined for battery of John Tisdale. In 1637 and 1638 he was charged with various indiscretions involving the sale of intoxicants and other items at his dwelling. In 1638/9 he was found in contempt of court for refusing to deal fairly with Dorothy Temple, an apprentice girl, and in December of 1639 he was charged with selling a looking glass at an excessive price.

The will of Stephen Hopkins, dated 6 June 1644, was proved upon testimony of William Bradford and Captain Myles Standish at a General Court at Plymouth on 20 Aug. 1644. Calling himself of Plymouth in New England and "weake yet in good and prfect memory," he directed that his body be "buryed as neare as convenyently may be to my wyfe, Deceased." He made these bequests:

To son Giles Hopkins the great bull now in the hands of Mris. Warren.

To Steven Hopkins "my sonn Giles his sonne," 20 shillings in Mris. Warren's hands for the hire of said bull.

To dau. Constanc Snow, wife of Nicholas, "my mare."

To dau. Deborah Hopkins "the brodhorned black cowe and her calf and half the Cowe called Motley."

To dau. Damaris Hopkins "the Cowe called Damaris heiffer and the white faced calf and half the cowe called Mottley."

To dau. Ruth "the Cowe called Red Cole and her calfe and a Bull at Yarmouth wch is in the keepeing of Giles Hopkins wch is an yeare and advantage old and half the curld Cowe."

To dau. Elizabeth "the Cowe called Smykins and her calf and thother half of the Curld Cowe wth Ruth and an yearelinge heiffer wthout a tayle in the keepeing of Gyles Hopkins at Yarmouth."

To four daus. Deborah, Damaris, Ruth and Elizabeth Hopkins, all the moveable goods that belonged to his house, "and in case any of my said daughters should be taken away by death before they be marryed then...their division to be equally devided amongst the Survivors."

To son Caleb, "heire apparent," house and lands at Plymouth, one pair of oxen and the hire of them, then in the hands of Richard Church, and "all my debts which are now oweing unto me."

The testator reserved to his daus. "free recourse to my house in Plymouth upon any occation there to abide and remayne for such tyme as any of them shall thinke meete and convenyent & they single persons." He named son Caleb as executor, and Caleb and Captain Standish as joint supervisors of the will.

The inventory of his goods, taken by Captain Standish, Thomas Willet and John Doane on 17 July 1644, listed livestock (fifteen neat cattle, a horse and other stock), household goods, clothing, tools and more than seventeen pounds owed to Hopkins by debtors. The estate was given a total value of about 130 pounds. The division of his moveable estate to daus. Deborah, Damaris, Ruth and Elizabeth was made by son Caleb and Captain Standish on 30 Nov. 1644.

In his list of the Mayflower passengers, Governor Bradford included: "Mr. Steven Hopkins, and Elizabeth, his wife, and 2 children, caled Giles, and Constanta, a doughter, both by a former wife; and 2 more by his wife caled Damaris and Oceanus; the last was borne at sea; and two servants, called Edward Doty and Edward Litster." Taking note of changes after 30 years, Bradford wrote of the Hopkins family in the spring of 1651: "Mr. Hopkins and his wife are now both dead, but they lived above 20 years in this place, and had one sone and 4 doughters borne here. Ther sone became a seaman, and dyed at Barbadoes; one daughter dyed here, and 2 are maried, one of them hath 2 children; and one is yet to mary. So their increase which still survive are 5. But his sone Giles is maried and hath 4 children. His doughter Constanta is also maried, and hath 12 children, all of them living, and one of them maried."

FIRST GENERATION

1 STEPHEN^{1} HOPKINS b. in England ca. 1580; d. Plymouth bet. 6 June and 17 July 1644; his parentage has not been proved, but he may be the son of Stephen Hopkins of Wortley, Parish of Wotton Underedge, co. Gloucester, England, perh. bp. there 29 Oct. 1581.

He m. (1) <name unk.>; she d. bef. 1617/18.

He m. (2) Whitechapel, London, England, 19 Feb. 1617/18 ELIZABETH FISHER, who d. Plymouth after 4 Feb. 1638/9.

Children (HOPKINS) two oldest by first wife, remainder by second wife:

2 i CONSTANCE^{2} b. in England ca. 1607.
3 ii GILES b. in England ca. 1609.
iii DAMARIS b. in England in 1618/19; came on the Mayflower with her parents and was alive in 1627 but prob. the dau. reported by Bradford to have "dyed here."
iv OCEANUS b. aboard the Mayflower on the Atlantic Ocean bet. 16 Sept. and 11 Nov. 1620; d. certainly bef. 22 May 1627 and prob. bef. 1623 when his father's family was listed as consisting of six persons.
v CALEB, b. ca. 1622; he was a "voluntary" with his father and older brother when about fifteen; called "heire apparent" in father's will, while brother Giles was living; Caleb and Myles Standish were executors of Stephen Hopkins' will of 1644; Caleb "became a seaman, & dyed at Barbadoes," according to Governor Bradford, writing bet. 6 March and 3 April 1651; d.s.p. in Barbados after 6 June 1644 and bef. 3 April 1651.
4 vi DEBORAH b. Plymouth ca. 1624-5.
5 vii DAMARIS b. prob. Plymouth after 1627.
viii RUTH b. prob. Plymouth; d. unm. after 30 Nov. 1644, when distribution of her share of her father's estate was agreed upon, and prob. bef. 3 April 1651, when Governor Bradford indicated that she was dead; certainly bef. the settlement of the estate of her sister Elizabeth 5 Oct. 1659.
ix ELIZABETH b. prob. Plymouth; her custody given on 30 Nov. 1644, after death of her father and when she was still a child, to Richard Sparrow, who was to keep her "as his own

> child until the tyme of her marriage or untill shee be nineteene yeares of age"; Captain Myles Standish brought an action against Sparrow on her behalf for breach of contract 5 Oct. 1656; she was a witness in a slander action in 1651/2; d. unm. after October of 1657 and perh. bef. 29 Sept. 1659, the latter being the date of valuation of her cattle by John Freeman and Edward Bangs; however, an agreement of 5 Oct. 1659 by Andrew Ring, Jacob Cooke and Giles Hopkins as to Elizabeth's property was contingent upon "that incase Elizabeth hopkins Doe Come Noe more," indicating that she had then disappeared and that her relatives thought that she was prob. dead.

NOTE: No evidence has been found that John Hopkins, b. England in 1613 and d. Hartford CT in 1654, was a son of Stephen Hopkins by his first wife, as alleged in MAYFLOWER SIGNERS.

REFERENCES: MD 1:10-14 (Bradford's list), 79, 151-2 (div. of cattle), 161-3, 227-230 (div. of land); 2:12-17 (will), 117; 4:114-19 (dau's. portions), 5:47-53, 226. BANKS ENGLISH ANCESTRY pp. 11, 14, 61-4. BRADFORD'S HIST (1959) pp. 64, 68, 87, 442, 445. PLYMOUTH COLONY RECS 1:41-2, 60-61, 68, 75, 87, 97, 111-13, 137; 2:38, 45; 7:57, 80; 8:187-8. MOURT pp. 7-8, 15, 33, 40. PN&Q 4:41-2. GEN JOURNAL 13:153-4, 171-2. TAG 39:95-7, 170-71. MQ 35:49-52, 51:5-9, 168-72. DAWES-GATES 2:443-451. BRAINERD ANC pp. 162-4. WATERMAN GEN 1:86. MUNSEY-HOPKINS pp. 27-30. TORREY'S MARRIAGES p. 387. GMF (NEHGR) 2:264-9, 270-72. CAPE COD LIBR 1:612-27, 714; 2:1030-33. SAVAGE 2:462 VA ADVENTURERS pp. 374-5. TRURO BY RICH p. 536. YOUNG'S CHRONICLES pp. 126-7. MAYO (JOHN) REV p. 149. POPE'S PIONEERS pp. 239-40. WILLISON pp. 133, 140-43, 148, 153, 162, 170, 173, 178-9, 198-9, 241, 263, 311, 314, 316-17, 322, 329, 441, 456, 468. BRISTOL-GLOUCESTER TRANS 69:111-126. WOTTON HIST pp. 280-82. PLYMOUTH COL BY STRATTON pp. 183-4, 193, 307-10. MAYFLOWER SIGNERS pp. 36-47. MAYFLOWER LOG pp. 145, 153, 168, 181-2, 249, 255, 261, 270. HOPKINS OF THE MAYFLOWER: PORTRAIT OF A DISSENTER (Margaret Hodges, New York, 1972).

SECOND GENERATION

✓2 CONSTANCE^{2} HOPKINS (Stephen^{1}) b. in England ca. 1607; d. Eastham about the middle of October 1677. Her given name was sometimes rendered Constanta.

She m. prob. Plymouth bef. 1628 NICHOLAS SNOW, who d. Eastham 15 Nov. 1676. He may be the Nicholas bp. 25 Jan. 1599 at St. Leonard's, Shoreditch, London, England, son of Nicholas Snow of Hoxton, Co. Middlesex. The parish of St. Leonard's adjoins St. Mary's, Whitechapel, where Stephen Hopkins, father of Constance, m. his second wife in 1617/18.

Constance Hopkins came on the Mayflower with her family. Nicholas Snow came on the Ann in 1623 and was made freeman at Plymouth in 1633. He was named in 1634 to lay out highways at Plymouth, and he served there as arbitrator, surveyor of highways and on juries. By 1645 he had settled at Eastham where he served as clerk, selectman, deputy, constable, highway surveyor, excise collector, and on court committees.

The will of Nicholas Snow of Eastham, dated 14 Nov. 1676 and proved 5 March 1676/7, left livestock and household goods to wife Constant for life use and then to son Jabez, and devised various parcels of land to sons Mark, Joseph, Steven, John and Jabez. The description of land near the testator's house mentioned "son Thomas Paine" <actually son-in-law> as an abutting owner. Nicholas also gave, after the death of his wife, the sum of ten shillings "to the Church of Eastham for the furniture of the Table of the Lord, with pewter or other Necessaries." He named Deacon Samuel Freeman and John Mayo as executors. Letters of administration were granted to Constant, Mark and John Snow on 6 March 1676/7. A lengthy inventory, including many cooper's and carpenter's tools, was sworn to by widow Constant on 22 March 1676/7.

Governor Bradford wrote bet. 6 March and 3 April 1651 that "Constanta is also maried, and hath 12 children all of them living, and one of them married."

Children (SNOW) all prob. b. Plymouth or Eastham:

6 i MARK^{3} b. 9 May 1628.
7 ✓ ii MARY b. ca. 1630.
8 iii SARAH b. ca. 1632.
9 iv JOSEPH b. ca. 1634.
10 v STEPHEN b. ca. 1636.
11 vi JOHN b. ca. 1638.
12 vii ELIZABETH b. ca. 1640.

13 viii JABEZ b. ca. 1642.
14 ix RUTH b. ca. 1644.
x <child>.
xi <child>.
xii <child>.

NOTE: The last three children, alive in 1651 as per Governor Bradford's account, may be sons who predeceased their father Nicholas Snow without issue, thus not mentioned in his will; or may be daughters. Note that Nicholas did not specifically name his daughters in his will. Josiah Paine, town clerk and historian of Harwich, wrote that Nicholas and Constance had a dau. named for her mother who was the first wife of Daniel Doane of Eastham. Daniel was b. prob. Plymouth ca. 1636; d. Eastham 20 Dec. 1712 in 76th yr., and had the following children: Joseph, Constant <son>, Israel, Daniel, Nathaniel, Constant <dau.>, Rebecca, Abigail, Ruth and Hepzibah. Daniel's first wife was undoubtedly the mother of all of the children except Hepzibah.

REFERENCES: MD 1:10, 14 (Bradford's list); 3:167-74 (N. Snow will, inv.), 6:203 (their d's.), 7:14 (b. Mark). PLYMOUTH COLONY RECS 1:4, 10, 27, 31, 44, 52, 87-8, 141, 151, 155; 2:115, 123, 125, 154; 3:9, 33; 4:15; 5:35, 57-8, 92, 144, 164, 220, 278; 7:7-8, 16-17, 20, 23, 34-5. GMF (NEHGR) 2:79-80, 3:348-51. BRADFORD'S HIST (1959) pp. 442, 445. BANKS ENGLISH ANCESTRY p. 160. GEN JOURNAL 13:153, 176. CAPE COD LIBR 1:496-8, 524-30, 714-15. TAG 14:229. DOANE GEN 1:26-30, 2:2. TORREY'S MARRIAGES p. 692. SAVAGE 4:138. EASTHAM BY PRATT pp. 20-21. MAYO (JOHN) REV p. 149. PLYMOUTH COL BY STRATTON pp. 307, 354. SNOW (NICHOLAS) GEN p. 5. MAY-FLOWER LOG pp. 145, 168, 182.

3 GILES^{2} HOPKINS (Stephen^{1}) b. in England ca. 1609; d. Eastham bet. 5 March 1688/9 and 16 April 1690. His given name was also rendered as Gyles.

He m. Plymouth 9 Oct. 1639 CATHERINE WHELDEN, who d. Eastham after 5 March 1688/9; undoubtedly dau. of Gabriel Whelden of Malden and Yarmouth. Her given name was also rendered as Katherne and Catorne.

Giles Hopkins came on the Mayflower with his family. He volunteered with his father and brother Caleb to go against the Pequot Indians in 1637. He moved from Plymouth to Yarmouth in late 1638 or early 1639 and prob. met his wife there. They occupied the first house traditionally built by the English on Cape Cod below Sandwich. Giles took the oath of fidelity at Yarmouth and was named a surveyor of highways there 7 March 1642/3. Giles Hopkins of Yarmouth was conveyed 100 acres by his brother Caleb 28 Oct. 1644, and not long thereafter Giles moved to Eastham, where he served as highway surveyor in

1660, 1662 and 1671. He was successful in a defamation suit against William Leverich on 3 Oct. 1654 and served on juries in 1667-8.

The will of Giles Hopkins of Eastham, dated 19 Jan. 1682, and a codicil, dated 5 March 1688/9, were admitted to probate 16 April 1690. Mentioned were wife Catorne and sons Stephen (executor), William, Caleb and Joshua in the main will, and the wife and son Stephen in the codicil.

Children (HOPKINS) first four b. Yarmouth, last six b. Eastham:

15 i MARY^{3} b. November of 1640.
16 ii STEPHEN b. September of 1642.
iii JOHN b. in 1643; d. "being 3 months old."
17 iv ABIGAIL b. October of 1644.
18 v DEBORAH b. June of 1648.
19 vi CALEB b. January of 1650 <sic, 1650/51>.
vii RUTH b. June of 1653; may have been the Ruth who m. Eastham 26 May 1681 Samuel Mayo, b. Eastham 12 Oct. 1655; d. 29 Oct. 1738, ae. 83, bur. Orleans; son of Nathaniel and Hannah (Prence) Mayo; but no proof found.
20 viii JOSHUA b. June of 1657.
ix WILLIAM b. 9 Jan. 1660; Giles Hopkins left land and cattle to son Stephen with condition that "after my decease my son Stephen Hopkins shall take ye care and oversight and maintaine my son William Hopkins during his natural Life in a comfortable decent manner"; Giles also left two acres to his wife and son William for their life use, to go to son Joshua upon their deaths; William was evidently unm. and d.s.p. after 5 March 1688/9; no proof has been found and it appears most unlikely that this man was identical with William Hopkins (1660-1718) of Shelter Island NY, who m. Rebecca Havens.
x ELIZABETH b. November of 1664; d. "being a month old."

REFERENCES: MD 1:10, 13 (Bradford's List), 110-13 (his will); 7:236-7 (b's. all ch., d's. Elizabeth, John); 8:26 (b. S. Mayo), 13:85 (m.), 14:143, 36:161 (S. Mayo will). PLYMOUTH COLONY RECS 1:61, 134 (m.); 2:53; 4:15, 177; 5:58, 7:71, 8:28 (b. William). BRADFORD'S HIST (1959) pp. 442, 445. GMF (NEHGR) 2:272-3. MUNSEY-HOPKINS pp. 31-2. SAVAGE 2:461. TORREY'S MARRIAGES pp. 387, 802. TAG 48:4-5. GEN JOURNAL 13:153, 172. HARWICH BY PAINE p. 199. YARMOUTH BY SWIFT p. 74. CAPE COD LIBR 1:463-6, 627-30, 732-3; 2:1033-5. MAYO (JOHN) REV pp. 149-50. POPE'S PIONEERS p. 489. PLYMOUTH COL BY STRATTON pp. 307-8. MAY-FLOWER LOG pp. 145, 168, 181-2.

4 DEBORAH^2 HOPKINS (Stephen^1) b. Plymouth ca. 1624-5; d. prob. bef. 1674.

She m. Plymouth 23 April 1646 ANDREW RING, b. Leyden, Holland ca. 1618; d. Plymouth 22 Feb. 1692/3 in his 75th yr.; son of William and Mary (?Durrant) Ring. He m. (2) prob. Plymouth ca. 1674 Widow Lettice (-----) Morton, who d. Plymouth 23 Feb. 1690/91; she m. (1) John Morton, who d. 1673.

Dau. Deborah Hopkins was mentioned in the 1644 will of her father Stephen Hopkins and in the division of Stephen's personal estate by Caleb Hopkins and Myles Standish the same year. In said documents she was uniformly mentioned before Damaris, Ruth and Elizabeth, her sisters, indicating that she was the oldest of the four.

Andrew Ring prob. came to New England on the second *Mayflower* in 1629. He was a proprietor at Plymouth by 1640 and also had lands at Middleboro. He was admitted a freeman of Plymouth 2 June 1646 and was sworn as constable 1 June 1647. He served on the grand, trial and coroner's juries many times and was surveyor of highways in 1654, 1668 and 1673-4. At his death, he was listed as a member of the Plymouth Church.

By his will, dated 14 Dec. 1691 and proved 22 March 1692/3, Andrew Ring remembered elder son William; son Eliezer; grandson John Mayo (son of dau. Elizabeth, late of Eastham, deceased); granddaus. <unnamed> of said dau. Elizabeth Mayo; grandson Andrew Ring (son of Eliezer); dau. Mary Morton; granddau. Mary Morton (dau. of Mary); daus. Deborah and Susannah <both without surname>.

Children (RING) b. Plymouth:

21 i ELIZABETH^3 b. 19 April 1652.
22. ii WILLIAM b. ca. 1653.
23. iii ELEAZER
24 iv MARY b. ca. 1658.
v DEBORAH alive in 1691.
vi SUSANNA alive in 1691; poss. the woman of than given name who m. William Walker <see no. 39>, b. Eastham 2 Aug. 1659; d. there in Jan. 1743/4; son of William and Sarah (Snow) Walker and a desc. of Pilgrim Stephen Hopkins.

NOTE: No proof has been found that Samuel Ring who had children at Plymouth 1670-1694 was son of Andrew, as alleged by Davis in (PLYMOUTH) ANC LANDMARKS.

REFERENCES: MD 1:12-17 (Bradford's list), 4:114-19 (S. Hopkins' dist.), 193-8 (his will); 5:47-53; 13:86 (m.), 16:238 (b. Elizabeth). PLYMOUTH CH RECS 1:269 (d. Lettice), 275. PLYMOUTH COLONY RECS 1:166, 2:98, 101, 115,

158; 3:15, 49, 78, 215; 4:19; 5:18, 82, 115, 145, 166, 168, 182; 6:11, 60, 103-4, 107; 8:14 (b. Elizabeth). PLYMOUTH TOWN RECS 1:28, 111, 132, 151, 173. GEN ADVERTISER 3:91 (his will). TORREY'S MARRIAGES pp. 522, 626. GEN JOURNAL 13:172, 174. TAG 42:193-205. (PLYMOUTH) ANC LANDMARKS 2:216-217. AMERICANA ILLUSTRATED 33:274-5. NEHGR 102:47. SAVAGE 3:542. PLYMOUTH COL BY STRATTON p. 344. GMF (NEHGR) 2:271.

5 DAMARIS^2 HOPKINS (Stephen^1) b. prob. Plymouth after 1627; d. bet. Jan. 1665/6 and 18 Nov. 1669.

She m. Plymouth shortly after 10 June 1646 JACOB COOKE, b. in Holland ca. 1618; d. Plymouth bet. 11 and 18 Dec. 1675; son of Pilgrim Francis Cooke and Hester (Mayhieu) Cooke; Jacob m. (2) Plymouth 18 Nov. 1669 Elizabeth (Lettice) Shurtleff, b. ca. 1637; d. at Swansea 31 Oct. 1693 in 57th yr.; dau. of Thomas and Anne (-----) Lettice; Jacob Cooke had daus. Sarah and Rebecca by second wife Elizabeth; she m. (1) Plymouth 18 Oct. 1655 William Shirley <Shurtleff>; she m. (3) Plymouth 1 Jan. 1689 Hugh Cole.

Jacob Cooke came with his mother in the *Ann* in 1623. On 10 June 1646 a marriage contract between Jacob Cooke and Damarise Hopkins was recorded whereunder Francis Cooke would give them one hundred acres of land when they were married. On 14 July 1674 Jacob deposed that he was "aged fifty six years or there about."

The will of Jacob Cooke of Plymouth, dated 11 Dec. 1675, was proved 8 March 1676. He provided that "my engagement unto my Deare and loveing wife Elizabeth Cooke att or before my marriage with her be truely and honestly prformed unto her." He left livestock to wife Elizabeth "towards the bringing up of my three youngest Daughters." He also gave her the products of "the orchyard that I planted by or in the place I lived in att my first Marriage." He provided for eldest son Caleb Cooke, sons Jacob and Francis, and six daughters, who were named. The record was worn when transcribed by Bowman, and is read "my six Daughters viz, "Mary <worn>kah Cookes." Also mentioned were "my Cozen Daniell Wilcockes" and "my brother John Thompson." The widow and son Caleb were named executors. Inventory of the estate was taken 18 Dec. 1675 and presented to the court 8 March 1675/6.

Children (COOKE) b. Plymouth:

i ELIZABETH^3 b. 18 Jan. 1648/9.
ii CALEB b. 29 March 1651.
iii JACOB b. 26 March 1653.
iv MARY b. 12 Jan. 1657/8.
v MARTHA b. 16 March 1659/60.
vi FRANCIS b. 5 Jan. 1662/3.

vii RUTH b. 17 Jan. 1665/6; alive 11 Dec. 1675.
viii SARAH b. ca. 1671.
ix REBECCA alive 11 Dec. 1675.

NOTE: For record of the above children and their families see the volume on Pilgrim Francis Cooke and his descendants, to be published.

REFERENCES: MD 2:27-8 (m. contr.), 45-6 (dep.); 3:236-42 (his will), 13:204 (m. H. Cole), 15:27 (b. Elizabeth). PLYMOUTH COLONY RECS 7:57, 68, 75, 83, 87, 93, 98, 100, 129, 160, 163, 264; 8:5 (b. Elizabeth), 12 (b. Caleb), 15 (b. Jacob), 17 (b. Mary), 22 (b. Martha), 23 (b. Francis), 32 (b. Ruth, his 2nd m.). PLYMOUTH CH RECS 1:281 (d. Elizabeth). TORREY'S MARRIAGES pp. 168, 177-8, 462, 672, 694. GEN JOURNAL 13:168, 171-2. DAWES-GATES 2:244-6. SAVAGE 1:446-7. (PLYMOUTH) ANC LANDMARKS 2:69. GMF (NEHGR) 2:271. PLYMOUTH COL BY STRATTON pp. 270, 307. COOKE GEN pp. 8-9. MFIP COOKE no. 4. SMALL DESC 2:630-34.

THIRD GENERATION

6 MARK SNOW^{3} (Constance^{2} Hopkins, Stephen^{1}) b. Plymouth 9 May 1628; d. Eastham bet. 23 Nov. 1694 and 9 Jan. 1694/5.

He m. (1) Eastham 18 Jan. 1654 ANN COOKE, who d. Eastham 24 or 25 July 1656; dau. of Josiah and Elizabeth (Ring) (Deane) Cooke. The will of Josiah Cooke Sr., dated 22 Sept. 1673, mentioned grandchild Anna Snow.

He m. (2) Eastham 9 Jan. 1660 JANE PRENCE, b. Duxbury 1 Nov. 1637; d. bet. late May and 28 June 1712; dau. of Governor Thomas and Mary (Collier) Prence. Widow Jane Snow was admitted to the church at Brewster in April of 1701.

Mark Snow was listed among those fit to bear arms at Plymouth in 1643. He was admitted a freeman at Eastham 3 June 1657. He served as an administrator of the estate of his father in 1676/7 and of his brother-in-law Thomas Rogers <see no. 12> in 1678. Mark Snow was named selectman of Eastham almost every year between 1671 and 1690, and he also held office there as deputy, constable, highway surveyor, and member of the town council, and he served on several juries.

The will of Mark Snow, dated 23 Nov. 1694 and proved 16 Jan. 1694/5, remembered sons Nicholas, Thomas and Prence; wife Jane (named "sole executor") and grandchild Jonathan Snow. Jane Snow of Harwich, widow, in her will of 21 Dec. 1703, mentioned sons Nicholas, Thomas and Prince; Anne Attwood, grandchild Jane Nickerson, grandchild Jane Snow, and "my two" daus. Mary and Sarah. She named "brother" Jonathan Sparrow as executor, he being married to her half-sister Hannah (Prence) Mayo. The executor's account called her Jane Snow of Eastham and mentioned providing lodging for her from 26 Oct. to latter end of May following. The will was proved 2 July 1712, inventory having been taken 28 June 1712.

Children (SNOW) b. Eastham, one by first wife and eight by second wife:

25 i ANNAH^{4} b. 7 July 1656.
26 ii MARY b. 30 Nov. 1661.
27 iii NICHOLAS b. 6 Dec. 1663.
iv ELIZABETH b. 9 May 1666; d. Eastham 18 Jan. 1675.
28 v THOMAS b. 6 Aug. 1668.
vi SARAH b. 10 May 1671; mentioned in mother's will of 1703; n.f.r.
29 vii PRENCE b. 22 May 1674.
viii ELIZABETH b. 22 June 1676; d. Eastham 22 March 1677/8.
ix HANNAH b. 16 Sept. 1679; not mentioned in mother's will of 1703; n.f.r.

REFERENCES: MD 1:113, 4:245, 5:23 (1st m., b. Anna, d. 1st wife), 7:14-15 (2nd m., b's. 2nd through 9th ch., d's. Mary, Elizabeth), 15:34-8 (J. Cooke will), 17:201 (2nd m.), 18:55-6 (b. Anna, d. 1st wife), 193-7 (M. Snow, J. Snow wills); 21:32. Barnstable Co. PR 1:110-12 (Mark Snow), 3:271-4 (Jane Snow). PLYMOUTH COLONY RECS 3:78, 116-17; 4:148, 176; 5:92, 113, 144, 164-5, 186, 195, 220, 224, 230, 232, 257; 6:10, 35, 59, 84, 108, 129, 168, 186-7, 206-7, 211, 242; 7:83, 147; 8:15 (1st m.), 28 (2nd m.), 30 (b. dau. Anna, d. 1st wife), 58 (b. Thomas). GMF (NEHGR) 3:351-3. SAVAGE 4:138. TORREY'S MARRIAGES p. 692. CAPE COD HIST 2:373. PLYMOUTH COL BY STRATTON pp. 271-2, 341. CAPE COD LIBR 1:505, 529-33, 715. EASTHAM BY PRATT p. 21.

7 MARY SNOW^{3} (Constance^{2} Hopkins, Stephen^{1}) b. prob. Plymouth ca. 1630; d. suddenly at Eastham 28 April 1704, according to journal of her son John Paine.

She m. bef. April of 1651 THOMAS PAINE, who d. Eastham 16 Aug. 1706, "aged," the year erroneously given as 1707 in his son's journal. He is believed to be the son of Thomas Paine who settled at Yarmouth in 1639. Nicholas Snow mentioned "son Thomas Paine" <i.e. son-in-law> in his will of 14 Nov. 1676.

Thomas Paine is said to have come to New England at the age of ten and to have lost the sight of an eye by an arrow. He was resident at Eastham in 1653 and made a freeman of Plymouth Colony 1 June 1658. He and Giles Hopkins <no. 3> served as surveyors of highways for Eastham in 1662. On 5 June 1671 Thomas was named water bailiff of Plymouth Colony and served many years in that post, requiring him to regulate fishing at Cape Cod. On 8 June 1664 he was named deputy to the Plymouth Colony Court and served several times through 1690. He also served Eastham as treasurer, clerk and selectman. In 1696 he represented that town at the General Court and on 14 March of that year purchased a home in Boston. He presumably res. there until he sold the same on 13 Oct. 1697 and moved back to Eastham. He was a cooper and builder of mills.

The will of Thomas Paine, dated 12 May 1705 and proved 2 Oct. 1706, left mills, house and housing and specified lands to son Nicholas Paine; ten shillings to dau. Mary, wife of Israel Cole; and the residuary estate equally to Samll Paine (executor), Thomas Paine (executor), Elisha Paine, John Paine, Nicholas Paine, James Paine, Joseph Paine, Dorcas Vickerie (wife of Benjamin), and three eldest children of dau. Mary (wife of Israel Cole), viz. James Rogers, Mary Cole and Abigail Yeats.

Children (PAINE) all prob. b. Eastham:

30 i MARY^4.
31 ii SAMUEL b. ca. 1652.
32 iii THOMAS b. ca. 1656-7.
iv ELEAZER b. 10 March 1658, per Plymouth Colony Recs; n.f.r.; it has been suggested in PAINE FAM REC that the given name in the record was a mistaken rendering for Elisha, next below.
33 v ELISHA.
34 vi JOHN b. 14 March 1660/61.
35 vii NICHOLAS.
36 viii JAMES b. 6 July 1665.
37 ix JOSEPH.
38 x DORCAS.

REFERENCES: MD 8:230 (her d.), 9:50 (his d.), 15:189-190 (his will). PLYMOUTH COLONY RECS 3:137; 4:15, 61, 176, 187; 5:36, 57, 60, 62, 92, 104, 145, 278; 6:36, 59, 61, 240, 242; 8:27 (b. Eleazer). Barnstable Co. PR 3:360-62 (Thomas Paine). GMF (NEHGR) 2:767-9, 3:354-5. TORREY'S MARRIAGES p. 552. CAPE COD HIST 1:240; 2:188, 277. PAINE FAM REC 2:12-17, 43. PAINE (ROBERT TREAT) FAM pp. 7-10. PAYNES OF HAMILTON pp. 13-21. CAPE COD LIBR 1:478-85, 2:1088-9. SAVAGE 3:336-7.

8 SARAH SNOW^3 (Constance^2 Hopkins, Stephen^1) b. prob. Plymouth ca. 1632; d. prob. Eastham after 8 March 1697.

She m. Eastham 25 Feb. 1654/5 WILLIAM WALKER, b. in England ca. 1620, his origins unk.; d. prob. Eastham bet. 8 March 1697 and 25 Oct. 1703. Their marriage date is given in an earlier volume of Eastham vital records as "24 Jenuary <worn>."

William Walker is perh. the man of that name who came on the Elizabeth in 1635 at the age of 15 and was at Hingham in 1643, when his name was on the list of those able to bear arms. In 1653 he was impressed to serve as seaman on a barque commanded by Richard Knowles, in anticipation of trouble with the Dutch. He was admitted a freeman of Plymouth Colony on 3 June 1656. According to the Snow Gen. (GMF), the family lived on the north bank of the Great Pond at Eastham, about 500 yards west of Sarah's father Nicholas Snow.

William Walker served as excise officer, highway surveyor, tithing man and constable at Eastham. On 3 March 1662/3 Ralph Smith was fined for striking William Walker during a dispute over a whale. Samuel Smith, who was husband of Sarah (Snow) Walker's first cousin <see no. 15>, was fined the same day for saying that he could find it in his heart to thrust a pen into William Walker.

On 2 June 1685 William Walker of Eastham was excused from military training, "having two natural sons in the training band and one killed in the warrs and some weaknesses and infirmity of body."

The will of William Walker, dated 8 March 1697 and proved 25 Oct. 1703, mentioned wife Sarah, sons William and Jabez and dau. Elizabeth Walker, to whom was devised "the land where she lives."

Children (WALKER) b. Eastham:

i JOHN^4 b. 24 April (as rec. Plymouth) or 24 Nov. (as rec. Eastham) 1655; killed by Indians at Pawtucket 26 March 1676; an earlier Eastham volume gives his birthdate as "3 December 16<worn>."
ii WILLIAM b. 12 Oct. 1657; undoubtedly d. bef. another of same name b. 1659.
39 iii WILLIAM b. 2 Aug. 1659.
iv SARAH b. 30 July 1662; poss. m. Barnstable 19 Nov. 1685 Benjamin Lumbart.
v ELIZABETH b. 28 Sept. 1664; mentioned as Elizabeth Walker in father's will of 1697; n.f.r.
40 vi JABEZ b. 8 July 1668.

REFERENCES: MD 5:23 (m.), 6:206 (m., b's. all ch.), 11:98 (poss. m. Sarah), 17:70-71 (b. John), 200 (b. 2nd William). Barnstable Co. PR 2:259-61 (William Walker). PLYMOUTH COLONY RECS 3:78, 101; 4:34, 67, 101, 151, 181;

Deliverance Prown <sic> included notes and bonds of David Adams Jr., dated 14 Jan. 1735/6; Joshua Pain, dated 2 May 1729, and John Pain, dated 9 Aug. 1734.

Administration of the estate of Mrs. Rebeckah Pain of Canterbury was granted 13 Feb. 1759 to Mr. Elisha Pain of Canterbury.

Children (PAINE) first and fourth through seventh rec. Eastham; third bp. Barnstable; eighth and tenth rec. Canterbury CT; rest from will:

161 i ABIGAIL^{5} b. 5 Jan. 1686.
162 ii REBECCA b. ca. 1690.
163 iii ABRAHAM bp. 1691.
164 iv ELISHA b. 29 Dec. 1693.
165 v MARY b. 1 Feb. 1695/6.
166 vi SOLOMON b. 16 May 1698.
167 vii DORCAS b. 24 Feb. 1699/1700.
168 viii CONSTANCE b. 17 Feb. 1704/5.
ix HANNAH prob. unm. on 15 Jan. 1729/30, date of father's will; said to have m. ----- Watts, per PAINE FAM REC and other published sources, but no evidence found; Hannah Paine was received by the Canterbury Church 6 Aug. 1721; n.f.r.
169 x JOHN b. 12 July 1707.

REFERENCES: MD 6:16 (m., b's. Abigail, Elisha), 201 (b's Mary, Solomon, Dorcas); 8:89 (her b.). Windham CT PR 2:127 (Elisha Paine). Plainfield CT PR 4:143 (Rebeckah Pain). CSL Barbour Index:Canterbury (his d., her d., b's. Constance, John). MSR (NEHGR) pp. 612 (bp. Abigail), 613 (bp. Abraham). CANTERBURY CT CH RECS pp. 1, 6, 11, 39, 41, 107. PAINE FAM REC 2:47-8. PAYNES OF HAMILTON pp. 22-27. GMF (NEHGR) 2:770-71, 3:355, 893. TORREY'S MARRIAGES p. 551. SAVAGE 3:332. DOANE GEN 1:21, 25, 38-41. CHATHAM BY SMITH p. 288. PAYNE (BARNABAS) GEN p. 7. CAPE COD LIBR 1:48 Cape Cod Ms (Paine).

✓ 34 JOHN PAINE^{4} (Mary Snow^{3}, Constance^{2} Hopkins, Stephen^{1}) b. Eastham 14 March 1660/61; d. there 18 Oct. (per VR) or 26 Oct. 1731, ae. 70-7-12, (per Orleans t.s.).

He m. (1) Eastham 14 March 1688/9 BENNET FREEMAN, b. 10 March 1670/71, as computed from her age at death recorded in her husband's journal; d. "suddenly" at Eastham 30 May 1716, ae. 45-2-20; dau. of John and Mary (Prence) Freeman and a desc. of Pilgrim William Brewster.

He m. (2) Eastham 3 March 1719/20 ALICE MAYO, b. there 29 April 1686; d. Eastham 12 Oct. 1748 in 63rd yr.; dau. of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Wixam) Mayo and a desc. of Pilgrim William Brewster. John was called "Sr." in the rec. of his second marriage.

Son John was mentioned in the 1705 will of Thomas Paine. John Paine took the freeman's oath in June of 1689 and res. at Eastham. A boat builder, he held positions there of deacon, selectman, treasurer, clerk and representative to the General Court. He kept a journal containing family recs. which has been published in MD.

The will of John Paine, dated 14 July 1731 and proved 30 Aug. 1732, mentioned wife Alice; sons John (executor), William (executor), Theophilus and Thomas Paine; daus. Mary Freeman, Sarah Knowles and Elizabeth Snow, and unmarried daus. Rebecca, Mercy, Alice and Hannah Paine. Alice Paine of Eastham was named guardian of minor daus. Hannah and Alice Pain on 18 April 1732.

Children (PAINE) first thirteen by Bennet, last five by Alice; all rec. Eastham:

170 i JOHN^{5} b. 18 Sept. 1690.
✓ 171 ii MARY b. 28 Jan. 1692/3.
172 iii WILLIAM b. 6 June 1695.
iv BENJAMIN b. 22 Feb. 1696/7; d. Eastham 15 Dec. 1713 from illness following a boating accident on 8 Dec. 1713.
173 v SARAH b. 14 April 1699.
vi <child> b. 28 Jan. 1700/01; stillborn.
174 vii ELIZABETH b. 2 June 1702.
175 viii THEOPHILUS b. 7 Feb. 1703/4.
ix JOSIAH b. 8 March 1705/6; d. Eastham 7 May 1728.
x NATHANIEL b. 18 Nov. 1707; d. 4 Nov. 1728.
176 xi REBECCA b. 30 Oct. 1709.
177 xii MERCY b. 3 April 1712.
xiii BENJAMIN b. 18 May 1714; d. Eastham 14 Jan. 1716/17.
xiv HANNAH b. 11 Jan. 1720/21; d. Eastham 28 Jan. 1723/4.
xv JAMES b. 17 Dec. 1723/4 <sic>; d. Eastham 23 Feb. 1723/4.
178 xvi THOMAS b. 6 April 1725.
xvii ALICE (twin) b. 4 Dec. 1728; d. Eastham 18 April 1777; m. there 12 Dec. 1775 JAMES KNOWLES, b. Chatham 11 Nov. 1719; d. there bet. 14 June 1781 and 8 Jan. 1782; son of Richard and Martha (Cobb) Knowles and a desc. of Pilgrim William Brewster; Alice was James' fourth wife; he m. (1) Eastham 25 Nov. 1742 Sarah Doane; he m. (2) Eastham 20 July 1749 Ruth Mayo, he m. (3) Eastham 19 Nov. 1767 Sarah (Linnell) Mayo; he m. (5) Chatham 2 or 28 Jan. 1779 Hannah Doane, who survived him; no known children; the will of James Knowles of Chatham, dated 14 June 1781 and proved 8 Jan. 1782, mentioned friend Paul Mayo (executor), wife Hannah, dau.-in-law Alice

Nickerson and her heirs; sister Rebecca Knowles; nephew Richard Godfrey; surviving heirs of brother Cornelius Knowles; deceased sisters Martha and Mercy; and Ruth Mayo, dau. of Paul.

xviii HANNAH (twin) b. 4 Dec. 1728; d. bet. March of 1807 and March of 1808; mentioned in father's will of 1731; unm.; Eastham school teacher.

REFERENCES: MD 4:32 (b. 2nd wife), 182 (b. J. Knowles); 8:4 (t.s. 1st wife), 14-15 (b's. 1st through 5th and 7th through 13th ch., d. 1st wife, d's. Benjamin, Benjamin again, Josiah, Nathaniel), 180-184 (journal); 9:49-51 (journal), 97-9 (journal), 137-40 (journal); 15:143 (2nd m., b's. last 5 ch., d's. Hannah, James; his d.), 20:95 (1st m. J. Knowles), 24:139 (2nd m. J. Knowles), 25:115-19 (his estate), 32:67 (3rd m. J. Knowles). CHATHAM VR pp. 1 (b. J. Knowles), 10 (int. 2nd m. J. Knowles), 65 (int. 3rd m. J. Knowles), 83 (int. Elles), 85-6 (int. 5th m. J. Knowles), 88 (5th m. J. Knowles), 113 (5th m. J. Knowles). Barnstable Co. PR 5:13-15, 41-7 (John Paine), 14:161 (James Knowles). PAINE FAM REC 2:54-6. FREEMAN GEN pp. 27-8, 43-4. GMF (NEHGR) 1:806, 810; 2:454, 772-3; 3:355. TORREY'S MARRIAGES p. 551. SAVAGE 3:333. CAPE COD HIST 2:389. MAYO (JOHN) REV pp. 37, 137-8. CAPE COD LIBR 1:483-4, 516, 604. Cape Cod Ms (Paine).

35 **NICHOLAS PAINE^4** (Mary Snow^3, Constance^2 Hopkins, Stephen^1) b. prob. Eastham; d. there bet. 29 July 1732 and 16 Jan. 1732/3.

He m. prob. Eastham ca. 1699 HANNAH HIGGINS, b. prob. Eastham ca. 1672; d. there 24 Jan. 1731/2; dau. of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Rogers) Higgins and a desc. of Pilgrim Thomas Rogers.

Nicholas Paine was listed as an adult inhabitant of Eastham in 1695 and was mentioned in the 1705 will of his father. Nicholas Paine and Hannah of Eastham on 29 Jan. 1714/15 conveyed land there given to "our mother" Elizabeth Rogers under will of "our grandfather" Lt. Joseph Rogers. Nicholas was a miller and farmer.

The will of Nicholas Paine of Eastham, dated 29 July 1732 and proved 16 Jan. 1732/3, mentioned dau. Priscilla and her husband William Norcut; grandchildren Thankful Smith and Lois Freeman; daus. Abigail Higgins and Lydia Young, and "cousin" <i.e. nephew> William Paine.

Children (PAINE) first six rec. Eastham; last from his will:

179 i THANKFUL^5 b. 14 March 1699/1700.
180 ii PRISCILLA b. 16 Oct. 1701.

iii PHILLIP b. 18 Nov. 1704; d. Eastham 10 April 1725.
181 iv LOIS b. 29 Sept. 1705.
182 v ABIGAIL b. 3 Aug. 1707.
vi HANNAH b. 24 Sept. 1709; not mentioned in father's will; n.f.r.
183 vii LYDIA.

REFERENCES: MD 4:33-4 (b's. 1st 6 ch.; her d.). Barnstable Co. PR 5:174 (Nicholas Paine). PAINE FAM REC 2:57-9. GMF (NEHGR) 2:773, 3:355, 885, 893, 899. HIGGINS GEN pp. 48-9. TORREY'S MARRIAGES p. 552. MF2 pp. 172-3, 216-18. CAPE COD LIBR 1:484. Cape Cod Ms (Paine).

36 **JAMES PAINE^4** (Mary Snow^3, Constance^2 Hopkins, Stephen^1) b. prob. Eastham 6 July 1665; d. Barnstable 12 Nov. 1728.

He m. Barnstable 9 April 1691 BETHIAH THACHER, b. Yarmouth 10 July 1671; d. Barnstable 8 July 1734; dau. of John and Rebecca (Winslow) Thacher.

James Paine was remembered in the 1705 will of his father. Col. John Thacher of Yarmouth, by will of 25 April 1713, bequeathed to dau. Bethiah Paine "besides what I have formerly Given her mr Perkins.s 2d volum or booke and also Ten shillings of my Estate." James Paine was admitted a townsman in 1689 at Barnstable where he was active as schoolteacher, miller, cooper, soldier and clerk. He served as a military clerk in the 1691 expedition against Canada, and his heirs received therefor in 1736 a grant of land in Maine.

Letters of administration were issued in the estate of Mr. James Paine of Barnstable to Mrs. Bethiah Paine and Mr. Thomas Paine 20 Jan. 1728/9. Thomas was named substitute administrator of the estate of Thomas Crocker, succeeding his father James on 21 Jan. 1728/9. Settlement of the estate of James Paine occurred 31 Oct. 1729 when Thomas Paine, Bethiah Paine, Mary Freeman and Experience Hunt, his children, entered into an agreement with widow Bethiah Paine. Samuel Hunt, husband of Experience, also signed.

The will of Bithiah Paine of Barnstable, dated 4 Sept. 1733 and proved 31 July 1734, mentioned son Thomas, three daus. Bithiah Paine (executrix), Mary Hawes and Experience Hunt; granddau. Rebecca Hunt and grandchildren James Freeman and Bithiah Freeman (both under 21). An inventory, dated 7 Oct. 1734, was sworn to by Bethiah Russell 22 May 1742. The undated account mentioned Dr. Russell, Sister Hawes and Brother Hawes. Receipts were given by Edmund and Mary Hawes, 7 Oct. 1734; Samuel and Experience Hunt, 1 Aug. 1734; Samuel Hunt of Weymouth, 16 Dec. 1734, and Thomas Paine, 20 Dec. 1734; the Hunts again, 10 Nov. 1743; John and Bethiah Hinckley, 11 March 1745, and James Freeman, 12 Nov. 1747.

Mrs. Sarah Pain, "formerly of Long Iland but now of Canterbury," was named guardian of John Pain, son of Mr. John Pain "of Long Iland," deceased, 13 April 1756. Her bondsman was Capt. Timothy Wheeler of Plainfield CT.

Children (PAINE) first and third rec. Canterbury CT; first four bp. there; last from probate rec.:

i SARAH^{6} b. 6 Nov. 1730.
ii JOSEPH bp. 29 April 1733.
iii SIBEL b. 18 Jan. 1734/5; prob. m. Thomas Dimmock.
iv ESTHER bp. 18 April 1736.
v JOHN.

REFERENCES: CSL Barbour Index:Canterbury (m., b's. 1st and 3rd ch.). CANTERBURY CT CH RECS pp.43, 65 (bp. Sarah), 67 (bp. Joseph), 69 (bp. Cibil), 71 (bp. Esther), 170 (prob. m. Sibil). CSL Ch Rec:Hartford (bp. Sarai Church). Plainfield CT PR 4:52 (John Paine). SALMON RECS p. 36. BOSTON NEWS OBITS 3:199. HARWICH BY PAINE pp. 358, 361-2. NE COLONIAL CLERGY p. 156. MID COL COLONIAL CLERGY p. 286. PAINE FAM REC 2:164-5. PAYNES OF HAMILTON p. 25. HARTFORD CT BY BARBOUR p. 172. GMF (NEHGR) 2:779. GCTF (NEHGR) 1:389. DOANE GEN 1:41.

170 JOHN PAINE^{5} (John^{4}, Mary Snow^{3}, Constance^{2} Hopkins, Stephen^{1}) b. Eastham 18 Sept. 1690; d. there in Nov. 1771, per memorandum cited in PAINE FAM REC.

He m. (1) <name unknown>.

He m. (2) Eastham 8 Dec. 1743 THANKFUL (HOPKINS) LINNELL <see no. 344>, b. Harwich in April 1700; d. prob. Eastham bet. 1743 and 28 Nov. 1754; dau. of Stephen and Sarah (Howes) Hopkins, a desc. of Pilgrim Stephen Hopkins and a third cousin of husband John; she m. (1) Harwich 6 Oct. 1726 Thomas Linnell and had children by him, for whom see no. 344.

He m. (3) Eastham 28 Nov. 1754 "Mrs. Mary Treat", prob. MERCY (HIGGINS) TREAT, who m. (1), int. rec. Eastham 19 March 1719/20, Joshua Treat, b. Eastham 17 March 1692; son of the Rev. Samuel and Elizabeth (Mayo) Treat; Mercy is otherwise unidentified. She is very likely the widow Mercy Paine listed as a member of the Orleans Church in 1774. She was identified in TREAT FAM as that Mercy Higgins b. Eastham 20 March 1697 to Isaac and Lydia (Collins) Higgins. It seems certain, however, that Mercy Higgins, dau. of Isaac, m. Samuel Smith <see no. 254>.

John Paine was a householder at Eastham as early as 1714 and was mentioned in his father's 1731 will. He served as a representative to the General Court from Eastham for seven terms, and he bore the title "Mr." in the records of his second and third marriages.

No probate recs. for John Paine or his wives have been found in Barnstable Co.

The will of Samuel Paine of Eastham, undoubtedly son of John, dated 19 Jan. 1784 and proved 4 May 1784, mentioned wife Mary; brother Nathaniel, and sisters Elizabeth Sparrow, Bennet Crosby, and "Sister" Green.

Children (PAINE) pursuant to will of son Samuel:

i ELIZABETH^{6} m. ----- Sparrow.
ii MARY m. Warren Green; to Middle Haddam and Middletown CT.
iii BENNET m. Abial Crosby.
iv NATHANIEL m. Thankful Young <dau. of no. 146-v>.
v SAMUEL d. prob. Eastham bet. 19 Jan. and 4 May 1784; m. Mary Gould.

REFERENCES: MD 6:82 (b. 2nd wife), 8:244 (b. J. Treat), 9:12 (b. M. Higgins), 10:166, 16:70 (3rd m.), 17:141 (m. Mary), 20:156 (2nd m.), 24:111 (m. Samuel), 28:77 (int. Nathaniel), 110 (int., 1st m. 3rd wife); 31:174 (m. Bennet). HARWICH VR pp. 20 (b. 2nd wife), 37 (int. 2nd m.), 38 (2nd wife's 1st m.). Barnstable Co. PR 23:243-4 (Samuel Paine). PAINE FAM REC 2:163-4, 264-5. GMF (NEHGR) 1:81, 2:148, 779; 3:898 (Joshua Treat ident.). TORREY'S MARRIAGES pp. 369, 753. TREAT FAM pp. 167, 179. HIGGINS GEN p. 84. HIGGINS SUPP pp. 10-11. FREEMAN GEN p. 43. NYGBR 71:238, 72:52. Young (John) Ms p. 23. Cape Cod Ms (Paine).

171 MARY PAINE^{5} (John^{4}, Mary Snow^{3}, Constance^{2} Hopkins, Stephen^{1}) b. Eastham 28 Jan. 1692/3; d. Eastham 5 March 1770, ae. 76, bur. old cem.

She m. Eastham 9 Oct. 1712 SAMUEL FREEMAN, b. Eastham 1 Sept. 1688; d. there 30 May 1751 in 63rd yr., bur. with wife; son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Sparrow) Freeman.

Samuel Freeman was called "Junr." in the marriage record, and "Deacon" in his death record. Mary Freeman was mentioned in her father's 1731 will.

The will of Samuel Freeman, dated 28 Jan. 1750/51 and proved 2 July 1751, mentioned wife Mary; sons James (executor) and Barnabas; "my seven" daus. Elizabeth Snow, Alice Brown, Rebecca Walker, and Hannah Freeman, all married, and Mary, Priscilla, and Abigail Freeman, all unm.

Children (FREEMAN) all rec. Eastham:

i ELIZABETH^{6} b. 4 March 1714/15; m. Samuel Snow <see no. 305>.

not the Samuel Freeman who m. Mary Clark ?

ii SAMUEL b. 22 Nov. 1716; m. Elizabeth Knowles; to Chatham CT.
iii JAMES b. 16 Sept. 1718; d. Eastham 22 July 1754.
iv ALICE (twin) b. 27 Feb. 1719/20; m. George Brown <see no. 225>.
v REBECCA (twin) b. 27 Feb. 1719/20; m. Samuel Walker <see no. 200>.
vi MARY b. 24 Feb. 1722; d. Eastham 18 Oct. 1754.
vii PRISCILLA b. 16 Dec. 1725; m. Nathaniel Atwood.
viii HANNAH b. 14 March 1726/7; m. Gideon Freeman.
ix MARCY b. 21 March 1729/30; d. Eastham 5 Nov. 1736.
x ABIGAIL b. 9 July 1731; m. John Atwood <see no. 118>.
xi BARNABAS b. 12 Sept. 1733; d. Eastham 8 Oct. 1736.
xii BARNABAS b. 23 Feb. 1736/7; m. Bethiah Knowles; Rev. service from MA.

NOTE: FREEMAN GEN shows a thirteenth child, unnamed and stillborn, but no primary rec. has been found.

REFERENCES: MD 6:203-4 (m., his d., b's all ch., d's. James, Mary, Marcy, 1st Barnabas), 8:3 (his d., her d.), 17:79 (m. Elizabeth), 24:138 (m. Hanah), 27:106 (int. Priscilla), 28:75 (int. Abigail), 29:11 (m. Alice), 12 (int. Rebecka); 32:111 (m. Barnabus). Barnstable Co. PR 8:483-5, 9:161 (Samuel Freeman). FREEMAN GEN pp. 43, 365, 367-8. PAINE FAM REC 2:56. GMF (NEHGR) 2:456, 476, 772, 3:718, 888. TORREY'S MARRIAGES p. 283. DAR PATRIOT INDEX 1:250.

172 WILLIAM PAINE⁵ (John⁴, Mary Snow³, Constance² Hopkins, Stephen¹) b. Eastham 6 June 1695; d. in service at Louisburg in Aug. or Sept. 1746, ae. 51.

He m. (1) Barnstable, pub. 2 Sept. 1727, SARAH BACON, b. Barnstable 6 Jan. 1707/8; d. Eastham 16 Jan. 1743/4; dau. of Nathaniel and Ruth (Doggett) Bacon and sister of Hannah Bacon who m. Theophilus Paine <see no. 175>, brother of William. The will of Nathaniel Bacon of Barnstable, dated 10 Nov. 1729, mentioned dau. Sarah Paine.

He m. (2) Eastham 15 Jan. 1744/5 ELIZABETH (OSBORN) MYRICK, bp. Sandwich 1 Jan. 1715/16; d. Barrington NS 24 May 1798; dau. of Samuel and Jedida (Smith) Osborn; she m. (1) Eastham 23 Jan 1733/4 William Myrick <see no. 390>, son of Nathaniel and Alice (Freeman) Merrick and a desc. of Pilgrim Stephen Hopkins; she had children by William Myrick, for whom see no. 390; Elizabeth m. (3) Eastham 10 Nov. 1749 Edmund Doane, b. Eastham 20 April 1718; d. Barrington NS 20 Nov. 1806; son of Israel and Ruth (Freeman) Doane and a desc. of Pilgrim William Brewster.

William Paine was mentioned in his father's will of 1731. He and his first wife moved from Barnstable to Eastham ca. 1729, and he served there as representative to the General Court for many years, beginning in 1731, and as justice, from 1738. He was commissioned a Lieutenant 4 Nov. 1745 and was called "Esq." in the rec. of his second marriage.

Administration of the estate of William Paine, late of Eastham and insolvent, was granted to his brother Theophilus Paine 20 Jan. 1746/7.

Children (PAINE) first four rec. Eastham, the record noting the first b. Barnstable, rest b. Eastham; last per historian Josiah Paine; first four by Sarah, last by Elizabeth:

i SARAH⁶ b. 17 Sept. 1728; m. Thomas Sturges Jr. (Rev. service from MA).
ii RUTH b. 23 March 1729/30; d. 21 Sept. 1736.
iii JOSIAH b. 20 June 1732.
iv JEDIDA b. 13 May 1734.
v WILLIAM b. 1746; m. (1) Lucy Taylor; m. (2) Sarah Isaacs; he d. New York NY 12 March 1812, ae. 66, per PAINE FAM REC; he and second wife were parents of John Howard Payne, actor and poet.

REFERENCES: MD 2:215 (b. 1st wife), 8:245 (b. E. Doane), 15:206, 16:200 (b's. 1st 4 ch., d. 1st wife), 17:141 (2nd wife's m. to W. Myrick), 20:158 (2nd m., m. Sarah), 24:88 (2nd wife's m. to E. Doane), 34:118 (1st m.). Sandwich Ch Recs p. 18 (bp. 2nd wife). Barnstable Co. PR 5:374-5 (Nathaniel Bacon), 7:31 (William Paine). PAINE FAM REC 2:164-6, 225-32, 285-7. GMF (NEHGR) 2:779. FREEMAN GEN p. 43. CHATHAM BY SMITH p. 313. DOANE GEN 1:75, 508-9, 511-15. BARNSTABLE FAMS 1:26-7. CAPE COD LIBR 1:879-80, 882-3. CAPE COD HIST 2:390. DAR PATRIOT INDEX 1:659. DAB 14:327-9. Cape Cod Ms (Paine).

173 SARAH PAINE⁵ (John⁴, Mary Snow³, Constance² Hopkins, Stephen¹) b. Eastham 14 April 1699; d. there 12 July 1772.

She m. Eastham 13 March 1717/18 JOSHUA KNOWLES, b. Eastham 6 July 1696; d. there 27 May 1786; son of John and Mary (Sears) Knowles. Joshua m. (2) Truro 27 Dec 1774 Phebe Atwood, otherwise unidentified.

Dau. Sarah Knowles was mentioned in John Paine's will of 1731. This family res. at Eastham.

The will of Joshua Knowles, gentleman of Eastham, dated 2 Nov. 1778 and proved 26 June 1786, mentioned wife Phebe, heirs of son Jesse, son Joshua, heirs of son Josiah,

(Page 2 before this)

Get 34

John Paine

(dau Mary

b. 28 Jan 16[illegible]

Deac. Saml Freeman IV

son Saml V

m Mary Chase

Children (PAINE) all rec. Barnstable:

i JAMES[5] b. 24 March 1691/2; d. Barnstable 13 July 1711, ae. 20 yrs., bur. Lothrop Hill Cem., Barnstable; unm.

184 ii THOMAS b. 9 April 1694.

iii BETHIAH b. 22 Feb. 1695/6; d. Barnstable 29 July 1697.

iv BETHIAH b. 23 May 1698; d. after 2 Dec. 1755; m. Barnstable 11 Dec. 1735 SAMUEL RUSSELL, b. Barnstable 1 May 1699; d. there bet. 25 Feb. 1754 and 2 Dec. 1755; son of the Rev. Jonathan and Martha (Moody) Russell; Samuel was a physician and minister; the will of Samuel Russell of Barnstable, dated 25 Feb. 1754 and proved 2 Dec. 1755, mentioned wife Bethiah (executrix), brother Jonathan Russell, brother Moody Russell, Eleazer Russell (son of brother Eleazer), Jonathan Russell (son of brother Jonathan), John Russell (grandson of brother John) and John Dun.

185 v MARY b. 13 Aug. 1700.

186 vi EXPERIENCE b. 17 March 1702/3.

vii REBECCA b. 8 April 1705; d. Barnstable 30 June 1726; unm.

REFERENCES: MD 11:131 (m., b's. all ch., d's. James, Bethiah, Rebecca), 22:110-13 (J. Thacher will), 33:127 (m. Bethiah). YARMOUTH VR 1:32 (her b.). MSR (NEHGR) pp. 613 (bp. James Jr.), 614 (bp's. Thomas, Bethia), 615 (bp. Bethia), 617 (bp. Mary). Barnstable Co. PR 4:478-9, 5:105-6 (James Paine); 5:183-4 (Bethiah Paine); 9:217 (Samuel Russell). PAINE FAM REC 2:59-60. PAINE (ROBERT TREAT) GEN pp. 11-13. NYGBR 42:82, 253-4, 43:50. GMF (NEHGR) 2:773-4, 3:355. SAVAGE 3:332. TORREY'S MARRIAGES pp. 551, 733. CAPE COD LIBR 1:484. Cape Cod Ms (Paine).

IV

37 JOSEPH PAINE[4] (Mary Snow[3], Constance[2] Hopkins, Stephen[1]) b. prob. Eastham; d. there 1 Oct. 1712.

He m., rec. both at Harwich and Eastham, 27 May 1691 PATIENCE SPARROW, b. Eastham bef. 25 Oct. 1675; d. Barnstable 25 Oct. 1745, "above 70 yrs."; dau. of Jonathan and Hannah (Prence) (Mayo) Sparrow and a desc. of Pilgrim William Brewster. She m. (2) Barnstable 23 Nov. 1715 John Jenkins, b. there 13 Nov. 1659; d. 8 July 1736, per Barnstable East Church rec.; son of John and Mary (-----) (Ewer) Jenkins. John Jenkins m. (1) Mary Parker, b. Barnstable 1 April 1658; dau. of Robert and Sarah (James)

Mayflower

(2) C3 69 M38

Parker. Patience (Sparrow) (Paine) Jenkins had dau. Patience Jenkins (b. Barnstable 6 Oct. 1717).

Joseph Paine was mentioned in the 1705 will of his father. Dau. Patience <no surname given> was mentioned in the will of Capt. Jonathan Sparrow of Eastham, dated 10 March 1706/7. Joseph Pain was one of the eight founders of the Brewster Church 16 Oct. 1700. Patience Paine was admitted a member of the church 22 June 1701. Joseph served as selectman and town clerk of Harwich.

An inventory of the intestate estate of Ensign Joseph Paine of Harwich was taken 16 Nov. 1712, and widow Patience was named administratrix 27 Jan. 1712/13. On 14 April 1718 the estate was divided to widow Patience, eldest son Ebenezer, sons Joseph, Richard, Thomas and Jonth; daus. Hanah Russel (wife of Philip), Dorcas Paine, Pheby Paine, Reliance Paine and Experience Paine.

The will of John Jenkins of Barnstable, dated 15 Dec. 1730 and proved 3 Aug. 1736, mentioned, among others, wife Patience (executrix) and "daughter-in-law" Experience Pain.

Children (PAINE) all rec. Harwich, first four also rec. Eastham:

187 i EBENEZER[5] b. 8 April 1692.

188 ii HANNAH b. 5 July 1694.

189 iii JOSEPH b. 29 March 1697.

190 iv RICHARD b. 25 March 1699

191 v DORCAS b. 27 May 1701.

192 vi PHEBE b. 30 July 1703.

193 vii RELIANCE b. 27 Jan. 1705/6.

viii THOMAS (twin) b. 1 Dec. 1708; bp. 5 Dec. 1708; mentioned in 1718 division of father's estate; n.f.r.

ix MARY (twin) b. 1 Dec. 1708; bp. 5 Dec. 1708; n.f.r.

194 x JONATHAN b. 10 Dec. 1710.

195 xi EXPERIENCE b. 27 May 1713.

REFERENCES: MD 4:209-10 (m., b's. all ch.), 4:244-8 (bp's. 7 youngest ch.), 6:236 (b. J. Jenkins), 7:19, 235-6 (m., his d., b's. 1st 4 ch.); 9:98 (his d.), 11:99 (b. M. Parker), 14:193-203 (her b. and parents), 227 (her 2nd m.); 18:201 (b. J. Jenkins), 19:111, 25:124-6 (his est.). HARWICH VR p. 9 (m., b's. all ch.). Barnstable Co. PR 3:112, 4:396 (Joseph Paine); 5:267-9 (John Jenkins). PAINE FAM REC 2:60-61. GMF (NEHGR) 2:774, 794; 3:355, 885, 893. TORREY'S MARRIAGES pp. 551, 694. SAVAGE 3:333. ACKLEY-BOSWORTH ANC p. 42. DAWES-GATES 2:768. HARWICH BY PAINE pp. 128, 134-5, 171, 173. MAYO (JOHN) REV p. 135. CAPE COD LIBR 1:76-8, 484-5. Cape Cod Ms (Jenkins, Paine).

34 John Paine m Bennett Freeman / Their dau Mary m. Deacon Samuel Freeman IV /.

Saml Freeman V m Mary Chase

Vol II by Robert Chas. Anderson

F 7 A52 (1995) (WI 245)

RICHARD HOPKINS

4 September 1632: "It is ordered, that Richard Hopkins shall be severely whipped, & branded with a hot iron on one of his cheeks, for selling pieces & powder & shot to the Indians. Hereupon it was propounded if this offense should not be punished hereafter by death. Referred to the next Court, to be determined" [MBCR 1:99-100].

COMMENTS: Savage and Pope say that Hopkins was of Watertown, but the grounds for this are not clear, other than that the above court entry immediately follows one for ROBERT FEAKE and DANIEL PATRICK, both of Watertown at that time. No further record of Richard Hopkins in New England has been found.

STEPHEN HOPKINS

ORIGIN: London
MIGRATION: 1620 on *Mayflower*
FIRST RESIDENCE: Plymouth

OCCUPATION: Tanner and merchant.
FREEMAN: In the "1633" list of Plymouth freemen Stephen Hopkins is near the head of the list, included among the assistants [PCR 1:3]. In list of Plymouth Colony freemen, 7 March 1636/7 (as "Steephen Hopkins, gen.") [PCR 1:52]. In the Plymouth section of the 1639 Plymouth Colony list of freemen (as "Mr. Steephen Hopkins," annotated "dead") [PCR 8:173].
EDUCATION: He signed his will. The inventory included "diverse books" valued at 12s.
OFFICES: Assistant, 1633-36 [PCR 1:5, 21, 32, 36].
Volunteered for service in the Pequot War, 1637 [PCR 1:61].
ESTATE: In the 1623 Plymouth division of land "Steven Hobkins" received six acres as a passenger on the *Mayflower* [PCR 12:4]. In the 1627 Plymouth division of cattle Stephen Hopkins, his wife Elizabeth Hopkins, Gyles Hopkins, Caleb Hopkins and Deborah Hopkins are the first five persons in the seventh company, and Damaris Hopkins is the thirteenth person in the eighth company [PCR 12:11, 12].

In the Plymouth tax list of 25 March 1634 Stephen Hopkins was assessed £1 7s., and in the list of 27 March 1634 £1 10s. [PCR 1:9, 27]. "Steven Hopkins" was one of the Purchasers [PCR 2:177].

On 1 July 1633 "Mr. Hopkins" was ordered to mow where he had mowed the year before [PCR 1:15], followed by similar orders on 14 March 1635/6 and 20 March 1636/7 [PCR 1:41, 57].

On 5 February 1637/8 "Mr. Stephen Hopkins requesteth a grant of lands towards the Six Mile Brook" [PCR 1:76].

On 7 August 1638 "[l]iberty is granted to Mr. Steephen Hopkins to erect a house at Mattacheese, and cut hay there this year to winter his cattle, provided that it be not to withdraw him from the town of Plymouth" [PCR 1:93].

On 17 July 1637 "Steephen Hopkins of Plymouth, gent.," sold to George Boare of Scituate, yeoman, "all that his messuage, houses, tenements, outhouses lying and being at the Broken Wharfe towards the Eele River together with the six shares of lands thereunto belonging containing six acres" [PCR 12:21]. On 30 November 1638 "Mr. Steephen Hopkins" sold to Josias Cooke "all those his six acres of land lying on the south side of the Town Brook of Plymouth" [PCR 12:39]. On 8 June 1642 William Chase mortgaged to "Mr. Stephen Hopkins ... all that his house and lands in Yarmouth containing eight acres of upland and six acres more lying at the Stony Cove" [PCR 12:83].

On 1 June 1640 "Mr. Hopkins" was granted twelve acres of meadow [PCR 1:154, 166].

In his will, dated 6 June 1644 and proved 20 August 1644, Stephen Hopkins "of Plymouth ... weake yet in good and perfect memory" directed that he be buried "as near as conveniently may be to my wife, deceased," and bequeathed to "son Giles Hopkins" the great bull now in the hands of Mrs. Warren; to "Steven Hopkins my son Giles his son" 20s. in Mrs. Warren's hands; to "daughter Constanc[e] Snow, wife of Nicholas ... my mare"; to "daughter Deborah Hopkins" cows; to "daughter Damaris Hopkins" cows; to "daughter Ruth" cows; to "daughter Elizabeth" cows; to "four daughters Deborah, Damaris, Ruth and Elizabeth Hopkins" all the moveable goods; if any of the daughters die, their share to be divided equally among the survivors; to "son Caleb heir apparent" house and lands at Plymouth, one pair of oxen and hire of them and all the debts "now owing unto me"; daughters to have free recourse to use of the house in Plymouth while single; "son Caleb" executor; Caleb and Captain Standish joint supervisors [PCPR 1:1:61].

The inventory of the estate of Stephen Hopkins was taken 17 July 1644 and was untotalled, with no real estate included [PCPR 1:1:62-63].

On 28 October 1644 "Caleb Hopkins son and heir unto Mr. Steephen Hopkins of Plymouth deceased" deeded to "Gyles Hopkins of Yarmouth, planter, one hundred acres of those lands taken up for the Purchasers of Satuckquett which said lands do accrue unto the said Steephen as a Purchaser" [PCR 12:104].

BIRTH: By about 1582 based on estimated date of first marriage.
DEATH: Plymouth between 6 June 1644 (writing of will) and 17 July 1644 (proving of will).

MARRIAGE: (1) By about 1607 _____ _____; she died by 1617.

(2) St. Mary Matfellon, Whitechapel, London, 19 February 1617/8 Elizabeth Fisher. She died at Plymouth sometime in the early 1640s before her husband, who desired to be buried near her; Bradford indicated that both she and her husband had lived in Plymouth above twenty years.

CHILDREN:

With first wife

i CONSTANCE, b. say 1607; m. Plymouth by 1627 NICHOLAS SNOW (in the 1627 Plymouth division of cattle "Nickolas Snow" and "Constance Snow" were the sixth and seventh persons in the seventh company, which was headed by Stephen Hopkins [PCR 12:11]).

ii GILES, b. say 1609; m. Plymouth 9 October 1639 Catherine Whelden [PCR 1:134; TAG 48:5].

With second wife

iii DAMARIS, b. say 1618; probably died at Plymouth before the birth of her sister of the same name.

iv OCEANUS, b. at sea on the *Mayflower* voyage between 16 September and 11 November 1620; died by 1627.

v CALEB, b. Plymouth say 1624; "became a seaman & died at Barbadoes" between 1644 and 1651 [Bradford 445].

vi DEBORAH, b. Plymouth say 1626; m. Plymouth 23 April 1646 as his first wife Andrew Ring [PCR 2:98; TAG 42:202-05], daughter of widow MARY RING.

vii DAMARIS, b. Plymouth say 1628; m. Plymouth shortly after 10 June 1646 Jacob Cooke [MD 2:27-8], son of FRANCIS COOKE. (Since this Damaris was still bearing children in the early 1670s, she cannot be the same as the Damaris who came on the *Mayflower*.)

viii RUTH, b. Plymouth say 1630; d. after 30 November 1644 and before spring 1651 [Bradford 445]; unm.

ix ELIZABETH, b. Plymouth say 1632; believed to have died by 6 October 1659 when her property was appraised "in case Elizabeth Hopkins do come no more" [MD 4:114-19]; unm.

COMMENTS: It has been suggested but not proved that Stephen Hopkins was son of Stephen Hopkins, a clothier, of Wortley, Wooten Underedge, Gloucestershire [MF 6:3, citing "[t]he Wortley historian"].

There was a Stephen Hopkins who was the minister's clerk on the vessel *Sea Venture* which met with a hurricane in 1609 while on a voyage to Virginia. One of one hundred and fifty survivors marooned on a Bermuda, he fomented a mutiny and was sentenced to death, but "so penitent he was and made so much moan, alleging the ruin of his wife and children in this his trespass," that his friends procured a pardon from the Governor [MF 6:3, citing William Strachey's account]. Many have assumed that he was the same as the *Mayflower* passenger, but this is not a certainty, and this episode has not been the basis of any of the conclusions reached here.

In his listing of the *Mayflower* passengers Bradford included "Mr. Stephen Hopkins and Elizabeth his wife, and two children called Giles and Constanta, a daughter, both by a former wife. And two more by this wife called Damaris and Oceanus; the last was born at sea. And two servants called Edward Doty and Edward Lester" [Bradford 442]. Stephen Hopkins signed the *Mayflower* Compact. In his accounting of this family in 1651 Bradford reported that "Mr. Hopkins and his wife are now both dead, but they lived above twenty years in this place and had one son and four daughters born here. Their son became a seaman and died at Barbadoes, one daughter died here, and two are married; one of them hath two children, and one is yet to marry. So their increase which still survive are five. But his son Giles is married and hath four children. His daughter Constanta is also married and hath twelve children, all of them living, and one of them married" [Bradford 445].

In June 1621 Steven Hopkins and Edward Winslow were chosen by the governor to approach Massasoit, and Hopkins repeated this duty as emissary frequently thereafter [Young's Pilgrim Fathers 202, 204].

Despite his social standing and his early public service, Stephen Hopkins managed to run afoul of the authorities several times in the late 1630s. In June of 1636 while an Assistant, he was fined for battery of John Tisdale, whom he "dangerously wounded" [PCR 1:41-42]. On 2 October 1637 he was fined for allowing drinking on the Lord's day and the playing of "shovell board" [PCR 1:68] and on 2 January 1637/8 he was "presented for suffering excessive drinking in his house" [PCR 1:75]. On 5 June 1638 he was "presented for selling beer for 2d. the quart, not worth 1d. a quart" [PCR 1:87]; for this and other similar infractions he was on 4 September 1638 fined £5 [PCR 1:97]. He dealt harshly with his pregnant servant Dorothy Temple and only the intercession of John Holmes freed him from being held in contempt of court [PCR 1:111-13]. In December 1639 he was presented for selling a looking glass for 16d. when a similar glass could be bought in the Bay for 9d. [PCR 1:137].

BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTE: In 1992 John D. Austin published an excellent and extensive account of Stephen Hopkins and his descendants as the sixth volume in the Five Generations Project of the General Society of Mayflower Descendants [cited herein as MF6].

EDWARD LEISTER

Edward Leister came to Plymouth on the *Mayflower* in 1620, as one of Stephen Hopkins's two servants. According to Bradford, "Lester, after he was at liberty, went to Virginia and there died" [Bradford 442, 445]. He signed the Mayflower Compact on 11 November 1620.

From Mourt's Relation: 1621 "June 18. The second offense is the first duel fought in New England, upon a challenge at single combat with sword and dagger, between Edward Doty and Edward Leister, servants of Mr. Hopkins. Both being wounded, the one in the hand, the other in the thigh, they are adjudged by the whole company to have their head and feet tied together, and so to lie for twenty-four hours, without meat

Re: Hopkins

or drink; which is begun to be inflicted, but within an hour, because of their great pains, at their own and their master's humble request, upon promise of better carriage, they are released by the governor" [Young's Pilgrim Fathers 201].

COMMENTS: Following STEPHEN HOPKINS in the 1623 division of land are two men with first name Edward but without surnames; these must be his two servants, EDWARD DOTY and Edward Leister. But Leister is not in the 1627 division of cattle, so he must have left for Virginia between those two dates. He does not appear in the February 1623/4 list of those in Virginia living and dead, or in the February 1624/5 Virginia muster of inhabitants.

MARRIAGE: (1) By about 1606 __________; she died by 1617.

(2) St. Mary Matfellon, Whitechapel, London, 19 February 1617/8 Elizabeth Fisher. She died at Plymouth sometime in the early 1640s before her husband, who desired to be buried near her; Bradford indicated that both she and her husband had lived in Plymouth above twenty years.

CHILDREN:

With first wife

i CONSTANCE, b. say 1607; m. Plymouth by 1627 NICHOLAS SNOW (in the 1627 Plymouth division of cattle "Nicholas Snow" and "Constance Snow" were the

penitent he was and made so much moan, alleging the ruin of his wife and children in this his trespass," that his friends procured a pardon from the Governor [MP 5:5, citing William Strachey's account]. Many have assumed that he was the same as the *Mayflower* passenger, but this is not a certainty, and this episode has not been the basis of any of the conclusions reached here.

In his listing of the *Mayflower* passengers Bradford included "Mr. Stephen Hopkins and Elizabeth his wife, and two children called Giles and Constanta, a daughter, both by a former wife. And two more by this wife called Damaris and Oceanus; the last was born at sea. And two servants called Edward Doty and Edward Lester" [Bradford 442]. Stephen Hopkins signed the *Mayflower* Compact. In his accounting of this family in 1651 Bradford reported that "Mr. Hopkins and his wife are now both dead, but they lived above twenty years in this place and had one son and four daughters born here. Their son became a seaman and died at Barbadoes, one daughter died here, and two are married; one of them hath two children, and one is yet to marry. So their increase which still survive are five. But his son Giles is married and hath four children. His daughter Constanta is also married and hath twelve children, all of them living, and one of them married" [Bradford 445].

In June 1621 Steven Hopkins and Edward Winslow were chosen by the governor to approach Massasoit, and Hopkins repeated this duty as emissary frequently thereafter [Young's Pilgrim Fathers 202, 204].

Despite his social standing and his early public service, Stephen Hopkins managed to run afoul of the authorities several times in the late 1630s. In June of 1636 while an Assistant, he was fined for battery of John Tisdale, whom he "dangerously wounded" [PCR 1:41-42]. On 2 October 1637 he was fined for allowing drinking on the Lord's day and the playing of "shovell board" [PCR 1:68] and on 2 January 1637/8 he was "presented for suffering excessive drinking in his house" [PCR 1:75]. On 5 June 1638 he was "presented for selling beer for 2d. the quart, not worth 1d. a quart" [PCR 1:87]; for this and other similar infractions he was on 4 September 1638 fined £5 [PCR 1:97]. He dealt harshly with his pregnant servant Dorothy Temple and only the intercession of John Holmes freed him from being held in contempt of court [PCR 1:111-13]. In December 1639 he was presented for selling a looking glass for 16d when a similar glass could be bought in the Bay for 9d. [PCR 1:137].

BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTE: In 1992 John D. Austin published an excellent and extensive account of Stephen Hopkins and his descendants as the sixth volume in the Five Generations Project of the General Society of Mayflower Descendants (cited herein as MF6).

HOPKINS

STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS* was an interesting character with a strong personality. He was one of "the Londoners"[1,2,4] who joined the Mayflower group, very possibly having been chosen to accompany them by Robert Cushman (who was the London agent for the Pilgrims) because of a probable previous knowledge of the new world acquired,[3] as it seems, on a colonization trip to Virginia in 1609–10 [see Addendum, p. 449]. As the result of intensive research[1] in England it is fairly well established that the London home of STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS was just outside of London Wall on the highroad entering the city at Aldgate in the vicinity of Heneage House (in, or near which, lived John Carver and William Bradford, fellow voyagers, also, Robert Cushman their London agent, and Edward Southworth who later came to New England). The identity of the first wife of STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS is unknown, but his second wife was ELIZABETH, and the record on the register[1] of St. Mary Matfellon (Whitechapel) undoubtedly pertains to him and identifies this wife in the item stating that STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS married there February 19, 1617–8, ELIZABETH FISHER. She came with him on the Mayflower, as did also his children, Giles^2 and Constance^2 (by his first wife), a daughter Damaris^2 by the second wife, and two men servants.† He and his family shared with the other Mayflower passengers the experience of repeated

---

found to be wrong.

* Evidence is found[1] which points to the probability that our STEPHEN^1 was related (perhaps a son) to a Stephen Hopkins who with several sons lived in the hamlet of Wortley, parish of Wotton Under Edge, Gloucester (sixteen miles from Bristol). He may have been the child who was baptized there October 29, 1581. The possibility also exists that it was our STEPHEN^1 who remained there till an adult, and who had a son William baptized at Wotton on July 19, 1607. Then the name disappeared from that place in suitable time to appear in London as did that o our STEPHEN^1 [see above, and Addendum, p. 449].

† In June, 1621, these servants, Edward Doty and Edward Lister, imbued, perhaps, with the spirit of thei master, established a precedent in the new world by fighting a duel with sword and dagger. Doty was wounded in the right hand and Lister in the thigh, but the punishment meted out to them by the authorities must have been more painful than these injuries for it was decreed that they should spend twenty-four hours, withou food or drink, each with his head and feet tied together [see Freeman, p. 359]. The cruelty of this punishmen caused STEPHEN^1 to intercede for them, for we are told that " . . . within an hour, because of their great pains at their own and their master's humble request, upon promise of better carriage . . . " they were released b the governor [12, 23]

and distressing delays and many fierce storms during their sixty-five-day voyage [see Brewster, p. 152, and Cooke, p. 239]. During the voyage his family was increased by the arrival of a son whom they named Oceanus^2. Upon the arrival of the Pilgrims at Cape Cod, November 11, 1620, after their sixty-five-day ocean voyage, Stephen^1 Hopkins, with the other men, signed the Compact [see text, p. 853] in the cabin of the vessel.[5] From the very first he attained a place among the leaders of the colony, and in spite of the fact that his impulsiveness frequently laid him open to criticism, he never lost the confidence of his contemporaries.[23]

We are told[2, 4, 5, 12] that after arrival some of the people were impatient at the delay incident upon the repair of their shallop, "Wherupon a few of them tendered them selves to goe . . ." on a tour of discovery on foot. Sixteen men "well armed with musket, sword and corselet"* set out, Wednesday, November 15, "in the order of a single File . . ." under the command of Myles Standish "unto whom was adioyned for counsell and advise William Bradford, Stephen Hopkins and Edward Tilley."[5] To search out a site for their new world home in the face of unknown dangers must have been a thrilling adventure to them. It is surely no less thrilling to us today when we weigh the events which have followed that courageous undertaking.

The presence of Stephen^1 on this first search served them well for during their third day out, when they saw and marveled at an Indian deer trap he was able to tell them its purpose and to warn them away from it [see Addendum, p. 449]. He was also one of the ten men under Standish who set out, December 6, on the third tour of discovery which lasted five days. On the third day they experienced their first, though bloodless, Indian attack, and discovered the site upon which they soon settled.[5, 9, 12]

As a result[9] of the appalling mortality from scurvy and exposure during that first winter on the New England coast they buried fourteen of the eighteen wives who had come over; four of the twenty-four households were wiped out; and only four households escaped loss, among which were those of Stephen^1 Hopkins (consisting of eight persons) and of Francis^1 Cooke (consisting then of but himself and son). The oft repeated service of Stephen^1 in Indian relations[9, 12] was evidenced in February, 1620–1, when two natives appeared on a neighboring hill top and made signs of friendliness, beckoning the colonists to them, whereupon Standish and Stephen^1 Hopkins advanced to parley.[9] In March of that year an Indian named Samoset appeared among them and at first caused some distrust. But he was presented with gifts and entertained for the night at the home of Stephen^1 Hopkins who was always deputized to meet the Indians and to act as interpreter in such cases. Samoset became a frequent visitor and a faithful friend of the colonists.[6] In July, 1621, Stephen^1 served successfully with Edward Winslow as an envoy to the friendly Indian chief, Massasoit, who lived near what is now Warren, Rhode Island; and in December, 1621, assisted Captain Standish in dealing with the Indian messenger who brought from Canonicus of the Narragansett tribe "a bundle of arrows tyed aboute with a great sneak-skine . . ." which constituted a threat and a challenge.[6, 9] Stephen^1 acquired[14] various tracts of land by grant as well as by purchase. In the so-called "division of land" in 1623 he received for garden purposes a six-acre plot, being one acre for each member of his family. In the division of cattle in 1627 he and his family had a share in the seventh lot. In 1633 he had already become a freeman. That year the tax list showed that only four men paid more than Stephen^1, and but seven equaled him. Various records are found of debts owing to him, but not of his owing others[14] excepting a modest amount at the time of his death. It is stated that he retained,[12] for his home, throughout his life the lot on the easterly corner of Main and Leyden streets which was assigned to him on arrival in 1620. At the time of the Pequot war in 1637, the "Voluntaries" included[7] Stephen^1 Hopkins, his sons, Giles^2 and Caleb^2 (then not over fifteen or sixteen years of age), and his son-in-law, Jacob^2 Cooke. In June of the same year Stephen^1 and Edward^1 Foster of Scituate [see Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines, Vol. I, Foster chapter] were appointed, with four others, to aid the governor and his assistants to "assesse men towards the Charges of the souldiers that are to be sent for the ayde of the Mattachusetts Bay and Connectacutt."[7] Stephen^1 served[8] as an assistant to the governor from 1663 to 1636, being then closely associated with Thomas^1 Prence and John^1 Doane. In the financial difficulties faced by the colony[11] [see Prence, p. 687] it became necessary for certain leaders called "the partners" to bind themselves individually for the public debt which they hoped to pay off by means of the fur trade carried on with the Indians on the Kennebec River. In connection with the agreement between these partners and the officials of the colony Stephen^1 Hopkins and John^1 Doane were repeatedly called upon for advice. The mutual agreement entered into bore the signatures of William^1 Brewster, Thomas^1 Prence, Stephen^1 Hopkins, Stephen^1 Tracy, Francis^1 Cooke, and Edward^1 Bangs.

---

*A piece of armor covering the breast from neck to girdle. When a back piece was buckled on, it was called a cuirass.[12]

Stephen^1 Hopkins was associated,[8] in 1633, with John^1 Doane and Edward^1 Bangs in a proportional division of meadow land; with these two men and Elder William^1 Brewster in 1637 in an apportionment of five hundred acres; with Kenelm Winslow in 1635–6 in holding goods in escrow; and with these men, and others, in the handling of various estates. In October, 1643, an especial Indian menace was impending,[11] so a brick watch-house was built and a constant watch was kept by six men and a corporal. A council of war was appointed which included Stephen^1 Hopkins and Thomas^1 Prence.

Stephen^1 was enterprising and progressive. He built and owned, near Eel River, the first wharf of which any record is found; and when he sold it and the adjacent property for £60 in July, 1637, it was called "Broken Wharf," suggesting that it was already old. In this deal he is called "gentleman." Plans were going forward, by contributions from the colonists, in January, 1641–2, to build a vessel[11] of forty or fifty tons costing £200. The expense and consequent ownership were divided into sixteenths, one of which was taken by Stephen^1 Hopkins, one by Francis^1 Cooke and his son John^2, and one by Edward^1 Bangs. The second horse mentioned in the colony records[12] was a mare, valued at £6 and owned by Stephen^1. In April, 1642, the court[14] placed Jonathan Hatch in the home of Stephen^1 who was "to haue a speciall care of him."

It is no exaggeration to say that Stephen^1 was a useful and much respected citizen. This is evidenced by the title of "master" granted him; by his having brought over two servants; by the very frequent calls cited as having been made upon him for public service of a delicate and important sort; and by his business capacity. It is probably true that he was also stubborn, argumentative, and inclined to construe the rather vaguely worded laws of the colony to suit himself. This frequently brought him into conflict with the authorities who, even though they were his personal friends, dealt out punishment with stern justice, . . . indeed in one instance they were more severe with him than with others who offended similarly on the theory that because of his official position in the community he should most carefully uphold the law. This case[13] occurred in June, 1636, when "John Tisdale, yeoman, entreth an accon of battery against Steven Hopkins, Assistant to the go^{u}m^t, by whom the said John was dangerously wounded, as he affirmeth. . . ." The court fined Stephen^1 £2 for the plaintiff and £5 for breaking the King's peace "w^{ch} he ought after a speciall manner to haue kept. . . ." Also[10, 12] in October, 1637, and again in January, 1637–8, he was brought before the grand jury for allowing men, servants and others, to drink* in his house "more than for ordinary refreshment" as well as on the Lord's day both before and after the meeting and even during it. Stephen^1 Tracy was one of the witnesses in this case and on these counts Hopkins was acquitted, but he was fined £2 for allowing these frequenters "to play at shouell board, & such like misdemeamors. . . ." Evidently he possessed a superior grade of beer and wine or perhaps he excelled as a salesman, for in June, 1638, he was presented again "for selling beere for ij^d [two pence] the quart, not worth j^d [one penny] the quart" and "for selling wine at such excessiue rates, to the oppressing & impouishing of the colony" on both of which counts he was fined. Again in September of that year reference was made before the jury to the last two complaints and three new ones were added "for selling wine, beere, strong waters, and nutmeggs at excessiue rates . . ." for this[10] he was fined £5. In 1639 he evidently neglected to renew his license for when he was charged with selling "strong waters" without it he frankly admitted the fact and was fined £3; though the next year the same fault in a neighbor brought a fine[12] of £1 only. In December, 1639, he was brought before the court "for selling a lookeing glasse for 16^d, the like whereof was bought in the [Massachusetts] Bay for ix^d. . . ." This is the first recorded mention[12] of a mirror in the colony. Stephen^1 found it hard to profit by experience and to humble his will, for in February, 1638–9, he was held in custody for four days[12, 13] for contempt of court. It appears that he had in his home an indentured servant, Dorothy Temple, who owed him two more years of service. She had unwisely trusted her sweetheart, and, with the same hard justice to her that had been meted out to him, Stephen^1 refused to shelter or provide for her or her infant son. His impartial friends, the members of the court, ordered him to clothe and board her and the child either in his own family or elsewhere. On his refusal he was committed to ward, though it probably[12] was confinement only to the house of the officer. After four days of this discipline he gave in and paid £3 to John Holmes who took over the responsibility and the remainder of term of service.[12, 13] In spite of this stubbornness and severity there was a tenderness in Stephen^1, for in his will[15] dated June 6, 1644, he directed that his body be "buryed as neare as convenyently may be to my wyfe, Deceased,"

---

*In the colonial days licenses to serve drink were granted only to the most dependable and reputable citizens. Further evidence of the control of the sale and consumption of liquor is in the record, 1633, of one who was "Disfranchised for being drunke."

whose death had occurred[13, 23] subsequent to 1640. His will made bequests to his two sons and five daughters of whom four were unmarried, including our Damaris^{2} Hopkins who received "the Cowe called Damaris' heiffer and the white faced calf and half the cowe called Mottley . . ." and one fourth of "all the moveable goods the w^{ch} do belong to my house, as linnen wollen beds bedclothes pott kettles pewter or whatsoev^{r} . . ." including one of his "foure silver spoones." These four spoons were inventoried on July 17, 1644, at £1–8. The list of the property of Stephen^{1}, totaling about £130, and prepared by John^{1} Doane, shows that he was comfortably well to do. He possessed fifteen neat cattle, a horse, and other stock, as well as many household comforts.[15]

The children* of Stephen^{1} Hopkins and his first wife, both born in England, were[15, 16, 23]

i. Constance^{2}, d. at Eastham, about the middle of October, 1677; m. at Plymouth, after 1623 and before May 22, 1627, Nicholas^{1} Snow.[17]
ii. Giles^{2}, d.[18] at Eastham, after March 15, 1689, and before April 26, 1690; m. at Plymouth, October 9, 1639, Catherine Wheldon.

The children of Stephen^{1} and Elizabeth (Fisher) Hopkins, the last five of whom were born in Plymouth, were[15, 16, 23]

iii. Damaris^{2}, b. in England, 1618–9; emigrated with her parents, and was living[20] in 1627 at the division of cattle, but undoubtedly died soon after, being perhaps the "one daughter [who] dyed here" as Bradford says. She was memorialized by having one of the ".4. daughters borne here" named after her[19] [see following].
iv. Oceanus^{2}, b. at sea, between September 16 and November 11, 1620; d.[18] before June 1, 1627, and undoubtedly before 1623 when his father's family consisted of but six.
v. Caleb^{2}, b. doubtless before 1623, since he was[7] a "voluntary" with his father and older brother in 1637, and could then have been but about fifteen. In his father's will he was, unaccountably, called "heire apparent" though his older brother Giles^{2} was living. With Myles Standish he was executor of his father's will.[15] He died at the Barbados, without issue, after June 6, 1644, and before 1651.
vi. Deborah^{2}, d.[21] after 1666; m. at Plymouth April, 23, 1646, Andrew Ring.
vii. Damaris^{2}, b. [undoubtedly][19] after 1627, named for her deceased sister. She is repeatedly listed in this chronological sequence in her father's will and elsewhere.[15] She died after January 1665–6, and before November 18, 1669; m. at Plymouth, as his first wife,[22] after June 10, 1646 (i.e., late in 1646 or early in 1647), Jacob^{2} Cooke [see Cooke, p. 244].
viii. Ruth^{2}, d. after October 8, 1644.

---

*If Mary Cooke, the wife of Caleb^{2} Johnson, proves to have been the daughter of *John^{4} Cooke* (*Josiah^{3}*, *Josiah^{2}*, *Josiah^{1}*) and his wife *Desire* (——), as is believed [see Addendum to Johnson, pp. 502–5], it will incorporate in this ancestry a second line of descent from Stephen^{1} Hopkins through his granddaughter *Deborah^{3}* (*Giles^{2}*), who married *Josiah^{2} Cooke*.

ix. Elizabeth^{2}, given as a child, November 30, 1644, after the death of her father, to Richard^{1} Sparrow. She was frail or in some way incapacitated, and was to remain in the care of Richard^{1} "as his owne child until the tyme of her marryage or untill shee be nineteene yeares of age."[15] She died unmarried, after October, 1657, and undoubtedly before October 6, 1659.

ADDENDUM

On June 2, 1609, nine vessels sailed[3, 4] from London, England, carrying five hundred passengers for Virginia. One of these vessels called the "Sea Venture" carried among others Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Somers, and other officials who were to govern the colony, and about one hundred and fifty passengers including William Strachey who recorded the succeeding events, and Stephen Hopkins (probably our own Stephen^{1}), " . . . a fellow who had much knowledge in the Scriptures and could reason well therein whom our Minister therefore chose to be his Clarke, to read the Psalmes and Chapters upon Sondayes, at the assembly of the Congregation under him. . . ."

Throughout the voyage the vessels kept well together until the latter part of July, when a hurricane caught the "Sea Venture." For three days and nights, though the men bailed water constantly, it seemed that they must sink. At last when they were utterly exhausted and fully expected to die, they were saved, on July 28, 1609, by being washed onto the rocky shore of one of the Bermudas [see map on p. 146], known as the "Ile of Divels." Strachey's tale of this awful storm furnished Shakespeare with the groundwork of his play, "The Tempest."

The survivors lived for nine months on these islands during which time they built two vessels which, ultimately took them to their destination in Virginia. But during that nine-month period dissension arose among them, which resulted in several attempts at mutiny against the commands of the Governor. In the first case that official showed great leniency; but in the second, he evidently thought it necessary to discourage repetitions by severity. This second offence was the least serious since, apparently, it concerned only one man, Stephen Hopkins, who had been expounding the theory that the Governor's authority pertained only to the voyage and to the government in Virginia, and that they, therefore, might consider it null on this island, " . . . without breach of honesty, conscience nor Religion. . . ." Hopkins was brought, manacled, before a court-martial and sentenced to death on a charge of mutiny and rebellion. "But so penitent hee was and

made so much moane alleadging the ruine of his Wife and Children in this his trespasse, as it wrought in the hearts of all the better sort of the Company . . ." who entreated the Governor and procured his pardon as his fault was not a moral one, but rather one of wilfulness and poor judgment. No evidence is found of further disaffection on his part, though others later made much worse trouble, nor of his continued residence in Virginia after the arrival of the company at their journey's end. It is presumed that he presently returned to his wife and children in England.

The two vessels in which the two weeks' trip from the Bermudas to Virginia was made (arriving on May 24, 1610) were suggestively named the "Patience" and the "Deliverance."

A marked likeness is seen between the character and actions of Stephen of Bermuda and those of our Stephen^1 Hopkins who sailed for the new world on the "Mayflower." The first Stephen sailed from London and is presumed to have lived there, our Stephen^1 did live there, being one of the group called[4] by contemporary writers "men of London" and "strangers amongst them" [i. e., not Leyden men but of the number who had joined them in England]. Both men were adventurous, aggressive, intolerant of restraint, religiously inclined, and made much of "conscience." Each had a wife and children, each was a man of unusual ability, the man of Bermuda being clerk and assistant to the minister, while our Stephen^1 of Plymouth was called repeatedly to serve in positions of trust and diplomacy in dealings with the Indians. When their respective vessels reached the new world at points other than where they had expected to land, or for which patents were held, the action of these men was identical. When the "Mayflower" passengers faced the necessity of landing at Massachusetts Bay, Bradford tells us of "y^e discontented & mutinous speeches that some of the strangers amongst them had let fall from them in y^e ship. . . . That when they came a shore they would use their own libertie; for none had power to comand them, the patente they had being for Virginia, and not for Newengland, which belonged to another government, with which y^e Virginia Company had nothing to doe." And finally, when the first exploring party was sent out from the "Mayflower" to search out a suitable place for settlement, Stephen^1, who was a member of it, was instantly able to inform them that a bent sapling they saw and wondered at was an Indian trap to catch deer, . . . a fact which he certainly never learned in London. Mourt describes the incident thus: ". . . as we wandred we came to a tree, where a yong Spritt was bowed downe over a bow, and

some Acornes strewed vnder-neath; Stephen Hopkins sayd, it had beene to catch some Deere, so, as we were looking at it, William Bradford being in the Reare, when he came looked also vpon it, and as he went about, it gaue a sodaine jerk vp, and he was immediately caught by the leg; It was a very pretie divise, made with a Rope of their owne making, and having a noose as artificially made as any Roper in England can make, and as like ours as can be, which we brought away with vs."[3, 4]

REFERENCES

1. The English Ancestry and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers, C. E. Banks, 1929, pp. 11, 14, 61–4.
2. Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 5, 8, 14, 25, 44, 81, 98–111.
3. Ibid., pp. 24–5; "Purchas His Pilgrimes," 1625, IV, 1742–4; Dictionary of National Biography, VII, 943; XX, 1255–6; History of Virginia, W. Stith, 1865, pp. 101–2, 113–5; John Smith's Travels, 1907, I, 188, 205–9, 341–5, 350; New England Register, XXXIII, 300–5; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 167, 189, 219; Mayflower Descendant, III, 46.
4. Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 5, 24–5, 44; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 167, 189, 219; New England Register, XXXIII, 303–5; Mayflower Descendant, IV, 114–9; V, 47–53; Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 76, 119, 185–6, 433–5; Story of the Pilgrim Fathers, E. Arber, 1897, pp. 370, 427.
5. History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 152, 162–77, 189; Mayflower Descendant, I, 79; V, 226; Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 5–8, 13–5, 28–9, 43–60.
6. History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 199, 219, 241; Mayflower Descendant, I, 89; Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 157–62.
7. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 60–1; Pequot War, J. Mason, 1897, p. xiv; Mayflower Descendant, XXVI, 100–1; King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 457.
8. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 3, 5, 7, 14, 19–21, 26, 32–3, 36–7, 67; Mayflower Descendant, I, 154, 160; II, 8, 87, 151; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, II, 151, 174, 196.
9. Story of the Pilgrim Fathers, E. Arber, 1897, pp. 360, 370–1, 383, 411, 416, 427, 449, 452, 462–73.
10. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 68, 75, 87, 97.
11. Ibid., I, 31, 54, 62; II, 31; XI, 25; Mayflower Descendant, VI, 146; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, II, 205, 270, 285, 363.
12. Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 70, 76, 83, 119, 160–1, 185–6, 189, 258, 294, 407–8, 433–5, 438.
13. Ibid., 407–8, 433–5; Plymouth Colony Records, I, 41–2, 111–3, 137.
14. Mayflower Descendant, I, 160; II, 151; Plymouth Colony Records, I, 3, 9; II, 38; XII, 11, 21, 83; and reference Nos. 1 and 12.
15. Mayflower Descendant, II, 12–17; IV, 114–9; V, 47–51.
16. Ibid., I, 10; II, 12–4, 117–8; V, 47–52; Pilgrim Notes and Queries, IV, 41–2; Register of the Illinois Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1925, pp. 132, 142.
17. Mayflower Descendant, III, 167.
18. Ibid., I, 110–2; II, 117–8; XIII, 85.
19. Ibid., I, 13–4; V, 47–52; Pilgrim Notes and Queries, IV, 42; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, II, 400, 406.
20. Mayflower Descendant, I, 151–2.
21. Register of the Illinois Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1925, p. 183.
22. Register of the California Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1917, pp. 88, 163; Mayflower Descendant, II, 27–8; V, 47–53.
23. Library of Cape Cod History and Genealogy, 1915, No. 37, pp. 1–16; Mayflower Descendant, II, 117.

This is the mistaken article referred to in TAG Vol 73 (July 1998)

Save because in doing research you are likely to run into this problem —

It was assumed for at least a century that Stephen Hopkins was from Gloucestershire. THAT IS NOT TRUE

TAG V39

HOPKINS FAMILY OF WORTLEY, GLOUCESTERSHIRE
POSSIBLE ANCESTRY OF STEPHEN HOPKINS

Based on data communicated by Ralph D. Phillips of Nassau, N.Y.

Charles E. Banks in The English Ancestry and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers (1929), pp. 61-64, in his account of Stephen Hopkins, gave reasons for thinking that the Mayflower passenger was identical with the man of this name who had been in Virginia in 1609, and that he was probably the Stephen Hopkins who married [for his second wife] Elizabeth Fisher on 19 Feb. 1617/18 at St. Mary Matfellon (Whitechapel) in London. He also called attention to the fact that a Stephen Hopkins was living in 1608 in the hamlet of Wortley in the parish of Wotton under Edge, co. Gloucester, where a nameless child of a Stephen Hopkins was baptized 29 Oct. 1581, about the right date for the birth of the Mayflower passenger.

Mr. E. S. Lindley in 1950 gave a considerable account of this Hopkins family in Transactions of the Bristol and Gloucestershire Archaeological Society, vol. 69, pp. 111-126, in his detailed "History of Wortley, in the Parish of Wotton-under-Edge" (vol. 68, pp. 15-90; vol. 69, pp. 91-195), to which attention is hereby directed. He shows conclusively that this family in Wortley was known as both Seborne and Hopkins, the names being used interchangeably and sometimes with an alias.

This branch of the family starts with a Stevean [Stephen] Seburne whose 1543 will named wife Jone, eldest son Robert, younger sons Thomas, John and another Robert, daughters Katharine and Jone; one of the supervisors was William Seburne, perhaps a brother. The manor survey the next year (1544) shows no Seburnes, but here their place is taken by Stephen Hopkins (perhaps the estate), Robert Hopkins (the eldest son), and William Hopkins (the supposed brother).

Apparently the next in this line was Robert Hopkyns of Wortley whose 1589 will named sons William, George, Thomas, Richard and Steven, and daughter Alse; one of the overseers was William Hopkins of Wortley, perhaps the supposed brother of his father. This is believed to be the Robert Hopkyns who was presented as tythingman, a position which his grandson Edward held in 1633.

It seems likely that it was Robert's eldest son William whose will in 1596 calls him William Hopkins alias Seburne of Wortley, husbandman, and was proved in 1596 (Canterbury). It names wife Alice, children Edward (executor), John [b. 1574], Agnes [b. 1577], Gillyan [b. 1579], Thomas [b. 1581], and Elizabeth. It may be doubted that the eldest son Edward was the Edward Hopkins who obtained a marriage license in London in 1581 as suggested by Mr. Lindley, as the date is too early. He did marry late in life, in 1639, Elizabeth, widow of John Baker, and in 1641 signed his will as Edward Hopkins of Wortley, yeoman. It names only his wife Elizabeth and his sisters Elizabeth Hopkins and Agnes Fisher, so it is doubtful that he left issue and somwhat doubtful that his two brothers survived to leave issue. Records of the Court Baron in 1642 show that Edward's land passed to his widow Elizabeth, who married William Stones, and her death was reported in 1648.

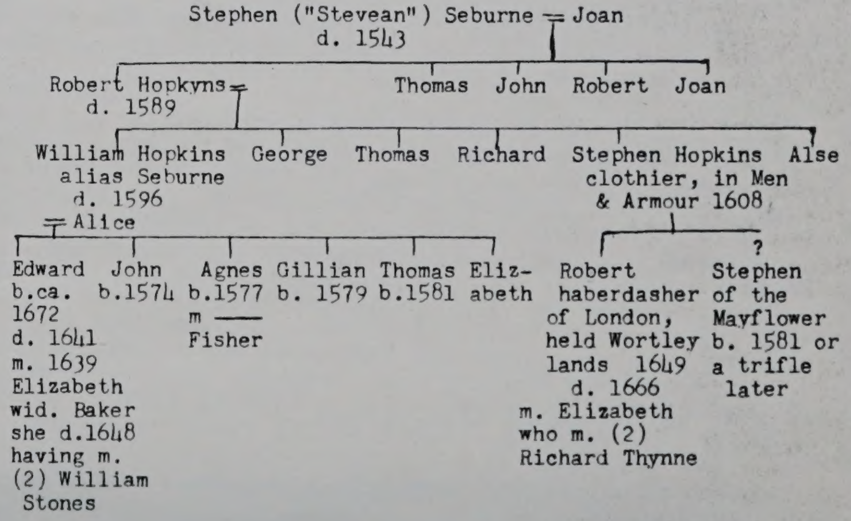
The heir to the copyhold lands of Edward appears to have been Robert Hopkins, described in 1649 as citizen and haberdasher of London when he bought from Samson Hopkins of Southam, co. Warwick, gent., a messuage "late in tenure or occupation of Edward Hopkins deceased and now in tenure of the said Robert Hopkins." This Samson Hopkins did not belong to the Wortley family and his pedigree is well known for several generations. It will be noted that Robert was in possession at the date of the deed which was very shortly after the death of Edward's widow, and it is not known how Samson Hopkins acquired an interest, but it could not have been by descent or heirship, and he may have been a lessee or mortgagee whose claim had to be satisfied.

It does seem likely that Robert of London was a first cousin of Edward, for his will names his father as Stephen, and Edward did have an uncle Stephen, as appears from the wills above. Robert was buried at Hawkesbury (about two miles south of Wortley) in 1666 according to the parish register, which however does not mention his father Stephen. Robert's will (Canterbury) describes him as of Kilcote, names no children, and leaves his house, lands and residuary estate to his wife Elizabeth. Within a year she married Richard Thynne of Hawkesbury, great-grandson of the founder of Longleat, and founder of the family of the Marquess of Bath. Richard Thynne sold Wortley House in 1676. The significant item in Robert Hopkins's will is his request to be buried "decently in the church of Hawkesbury at the end of the usual seate place of Stephen Hopkins my father deceased."

As for the Stephen Hopkins who was son of Robert (d. 1589), probable father of Robert of London and possible father of Stephen of the Mayflower, the records cited by Mr. Lindley tell us little. In 1608 the list for Wortley of "Men and Armour" lists nine men named Hopkins including Edward, husbandman; Stephen Hopkins with his sons John and William, all weavers; and another Stephen, a clothier. Mr. Lindley unfortunately gives little data from the Wotton registers, but he does mention that John and William were twin sons of Stephen and indicates that they were baptized in 1579. He suggests that the other Stephen, the clothier, may have been the father of Robert of London, as he has not found mention of this Stephen elsewhere in Wortley records. Mr. Lindley seems to have been troubled by the fact that Stephen the weaver and his two sons were all three listed in "Men and Armour" with the figure 20, which he took to be their age; but since every man in the list has either '20' or '40' after his name, these figures can hardly have been intended for the ages of those listed.

Further research is definitely needed, but the above provides the background for those who think it likely that the Mayflower passenger belonged to the Wortley family. The social background would be about right. If Stephen was a brother of Robert of London, the haberdasher, he would be named for his father, Stephen the clothier, and there is good evidence that Stephen of the Mayflower had lived in London. Mr. Lindley's statement that Stephen was "described as of Wotton" in the Mayflower passenger list is incorrect if he intended to refer to a contemporary list. The story of his career is told in Willison's Saints and Strangers and elsewhere.

TENTATIVE PEDIGREE


Stephen ("Stevean") Seburne = Joan
d. 1543
Robert Hopkyns =
d. 1589
Thomas
John
Robert
Joan
William Hopkins alias Seburne d. 1596 = Alice
George
Thomas
Richard
Stephen Hopkins clothier, in Men & Armour 1608
Alse
Edward b.ca. 1672 d. 1641 m. 1639 Elizabeth wid. Baker she d.1648 having m. (2) William Stones
John b.1574
Agnes b.1577 m —— Fisher
Gillian b. 1579
Thomas b.1581
Elizabeth
Robert haberdasher of London, held Wortley lands 1649 d. 1666 m. Elizabeth who m. (2) Richard Thynne
?
Stephen of the Mayflower b. 1581 or a trifle later

NOTES, ADDENDA AND CORRIGENDA

MILES STRICKLAND FAMILY: ADDENDA ON AMOS^{2} STRICKLAND OF BUCKS COUNTY.—Miss Ida C. Townsend of Philadelphia has contributed an excellent article, "Notes on the Miles Strickland Family," to The American Genealogist, supra, 38:229-234, and Mr. John G. Hunt of Arlington, Va., has offered interesting suggestions as to the origin of the family in England, ibid., 39:128. We should like at this time merely to add a few items concerning Amos^{2} Strickland and his children, who were treated by Miss Townsend supra, 38:233-4, and who also appeared in "The Family of Joseph Thornton," supra, 15:151-2.

Amos^{2} Strickland (b. at Dublin, Ireland, 25 of 9th mo. (Nov.) 1706, d. at Newtown, Bucks County, Pa., between 7 Aug. and 24 Dec. 1779) was inaugurated as sheriff of Bucks County 5 Oct. 1747. The original document reads: "I Amos Strickland Do Solemnly and Sincerly [sic] and Truly Declare and Affirm that I will well and Truly Doe Serve and Execute the Office of a Sherif [sic] for the County of Bucks for this Ensuing Year According to the Best of My Knowledge and Ability." (Signed) Amos Strickland [in a fine and very legible hand]. This document was found by the present writer in Battle Creek, Michigan, early in 1942, and it will soon be given to the Bucks County Historical Society at Doylestown.

It is this contributor's opinion that all four of the children of Amos^{2} Strickland were by his second wife Margaret Thornton (b. probably at Newtown 19 of 3rd mo. (May) 1740, d. in Falls Township, Bucks Co., before 27 May 1794), who married Amos Strickland about 1761. Amos^{3} Strickland, the son of Amos^{2}, was a minor on 7 Aug. 1779 when his father's will was drawn; as Miss Townsend points out, he later married twice and had one surviving daughter, Mary Rogers^{4} Strickland. The daughters of Amos^{2} and Margaret (Thornton) Strickland were Rachel, Elizabeth, and Frances. Of these, Rachel was apparently the eldest daughter, and she may well have been the eldest child [cf. Orphans' Court File No. 754, dated Dec. 1782, Bucks County Court House, Doylestown, Pa.]. She later married Mark Hapenny of Newtown, Bucks County, and as Mrs. Rachel Hapenny she died at Newtown 4 Nov. 1854, aged about 93 years [Bucks County Intelligencer, 7 Nov. 1854].

—John Insley Coddington

STEPHEN HOPKINS.—In the article, "Hopkins Family of Wortley, Gloucestershire," supra, 39:95-97, our purpose was to set forth what is actually known about this family, since positive statements have been made, but without actual evidence, that Stephen Hopkins of the Mayflower was a member of this family. Although this theory was not endorsed in the article, it seemed possible, from such evidence as was then in hand, that Stephen might have been brother of Robert Hopkins, the London haberdasher, whose will showed that he was son of a Stephen Hopkins of the Gloucestershire family.

I have now obtained records from England which show that this Robert was a generation younger than Stephen of the Mayflower, probably at least 25 years younger, and that makes it unlikely that they were brothers. It still remains possible if the father was twice married and had Robert by a younger wife when he was 55 or older. Since these records will have to be considered in any future evaluation of the theory, I will present them briefly.

The records of the Haberdashers' Company in London contain an entry in the Book of Bindings: Robert Hopkins son of Stephen Hopkins of the Parish of Hawkesberry in the County of Gloucester, Yeoman, places himself as apprentice to Thomas Tiler, Citizen and Haberdasher of London for 9 years from the Feast of All Saints, given on 7th November 1623. An entry in the Freedoms Book shows Robert Hopkins by Thomas Tyler in 1632. If 21 when freed, he was apprenticed at 12, and was born about 1611. I have also found his marriage: 17 Sept. 1663, Robert Hoopkins [sic], Killcott, psh. Hawkesbury, gent., aged 50, and Elizabeth Sollers, of Bisley, aged 30. The ages, 50 and 30, are round figures, and so probably not exact, and we may surmise that Robert was 52. The marriage of his widow: 1 Oct. 1667, Richard Thynne, Hawkesbury, gent., 30, and Elizabeth Hopkins, W. [widow], no age given.

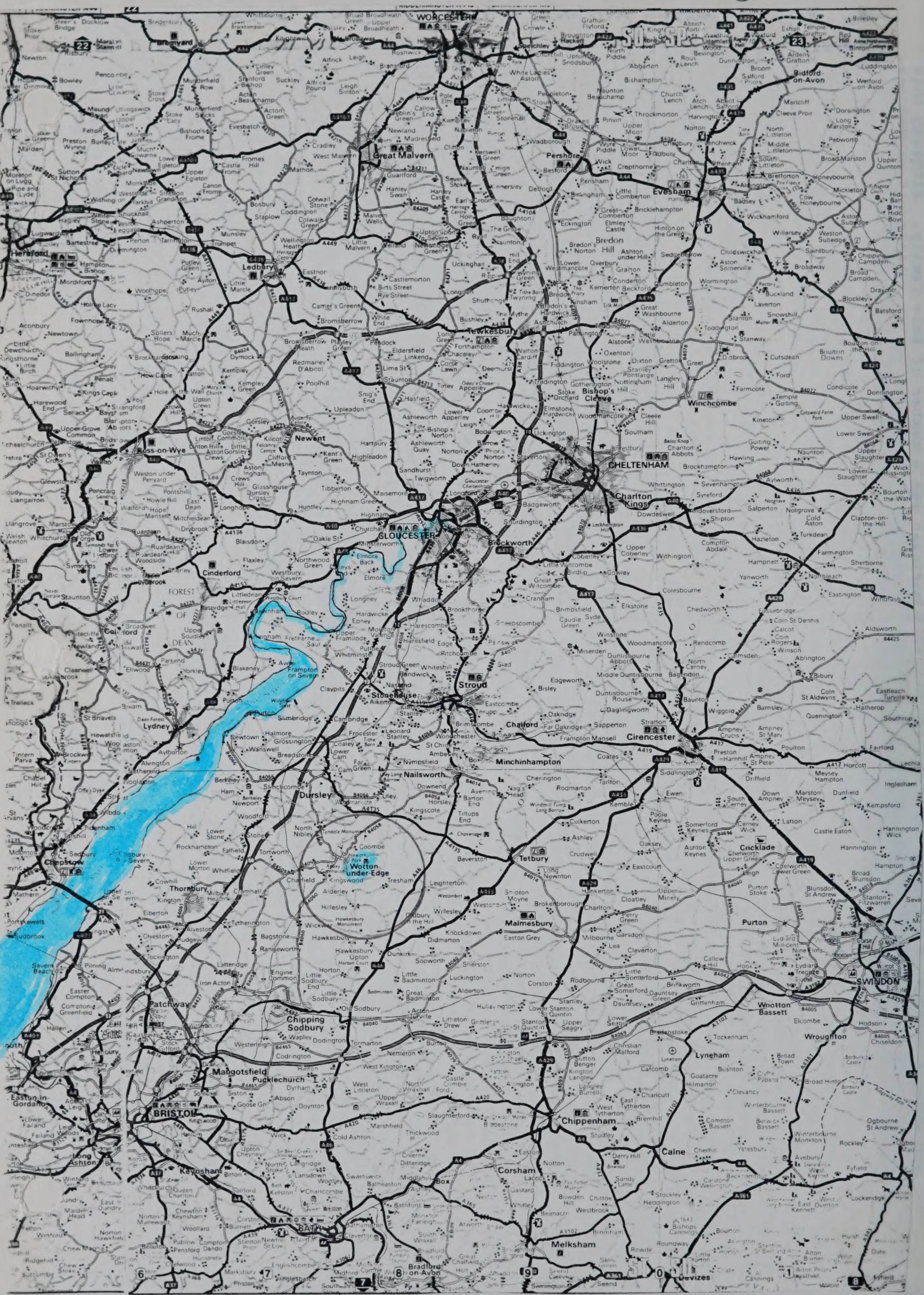
It must not be forgotten that two men named Stephen Hopkins were listed in 1608 at Wortley: one a weaver with sons John and William (the sons twins and born in 1579); while the other was called a clothier. The latter may have been the father of Robert the haberdasher of London. The former remains a possibility for the father of Stephen of the Mayflower, but a possibility only.

—Ralph D. Phillips, Nassau, New York

DORLANDT.—John Dorland Cremer, The Dorland Family in America, 1898, p. 233, fails to determine whether Jan Dorlandt's child Isaac, bapt. at Port Richmond, N. Y., 14 Apr. 1717, was by the first wife Mary or by the second wife, Barbara Aukes Van Nuys. That Barbara was the mother is proved by the fact that Jan Dorland and wife "Barber" were witnesses at a baptism 19 Apr. 1715.

—Frank N. Dorland, Tucson, Arizona

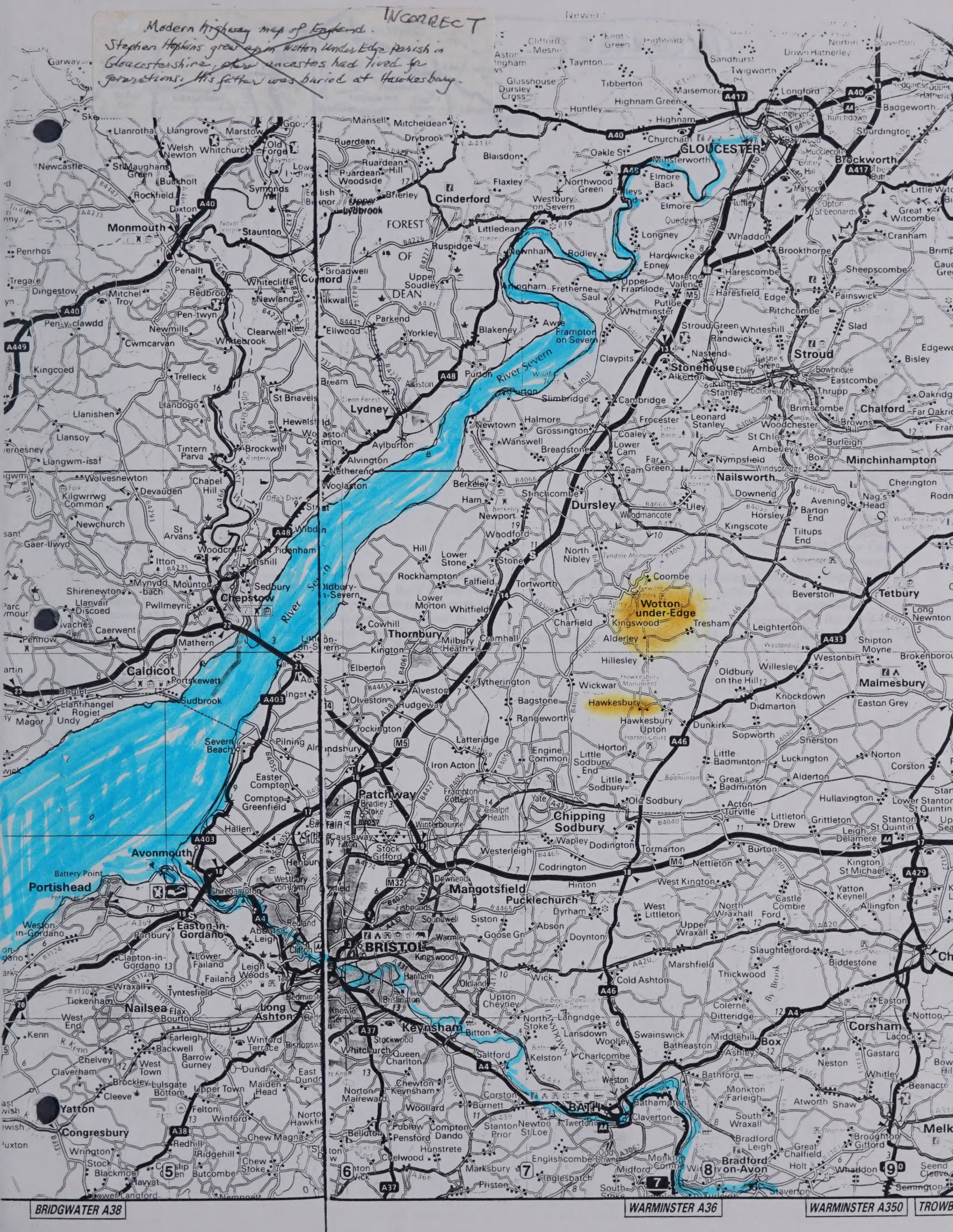
Not really Stephen Hopkins' origin as many long believed



WORCESTER
Great Malvern
Hereford
Ledbury
Tewkesbury
Evesham
Pershore
Ross-on-Wye
Newent
CHELTENHAM
Winchcombe
GLOUCESTER
Cinderford
Lydney
Stroud
Stonehouse
Cirencester
Dursley
Nailsworth
Wotton under-Edge
Tetbury
Malmesbury
Chepstow
Thornbury
Chipping Sodbury
BRISTOL
Chippenham
SWINDON
Cricklade
Calne
Corsham
BATH
Melksham
Bradford on-Avon
Devizes

INCORRECT

~~Modern highway map of England.~~
~~Stephen Hopkins grew up in Wotton Under Edge parish in~~
~~Gloucestershire, where ancestors had lived for~~
~~generations. His father was buried at Hawkesbury.~~



GLOUCESTER
Cinderford
FOREST OF DEAN
Monmouth
Chepstow
Lydney
River Severn
Stroud
Stonehouse
Dursley
Nailsworth
Wotton-under-Edge
Kingswood
Alderley
Hillesley
Hawkesbury
Hawkesbury Upton
Tetbury
Malmesbury
Thornbury
Chipping Sodbury
Caldicot
Portishead
Avonmouth
BRISTOL
Keynsham
Mangotsfield
Pucklechurch
Nailsea
Long Ashton
BATH
Bradford-on-Avon
Corsham
Yatton
Congresbury
BRIDGWATER A38
WARMINSTER A36
WARMINSTER A350
TROWB

Vol 51 #4
Nov 1985

A VISIT TO THE BIRTHPLACE OF STEPHEN HOPKINS

by Virginia W. Shaw

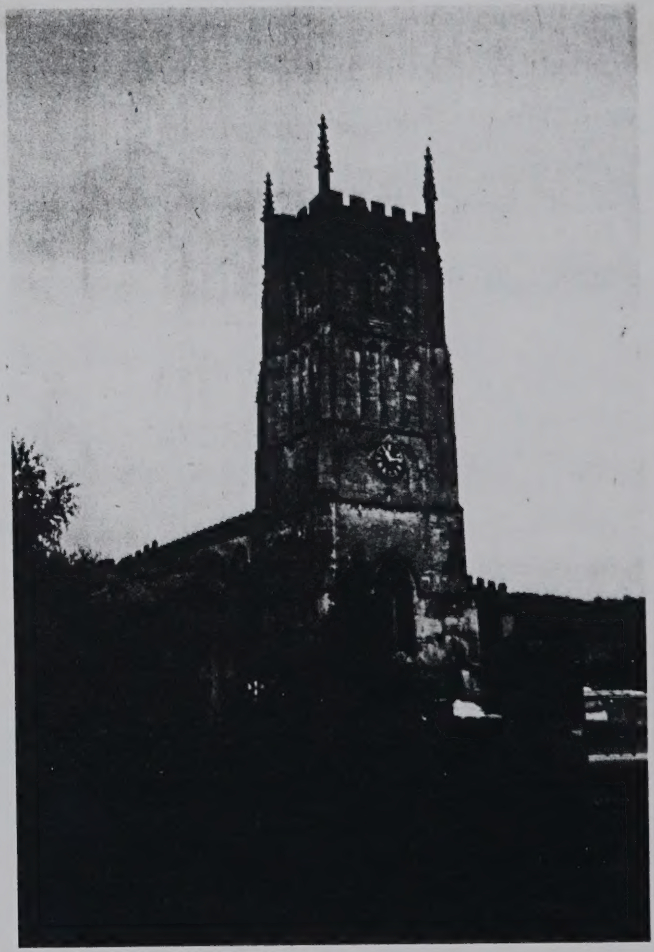
I wonder how many of the descendants of Stephen Hopkins who travel to England are aware of the memorable adventures and experiences available to them at Wotton-under-Edge in Gloucestershire, the quaint and historically documented little town in the beautiful Cotswolds where Stephen was born and grew up. First chartered in A.D. 940, this ancient town became, from the thirteenth century into the mid-nineteenth century, a center for the wool trade, weaving and cloth-making. The little town today takes great pride in having been the birthplace and home of Stephen Hopkins who made the trip to America on the *Mayflower*

The Ram Inn, built in the thirteenth century, is the oldest building in town and projects its ancient heritage into today. The owner for the past two decades, Mr. I. P. John Humphries, has been lovingly restoring the old stone place, structurally and internally. Last June, when my husband and I reached there by car, we were greeted by our most gracious host who subsequently showed us the sights of the town and environs. This included the handsome large old stone home of Stephen Hopkins's father, and the beautiful Castle Coombe village, the movie set for Dr. Doolittle with Rex Harrison. In the evening, John Humphries took us along as guests to the Manor House where, to the accompaniment of refreshments of wine and cheese, there was a demonstration of the ancient and once-again esteemed method of lye-treating stone in old structure restoration.

Mr. Humphries gave us several pages of Gloucestershire archival material showing all the deeds and grants of the Ram Inn including that to the forefathers of Stephen Hopkins, under the aegis of Henry VIII in 1539.

Not to be forgotten is the detailed tour and description of each of the rooms in this seven-hundred-year-old priest's house and public inn, even to the attic, where were housed, discreetly, eighteenth century highwaymen. The hospitable Mr. Humphries is delighted with the visit of each Hopkins descendant, and keeps a large portfolio of memorabilia of previous visitors of the Hopkins lineage.

Virginia W. Shaw (Mrs. Henry M. Shaw), a descendant of Stephen Hopkins, is a member of the New Jersey Society. Her address is 22 Beechwood Drive, Morristown, NJ 07960.



[Photo by Marion Vuilleumier.]

The parish church of St. Mary the Virgin, Wotton-under-Edge, original home of Stephen Hopkins.

INCORRECT DATA Family Group Sheets based on wrong date thrown away.

NEHGR 33

STEPHEN HOPKINS OF THE MAYFLOWER.

By the Rev. B. F. De Costa, of New York City.

WITH respect to the earlier history of the Plymouth Pilgrims, it is still to be regretted that our knowledge is limited. Down to 1834 there was much uncertainty even with respect to their English homes. Mather said that Bradford was born in "Ansterfield," and that the congregation came from "the North of England." Prince said that they "lived near the joining borders of Nottinghamshire, Lincolnshire and Yorkshire." It remained, therefore, for Mr. Hunter to show that this congregation of Separatists was at Scrooby, and that "Ansterfield" should be "Austerfield," near Bawtry. The manuscript of Bradford in the Fulham Library threw additional light upon the Pilgrims, yet much of what has been written is deduction from general statements.

Mr. Hunter has pointed out the origin of a number of the Plymouth Pilgrims, who, from poverty and obscurity, rose to lasting renown. Information, nevertheless, comes slowly. Amongst those whose history, prior to 1620, is so obscure, we find Stephen Hopkins, one of the signers of the compact drawn up in the cabin of the Mayflower. To his antecedents, therefore, this brief article is devoted, though we have no new document to produce. Nevertheless, the inquiry may not prove altogether in vain. Strongly marked characters, like that of Stephen Hopkins, are all the more easily identified; and when such a character stamps itself in two places upon the clay of history, the separate impressions must show an unmistakable resemblance. We shall, therefore, endeavor to point out two such impressions, one stamped upon the history of New England, and the other upon the history of Bermuda. For the latter impression let us turn to the "most Dreadfull Tempest," of William Strachey, found in "Purchas His Pilgrimes" (vol. iv. p. 1734, Ed. 1625), from which it may appear that the "roaring breakers" which, according to Bradford, drove the Mayflower to Provincetown harbor, were not the first that had been encountered on the American coast by Stephen Hopkins.

Strachey's well-known narrative tells the story of the wreck of the "Sea Adventure" upon Bermuda, July 28, 1609. Amongst those who safely reached the shore was one Stephen Hopkins, whom we propose to identify with Stephen Hopkins of the Mayflower, though in the narrative of Strachey he appears as a condemned malefactor. This question of course must be treated as one of pure history, and with the simple aim of elucidating the truth.

It will be remembered that, after the wreck of the Sea Adventure, Governor Gates and the Admiral, Sir George Summers, resolved to make the most of the situation, and therefore, after duly organizing the people for work, they proceeded to build two small vessels, in which, May 10, 1611, the colonists sailed for Virginia.

As the work of ship-building proceeded, dissensions grew, and the "vex'd Bermoothes," celebrated (as a new study of the old subject will show) in the Tempest of Shakspeare, continued to be vexed, Stephen Hopkins lending his influence to the party of disorder, seeking thereby to justify the ancient name of the place, known as "the Ile of Divels." One Nicholas Bennit, however, was the first mover in the mutinies. This person, "who made much profession of Scripture," was a "mutinous and dissembling Imposter." With his confederates he retreated like an outlaw to the woods, and when captured they were banished to one of the distant islands of the Bermuda group. The worst of the six men thus banished was John Want, "an *Essex* man of *Newport* by *Saffronwalden*, both seditious and a sectary in points of Religion, in his owne prayers much deuout and frequent, but hardly drawne to the publique, insomuch as being suspected by our Minister for a *Brownist* he was often compelled to the Common Liturgie and forme of Prayer." The banished men, however, soon found that life in the solitary wilderness was not altogether desirable, and having made humble petition for restoration with much "seeming sorrow and repentance," they were pardoned.

The clemency of the Governor only encouraged the spirit of mutiny, and accordingly Stephen Hopkins set on foot another conspiracy. He is described as "A fellow who had much knowledge in the Scriptures, and could reason well therein." Strachey continuing, says that their minister chose him "to be his Clarke, to reade the Psalmes, and Chapters vpon Sondayes, at the assembly of the Congregation vnder him: who in Ianuary the twenty foure, brake with one *Samuel Sharpe* and *Humfrey Reede* (who presently discoured it to the Gouernour) and alleaged substantiall arguments, both ciuil and diuine (the Scripture falsely quoted) that it was no breach of honesty, conscience, nor Religion, to decline from the obedience of the Gouernour, or refuse to goe any further, led by his authority (except it so pleased themselues) since the authority ceased when the wracke was committed, and with it, they were all then freed from the gouernment of any man." Continuing the argument, Hopkins maintained that "for a matter of Conscience, it was not vnknowne to the meanest, how much they were therein bound each one to prouide for himselfe, and his owne family: for which were two

---

page 698 of the same work is a copy of the deposition of Capt. Cowell, at the trial of *Capt. Tom.* "As I was returning," he states, "from Marlborough to Boston, in the contoryes searvice, and had 18 men under my conduct. and abont 3 miles from Sudbury wee ware Surprysed with divors hundred of Indians, whereof this Indian *Tom* was one, none by a grombleing sign or noyse y^t^ he made; as in my Judgement was y^e^ cause of our being ffvored vpon; at which tjme fower of my company was killed and one wounded; beside ffive horses were disinabled, [being] shot. Vpon Capt. Wadsworth's ingadgen with [y^e^] Indians, I wentt backe and buryed y^e^ ffower men which ware killed, whereof was *Thomas* [*Har*] and *Hopkinses* son of Roxbury, Goodman, a son of *Robert Wayles* of Dorchister." "Sworn in Court, 19 June, 1676."

This very old article has withstood the test of time.
Modern historians believe this was, indeed, our same Mayflower
Stephen Hopkins.

apparant reasons to stay them euen in this place; first, abundance of Gods prouidence of all manner of goode foode: next, some hope in reasonable time, when they might grow weary of the place, to build a small Barke, with the skill and help of the aforesaid *Nicholas Bennit*, whom they insinuated to them * * to be of the conspiracy, that so might get cleere from hence at their own pleasures." Again it was asserted, that "when in *Virginia*, the first would be assuredly wanting, and they might well feare to be detained in that Countrie by the authority of the Commander thereof, and their whole life to serue the turnes of the Adventurers with their travailes and labors." This conspiracy nevertheless soon came to an end. Strachey writes: "This being thus laid, and by such a one, who had gotten an opinion (as I before remembered) of Religion; when it was declared by those two accusers, not knowing what further ground it had or accomplices, it pleased the Gouernour to let this factious offence to haue a publiqe affront, and contestation by these two witnesses before the whole Company, who at the tolling of a bell assembled before a Corps du guard, where the Prisoner was brought forth in manacles, and both accused, and suffered to make at large, to euery particular, his answere: which was only full of sorrow and teares, pleading simplicity and deniall. But hee being onely found, at this time, both the Captaine and the follower of this Mutinie, and generally held worthy to satisfie the punishment of his offence, with the sacrifice of his life, our Gouernour passed the sentence of a Martiall Court vpon him, such as belongs to Mutinie and Rebellion."

Under the circumstances, like many other really courageous men who have failed at the first trial, but have gone serenely to martyrdom at a later period, Stephen Hopkins broke down; hence, "so penitent hee was, and made so much moane, alleadging the ruine of his Wife and Children in this his trespasse, as it wrought in the hearts of all the better sort of the Company, who therefore with humble entreaties, and earnest supplications, went vnto our Gouernor, whom they besought (as likewise did Captaine *Newport*, and my selfe) and neuer left him vntil we had got his pardon."

Such was the conspiracy and its end; for there is no reason to infer that he had any part in the plot which followed, whose authors proposed to take the life of the governor and others, and who declared that if they failed they "should happily suffer as Martyrs."

A careful examination of Strachey's narrative shows that theological differences united with the desire to live at ease free from authority to lay the foundations of dissension. It is tolerably clear that Stephen Hopkins was in sympathy with those suspected of being Brownists, and that as the minister's "Clarke" he felt more or less in bondage. Hopkins appears to have gone on quietly with the company to Virginia.

It is now, therefore, time to inquire what reasons exist for identifying Stephen Hopkins of the "Sea Adventure" with Stephen Hopkins of the "Mayflower." In the first place, it should be observed that the name of Hopkins does not appear in any of the lists of the colonists, and is never mentioned in connection with Virginia, which could not well have been the case with so marked a man if he had remained. Moreover, since we have seen that it was his desire to return to England, and since after their experience of the man, the authorities themselves would not be averse to parting with him, it is reasonable to suppose that he went back in one of the first ships, and thus passed out of the history of Virginia.

That he afterwards became a factor in Massachusetts colonization appears to be probable, and for the reason already indicated, that Hopkins of the "Sea Adventure" and Hopkins of the "Mayflower" answer to a common description. As preliminary it may be observed, that Bradford, speaking of the Plymouth Pilgrims, refers to "y^e^ discontented & mutinous speeches that some of the strangers amongst them had let fall from them in y^e^ ship—That when they came a shore they would use their own libertie; for *none had power to comand them*, the patente they had being for Virginia, and not for Newengland, which belonged to an other government, with which y^e^ Virginia Company had nothing to doe. And partly that shuch an acte by them done (this their condition considered) might be as firme as any patent, and in some respects more sure." That Stephen Hopkins was one of the "strangers" will appear further on, while Strachey reports him in Bermuda as saying "that it was no breach of honesty, conscience, nor Religion, to decline from the obedience of the Gouernour, or refuse to goe any further, led by his authority (except it so pleased themselues) since the authority ceased when the wracke was committed, and with it, they *were all then freed from the gouerment of any man*."

But a stronger resemblance is found in the fact that both were Londoners. The Sea Adventure sailed from London, while Mourt's Relation says that "Steeven Hopkins" was one of a certain "three of London." He was one of those who engaged for the enterprise with Mr. Cushman, who managed the details in that city.

Again, Hopkins of Bermuda and Hopkins of Plymouth were both men of mark. Strachey, notwithstanding his prejudice, clearly shows that he was a man of parts. His appointment as "Clarke" indicates that he was of consequence. The same character is revealed in the Relation of Mourt; and when Miles Standish made his first expedition from the Mayflower, then lying at anchor in Provincetown harbor, Hopkins was appointed with Bradford and Tilley to attend the party to give "counsel and advice."

It need hardly be added here that both were extremely religious, and that both made much of "conscience." It was this which won for Stephen Hopkins at Bermuda the good opinion of the colonists, and made him dangerous. Strachey does not say that he was a Brownist, though he evidently sympathized more or less with them. Neither were the Plymouth colonists Brownists. The fourth of the Seven Articles of the Leyden congregation declares that the King has power to appoint bishops, while the sixth says that no ecclesiastical officers have any power unless given by the King. The "Articles" do not mention the liturgy, but the spirit in which they are drawn up is certainly tolerant as respects the appointments of the church. Still, whatever may have been the opinions of Stephen Hopkins of the Sea Adventurer at Bermuda, attendance at "publique Prayer" was imperative, the roll being called there morning and evening, and "such as were wanting, were duly punished." The position of Hopkins at Bermuda as "Clarke" is, therefore, perfectly consistent with that held by Hopkins at Plymouth, and the resemblance admits of the belief that the two men were the same. Besides, the gentle and tolerant character of the Plymouth people is well understood, while the church element was so strong, that, on Christmas Day, 1621, the majority declared that "it went against their consciences to work on y^t^ day."

In connection with the question of theological character, the parallel as respects Scripture knowledge is evident. The Bermuda adventurer, it will be remembered, "had much knowledge in the Scriptures, and could reason well therein," while a man holding the position occupied by Hopkins in the Plymouth Colony must have been so well furnished as to render any formal statement of the fact by Mourt quite superfluous. According to Bradford, he was one of those who, though sorely off at Clark's Island on that memorable second Sunday in December, 1620, when all things were against them, and they were tempted to give the day to secular activity, nevertheless made a conscience of keeping "y^e^ Sabath." Hopkins of the Sea Adventure and Hopkins of the Mayflower were both very "pushing," and adventurous men. There was also something akin to temerity in both, if we may judge Hopkins of Plymouth by the retainer he kept; for Doty and Leister fought the first duel on record at Plymouth, and escaped on "their master's humble request." Hopkins of Bermuda and he of Plymouth, therefore, knew the importance of humility in adversity. All these circumstances, therefore, seem to point to the conclusion that Hopkins of the Mayflower is Hopkins of Bermuda in a new *rôle*. It is indeed nowhere said that the Mayflower Pilgrim had been in the country before, but the figure presented by the Bermuda adventurer in 1610 was not one that he would be likely to feel proud of, and he would be inclined to say as little about his former experience as possible; yet, according to Mourt, it appears as though he was recognized by the Plymouth colonists as an authority; for when the exploring party with which he was connected at Cape Cod found a limb of a tree bent curiously by the Indians over a bow, Hopkins explained its use, Mourt making the entry, "Stephen Hopkins sayed, it had beene to catch some Deere;" while Strachey indicates the fact that the Sea Adventure's company at Bermuda had once considered the question of trapping deer. Hopkins had evidently seen deer traps before, and if so it must have been in Virginia in 1610.

We have yet to mention another significant fact, for it appears that Hopkins at Bermuda in 1610 had a wife and children, while Hopkins of the Mayflower, 1620, was married a second time. He brought with him in the Mayflower children by his first wife. The facts exactly fit one another, and seem to demonstrate that Strachey and Morton were writing about the same individual. This indeed is not an actual demonstration, yet it may be deemed satisfactory. At least we rest the case here for the present, simply observing that, while the judgment of Hopkins may have been at fault, there is after all no real charge to be brought against his moral character. This is rather a question of personal identity.

STEPHEN HOPKINS - (----) (----)
CONSTANTA/CONSTANCE HOPKINS - NICHOLAS SNOW
ELIZABETH SNOW - THOMAS ROGERS
ELEAZER ROGERS - RUHAMA WILLIS
THOMAS ROGERS - PRISCILLA CHURCHILL
DESIRE ROGERS - SAMUEL BARROWS
THOMAS BARROWS BETHIA BESSIE
BETHIA BARROWS - JOHN HAFFORD
ALMIRA HAFFORD - JOHN A. JOHNSON
LUCY HARRIET JOHNSON - EDWARD OCTAVIUS EMERSON
CHARLES FRANCIS^{9} EMERSON - BESSIE^{9} BENSON

FIRST GENERATION
No. 1

1. STEPHEN^{1} HOPKINS ~~(STEPHEN^{A}? HOPKINS (alias SEBORNE), ROBERT^{B}, STEPHEN^{C}) was born circa 1580 and baptized 29 October 1581 in Wortley, Parish of Wotten Under Edge, county Gloucester~~, England. He died 6 June or 27 July 1644 at Plymouth, MA. ~~STEPHEN^{1} may have been the son of STEPHEN^{A}, a clothier of Wortley, and grandson of ROBERT^{B} of Wortley (ref. 16).~~ STEPHEN^{1} married circa ~~1605~~ 1603? in England as his first wife a woman whose name remains unknown. ~~CONSTANCE DUDLEY has often been cited as this person, but no definite proof of this has been found.~~ He had two children by this first wife, and she died sometime before 1616-17, ~~probably~~ in ~~London,~~ England. On 19 Febuary 1617-18 at St. Mary Matfellon, Whitechapel, London, STEPHEN^{1} married as his second wife Elizabeth^{1} Fisher. She died after 4 February 1638-9 and by 6 June 1644 (when STEPHEN^{1} mentions her as deceased in his will) in Plymouth.

m Mary c 1603

✗

STEPHEN^{1} was probably the man of that name (refs. 1, 7 and 15) who sailed to the New World as a minister's clerk on the ill-fated, 300-ton "Sea Venture". As the flagship of Admiral Sir George Somers, she sailed with eight other ships out of Plymouth, England, 2 June 1609, as a relief fleet for the Jamestown settlement. The ships carried 150 settlers and much-needed supplies for the hard-pressed Colony of Virginia. A July hurricane scattered the fleet and crippled the "Sea Venture". On 28 July, in danger of sinking, the "Sea Venture" lodged between two rocks off the coast of an unoccupied island called "'Lle of Divels'" (ref. 1). (This was first named "Somers

---

✗ Apparently this "saga" is OK except for deleted parts in first ¶.

Island" but later was renamed "Bermuda".) All lives were saved, and as much cargo and materials from the boat as possible were salvaged. From the remains of the "Sea Venture", a smaller boat, the "Deliverance", was built, and a second, the "Patience", was made from supplies found on the island. While there, STEPHEN^1 "encouraged an uprising...upon the grounds that the Governor's authority pertained only to the voyage and the regime in Virginia, not to the forced existence in Bermuda." [He was arrested], "brought before the company in manacles and sentenced to death by court-martial" (ref. 1). According to William Strackney's record of the voyage, he was so penitant and concerned for the welfare of his family that his shipmate-friends got a pardon for him from the Governor. Stackney noted STEPHEN^1 at the time was "very religious" [but] "contentious and defiant of authority and possessed enough learning to undertake to wrest leadership from others" (ref. 1).

On 16 May 1610, with the work completed and new supplies stored, the two ships, the "Deliverance", with most of the passengers, and the "Patience", with the supplies, sailed on to Virginia. No records exist of how long STEPHEN^1 remained there. It is assumed he returned to his family in England shortly after arriving in Virginia. While he was there, however, he apparently learned much about life in the New World that would be of great benefit to the "Mayflower" settlers, if this was indeed the same man.

By 1620 STEPHEN^1 was well-to-do enough to be called "Mister", a title given only to magistrates, ministers and men of distinction. In that year he was listed as a leathermaker-tanner merchant living "just outside of London Wall on the highroad entering the city at Aldgate in the vicinity of Heneage House (in, or near which, lived John Carver and William Bradford, fellow voyagers)" (ref. 7). STEPHEN^1 was recruited to sail on the "Mayflower" because of his business acumen and mature character. Except for his concern for his family, the character description given by Stackney of the Stephen Hopkins on the earlier, ill-fated "Sea Venture" voyage does not seem to fit this image. However, three references, 1, 7 and 15, all verify this earlier voyage, and a specific incident mentioned concerning his use at Plymouth of his previous experience in the New World was given in reference 6. Also, despite his being called "Mister", he continued on occasion to have difficulty with the laws of the Plymouth colony for "doing his own thing".

In 1620 STEPHEN^1, his pregnant wife, son, two daughters and two servants, Edward Dotey and Edward Leister, became part of the "Mayflower" company. Although not part of the original Holland-Puritan group (like ancestor THOMAS^1 ROGERS and his son JOSEPH^2), and thus called a "'stranger'" (ref. 11), he was asked, with several other well-to-do merchants or professional people, to join the "Mayflower" expedition. The Adventurers, the organizers and investors in this undertaking, apparently invited them in order to add to the number of settlers and to bring additional wealth and business experience to this enterprise. The HOPKINS family sailed from London to Southampton in late June 1620 aboard the "Mayflower" to join the smaller "Speedwell", which was sailing from Leyden, Holland, with the original contingent of 66 Pilgrims.

The "Mayflower" was well equipped to weather stormy seas and cross the ocean. She was reported to have been very close in structure to the "Mayflower II" built in England in 1957 and

sailed to America for display at Plymouth, MA. This ship was probably a 181-ton vessel, 90 feet long, with a 58-foot keel. She was 25 feet wide and 12 and one-half feet deep. Near the water line, 12 guns were mounted at gunports. Four of the guns were large and eight were smaller. The ship had a crew of approximately 25 sailors and carried three boats. The master's skiff (holding five to six people) and the longboat (holding up to 20) were lashed to the deck and usually employed as a place in which to keep poultry and rabbits. A shallop, the third boat, was fairly large. It was 30 feet long (one third the length of the "Mayflower") and held up to 32 people, or 18 men with food, weapons and supplies enough for several days. It had to be cut down, partially dismantled and stored below deck for the crossing. This allowed people to sleep and store some belongings in it. The great majority of living space for the passengers was on the main deck (75 by 20 feet, at most) and in the low-ceilinged great cabin (25 by 15 feet, at most).

It took eight months to prepare for the crossing, make the crossing and establish a new settlement on the other shore, and the passengers had to spend most of this time on the ship. This meant that each of the 102 passengers who ended up sailing aboard the "Mayflower" had to spend eight months crowded into a space slightly smaller than a single bed, with ceilings so low that anyone five feet tall had to duck to get around. In this space they had to sleep, eat, store their belongings, mind the children, cook, change clothes and keep as clean as possible. This living situation was typical for people crossing at the time. It is no wonder that mortality among passengers and crew during such crossings could be high. Any outbreak of disease was devestating in so confined a space and under such relatively unsanitary conditions. Also the unpredictable length of the voyage, which, depending on the wind and weather, could take anywhere from two to five months, was another significant factor. Thus it is truly miraculous that so many voyages were relatively death-free, and that the settlers arrived in as good physical and psychological shape as they did to face the inevitable rigors of the New World.

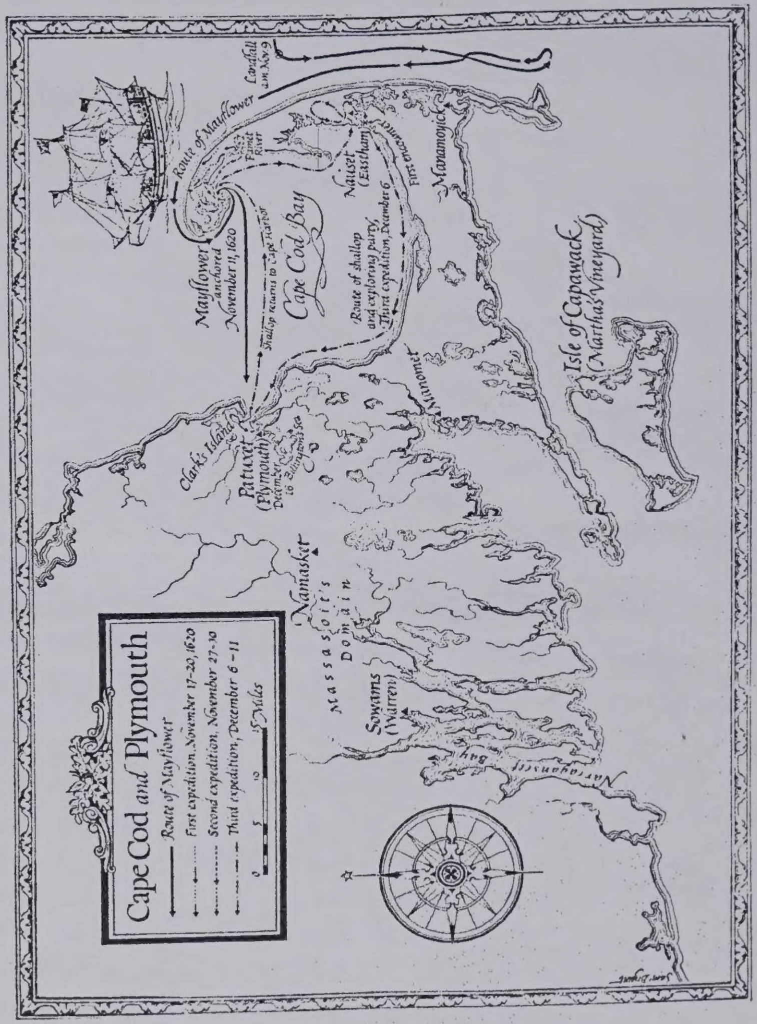
The combined company sailed 5 August 1620 from Southampton, England, but put into Dartmouth, England, for repairs to the "Speedwell", which was declared unsafe by her master. After a short stay, they once again resumed their journey, only to be forced to put into the port of Plymouth, England, almost immediately because the "Speedwell" had become so leaky as to be declared unsafe for the crossing. Discouraged and having exhausted their funds because of the interminable delays, some of the passengers returned to London. The 102 others, 50 men, 20 women and 32 children, remained steadfast in their desire to sail to the New World. Among this number were 17 men, 10 women and 13 children who were among Brewster's exiles from Holland, and 17 men, 9 women and 13 children who joined the voyage in England. In addition, there were 5 hired hands; 11 men and one woman who were servents, indentured servants or apprentices; and six who were orphan children and servants. This brave and determined remnant of the original, larger group finally set sail 6 September 1620. It was a very late date for a crossing because of the approaching winter weather. Their destinatio was no further north than the Hudson River region.

The first half of the voyage was relatively pleasant. The last half took place in a severe storm, during which Elizabeth

HOPKINS gave birth to a son, Oceanus, and the only passenger fatality, that of a young man-servant, occurred. His burial took place Tuesday, 7 November, the weather eased, and early Friday morning, 10 November, land was sighted. However the land they saw was far north and east of their expected goal. The storm had driven them all the way to Cape Cod. After an unsuccessful attempt to turn south and being caught in a terribly strong current that threatened to flounder (wreck) the ship, the "Mayflower" pulled into a protected bay which is now Provincetown, MA, Harbor on 11 November. On that day the Mayflower Compact was signed. This extraordinary document pledged "in ye prefence of God, and of one another, covenant and combine ourfelves togeather into a civil body politik." (ref. 3). STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS was the 14th person to sign. Also on the list was ancestor THOMAS^1 ROGERS (see THOMAS^1 ROGERS).

On 15 November STEPHEN^1 and 15 other armed men, under the leadership of Capt. Miles Standish, made a voyage of exploration around the immediate area of the harbor. They saw their first Indians, who fled from them, and found a cache of corn. They also saw a deer snare. It was identified by STEPHEN^1 from his previous experience in the New World. He warned them about it, but William Bradford, ignoring STEPHEN^1'S advice, proceeded to get caught in it and had to be cut down. The expedition returned to the ship on 17 November. A second exploratation took place in the same area 27-30 November. On 6 December Capt. Standish, with STEPHEN^1 and 16 other men, began a third voyage of exploration with the shallop. They traversed the entire northern shore of Cape Cod to Putuxet (Plymouth, MA) and then back to the ship. This voyage lasted five or six days, during which they had their first brief encounter with the Indians at what is now Eastham, MA. This spot is marked by a monument and is named "Encounter Beach". The area they covered and the harbor (Plymouth) that they had chosen for a settlement had been explored and named on a 1614 map by Capt. John Smith, who also "coined the term 'New England'" (ref. 10).

The "Mayflower" set sail soon thereafter, arriving at Plymouth 16 December 1620. The job of landing supplies and erecting buildings was begun almost immediately. Unfortunately scurvy, illness and death had already begun to reduce the number of settlers. They had been weakened by the severe voyage, and the great majority after six months still were living under the crowded and unsanitary conditions aboard the "Mayflower", while they waited for the time-consuming process of building the settlement during the difficult winter months. Even though the winter was milder than average, six people died in December, eight in January, 17 in February and 13 in March. Nearly half the passengers and crew died during that first terrible winter, including everyone in four of the 24 families and 14 of the 18 wives. Among those who died was ancestor THOMAS^1 ROGERS. (See THOMAS^1 ROGERS for additional information about this first winter.) References 1 and 7 state that the HOPKINS family was one of only four that did not experience a death during this time. By the end of the winter the Colony was in desperate shape for all the necessities to survive in the new land. In 1621 the "Mayflower" returned empty to England, and the "Fortune" arrived at Plymouth with 25 new settlers, but almost no essential supplies such as food, clothing and tools (see ROBERT^1 HICKS for details). No additional relief from England was sent to the struggling Colony until 1623, when 95.


Cape Cod and Plymouth
Route of Mayflower
First expedition, November 17-20, 1620
Second expedition, November 27-30
Third expedition, December 6-11
Miles
Route of Mayflower
Cornhill
Pamet River
Mayflower anchored November 11, 1620
Cape Cod Bay
Route of shallop and exploring party, Third expedition, December 6
Nauset (Eastham)
First encounter
Manamoyick
Isle of Capawack (Martha's Vineyard)
Manomet
Clark's Island
Patuxet (Plymouth)
Namasket
Massasoit's Domain
Sowams (Warren)
Narragansett Bay

CAPE COD AND PLYMOUTH, 1620
map courtesy of The General Society of Mayflower Descendants

new settlers came aboard the "Anne" and "Little James", thus doubling its' size. These two ships still brought few essential supplies, however (see GEORGE MORTON for details). "Due to the parsimony of the Adventurers in the absence of exports from the Colony. ...The Adventurers preferred to send out vessels to fish rather than to supply the colony" [and] "Bradford reported that some of the Colony were now half naked" (ref. 10).

On 16 February 1620-1, two Indians appeared on a hill overlooking the settlement and signaled the settlers to come to them, but when Capt. Standish and STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS were sent out to meet the two Indians, they disappeared. On 16 March 1621 the Indian Samoset appeared. He had learned English from the fisherman off Pemaquid Point in Maine. He was accompanied by friendly Indian allies, who brought badly-needed food, and he passed on much invaluable information about the area. Undoubtedly, without this help not one of the settlers would have survived the winter. When he was in Plymouth, Samoset lived with STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS in his new house. It was located on the easterly corner of Main and Leyen Streets, on the slope from the highway to the beach not far from Plymouth Rock. He lived in this house all his life while in Plymouth. On 2 July 1621 Edward Winslow and STEPHEN^1 were sent by Gov. Carver to visit Massasoit, the Sachem of the area Indians, the Wampanoags, at his residence in the territory of Swansea, now Warren, RI. With the assistance of Squanto, who spoke even better English than Samoset, they concluded a satisfactory interview for a peace treaty between the two sides.

In 1623 STEPHEN^1 received six acres of land. On 22 May 1627 he received, as a group of 13, the seventh allotment of cattle and goats to be cared for by this group for ten years. As part of the agreement, they would receive half the increase as their fee. He was elected a Freeman on the first list of the Colony in 1633 and from 1633-6 he was elected as one of several assistants to Gov. Edward Winslow. He was a tanner and an innkeeper by vocation, and he built the first wharf on record on the Eel River. He also was periodically in trouble with the authorities, "Probably because of his status in the colony as a 'stranger'. ...In June of 1636 while serving as Assistant, he was fined for battery of John Tisdale" (ref. 1). "Evidently he possessed a superior grade of beer and wine or perhaps he excelled as a salesman" (ref. 6), for he was brought before the court occasionally for charging too much for liquor and other goods. In 1638-9 he was "found in contempt of court for refusing to deal fairly with Dorothy Temple, an apprentice girl" (ref. 1), (see JOHN^1 HOLMES for details). Given the many areas of responsibility entrusted to him by his fellow-townsmen, however, these brushes with the law obviously never affected his standing in the community. In 1637 he volunteered to fight against the Pequots, but before the Company of militia was ready, they were not needed. He also served on a committee to do business for Plymouth, because he was known as a very good businessman. In 1638 he was given the right to build a house in Yarmouth. He did so in 1639, but soon thereafter gave this to his son Giles^2. Giles^2 remained in Yarmouth, and STEPHEN^1 returned to Plymouth. In 1642 he became one-sixteenth owner of a barque to be built in Plymouth, and from 1642-4 he served on the council of war for the Colony. Thus his sense of public duty was present to the last.

He passed away in 1644. "In spite of his stubborness and severity, there was a tenderness in Stephen^1 for in his will dated June 6, 1644, he directed that his body be 'buryed as neare as convenyently may be to my wyfe, Deceased'" (ref. 7).

The children of STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS were:

by first wife CONSTANCE (DUDLEY?) HOPKINS:

I 2. CONSTANTA/CONSTANCE^2, b. ca. 1607-8, prob. in London, Eng.; d. mid. Oct. 1677 at Eastham, MA; m. aft. 1623, bef. 22 May 1627 at Plymouth, MA, NICHOLAS^1 SNOW (see SNOW).

II 3. Giles^2, b. ca. 1610, prob. in London, Eng.; d. aft. 15 Mar 1689, bef. 26 Apr 1690; m. 9 Oct. 1639 at Plymouth, MA, Katherine Wheldon.

by second wife Elizabeth^1 (Fisher) HOPKINS:

III 4. Damaris^2, b. ca. 1618-9 in Eng.; d. soon aft. 1627 cattle distrib. at Plymouth, MA.

IV 5. Oceanus^2, b. aft. 16 Sep and shortly bef. 11 Nov. 1620 on the "Mayflower"; d. by 22 May 1627 and prob. by 1623 when fam. listed as 6 persons.

V 6. Caleb^2, b. ca. 1622 at Plymouth, MA; d. betw. 6 Jun 1644, when exec. of f.'s est. with Miles Standish, and 3 Apr 1651 in Barbados; seaman; unm.

VI 7. Deborah^2, b. ca. 1624-5 at Plymouth, MA; d. 1669 at Plymouth; m. 1/wf ca. 23 Apr 1646, Andrew Ring/Ringe who m. 2/wf ca. 1674, Lettice Morton, wid. of John.

VII 8. Damaris^2, b. aft. 1627 at Plymouth, MA; d. aft. 1666, bef. 1669, at Plymouth; m. 1/wf ca. 10 Jun 1646, 20 Jun 1646 at Plymouth, Jacob Cooke who m. 2/wf 8 Nov 1669 at Plymouth, Elizabeth (Lettice) Shurtleff, wid. of William.

VIII 9. Ruth^2, b. at Plymouth, MA; d. aft. 30 Nov. 1644-bef. 3 Apr 1651 at Plymouth; unm.

IX 10. Elizabeth^2, b. at Plymouth, MA; d. betw. Oct 1657 and when she report. as missing 5 Oct 1659 and fam. thought d.; cust. aft. d. of f. STEPHEN^1, to Richard Sparrow until 19 yrs. old; unm.

REFERENCES

1) Austin, John D., editor, *Mayflower Families Through Five Generations, Vol. 6, Stephen Hopkins*, [Plymouth, MA, General Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1992], [hereinafter Austin, J. D.], 3-8.

2) Barnard, Ruth L., op. cit., 16, 18-9, 21-2.

3) Caffrey, Kate, *The Mayflower*, [New York, NY, Stein and Day, 1974], [hereinafter Caffrey, K.], 60-1, 110-141, 146-149, 162-165, 252-5, 337-41.

4) "Cape Cod and Plymouth", Mayflower Quarterly, 54(1988), No. 2, back page, map.

5) Colket, M. B., op. cit., 161, 289.

6) Emerson, J. L., op. cit., HOPKINS LINE, SNOW LINE.

7) Ferris, M. W., op. cit., *Dawes-Gates*, II:442-51.

8) Gebler, Ernest, *The Plymouth Adventurer*, [Garden City, NY, Doubleday and Company, Inc., 1950], [hereinafter Gebler, E.], 376.

9) Kittredge, H. C., op. cit., 54.

10) Lovell, R. A., op. cit., 1, 14.

11) Lowe, A. A., op. cit., 13, 63-4.

12) *Mayflower Descendants and Their Marriages for Two Generations*, [Washington, D.C., Bureau of Military and

MPL R929.2 B198

The source of the confusion!

English Homes & Ancestry of the Pilgrim Fathers
by Charles E Banks (1962)

STEPHEN HOPKINS

THE known and already published facts concerning this Pilgrim that are factors in his identification are his previous residence in London (*Mourt's Relation*) and the name of his wife, Elizabeth, stated to have been his second marriage (*Bradford*). The church register of St. Mary Matfellon (Whitechapel) records the marriage of Stephen Hopkins and Elizabeth Fisher, 19 February, 1617/18, which complies with the necessary factors just quoted. This places Hopkins in the parish on the highroad entering London at Aldgate near which Bradford, Carver, Cushman and Southworth lived in or near Heneage House, Aldgate Ward, as already shown, and thus provides the atmosphere and propinquity required to establish this probability. The name of his first wife is not known but he may be the same Stephen Hopkins, a resident in the parish of St. Stephens, Coleman St., who had a son Stephen, baptized 22 December, 1609, possibly by this first marriage. All other Stephen Hopkinses found in London have been followed to a point where they could be eliminated from consideration as the Pilgrim.

It seems possible to identify the Pilgrim, Stephen Hopkins, with one of his name who sailed for Virginia in the *Sea Adventure* which set sail 15 May, 1609, via Bermuda and was wrecked on the shore of that island. This earlier Hopkins, in an account of this voyage, is described as one "who had much knowledge in the Scriptures and could reason well therein." The chaplain of the party chose him to be his assistant "to read the Psalmes and Chapters upon Sondayes" after they had become settled on the island. The narrator continues the story of this stranded company (which was originally bound for Virginia) and relates a mutiny among the passengers who were desirous to continue the voyage. This Stephen Hopkins was one of the ringleaders. Sir George Summers caused these mutineers to be arrested and tried. Hopkins with his associates was found guilty of rebellion, "but so penitent hee was and made soe much moane alledging the ruine of his Wife and Children," that upon the plea of the rest of the company the Governor pardoned him. After this a small bark was built and the company proceeded to Virginia. (*Purchas. His Pilgrimes, Book ix, pt. 2; comp. Gen. Reg. xxxiii, 305.*)

The significance of this and its connection with Stephen Hopkins, the Pilgrim, will be apparent from what is recorded of him after arrival of the *Mayflower* at Plymouth. He was of the first exploring party sent out to seek a suitable place for habitation and while on this errand they came across a sight which was curious to them —a small tree bent over and attached to boughs and grasses woven together covering a deep pit. Hopkins at once informed them that it was a trap used by the Indians to catch deer. Knowledge of this sort was not the common property of residents of London but must have been acquired by previous residence among the Indians such as we know was the case with the Stephen Hopkins on the 1609 voyage. Doubtless he had seen the same device in Virginia. When Samoset came to Plymouth and welcomed the Pilgrims he was lodged overnight in Stephen Hopkins' house, doubtless because Hopkins could understand his language and converse with him. When the messenger of Canonicus brought the snake-skin full of arrows to Plymouth, Standish and Hopkins had charge of him (Standish in his capacity as military commander), and tried to get at the meaning of the message this snake symbolized. As Standish did not know the Indian language, Hopkins was chosen to learn from the Indian what it meant. In 1623 Hopkins accompanied Winslow on the mission to Massasoit just as he did in 1621, doubtless for the same purpose—his knowledge of the Indian tongue. These instances definitely confirm the view that Hopkins had been on this coast prior to his voyage on the *Mayflower.* It was always Hopkins when negotiations with the Indians were necessary and he could not have learned these things in London. It seems highly probable that Weston selected Hopkins to accompany the Pilgrims because of his previous knowledge of this coast.

One clue remains to be considered—the rare name of Giles, his son. The compiler has only found one instance of it—that of a Giles Hopkins, a tiler of Bristol, living there in 1639, aged 44 years. It is to be remembered that Francis Eaton also came from Bristol. The Militia list for Gloucestershire, 1608, shows a family of weavers and clothiers in the hamlet of Wortley in the parish of Wotton under Edge (16 miles from Bristol) bearing the names of Stephen Hopkins and his sons. Unfortunately, the parish records of Wotton are imperfect for the years necessary for identifying our Stephen as of this family, but sufficient exists to show the baptism of a son William to Stephen Hopkins, 19 July, 1607, after which the name disappears from the register. Theoretically, this gives opportunity for the removal of this Stephen to London in time to join the *Sea Adventure* on her voyage to Bermuda as above related. An imperfect entry in the Wotton register records the baptism of —— Hopkins of Stephen Hopkins, 29 October, 1581, who was the fourth child and whose age would fit that of the Pilgrim. The record does not state whether a son or daughter, but as no child had been named Stephen for himself possibly this was the name of the child.

(See Sampson.)

Banks' paragraph here stated all that speculation by other writers about Stephen Hopkins' origins. Notice that he did not actually claim Stephen came from Wortley — only that records there should be searched more thoroughly just in case.

Instead of checking further, others just took it for gospel!

Dodge
D 16a

Clippings

Hopkins

Pope's Pioneers p 239-40

HOPKINS,

John, Cambridge, propr. 1634, frm. March 4, 1634-5. He rem. to Hartford in 1636; d. in 1654. Ch. Stephen and Bethiah. The widow Jane m. 2, Nathaniel Ward of Hadley.

"Mr., a merchant of London, of fair estate and of great esteem for religion and wisdom in outward affairs," came to Boston in June, 1637. [W.]

Richard, Watertown, for selling gun and ammunition to Indians, was sentenced to be whipped and branded on the cheek, Sept. 4, 1632.

✓ Mr. Stephen, gent., of London, came in the Mayflower; signed the Compact; settled at Plymouth. Frm. and asst. 1632-3. Volunteer for the Pequot War, 1637. He brought with him his wife Elizabeth, son Giles, and dau. Constanta, (ch. of a former wife,) and Damaris and Oceanus (b. at sea,) by this wife. [B.] Ch. Caleb and Deborah also drew shares in the cattle in 1627.

He d. in 1644. Will, dated June 6, prob. Aug. 20, 1644. Sons Giles and Caleb; daus. Constance, (wife of Nicholas Snow,) Deborah, Damaris, Ruth and Elizabeth; to Stephen, son of Giles. Est. divided May 19, 1647. The widow Elizabeth's est. was admin. Oct. 6, 1659. Agreement made between Andrew Ring, Jacob Cooke and Gyles Hopkins regarding the estate. [Reg. IV, 281, and V, 387.]

Meredith
Colket - Founders of American Families p ~~45~~ 161

HOPKINS

JOHN Born ca 1614 or before. Cambridge (Mass.) 1634, Hartford 1636. d. Hartford by Apr 1654. Freeman. *John Hopkins of Cambridge and descendants* 1932.**

✓ STEPHEN From Wotton-under-Edge, co. Gloucester, Eng., Probably came first on "Sea Venture" to Va. 1609 and returned, came on "Mayflower" 1620, Plymouth (Mass.) 1620. d. Plymouth 27 July 1644. Tanner. Innkeeper. Assistant. *Register* 102:46 (desc); Jester, *Adventurers*; tag 39:95, 170 (clues); *Mayflower Quarterly* 51:7, 10.

THOMAS Bapt. Yeovilton, co. Somerset, Eng., 7 Apr 1616. New England by 1635, Providence (R.I.) 1637, Oyster Bay 1675. d. Oyster Bay by 17 Sept 1684. Deputy. Ancestor of Stephen Hopkins, Signer of Declaration of Independence. *Thomas Hopkins of Providence and Oyster Bay*, 2nd ed. 1954; *Supplement*; Austin, *Rhode Island*; tag 20:224 (clue).

NEHGR Oct 1851 p 387 (this is Constance's stepmother ?)
"Abstracts of the Earliest Wills"
see below

ELIZABETH HOPKINS, (Plymouth.) (second wife)

Inventory of her property in the hands of *Jacob Cook* and *Andrew Ring*, Oct. 6. 1659. Am't. £26. 14s. by *Tho. Southworth John Morton.** A writing by *John Freeman* and *Edwd. Bangs*, 29. 7^mo 1659, about the cattle of *Gyles* and *Elizabeth Hopkins*, accompanied by orders of Court.

---

* In connection with this estate at this date is mentioned the name of Mrs. Standish, which shows that she was alive in 1659. The Captain died in 1656, and it is known his wife survived him, but how long is doubtful. — J. W.

Since Stephen's will asks that he be buried near his wife (despite what Pope says) this might be his son Giles + much younger daughter Elizabeth who never married? — Unless Leon C Hills misinterpreted the will (p 124).

Directory of Ancestral Heads
1620 - 1700 pp. cxxii + cxxiii
By Frank R. Holmes

HOPKINS (means)

Little Robert, or the child of Robert. the surname originally spelled Hopkyns is one of the earliest of purely English surnames; it is baptismal signifying the son of Robert and is derived from Hob or Hothe, nicknames for Robert. The seat of the family is Oxfordshire, Eng. EDWARD, merchant, came to Boston, Mass., 1637, went to Hartford, Conn., same year, returned to Eng., 1652; no issue.

JOHN, proprietor Cambridge, Mass., 1634, removed to Hartford, Conn., 1636.

SAMUEL, at Milford. Conn., 1658, married, New Haven, Conn., 1667.

✓ STEPHEN, Mayflower passenger.

THOMAS, son of William, b. Chelselbourne, Eng., 1616, name appears on records at Providence, R. I., 1640, removed 1676, to what is now Oyster Bay, Long Island.

WILLIAM, at Stratford, Conn., 1640.

WILLIAM, inhabitant of Roxbury, Mass., 1660.

Copied from Walker Genealogy - Madison - Jan 1993

John Tisdill of Duxbury entered against Stephen Hopkins, Asst to the Governor, 1636, action for battery by which he was severely wounded. Stephen Hopkins fined £5 + costs.

(This John Tisdale (? ~~1620~~ 16 - 1677) was husband of Sarah Walker, brother of our Philip Walker of Rehoboth.)

and distressing delays and many fierce storms during their sixty-five-day voyage [see Brewster, p. 152, and Cooke, p. 239]. During the voyage his family was increased by the arrival of a son whom they named Oceanus^2. Upon the arrival of the Pilgrims at Cape Cod, November 11, 1620, after their sixty-five-day ocean voyage, STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS, with the other men, signed the Compact [see text, p. 853] in the cabin of the vessel.[5] From the very first he attained a place among the leaders of the colony, and in spite of the fact that his impulsiveness frequently laid him open to criticism, he never lost the confidence of his contemporaries.[23]

We are told[2,4,5,12] that after arrival some of the people were impatient at the delay incident upon the repair of their shallop, "Wherupon a few of them tendered them selves to goe . . ." on a tour of discovery on foot. Sixteen men "well armed with musket, sword and corselet"* set out, Wednesday, November 15, "in the order of a single File . . ." under the command of Myles Standish "unto whom was adioyned for counsell and advise William Bradford, STEPHEN HOPKINS and Edward Tilley."[5] To search out a site for their new world home in the face of unknown dangers must have been a thrilling adventure to them. It is surely no less thrilling to us today when we weigh the events which have followed that courageous undertaking.

The presence of STEPHEN^1 on this first search served them well for during their third day out, when they saw and marveled at an Indian deer trap he was able to tell them its purpose and to warn them away from it [see Addendum, p. 449]. He was also one of the ten men under Standish who set out, December 6, on the third tour of discovery which lasted five days. On the third day they experienced their first, though bloodless, Indian attack, and discovered the site upon which they soon settled.[5,9,12]

As a result[9] of the appalling mortality from scurvy and exposure during that first winter on the New England coast they buried fourteen of the eighteen wives who had come over; four of the twenty-four households were wiped out; and only four households escaped loss, among which were those of STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS (consisting of eight persons) and of FRANCIS^1 COOKE (consisting then of but himself and son). The oft repeated service of STEPHEN^1 in Indian relations[9,12] was evidenced in February, 1620–1, when two natives appeared on a neighboring hill top and made signs of friendliness, beckoning the colonists to them, whereupon Standish and STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS advanced to parley.[9] In March of that year an Indian named Samoset appeared among

them and at first caused some distrust. But he was presented with gifts and entertained for the night at the home of STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS who was always deputized to meet the Indians and to act as interpreter in such cases. Samoset became a frequent visitor and a faithful friend of the colonists.[6] In July, 1621, STEPHEN^1 served successfully with Edward Winslow as an envoy to the friendly Indian chief, Massasoit, who lived near what is now Warren, Rhode Island; and in December, 1621, assisted Captain Standish in dealing with the Indian messenger who brought from Canonicus of the Narragansett tribe "a bundle of arrows tyed aboute with a great sneak-skine . . ." which constituted a threat and a challenge.[6,9] STEPHEN^1 acquired[14] various tracts of land by grant as well as by purchase. In the so-called "division of land" in 1623 he received for garden purposes a six-acre plot, being one acre for each member of his family. In the division of cattle in 1627 he and his family had a share in the seventh lot. In 1633 he had already become a freeman. That year the tax list showed that only four men paid more than STEPHEN^1, and but seven equaled him. Various records are found of debts owing to him, but not of his owing others[14] excepting a modest amount at the time of his death. It is stated that he retained,[12] for his home, throughout his life the lot on the easterly corner of Main and Leyden streets which was assigned to him on arrival in 1620. At the time of the Pequot war in 1637, the "Voluntaries" included[7] STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS, his sons, Giles^2 and Caleb^2 (then not over fifteen or sixteen years of age), and his son-in-law, JACOB^2 COOKE. In June of the same year STEPHEN^1 and EDWARD^1 FOSTER of Scituate [see DAWES-GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I, Foster chapter] were appointed, with four others, to aid the governor and his assistants to "assesse men towards the Charges of the souldiers that are to be sent for the ayde of the Mattachusetts Bay and Connectacutt."[7] STEPHEN^1 served[8] as an assistant to the governor from 1663 to 1636, being then closely associated with THOMAS^1 PRENCE and JOHN^1 DOANE. In the financial difficulties faced by the colony[11] [see Prence, p. 687] it became necessary for certain leaders called "the partners" to bind themselves individually for the public debt which they hoped to pay off by means of the fur trade carried on with the Indians on the Kennebec River. In connection with the agreement between these partners and the officials of the colony STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS and JOHN^1 DOANE were repeatedly called upon for advice. The mutual agreement entered into bore the signatures of WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER, THOMAS^1 PRENCE, STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS, STEPHEN^1 TRACY, FRANCIS^1 COOKE, and EDWARD^1 BANGS.

---

*A piece of armor covering the breast from neck to girdle. When a back piece was buckled on, it was called a cuirass.[12]

HOPKINS

STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS* was an interesting character with a strong personality. He was one of "the Londoners"[1, 2, 4] who joined the Mayflower group, very possibly having been chosen to accompany them by Robert Cushman (who was the London agent for the Pilgrims) because of a probable previous knowledge of the new world acquired,[3] as it seems, on a colonization trip to Virginia in 1609–10 [see Addendum, p. 449]. As the result of intensive research[1] in England it is fairly well established that the London home of STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS was just outside of London Wall on the highroad entering the city at Aldgate in the vicinity of Heneage House (in, or near which, lived John Carver and William Bradford, fellow voyagers, also, Robert Cushman their London agent, and Edward Southworth who later came to New England). The identity of the first wife of STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS is unknown, but his second wife was ELIZABETH, and the record on the register[1] of St. Mary Matfellon (Whitechapel) undoubtedly pertains to him and identifies this wife in the item stating that STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS married there February 19, 1617–8, ELIZABETH FISHER. She came with him on the Mayflower, as did also his children, Giles^2 and Constance^2 (by his first wife), a daughter Damaris^2 by the second wife, and two men servants.† He and his family shared with the other Mayflower passengers the experience of repeated

---

*Evidence is found[1] which points to the probability that our STEPHEN^1 was related (perhaps a son) to a Stephen Hopkins who with several sons lived in the hamlet of Wortley, parish of Wotton Under Edge, Gloucester (sixteen miles from Bristol). He may have been the child who was baptized there October 29, 1581. The possibility also exists that it was our STEPHEN^1 who remained there till an adult, and who had a son William baptized at Wotton on July 19, 1607. Then the name disappeared from that place in suitable time to appear in London as did that of our STEPHEN^1 [see above, and Addendum, p. 449].

†In June, 1621, these servants, Edward Doty and Edward Lister, imbued, perhaps, with the spirit of their master, established a precedent in the new world by fighting a duel with sword and dagger. Doty was wounded in the right hand and Lister in the thigh, but the punishment meted out to them by the authorities must have been more painful than these injuries for it was decreed that they should spend twenty-four hours, without food or drink, each with his head and feet tied together [see Freeman, p. 359]. The cruelty of this punishment caused STEPHEN^1 to intercede for them, for we are told that " . . . within an hour, because of their great pains, at their own and their master's humble request, upon promise of better carriage . . . " they were released by the governor.[12, 23]

Stephen^1 Hopkins was associated,[8] in 1633, with John^1 Doane and Edward^1 Bangs in a proportional division of meadow land; with these two men and Elder William^1 Brewster in 1637 in an apportionment of five hundred acres; with Kenelm Winslow in 1635–6 in holding goods in escrow; and with these men, and others, in the handling of various estates. In October, 1643, an especial Indian menace was impending,[11] so a brick watch-house was built and a constant watch was kept by six men and a corporal. A council of war was appointed which included Stephen^1 Hopkins and Thomas^1 Prence.

Stephen^1 was enterprising and progressive. He built and owned, near Eel River, the first wharf of which any record is found; and when he sold it and the adjacent property for £60 in July, 1637, it was called "Broken Wharf," suggesting that it was already old. In this deal he is called "gentleman." Plans were going forward, by contributions from the colonists, in January, 1641–2, to build a vessel[11] of forty or fifty tons costing £200. The expense and consequent ownership were divided into sixteenths, one of which was taken by Stephen^1 Hopkins, one by Francis^1 Cooke and his son John^2, and one by Edward^1 Bangs. The second horse mentioned in the colony records[12] was a mare, valued at £6 and owned by Stephen^1. In April, 1642, the court[14] placed Jonathan Hatch in the home of Stephen^1 who was "to haue a speciall care of him."

It is no exaggeration to say that Stephen^1 was a useful and much respected citizen. This is evidenced by the title of "master" granted him; by his having brought over two servants; by the very frequent calls cited as having been made upon him for public service of a delicate and important sort; and by his business capacity. It is probably true that he was also stubborn, argumentative, and inclined to construe the rather vaguely worded laws of the colony to suit himself. This frequently brought him into conflict with the authorities who, even though they were his personal friends, dealt out punishment with stern justice, . . . indeed in one instance they were more severe with him than with others who offended similarly on the theory that because of his official position in the community he should most carefully uphold the law. This case[13] occurred in June, 1636, when "John Tisdale, yeoman, entreth an accon of battery against Steven Hopkins, Assistant to the go^{u}m^t, by whom the said John was dangerously wounded, as he affirmeth. . . ." The court fined Stephen^1 £2 for the plaintiff and £5 for breaking the King's peace "w^{ch} he ought after a speciall manner to haue kept. . . ." Also[10, 12] in October, 1637, and again in January, 1637–8, he was brought before the grand jury for allowing men, servants and others, to drink* in his house "more than for ordinary refreshment" as well as on the Lord's day both before and after the meeting and even during it. Stephen^1 Tracy was one of the witnesses in this case and on these counts Hopkins was acquitted, but he was fined £2 for allowing these frequenters "to play at shouell board, & such like misdemeamors. . . ." Evidently he possessed a superior grade of beer and wine or perhaps he excelled as a salesman, for in June, 1638, he was presented again "for selling beere for ij^d [two pence] the quart, not worth j^d [one penny] the quart" and "for selling wine at such excessiue rates, to the oppressing & impouishing of the colony" on both of which counts he was fined. Again in September of that year reference was made before the jury to the last two complaints and three new ones were added "for selling wine, beere, strong waters, and nutmeggs at excessiue rates . . ." for this[10] he was fined £5. In 1639 he evidently neglected to renew his license for when he was charged with selling "strong waters" without it he frankly admitted the fact and was fined £3; though the next year the same fault in a neighbor brought a fine[12] of £1 only. In December, 1639, he was brought before the court "for selling a lookeing glasse for 16^d, the like whereof was bought in the [Massachusetts] Bay for ix^d. . . ." This is the first recorded mention[12] of a mirror in the colony. Stephen^1 found it hard to profit by experience and to humble his will, for in February, 1638–9, he was held in custody for four days[12, 13] for contempt of court. It appears that he had in his home an indentured servant, Dorothy Temple, who owed him two more years of service. She had unwisely trusted her sweetheart, and, with the same hard justice to her that had been meted out to him, Stephen^1 refused to shelter or provide for her or her infant son. His impartial friends, the members of the court, ordered him to clothe and board her and the child either in his own family or elsewhere. On his refusal he was committed to ward, though it probably[12] was confinement only to the house of the officer. After four days of this discipline he gave in and paid £3 to John Holmes who took over the responsibility and the remainder of term of service.[12, 13] In spite of this stubbornness and severity there was a tenderness in Stephen^1, for in his will[15] dated June 6, 1644, he directed that his body be "buryed as neare as convenyently may be to my wyfe, Deceased," whose death had occurred[13, 23] subsequent to 1640. His will made bequests to his two sons and five daughters of whom four were unmarried, including our Damaris^2 Hopkins who received "the Cowe called Damaris' heiffer and the white faced calf and half the cowe called Mottley . . ." and one fourth of "all the moveable goods the w^{ch} do belong to my house, as linnen wollen beds bedclothes pott kettles pewter or whatsoev^r . . ." including one of his "foure silver spoones." These four spoons were inventoried on July 17, 1644, at £1–8. The list of the property of Stephen^1, totaling about £130, and prepared by John^1 Doane, shows that he was comfortably well to do. He possessed fifteen neat cattle, a horse, and other stock, as well as many household comforts.[15]

---

*In the colonial days licenses to serve drink were granted only to the most dependable and reputable citizens. Further evidence of the control of the sale and consumption of liquor is in the record, 1633, of one who was "Disfranchised for being drunke."

The children* of Stephen^1 Hopkins and his first wife, both born in England, were[15, 16, 23]

i. Constance^2, d. at Eastham, about the middle of October, 1677; m. at Plymouth, after 1623 and before May 22, 1627, Nicholas^1 Snow.[17]

ii. Giles^2, d.[18] at Eastham, after March 15, 1689, and before April 26, 1690; m. at Plymouth, October 9, 1639, Catherine Wheldon.

The children of Stephen^1 and Elizabeth (Fisher) Hopkins, the last five of whom were born in Plymouth, were[15, 16, 23]

iii. Damaris^2, b. in England, 1618–9; emigrated with her parents, and was living[20] in 1627 at the division of cattle, but undoubtedly died soon after, being perhaps the "one daughter [who] dyed here" as Bradford says. She was memorialized by having one of the ".4. daughters borne here" named after her[19] [see following].

iv. Oceanus^2, b. at sea, between September 16 and November 11, 1620; d.[18] before June 1, 1627, and undoubtedly before 1623 when his father's family consisted of but six.

v. Caleb^2, b. doubtless before 1623, since he was[7] a "voluntary" with his father and older brother in 1637, and could then have been but about fifteen. In his father's will he was, unaccountably, called "heire apparent" though his older brother Giles^2 was living. With Myles Standish he was executor of his father's will.[15] He died at the Barbados, without issue, after June 6, 1644, and before 1651.

vi. Deborah^2, d.[21] after 1666; m. at Plymouth April, 23, 1646, Andrew Ring.

vii. Damaris^2, b. [undoubtedly][19] after 1627, named for her deceased sister. She is repeatedly listed in this chronological sequence in her father's will and elsewhere.[15] She died after January 1665–6, and before November 18, 1669; m. at Plymouth, as his first wife,[22] after June 10, 1646 (i.e., late in 1646 or early in 1647), Jacob^2 Cooke [see Cooke, p. 244].

viii. Ruth^2, d. after October 8, 1644.

---

*If Mary Cooke, the wife of Caleb^2 Johnson, proves to have been the daughter of *John^4 Cooke (Josiah^3, Josiah^2, Josiah^1)* and his wife *Desire* (——), as is believed [see Addendum to Johnson, pp. 502–5], it will incorporate in this ancestry a second line of descent from Stephen^1 Hopkins through his granddaughter *Deborah^3 (Giles^2)*, who married *Josiah^2 Cooke*.

ix. Elizabeth^2, given as a child, November 30, 1644, after the death of her father, to Richard^1 Sparrow. She was frail or in some way incapacitated, and was to remain in the care of Richard^1 "as his owne child until the tyme of her marryage or untill shee be nineteene yeares of age."[15] She died unmarried, after October, 1657, and undoubtedly before October 6, 1659.

ADDENDUM

On June 2, 1609, nine vessels sailed[3, 4] from London, England, carrying five hundred passengers for Virginia. One of these vessels called the "Sea Venture" carried among others Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Somers, and other officials who were to govern the colony, and about one hundred and fifty passengers including William Strachey who recorded the succeeding events, and Stephen Hopkins (probably our own Stephen^1), " . . . a fellow who had much knowledge in the Scriptures and could reason well therein whom our Minister therefore chose to be his Clarke, to read the Psalmes and Chapters upon Sondayes, at the assembly of the Congregation under him. . . ."

Throughout the voyage the vessels kept well together until the latter part of July, when a hurricane caught the "Sea Venture." For three days and nights, though the men bailed water constantly, it seemed that they must sink. At last when they were utterly exhausted and fully expected to die, they were saved, on July 28, 1609, by being washed onto the rocky shore of one of the Bermudas [see map on p. 146], known as the "Ile of Divels." Strachey's tale of this awful storm furnished Shakespeare with the groundwork of his play, "The Tempest."

The survivors lived for nine months on these islands during which time they built two vessels which, ultimately took them to their destination in Virginia. But during that nine-month period dissension arose among them, which resulted in several attempts at mutiny against the commands of the Governor. In the first case that official showed great leniency; but in the second, he evidently thought it necessary to discourage repetitions by severity. This second offence was the least serious since, apparently, it concerned only one man, Stephen Hopkins, who had been expounding the theory that the Governor's authority pertained only to the voyage and to the government in Virginia, and that they, therefore, might consider it null on this island, " . . . without breach of honesty, conscience nor Religion. . . ." Hopkins was brought, manacled, before a court-martial and sentenced to death on a charge of mutiny and rebellion. "But so penitent hee was and made so much moane alleadging the ruine of his Wife and Children in this his trespasse, as it wrought in the hearts of all the better sort of the Company . . ." who entreated the Governor and procured his pardon as his fault was not a moral one, but rather one of wilfulness and poor judgment. No evidence is found of further disaffection on his part, though others later made much worse trouble, nor of his continued residence in Virginia after the arrival of the company at their journey's end. It is presumed that he presently returned to his wife and children in England.

The two vessels in which the two weeks' trip from the Bermudas to Virginia was made (arriving on May 24, 1610) were suggestively named the "Patience" and the "Deliverance."

A marked likeness is seen between the character and actions of Stephen of Bermuda and those of our Stephen^{1} Hopkins who sailed for the new world on the "Mayflower." The first Stephen sailed from London and is presumed to have lived there, our Stephen^{1} did live there, being one of the group called[4] by contemporary writers "men of London" and "strangers amongst them" [i. e., not Leyden men but of the number who had joined them in England]. Both men were adventurous, aggressive, intolerant of restraint, religiously inclined, and made much of "conscience." Each had a wife and children, each was a man of unusual ability, the man of Bermuda being clerk and assistant to the minister, while our Stephen^{1} of Plymouth was called repeatedly to serve in positions of trust and diplomacy in dealings with the Indians. When their respective vessels reached the new world at points other than where they had expected to land, or for which patents were held, the action of these men was identical. When the "Mayflower" passengers faced the necessity of landing at Massachusetts Bay, Bradford tells us of "y^{e} discontented & mutinous speeches that some of the strangers amongst them had let fall from them in y^{e} ship. . . . That when they came a shore they would use their own libertie; for none had power to comand them, the patente they had being for Virginia, and not for Newengland, which belonged to another government, with which y^{e} Virginia Company had nothing to doe." And finally, when the first exploring party was sent out from the "Mayflower" to search out a suitable place for settlement, Stephen^{1}, who was a member of it, was instantly able to inform them that a bent sapling they saw and wondered at was an Indian trap to catch deer, . . . a fact which he certainly never learned in London. Mourt describes the incident thus: ". . . as we wandred we came to a tree, where a yong Spritt was bowed downe over a bow, and some Acornes strewed vnder-neath; Stephen Hopkins sayd, it had beene to catch some Deere, so, as we were looking at it, William Bradford being in the Reare, when he came looked also vpon it, and as he went about, it gaue a sodaine jerk vp, and he was immediately caught by the leg; It was a very pretie divise, made with a Rope of their owne making, and having a noose as artificially made as any Roper in England can make, and as like ours as can be, which we brought away with vs."[3, 4]

REFERENCES

1. The English Ancestry and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers, C. E. Banks, 1929, pp. 11, 14, 61–4.
2. Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 5, 8, 14, 25, 44, 81, 98–111.
3. Ibid., pp. 24–5; "Purchas His Pilgrimes," 1625, IV, 1742–4; Dictionary of National Biography, VII, 943; XX, 1255–6; History of Virginia, W. Stith, 1865, pp. 101–2, 113–5; John Smith's Travels, 1907, I, 188, 205–9, 341–5, 350; New England Register, XXXIII, 300–5; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 167, 189, 219; Mayflower Descendant, III, 46.
4. Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 5, 24–5, 44; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 167, 189, 219; New England Register, XXXIII, 303–5; Mayflower Descendant, IV, 114–9; V, 47–53; Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 76, 119, 185–6, 433–5; Story of the Pilgrim Fathers, E. Arber, 1897, pp. 370, 427.
5. History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 152, 162–77, 189; Mayflower Descendant, I, 79; V, 226; Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 5–8, 13–5, 28–9, 43–60.
6. History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, I, 199, 219, 241; Mayflower Descendant, I, 89; Mourt's Relation, 1865, pp. 157–62.
7. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 60–1; Pequot War, J. Mason, 1897, p. xiv; Mayflower Descendant, XXVI, 100–1; King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, p. 457.
8. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 3, 5, 7, 14, 19–21, 26, 32–3, 36–7, 67; Mayflower Descendant, I, 154, 160; II, 8, 87, 151; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, II, 151, 174, 196.
9. Story of the Pilgrim Fathers, E. Arber, 1897, pp. 360, 370–1, 383, 411, 416, 427, 449, 452, 462–73.
10. Plymouth Colony Records, I, 68, 75, 87, 97.
11. Ibid., I, 31, 54, 62; II, 31; XI, 25; Mayflower Descendant, VI, 146; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, II, 205, 270, 285, 363.
12. Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 70, 76, 83, 119, 160–1, 185–6, 189, 258, 294, 407–8, 433–5, 438.
13. Ibid., 407–8, 433–5; Plymouth Colony Records, I, 41–2, 111–3, 137.
14. Mayflower Descendant, I, 160; II, 151; Plymouth Colony Records, I, 3, 9; II, 38; XII, 11, 21, 83; and reference Nos. 1 and 12.
15. Mayflower Descendant, II, 12–17; IV, 114–9; V, 47–51.
16. Ibid., I, 10; II, 12–4, 117–8; V, 47–52; Pilgrim Notes and Queries, IV, 41–2; Register of the Illinois Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1925, pp. 132, 142.
17. Mayflower Descendant, III, 167.
18. Ibid., I, 110–2; II, 117–8; XIII, 85.
19. Ibid., I, 13–4; V, 47–52; Pilgrim Notes and Queries, IV, 42; History of Plymouth, W. Bradford, 1912, II, 400, 406.
20. Mayflower Descendant, I, 151–2.
21. Register of the Illinois Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1925, p. 183.
22. Register of the California Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1917, pp. 88, 163; Mayflower Descendant, II, 27–8; V, 47–53.
23. Library of Cape Cod History and Genealogy, 1915, No. 37, pp. 1–16; Mayflower Descendant, II, 117.

Vol 51 # 4

STEPHEN HOPKINS, TRIPLE-FOUNDER

by Jack Curry Redman, M.D.

No other man was a founding father of Bermuda, Jamestowne and Plymouth. Stephen Hopkins, my tenth-great-grandfather, was. If it were not for William Strachey's narrative, "Purchas his Pilgrimes," written in 1610,[1] no one would ever have known about this incredible triple-founder. That narrative, along with information from Margaret Hodges's magnificent historical novel, *Hopkins of the Mayflower, Portrait of a Dissenter*,[2] Terry Tucker's great book, *Bermuda - Unintended Destination*,[3] and G. B. Masefield's interesting booklet, *Worthies of Wotten-under-Edge*,[4] made the writing of this paper, and two historical events of recent years, possible.

It all began when Stephen Hopkins was born at ~~Wortley, Wotton-under-Edge, Gloucestershire~~, England, on ~~October 29, 1581~~. As a young man, Stephen, ~~a weaver, married~~ his first wife, ~~Constance/Dudley~~ Mary C). They had three children, Constance, ~~William~~ and Giles. ~~In 1608, the family moved to London where they possibly lived with his brother, Robert, at his home on Coleman Street. Constance was pregnant again when~~ Stephen decided to go to Jamestowne, Virginia, in order to start a new life for himself and, later, for his family. *

The London Company was greatly concerned about the welfare of Captain John Smith and the Jamestowne colonists. For this reason a relief fleet was assembled to sail for Jamestowne, to be of assistance to their fellow English men, women and children. The flagship of the fleet of seven ships and two pinnaces (smaller ships) was *Sea Venture*, a 300 ton vessel under the command of Admiral Sir George Somers. Aboard her were 150 men, women and children, the names of fewer than fifty of whom are known at this time.

The fleet left England June 2, 1609, bound for the New World. Hopkins was a clerk for the chaplain, the Reverend Master Richard Bucke, and too poor to afford the £12-2-0 it cost for a share of Stock in the London Company. He was, therefore, not listed among those "of the better sort" or those "of the common sort," but was simply an anonymous member of "others."

On July 25, 1609, the fleet encountered a terrible hurricane. The two pinnaces sank with all on board, and *Sea Venture* was blown off course, far to the south of the other six ships that eventually reached Jamestowne. After four awful days and three nights in the hurricane, on the morning of July 28, 1609, Sir George Somers sighted land in the misty distance. It was the dreaded Bermudas, graveyard for many a ship which had broken apart on its shores in years past. Sir George spotted a split in the coral reef that lay ahead, three-quarters of a mile off the northeastern tip of the islands, He decided to try to steer *Sea Venture* through the split, reasoning that, if this failed, she would at least lodge in a vertical position rather than break apart on the reef.

Just as the leadsman yelled, "Five fathoms," there was the grinding crunch of wood on stone. *Sea Venture* lodged upright in the split in the reef. Not one of the 150 people aboard died. Boatload by boatload the passengers went ashore to the beach, the same beach that lies below the bluff on which the present Loew's Bermuda Beach Hotel stands. Bermuda was born.

All salvageable material was brought ashore from the ship in the following days. On the islands wild fruits and vegetables grew in abundance. Fish abounded. Wild hogs, descendants of hogs put ashore by Spanish sailors many years before, were everywhere, and were the source of meat for the passengers. It was truly a paradise.

John Rolfe's wife gave birth to a baby girl who was named Bermuda. She died not long afterward, however, and was buried on the island. Mistress Edward Eason gave birth to a baby boy who was christened "Bermudas." In the following nine and a half months, two smaller ships were built in order that the passengers might continue their voyage to Jamestowne. *Deliverance* was built mainly from the wreckage of *Sea Venture*. *Patience* was built under the supervision of Sir George Somers, mainly from the Bermuda cedars.

On January 24, 1610, Stephen Hopkins ate breakfast with Samuel Sharp and Humfrey Reed. As they ate, Stephen expressed his feelings that their obedience to their Governor "in Virginia" ceased when the shipwreck occurred, and that they should be free men and women in Bermuda. As logical as that reasoning may have been, it was not well-received by Governor Sir Thomas Gates when Sharp and Reed told him what Hopkins had said.

The Governor immediately had Hopkins arrested and put in irons. He ordered a court martial, charging mutiny and rebellion, the punishment for which was death. At the public trial, according to Strachey, "But so penitent he was, and made so much moane, alleging the ruin of his wife and children in this his trespass, as it wrought in the hearts of all the better sort of the company, who therefore with humble entreaties and

* Incorrect information lined out

earnest supplication went unto our Governor, whom they besought (as likewise did Captain Newport and myself) and never left him until we had got his pardon." Stephen Hopkins became a part of recorded history.

On May 10, 1610, all of the *Sea Venture* passengers departed for Jamestowne aboard *Deliverance* and *Patience*, except for two men who died in Bermuda, one who was murdered, one who was shot for mutiny, seven who were lost at sea trying to reach Jamestowne in a longboat, and two who deserted and remained behind. They arrived in Jamestowne May 24, 1610.

It is not known when Hopkins returned to England, but it may have been just a few months later, aboard the *Patience*, which returned the body of Sir George Somers after he worked himself to death on a return trip to Bermuda to obtain food for the Jamestowne settlers. Sir George's heart was buried on the island of the shipwreck. Mistress Rolfe died in Jamestowne later. In 1614 John Rolfe married Pocahontas.

Imagine the immense feeling of tragedy which Stephen Hopkins must have felt when he returned to London and learned that his wife and their new baby, born in December 1609, and their eldest son, William, had all died while he was gone. Only his daughter, Constance and son, Giles remained. In the years that followed, Stephen Hopkins, weaver, of Wotton-under-Edge, became Mr. Stephen Hopkins, merchant, of London.

In the spring of 1618, Stephen Hopkins married his second wife, Elizabeth Fisher. They had one daughter, Damaris, born a year later. Elizabeth was pregnant again when she, her husband, Stephen, and children Constance, Giles and Damaris, set sail for the new world aboard the *Mayflower*. It was during this voyage that they first met my tenth- and ninth-great-grandfathers, Thomas and Joseph Rogers. Elizabeth Hopkins, as we know, gave birth to Oceanus aboard the *Mayflower*, before the landing at Plymouth occurred.

In 1979, Dr. John Bennett, Albuquerque obstetrician and ninth-great-grandson of John Rolfe and Pocohontas, and I obtained permission from the Bermuda government to dive on the wreck of *Sea Venture*. In scuba-diving gear we stepped off the stern of the glass-bottomed dive boat and descended first to the top of the coral reef, twelve feet below the surface of the water. Then we dove another eighteen feet to the sandy bottom, five fathoms below the water surface. There, covered by sand and stretching seaward from the split in the reef, was the keel and short segment of the ribs, of *Sea Venture*, like a gigantic fish skeleton. John and I stood in her forecastle area, then touched her keel, soggy brown wood which felt almost alive. Watching us through the glass bottom of the dive boat above was Edmund Downing, ninth-great-grandson of Sir George Yeardley, and the man who discovered the wreck in 1958. What a magnificent moment! A Hopkins, a Rolfe and a Yeardley, back together again at the wreck of that great ship 370 years later! We made the dive in order to honor our specific great-grandparents, as well as Sir George Somers, father of his country, and all of the other *Sea Venture* passengers.

In 1982, Richard Gilpin Hopkins, ninth-great-grandson of Stephen Hopkins, and his wife, Astrid, placed a bronze plaque on the *Mayflower* monument on the quay in Southampton, England, honoring Stephen Hopkins. This act received widespread news coverage in England because of the sense of mutual heritage and kinship we all feel.

On Somers Day, July 28, 1984, an historic re-enactment took place in Bermuda. On that day, descendants of four of the known men aboard *Sea Venture* - Bagwell, Carter, Hopkins and Yeardley, dressed in period costume, went out in boats to the *Sea Venture* wreck site and came ashore on the same beach where their ancestors had landed 375 years earlier, almost to the hour. The next day, Sunday, I had the honor of reading the Epistle (Romans 8:20-26) at the morning service at St. Peter's Church, St. George's, Bermuda. I had a feeling that my tenth-great-grandfather, Stephen Hopkins, triple-founder, was smiling.

REFERENCES

1. William Strachey, Narrative, 1610, "Purchas his Pilgrimes", Vol. IV (London 1625).

2. Margaret Hodges, Hopkins of the Mayflower, Portrait of a Dissenter, Farrar, Straus and Giroux (New York 1972).

3. Terry Tucker, Bermuda - Unintended Destination, Island Press, Ltd. (Bermuda 1978).

4. G. B. Masefield, Worthies of Wotton-under-Edge, Nimsfielde Press, Ltd. (Gloucestershire, England 1982).

Dr. Jack Curry Redman, a descendant of Stephen Hopkins and Thomas Rogers, is a member of the New Mexico Society. He is a Charter Fellow, American Academy of Family Physicians, Diplomate, American Board of Family Practice and Chairman, New Mexico Skin Cancer Project. He recently appeared on television's "Wheel of Fortune," winning a red 1986 Mazda RX7 sports car, an oak roll top desk, a set of encyclopedia, an electric typewriter, some china and a Gucci gift certificate. He also managed to get in a warning on skin cancer, his special medical interest. Dr. Redman's address is 114 Oak Street, N.E., Albuquerque, NM 87106.

This information is legitimate.

THE ADVENTURE OF STEPHEN HOPKINS

by Kendall Payne Hayward

This interesting article appeared in the July, 1984 issue of Nutmeg Gratings, *edited by Ruth Galwey, and published by the Connecticut Society of Mayflower Descendants. It is reprinted here with their gracious permission.*]

On my first trip to Bermuda in the 1950s it was startling to read the brief account of Stephen Hopkins on the diorama in Fort St. Catherine in St. George's, Bermuda. Stephen Hopkins was the only adult member of the Mayflower company (with the possible exception of his children) who had been to the New World before 1620. With his wife and two children, he embarked June 2, 1609, on the *Sea Venture*, pride of the Virginia Company and flag ship of a flotilla of eight vessels in command of Admiral Sir George Sommers, for the trip to Jamestown, Virginia. Stephen Hopkins was an assistant to the Anglican parson, Master Richard Bucke. Again a frequent misnomer appears, as he was called a "Bible-carrying Puritan." As puritans were restricted in colonizing efforts in the New World, it would seem strange that Hopkins would be present. Actually, being a Separatist or Brownist, might explain his presence.

On June 23rd, the flotilla ran into a violent north-bound hurricane and all ships, except the *Sea Venture*, were lost. The storm was most violent from Tuesday to early Friday, June [illegible]th, when Sir George Sommers sighted land, the northeastern [illegible] of Bermuda. On approaching the island, the *Sea Venture* ran upon, and lodged on, a reef, which had caused early Spanish sailors to call Bermuda "Isle of the Devils." The following Sunday, Hopkins read the lesson and scripture.

By late summer, 1609, plans and construction were underway for building a new ship, the *Deliverance*, from the wreck of the *Sea Venture*. Food was adequate due to abundant berries on the island, fish in surrounding waters, and wild hogs which roamed the islands, descendants of earlier ship-wrecked animals.

Three mutinies took place. The first involved several of the crew who persuaded the ship's carpenter to join them in what might be called a "sit-down strike." The second occurred at the end of 1609, or beginning of 1610, when winter storms developed which halted the building of the *Deliverance*. This second

mutiny involved Stephen Hopkins who, when the problem came to a head, found that he had little, if any, support. The real reason or basis for this mutiny, which was again directed at Governor Thomas Gates, will probably never be known. One reason was that Hopkins objected to the Anglican form of worship in which he was compelled to take part. The other reason, as stated in Bermuda documents, was that he contended that the authority of the Governor ended with the shipwreck, for the company never reached Virginia. The fact remains that he had signed on as assistant to the Anglican parson for the voyage and subsequent settlement, and it is hard to believe that he could not realize the precariousness of their situation, marooned on reef-encircled Bermuda. After several months on the island, the company was aware that food was adequate for a time, at least.

Stephen Hopkins was tried for mutiny, either on the island or in England, but he pleaded successfully on the hardship that would befall his family if he were convicted, and he was pardoned. In 1620, he and his children again sailed for the New World. In Plymouth he gave valuable service to the Pilgrims in that he understood, and was able to communicate with the Indians, and seemed to be knowledgeable in their ways. He died in June or July of 1644.

Footnote: Bermuda was originally called "Sommers Islands," in honor of Admiral Sir George Sommers, head of the expedition which foundered there. Later it was called "the Summer Islands."

It is also interesting to note that the account of the wreck of the *Sea Venture* and the problems of the Bermuda Company were soon circulated in England and caught the attention of William Shakespeare. In 1623, when Shakespeare's play, *The Tempest*, was published, although obviously having been written many years earlier, some of the physical descriptions of the island were used, and some participants of the voyage have been identified with characters in the play. Stephen Hopkins has been likened to the character, "Stephano, the Butler."

Kendall Payne Hayward, a descendant of Stephen Hopkins and John Howland, is Historian of the Connecticut Society and member of the John Howland research team. His address is 5[illegible] Griswold Ave., Glastonbury, CT 06033.

Even the Mayflower Quarterly was taken in.
This describes a pilgrimage to the
wrong destination!

STEPHEN HOPKINS IN ENGLAND

by Charmian Maitland

I recently returned from visiting the English home setting of y Mayflower ancestor, Stephen Hopkins, in Wotton-under-Edge, etween Bristol and Gloucester. Despite the long time span eparating me from Stephen Hopkins and his daughter, Con-tance, through whom my Mayflower lineage is traced, I believe he experience of going to the place in which both he and Constance were born and reared, and setting my own footsteps in the treets and pathways of their old, rural English town, fulfilled a esire for a tangible link with these remote ancestors.

I live in England, close to London, as the spouse of a British itizen. Ah, you say, that makes it a lot easier. True, but ith England being so comparatively small compared to the States, it is comfortably possible to reach most provincial des-inations, stay a while, and return home to your base, say in London, within a single day. Of course, a more relaxed pace ould be to spin it out into an overnight trip. This would offer he opportunity to be there during the early hours, at mid-day, usk, and evening, enabling you to experience the sounds, ild-life, agriculture and other flora associated with the season nd sequence of hours in the day.

If you can plan your schedule to allow for correspondence ith people and organizations in England who might be prepared o orient and assist you to learn new facts about your ancestor nd his habitat, you probably will be very glad later on. I not nly received useful advice and guidance from different sources, ut when I eventually got to my destination, I was welcomed ersonally. This gracious reception, so willingly extended by ost English people to Americans looking into their backgrounds nd roots, is deeply appreciated and long remembered.

I had begun my correspondence quite a few months before ctually going to the home of Stephen Hopkins in Wotton-nder-Edge. But my correspondents had briefed me on what I esired to know and where to go in order to find more infor-ation upon arrival, so that I lost little time once I got there. I orted out with the Tourist Information Centre in the County of von, which is just one of a large network of English Tourist oard offices throughout all of the British Isles. They give xcellent service, including the availability of a large variety of publications at budget prices. I enclosed a stamped, self addressed return envelope (you can use an international postage coupon), which may facilitate a prompt, detailed response. I was referred to several government offices, such as the Gloucestershire County Council Record Office, and the City of Bristol, City Clerk's Department, in regard to specific questions and document requests. But the most prized referral they gave me, when I had inquired about the resources of the local History Societies, was the name of Mr. Howard Mann, Treasurer of the local History Society in Wotton-under-Edge, who was such a gracious and informative host to me.

I knew there was not very much information about Stephen Hopkins's early life, or about his forbears. I had read George F. Willison's *Saints and Strangers*, and the accounts about him there had stirred my imagination and admiration. I knew about Alice Dalgliesh's *Thanksgiving Story*, the children's story about the family history of Stephen Hopkins and his children. I had not yet read *Hopkins of the Mayflower: Portrait of a Dissenter*, published in 1972 by M. Hodges. I had been to old London, in the section near the Guildhall, where Stephen Hopkins had married his second wife, Elizabeth Fisher, and I had obtained a print in the Maps and Print Room of the Public Records Office in London, of an old engraving of St. Mary Matfellon, the church in which their marriage was performed in 1618. By then Stephen had already made his first trip to America. Their signatures were in the parish register which had been microfilmed after the church was bombed in World War II. I was able to view them on the microfilm equipment donated to London by the Church of Latter Day Saints, which has an extensive genealogical library on the second floor of their church, near the Victoria and Albert Museum, at 64-68 Exhibition Road, London SW 7 (phone 91-589-8561). It is available to the public, although an appointment is recommended.

I had read that Stephen Hopkins and his son, Giles, were listed in the Gloucestershire Militia Record for the year 1608. This was before he and his first wife, Constance, and their family, (which included little Constance, my forbear, born in 1608), had left Wotton-under-Edge for London. This militia record seemed to me a good pretext for making my initial inquiries about Stephen Hopkins, and I mentioned in my letter to the Tourist Information Center that I was interested in seeing and perhaps photographing the original, if possible. I also requested bibliographies and other recommendations they might give me for information about Stephen Hopkins on his background in Wotton-under-Edge. They informed me that the best place to see the Militia Records was in a book, *Men and Armour for Gloucestershire in 1608*, reprinted in 1980 by Alan Sutton. The original militia record is now on permanent deposit at the Gloucestershire Record Office. I also was referred to G. B. Masefield's book, for £2.25, *Worthies of Wotton-under-Edge*, published in 1982, which contains an interesting biography of Stephen Hopkins, with a little of his and his first wife's family background. It also details his vicissitudes in the Bermuda shipwreck, and in Jamestown, Virginia. It is available through the Cotswold Book Room, Ltd., 26 Long Street, Wotton-under-Edge, Gloucestershire 0112 7BT.

I had a pleasant and economical journey to Bristol from London. There I got a bus in front of the Temple Mead Train Station, which took me to the Bus Depot where I took a country bus to Wotton-under-Edge, a forty-five minute journey through pleasant country-side. By pre-arrangement, following my letter and our subsequent phone calls, I met Mr. Howard Mann who walked with me through the town, describing various points of interest. These include the old almshouses, the church and cemetery, and the old grammar school which is in danger of being demolished. Mr. Mann also joined me for the visit he had organized, at the Ancient Ram's Inn, with the landlord, Mr. I. P. J. Humphries, who has a large collection of Hopkins memorabilia from American visitors, along with antique artifacts he had found during renovation of the ancient architecture of the Inn. The Ancient Ram's Inn is opposite the church which is said to stand on an old Druid site. In Hopkins's time there was a school within the church, which he attended. By virtue of being an apt student, he was selected by the Puritan vicar, John Stanton, to assist in the church services.

The Official Guide Booklet of Wotton-under-Edge contains a map of the town, pictures and interesting miscellaneous information about places to see, walks to take, history and clubs. I would be glad to correspond with any readers about trips they are contemplating to the homes of their Mayflower ancestors.

rmian Maitland (Mrs. Charles T. Maitland), a descendant of Stephen Hopkins, is a member of the Virginia Society. Her address is Lethington, Fulmer Way, Gerrard's Cross, Bucks, England S19 8AJ. Her phone number is 0753-83941.

Plymouth Colony - Its History & Its People 1620-1691
by Edward A Stratton (1986)

pages 307-310

HOPKINS, CONSTANCE—A daughter of Stephen Hopkins, q.v., Constance accompanied him on the 1620 *Mayflower* to Plymouth, and later married Nicholas Snow, q.v.

HOPKINS, DAMARIS—A daughter of Stephen Hopkins, q.v., Damaris was with him on the 1620 *Mayflower*, and she died at Plymouth during the early years. The Damaris Hopkins who married Jacob ^{2} Cooke, son of Francis, was a second daughter of that name born in Plymouth almost certainly after the death of the first Damaris. Bowman, in the article cited under Stephen Hopkins, gives the indirect evidence for this conclusion.

HOPKINS, ELIZABETH—The wife of Stephen Hopkins, q.v., Elizabeth's maiden name was probably Fisher. She accompanied Hopkins on the 1620 *Mayflower*.

HOPKINS, GILES—A son of Stephen Hopkins, q.v., Giles came to Plymouth with his father on the 1620 *Mayflower*, and on 9 October 1639 he married Catherine Wheldon (*PCR* 1:134; *MD* 13:85). The will of Giles Hopkins of Eastham, dated 19 January 1682/83, codicil 5 March 1688/89, proved 16 April 1690, mentioned his wife "Catorne," and sons Stephen, William, Caleb, and Joshua (*MD* 1:110). *MD* 7:236-37 gives the births of his children, as later recorded at Eastham, as Mary, November 1640; Stephen, September 1642; John, 1643 (died at age of three months); Abigail, October 1644; Deborah, June 1648; Caleb, January 1650/51; Ruth, June 1653; Joshua, June 1657; William, 9 January 1660/61; and Elizabeth, November 1664 (died one month old).

HOPKINS, OCEANUS—A son of Stephen Hopkins and his wife Elizabeth, q.v., Oceanus was born on the 1620 *Mayflower* while at sea—hence the first name. He died without issue before the 1627 division.

HOPKINS, STEPHEN—He most likely was the Stephen Hopkins who sailed on the *Seaventure* to Virginia in 1609, but was shipwrecked in Bermuda, where he was almost hanged for mutiny. He spent two years in Jamestown, where he learned much of later use to the Plymouth colonists (*Adventurers of Purse and Person—Virginia 1607-1625*, ed. by Annie Lash Jester with Martha Woodroof Hiden, 2nd ed. (1964), p. 213-17). See also the excellent account of his family in *Dawes-Gates* 2:443-51, which includes the reasoning for believing that the Stephen Hopkins of Virginia was identical with the one of Plymouth.

Hopkins arrived at Plymouth on the 1620 *Mayflower* accompanied by his wife, Elizabeth, and his sons Giles and Oceanus, and daughters Constance and Damaris, Oceanus having been born at sea on the *Mayflower*, plus two servants, Edward Doty and Edward Leister. Damaris died during the early years, and Hopkins and his wife later had a second daughter Damaris. He was probably also one of the dissenters at Plymouth whose actions led to the necessity for drafting the Mayflower Compact. *Bradford (Ford)* 1:219, and *Mourt's Relation*, p. 40, tell how in 1621 the colonists sent Mr. Edward Winslow and Mr. Stephen Hopkins on a mission to visit Massasoit. *Mourt's Relation*, pp. 7-8, also shows how Hopkins warned colonists on an early expedition about an Indian trap to catch deer, and how Bradford, not hearing the warning, stepped on the trap and was immediately caught by his leg. When Samoset first came to the settlement on 16 February 1620/21, the Englishmen were suspicious of him, and they "lodged him that night at Steven Hopkins house, and watched him" (*Mourt's Relation*, p. 33). Hopkins was an Assistant at least as early as 1633, and he continued in 1634, 1635, and 1636. He was on the original freeman list, and he was a volunteer in the Pequot War (*PCR* 1:61).

Keeping in mind the delicate balance in Plymouth between "covenant" and "noncovenant" colonists, it is reasonable to assume that Hopkins must have been a leader of the non-Separatist settlers, and in his career at Plymouth can be seen some of the ambiguity that attached to the non-Separatists living in a Separatist colony. On 7 June 1636, at a time when Hopkins was an Assistant, the General Court found him guilty of battery against John Tisdale, and he was fined £5, and ordered to pay Tisdale forty shillings, the court observing that he had broken the King's peace, "wch he ought after a speciall manner to have kept" (*PCR* 1:42). On 2 October 1637 he was presented twice, first for suffering men to drink in his house on the Lord's day before meeting ended, and for allowing servants and others to drink more than proper for ordinary refreshing, and second for suffering servants and others to sit drinking in his house contrary to orders of the court, and to play at shovel board and like misdemeanors (*PCR* 1:68). On 2 January 1637/38 Hopkins was presented for suffering excessive drinking in his house "as old Palmer, James Coale, & William Renolds" (*PCR* 1:75). On 5 June 1638 he was presented for selling beer for two pence a quart which was not worth a penny a quart, and for selling wine at excessive rates "to the oppressing & impovishing of the colony"; he was fined £5 for some of these offenses, including selling strong waters and nutmegs at excessive rates (*PCR* 1:87, 97). In the Dorothy Temple case (see text) he was "committed to ward for his contempt to the Court, and shall so remayne comitted untill hee shall either receive his servant Dorothy Temple, or els pvide for her elsewhere at his owne charge during the terme shee hath yet to serve him" (*PCR* 1:112). On 3 December 1639 he was presented for selling a looking glass for sixteen pence which could be bought in the Bay Colony for nine pence, and he was also fined £3 for selling strong water without license" (*PCR* 1:137). Jonathan Hatch, who from the records seems to have been a recurring disciplinary problem in the colony, on 5 April 1642 was ordered by the court to dwell with Mr. Stephen Hopkins, "& the said Mr Hopkins to have a speciall care of him" (*PCR* 2:38).

He dated his will 6 June 1644, inventory 17 July 1644, and mentioned his deceased wife; sons Giles and Caleb; daughter Constance, wife of Nicholas Snow; daughters Deborah, Damaris, Ruth and Elizabeth; and grandson Stephen, son of his son Giles (*MD* 2:12). Ralph D. Phillips, "Hopkins Family of Wortley, Gloucestershire—Possible Ancestry of Stephen Hopkins," *TAG* 39:95, suggests that he might have come from the parish of Wotten-under-Edge, Gloucestershire, but the evidence is not sufficient

— Cont'd over —

Hopkins, Cont'd

to say positively. Some writers, such as Banks in *English Ancestry*, pp. 61-64, and Jacobus in *Waterman Family*, 1:86, have felt that his wife, Elizabeth, may have been Elizabeth Fisher, whom a Stephen Hopkins married at London 19 February 1617/18–*Mourt's Relation*, p. 15, states that he was of London. If so, she would have been a second wife, for the births of some of his children would predate this marriage. *Dawes-Gates* 2:443, citing the London marriage record, states that his wife was "undoubtedly" Elizabeth Fisher. Timothy Hopkins, "Stephen Hopkins of the Mayflower and Some of His Descendants," *NEHGR* 102:46, 98, 197, 257, 103:24, 85, 166, 304, 104:52, 123, 213, 296, 105:32, 100, covers some of his early generations, but it is not documented. George E. Bowman wrote an article in *MD* 5:47 to consolidate much of the early information known about his family: A popularized biography of Stephen Hopkins was written by Margaret Hodges, *Hopkins of the Mayflower–Portrait of a Dissenter* (New York, 1972). Claims that a John Hopkins of Hartford, Connecticut, was his son are baseless. By his first wife he had Constance, who married Nicholas Snow, and Giles, who married Catherine Wheldon. By Elizabeth Fisher he had the Damaris, who died young; Oceanus, who died young; Caleb, who died at Barbados as an adult without issue; Deborah, who married Andrew Ring; the second Damaris, who married Jacob Cooke, son of Francis; Ruth, who died without issue; and Elizabeth, who died without issue (*Dawes-*Gates 2:449)

Pg 317

LEISTER, EDWARD–A 1620 *Mayflower* passenger, Edward Leister was called by Bradford (*Ford* 2:400, 411), a servant of Stephen Hopkins who "after he was at liberty, went to Virginia, and ther dyed." See also Edward Doty, a fellow servant with whom he had a duel.

Pg 156

That no one was above the law can be seen in the 1636 conviction of Stephen Hopkins, who was at the time an Assistant and magistrate himself, but still was fined £5 for battery against John Tisdale, the court observing that Hopkins should have especially been one to observe the king's peace.

Pg 183

A classic case of compliance involved *Mayflower* passenger Stephen Hopkins, whose unmarried servant Dorothy Temple, on showing signs of pregnancy, named the father as the recently executed Arthur Peach (who was therefore not available to marry her). The court ordered on 4 February 1638/39 "in regard by her covenant of indenture shee hath yet above two yeares to serve him, that the said Mr. Hopkins shall keepe her and her child, or provide shee may be kept with food and rayment during the said terme; and if he refuse so to doe, that then the collony provide for her, & Mr. Hopkins to pay it." On the same day the court ordered "Mr. Steephen Hopkins is committed to ward for his contempt to the Court, and shall so remayne comitted until hee shall either receive his servant Dorothy Temple or provide for her (at his expense. He reached an agreement to sell her indenture to John Holmes – ry)

p270

COOKE, FRANCIS–A 1620 *Mayflower* passenger, Francis Cooke married Hester Mayhieu at Leiden 30 June 1603, the records there describing him as a woolcomber, unmarried, from England (*MD* 8:48). Thus he was in Holland before the arrival of the Clyfton/Robinson Separatists. He was probably born no earlier than 1583, for he must have been under sixty in 1643 when he was on the ATBA for Plymouth, and yet not much after 1583 if he married in 1603. He appears frequently in Plymouth records on grand and trial juries, as a surveyor of the highways, on various ad hoc committees, and in a number of land transactions. (See Bowman's "Francis Cooke and His Descendants," *MD* 3:95.) He came to Plymouth with son John, and Francis's wife and their daughter Jane and son Jacob arrived on the *Anne* in 1623. Two more children, Hester and Mary, were born at Plymouth. Jane married Experience Mitchell; Hester married Richard Wright; and Mary married John Thompson. Francis's son Jacob married Damaris Hopkins, daughter of Stephen. *Dawes-Gates*, 2:239-57 gives a good account of both father Francis Cooke and son Jacob Cooke. Another good account of the Francis Cooke family can be found in *Small Descendants*, 2:601. Francis died 7 April 1663 (*PCR* 8:23). Son John Cooke has a separate entry below. See also Walter J. Harrison, "New Light on Francis Cooke and His Wife Hester Mayhieu and Their Son John," *MD* 27:145. Some confusion about the marriage of Francis Cooke's son Jacob's daughter Mary Cooke, is cleared up by Stratton, "Which John Rickard Married Mary Cooke?," *MQ* 49:122.

Pages 200-1 (Regarding morality, in this case homosexuality. (Seems like the Colony relied on Stephen Hopkins to take care of just about any problem! – ry)

Somewhat more specific, though a bit confusing also, is the case of Lydia Hatch, Jonathan Hatch, Edward Mitchell, Edward Preston, and John Keene. On 1 March 1641/42 Lydia Hatch was sentenced to be whipped for "suffering Edward Mitchell to attempt to abuse her body by uncleanesse," and for not reporting it, and also for lying in the same bed with her brother Jonathan. Edward Mitchell was sentenced to be whipped at both Plymouth and Barnstable for "his lude and sodomiticall practices tending to sodomye wth Edward Preston, and other lude carryages wth Lydia Hatch." Edward Preston was sentenced to be whipped at Plymouth and Barnstable at the same time as Mitchell for his lewd practices tending to sodomy with Edward Mitchell, and for "pressing John Keene thereunto (if he would have yeilded)." John Keene "because he resisted the temptacon, & used meanes to discover it, is appoynted to stand by whilst Mitchell and Preston are whipt, though in some thing he was faulty." Jonathan Hatch "was taken as a vagrant, & for his misdemeanors was censured to be whipt, & sent from constable to constable to Leiftennant Davenport at Salem." A few days later it was determined that Jonathan Hatch would dwell with Mr. Stephen Hopkins, with Hopkins to have a special care of him.[24]

"Mayflower Families Through Five Generations" Vol 6 - (1992)
Soc M-F Desc - R929 2M468

John D. Austin is a descendant of Pilgrims Stephen Hopkins and William Brewster. He is a member of the Oklahoma Society of Mayflower Descendants, a Fellow of the American Society of Genealogists, and has been a Certified Genealogist. He has served as Editor of The New England Historical and Genealogical Register and has lectured and taught extensively on genealogical research in New York and New England.

A resident of Queensbury, New York, Judge Austin received the Bachelor of Arts degree from Dartmouth College and Doctor of Jurisprudence degree from Albany Law School. He served for a time as teaching assistant in sociology at the University of Minnesota. Thereafter, he was on active duty with the U.S. Army in Germany, worked as reporter and editor for a daily newspaper in Glens Falls, New York, and was engaged in the private practice of law there for many years. He has served as Town Councilman, Town and County Supervisor, County Budget Officer, and Law Assistant in both County and Supreme Courts.

Since 1984 he has served as New York State Family Court Judge for Warren County. He has been active with the State Local Government Records Advisory Council and the State Unified Court System Records Committee. He resides with his wife and two children in Queensbury, about a mile from the burial site of his fifth-great-grandfather Phineas Austin, a veteran of the Revolution.

J.M.

STEPHEN HOPKINS

Stephen Hopkins sailed in the Mayflower in 1620, one of the "Londoners" or "strangers" recruited for the voyage. He was called "Master," and only two others of the 17 free men on the voyage were so styled. ~~He seems to have originated from the family of Hopkins, alias Seborne, located for several generations at Wortley, Wotton Underedge, co. Gloucester. The Wortley historian has conjectured, after a thorough study of the family, that Stephen of the Mayflower may well have been son of Stephen Hopkins, a clothier of Wortley who also had son Robert Hopkins of London.~~

Stephen Hopkins was probably the young man of that name who served as minister's clerk on the vessel Sea Venture which sailed from London 2 June 1609, bound for Virginia. The ship was severely damaged in a hurricane, and the company was washed ashore on the Bermudan "Ile of Divels" on 28 July. The 150 survivors were marooned on the island for nine months, building two vessels which ultimately took them to Virginia. During the sojourn Stephen Hopkins encouraged an uprising by his fellows upon grounds that the Governor's authority pertained only to the voyage and the regime in Virginia, not to the forced existence in Bermuda. For his remarks he was placed under guard, brought before the company in manacles and sentenced to death by court-martial. "But so penitent hee was and made so much moane, alleadging the ruine of his Wife and Children in this his trespasse," according to William Strachey's record of the voyage, that friends among his cohorts procured a pardon from the Governor. The two newly built vessels, the Patience and the Deliverance, arrived at Jamestown on 24 May 1610, but no evidence has been found of Hopkins' residence there, and it is presumed he soon returned to his family in England. Strachey noted that while Hopkins was very religious, he was contentious and defiant of authority and possessed enough learning to undertake to wrest leadership from others.

The home in England of Stephen Hopkins was just outside of London Wall on the high road entering the city at Aldgate in the vicinity of Heneage House. In this neighborhood lived John Carver and William Bradford of the Mayflower company; Robert Cushman, the London agent for the Pilgrims; and Edward Southworth, who later came to New England. Stephen was called a tanner or leathermaker at the time of the Mayflower voyage.

The name of Stephen's first wife was Mary ( ). ~~remains unknown~~. No authority has been found for the oft published identification of her as Constance Dudley. His second wife was named Elizabeth, and it seems certain that the marriage of Stephen Hopkins and Elizabeth Fisher on 19 Feb. 1617/18 at St. Mary Matfellon, Whitechapel, London, pertains to them.

Stephen, wife Elizabeth and children Giles and Constance by first wife and daughter Damaris by second wife, and two men servants, Edward Doty and Edward Lister, came on the Mayflower. Son Oceanus was born during the voyage. Upon the ship's arrival at Cape Cod 11 Nov. 1620, Stephen was among the men signing the Mayflower Compact in the cabin. He was one of three men designated to provide counsel and advice to Captain Myles Standish on the first land expedition of the Pilgrims in the New World. During the third day out, the company chanced upon an Indian deer trap, and Stephen was able to explain its function and danger to his fellows. In February of 1620/21, when Indians appeared on a neighboring hilltop, Captain Standish took Stephen Hopkins with him to negotiate with the savages. Thereafter, Stephen was invariably deputized to meet the Indians and act as an interpreter. In July of 1621 he served as envoy to friendly Chief Massasoit, and he made a friend for the colonists of Samoset, another Indian whom Stephen entertained in his home.

Despite the mortality caused by tribulations of the first Pilgrim winter in New England, Stephen Hopkins' household of eight persons was one of only four households that escaped loss.

Stephen Hopkins was referred to as a merchant and a planter in Plymouth records, also as "Gentleman" and "Master." He received a six-acre lot in the division of land in 1623 and later had other plots by grant or purchase. It is stated that he kept for his home throughout his life at Plymouth the lot on the easterly corner of Main and Leyden Streets that had been assigned to him on arrival. He built and owned the first wharf in Plymouth Colony of which there is record, selling it for sixty pounds in July of 1637. He built a house at Yarmouth on Cape Cod but returned to Plymouth and gave the Yarmouth dwelling to son Giles, who remained there.

Stephen Hopkins was made freeman by 1633 and served with sons Giles and Caleb and son-in-law Jacob Cooke as "Voluntary" in the Pequot War of 1637. He held the position of Assistant in the Colony from at least 1633 to 1636.

Probably because of his status in the Colony as a "stranger," Stephen Hopkins found himself on occasion in official difficulty. In June of 1636, while serving as Assistant, he was fined for battery of John Tisdale. In 1637 and 1638 he was charged with various indiscretions involving the sale of intoxicants and other items at his dwelling. In 1638/9 he was found in contempt of court for refusing to deal fairly with Dorothy Temple, an apprentice girl, and in December of 1639 he was charged with selling a looking glass at an excessive price.

The will of Stephen Hopkins, dated 6 June 1644, was proved upon testimony of William Bradford and Captain Myles Standish at a General Court at Plymouth on 20 Aug. 1644. Calling himself of Plymouth in New England and "weake yet in good and prfect memory," he directed that his body be "buryed as neare as conveyently may be to my wyfe, Deceased." He made these bequests:

To son Giles Hopkins the great bull now in the hands of Mris. Warren.

To Steven Hopkins "my sonn Giles his sonne," 20 shillings in Mris. Warren's hands for the hire of said bull.

To dau. Constanc Snow, wife of Nicholas, "my mare."

To dau. Deborah Hopkins "the brodhorned black cowe and her calf and half the Cowe called Motley."

To dau. Damaris Hopkins "the Cowe called Damaris heiffer and the white faced calf and half the cowe called Mottley."

To dau. Ruth "the Cowe called Red Cole and her calfe and a Bull at Yarmouth wch is in the keepeing of Giles Hopkins wch is an yeare and advantage old and half the curld Cowe."

To dau. Elizabeth "the Cowe called Smykins and her calf and thother half of the Curld Cowe wth Ruth and an yearelinge heiffer wthout a tayle in the keepeing of Gyles Hopkins at Yarmouth."

To four daus. Deborah, Damaris, Ruth and Elizabeth Hopkins, all the moveable goods that belonged to his house, "and in case any of my said daughters should be taken away by death before they be marryed then...their division to be equally devided amongst the Survivors."

To son Caleb, "heire apparent," house and lands at Plymouth, one pair of oxen and the hire of them, then in the hands of Richard Church, and "all my debts which are now oweing unto me."

Book - "Cape Cod Library of Local History + Genealogy" ed. by Leonard H Smith - GPC

STEPHEN^1 *and* GILES^2 HOPKINS
Mayflower Passengers
and Some *of* Their Descendants
INCLUDING AN ELDREDGE LINE
By James W. Hawes

Copyright, 1915, by Charles W. Swift.

FIRST GENERATION.*

Stephen^1 Hopkins, born in England, came over in the Mayflower in 1620, bringing with him Giles and Constanta (Constance), children by a first wife whose name is not known, a second wife Elizabeth whose maiden name is not known,(a) two children by her, Damaris and Oceanus (born on the passage), and two servants, Edward Doty and Edward Litster. He d. between June 6, 1644 (date of his will), and July 17, 1644 (date of his inventory).(a1) His 2d wife d. in Plymouth between 1640 and 1644.(a2)

In 1651 Mr. Hopkins and his wife were dead. They had had a son and four daughters born in Plymouth. The son became a seaman and had died in Barbados, one daughter had died in Plymouth, two daughters were married, one of them having two children, and one was unmarried. His son Giles was married and had four children. His daughter Constanta was also married and had 12 children, one of them being married.(b)

---

*Acknowledgment must be made for valuable aid rendered by the writer's nephew, William C. Smith, Esq., author of "History of Chatham."

(a) She was not the daughter of Francis^1 Cooke (2 Mf. 63).

(a1) 2 Mf. 12-17.

(a2) 2 ib. 117.

(b) Bradford's History of Ply-

"All that we know of Stephen Hopkins and his family before they arrived at Cape Cod is contained in these brief statements from Mourt's Relation and Bradford's History. He came from London, had been married twice, had two children by each wife and brought two servants. These meagre facts are the only ones yet discovered which are supported by absolutely trustworthy contemporary evidence. Much speculation regarding his early life has been indulged in by various writers, but all have failed to produce from contemporary sources conclusive evidence of the soundness of their claims."(c)

His bringing two servants shows that he was one of the well-to-do of the pilgrims. The facts hereinafter given from contemporary records will show that he was a man of energy, courage and ability and one of the most prominent and useful men in the colony. He was one of the earliest freemen of Plymouth(c1) and was one of the assistants to the governor from 1633 to 1637. He was engaged in trade, selling liquors and various other articles. He was charged at times with abuse of his traffic in liquors and with selling liquors and other articles at excessive rates, according to the views of the period, but he never lost the confidence of the leading men. He was not without kindness of heart, as appears from his petitioning for the release of his servants from cruel punishment.(c2)

---

mouth Plantation, Davis's edition, 408, 411, 412; 1 Mayflower Descendant (hereinafter cited as Mf.), 10, 13, 14, 163; 3 ib. 40; 5 ib. 47-53. Gov. Bradford's account of the Mayflower passengers and their issue was written between Feb. 24 and March 24, 1650-51 (1 Mf. 161-163). See also 2 ib. 114-119, for Stephen^1 Hopkins and some of his children. Mourt's Relation (Dexter's ed., 1865), 44; 3 Mf. 46; 5 ib. 47.

(c) 5 ib. 47.

(c1) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 173.

(c2) June 18, 1621, Doty and Litster fought a duel with sword and dagger. Both were wounded, one in the hand and the other in

He apparently boarded the Mayflower in London with his family about the end of June, 1620, for on the arrival of the Speedwell at Southampton from Holland about July 2 she found the Mayflower there, having arrived with her passengers from London. They sailed from Southampton August 5, but by reason of the claimed unsafety of the Speedwell, they put into Dartmouth. After some repairs, they put to sea again, but after they had got "above 100 leagues without the Lands End", the master of the Speedwell complained that his ship was very leaky, and after consultation, both ships put into Plymouth. Here it was decided that the Speedwell should not proceed. Some of the passengers returned to London, and the rest sailed on the Mayflower on the 6th of September, reaching what is now Provincetown harbor on the 11th of November.(d) On that day he signed the compact of government on board the Mayflower, his name being 14th on the list of signers.(e)

Nov. 15, 1620, 16 armed men were set ashore, "under the conduct of Captaine Miles Standish, unto whom was adjoyned for counsell and advise, William Bradford, Stephen Hopkins, and Edward Tilley." They made a voyage of discovery, saw some Indians who fled from them, obtained some corn that had been buried in the earth, and found a

---

the thigh. They were sentenced by the whole company to have their heads and feet tied together and so to lie for 24 hours without meat or drink, "but within an hour, because of their great pains, at their own & their master's humble request, upon promise of better carriage, they are released by the governor." (Chronological History of New England, by Thomas Prince, ed. of 1826, 190, 191.) Doty d. at Plymouth Aug. 23, 1655, leaving issue. (3 Mf. 87.) Litster, after the termination of his service, went to Virginia and d. there before 1651. (Bradford, 414.)

(d) New England's Memorial (Lord's ed., 1903) 5, 6, 10, 11. Mourt's Rel. 1, 3; Bradford, 78-80, 87, 88; 1 Mf. 80.

(e) Mourt's Rel. 6-8; 1 Mf. 79.

trap for deer, as Stephen Hopkins informed them, in which William Bradford was caught. They returned to the ship on the 17th.(f)

On the 6th of December Stephen Hopkins (described as of London) in the company of 17 other men, Capt. Standish at the head, started on a second voyage of discovery, with the shallop, which lasted five or six days, during which they had an encounter with the Indians. They entered Plymouth bay and landed on the 11th of December.(g)

The Mayflower went to Plymouth on December 16, and shortly thereafter the work of erecting buildings and landing the passengers and goods was started.(h)

February 17, 1620-21, two Indians appeared on the top of a hill and signalled for the settlers to come to them. Capt. Standish and Stephen Hopkins were sent towards them, but the Indians disappeared.(i)

March 16, 1620-21, Samoset came into Plymouth and that night was lodged and watched in Stephen Hopkins's house.(j)

July 2, 1621, Stephen Hopkins and Edward Winslow were sent by Gov. Carver on a mission to Massasoit, with whom the governor had made a treaty. They visited the chief at his residence within the ancient territory of Swansea, Mass., and in the present town of Warren, R. I., and had a satisfactory interview. They had the assistance of Tisquantum (Squanto). On their return, after considerable hardships, they arrived at Plymouth on the 7th of July.(k)

In 1623 Stephen Hopkins received 6 acres in the division of lands, his allotment lying on "the

---

(f) Mourt's Rel., 13-27.

(g) Ib. 43-59.

(h) Mourt's Rel. 60, et. seq.

(i) Mourt's Rel. 81.

(j) Ib. 82-85.

(k) Ib. 98-111; New England's Memorial, 31; Bradford, 117.

South side of the brook to the woodward opposite to the" lots "on the South side of the brooke to the baywards." Between him and John Howland were the lands of "Hobamak," an Indian.(l)

May 22, 1627, it was decided that the cows and goats belonging to the company should be divided and kept for 10 years at the care and expense of those to whom they were allotted, and that the old stock and half the increase should remain for common use to be divided at the end of the term "or otherwise as ocation falleth out." The other half of the increase was to belong to the allottees.(m)

The 7th lot fell to Stephen Hopkins and his company, which besides himself consisted of his wife Elizabeth, his children Giles, Caleb and Deborah, Nicholas and Constance Snow, William and Frances Palmer, William Palmer, Jr., John Billington, Sr., Helen Billington and Francis Billington. To this lot fell a black weaning calf and the calf "of this yeare to come of the black Cow, wch fell to John Shaw & his Companie." The company was to have no interest in these two calves, but only half their increase. This lot also received two she goats, "which goats they posses on the like terms which others doe their cattell."(n)

Damaris Hopkins was the 13th in Samuel Fuller's or the 8th company. This company received a red heifer and two she goats.(o)

Mr. Edward Winslow, who had returned to England on business of the colony, came back on the Charity in 1624, bringing three heifers and a bull, the first cattle in the colony.(p)

Gov. Bradford speaks of this division of the cattle as follows:

(l) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 4; 1 Mf. 227-230; New England's Memorial, 31.

(m) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 9; 1 Mf. 148-154.

(n) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 11.

(o) Ib. 11, 12.

(p) Bradford, 117, 166.

"And first accordingly the few catle which they had were devided, which arose to this proportion; a cowe to 6. persons or shars, and 2. goats to the same, which were first equalised for age and goodnes, and then lotted for; single persons consorting with others, as they thought good, and smaler familys likewise; and swine though more in number, yet by the same rule."(q)

In 1627, before the division of the cattle, an agreement was made by which William Bradford, Capt. Miles Standish and Isaac Allerton and such as they should join with them were among other things to discharge the colony of all debts due by it and to have for six years the trade of the colony. Among 27 who signed this agreement on the part of the colonists, the name of Stephen Hopkins stands second, following that of William Brewster.(r)

Jan. 2, 1631-2, he was appointed one of the assessors of taxes.(r1)

In 1633 Stephen Hopkins is named in a list of the freemen of Plymouth.(s)

Jan. 1, 1632-3, he was chosen one of the council for the ensuing year, Edward Winslow being chosen governor.(t) Jan. 10 of the same year he was a member of a court that tried a servant who had run away. The servant was privately whipped before the court.(u)

In 1633 he was assessed to pay a tax of £1 7s., only five persons being assessed at a greater sum, of whom Isaac Allerton was to pay £3 11s. and Gov. Edward Winslow, £2 5s.(v)

July 1, 1633, it was ordered that at or before the last of the next August Stephen Hopkins divide with six others "the medow ground in the bay equally, according to the proporcon of shares formerly devided to the purchasers." It was also provided that he mow where he did the last year.(w)

(q) Bradford, 217.

(r) 6 Mf. 145, 146; Gov. Bradford's Letter Book, Colls. of the Mass. Hist. Soc., 1st ser., vol. 3, pp. 59-61; 5 Mf. 5-7.

(r1) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 9.

(s) Ib. 3.

(t) Ib. 5.

(u) Ib. 7.

(v) Ib. 9.

Oct. 24, 1633, Mr. Stephen Hopkins with Mr. John Doane took an inventory of the kins was appointed with Mr. John Doane to take an inventory of the goods and chattels of Godbert Godbertson and Zarah, his wife, deceased.(x)

Nov. 25, 1633, with Capt. Miles Standish he was made administrator of the estate of John Thorp of Duxbury,(y) who owed him £5 7s. for various particulars.(z)

Jan. 1, 1633-4, he was chosen assistant to the governor.(a)

Jan. 2, 1633-4, he and John Jenny were the appraisers of the estate of Samuel Fuller, the elder, which included about thirty books.(b)

In 1634 he was one of the assessors of taxes and was to pay £1 10s., only two persons being assessed to a higher sum, viz. Edward Winslow and Mr. William Collier £2 5s. each.(c)

Oct. 1, 1634, he was appointed the first of a committee to treat with the existing partners as to the future management of the trade.(d)

Oct. 2, 1634, he and Robert Hicks took the inventory of the goods of Stephen Deans.(e)

Jan. 1, 1634-5, he was chosen an assistant, and entered upon his office the 3d of March.(f)

Jan. 5, 1635-6, he was chosen assistant, and took the oath March 1.(g)

(w) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 14, 15.
(x) Ib. 19; 1 Mf. 154.
(y) Ib. 20.
(z) 1 Mf. 160.
(a) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 21.

(b) 2 Mf. 8; 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 22.
(c) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 20, 27.
(d) Ib. 31.
(e) 2 Mf. 87; 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 26.
(f) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 32, 33.
(g) Ib. 36, 37.

March 14, 1635-6, he was authorized to mow the marsh between Thomas Clarke and George Sowle, and it was ordered that he and Clarke have the marsh up the river as formerly.(h)

June 7, 1636, John Tisdale, yeoman, brought an action of battery against Mr. Hopkins, assistant to the government, by whom he alleged he was dangerously wounded. Hopkins was fined £5 sterling to the use of the King, "whose peace he had broken, wch he ought after a special manner to have kept," and was adjudged to pay 40s. to the plaintiff.(i)

Nov. 7, 1636, a way between his land and that of Thomas Pope, Richard Clough and Richard Wright, "at the fishing point, neer Slowly Field," is mentioned.(j)

In a list of freemen, dated March 7, 1636-7, he is styled gentleman.(k)

Stephen Hopkins was an assistant Jan. 3, 1636-7. On the same date he was made one of a committee to arrange an agreement with "those that have the trade in theire hands" and report to the court.(l)

March 7, 1636-7, it was ordered that those who then had the trade of beaver, corn and beads, etc., with the Indians should hold it until the beginning of June, and in the meantime a committee was appointed, of which Mr. Hopkins was one, to consider propositions and ways "so as the said trade may be still continued to the benefit of the collony'.'(m)

March 20, 1636-7, action was taken as to the use of the hay grounds and Mr. Hopkins was made one of a committee to view those grounds between the Eel river and the town of Plymouth, that each man might be assigned a proper portion. He and Thomas

---

(h) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 41.
(i) Ib. 41,42.
(j) Ib. 46.
(k) Ib. 52.

(l) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 25, 26.
(m) Ib. 54.

Clark were given the hay ground they had the past year.(n)

May 10, 1637, a jury impanelled for the purpose rendered a verdict (which was delivered to the General Court July 7, 1637) laying out highways to the Eel river from Plymouth, which mentions Mr. Hopkins's house, one of the ways passing it on the west.(o)

June 7, 1637, he with the governor and assistants and other persons formed a committee to consider how the trade in beaver, etc., (which was likely to go into decay) might be upheld.(p)

On the same date the committee of which Mr. Hopkins was a member reported that the expenses of the Pequot service would amount to £200, of which £100 was to be paid by Plymouth and £50 each by Duxbury and Scituate.(q)

Among the names of those entered June 7, 1637, who willingly offered themselves to assist the people of Massachusetts Bay and Connecticut "in their warrs against the Pequin(q1) Indians, in reveng of the innocent blood of the English wch the sd Pequins have barbarously shed, and refuse to give satisfaccon for," were Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his two sons Caleb and Giles.(r) The soldiers who volunteered for the Pequot war were, however, not required to take the field.

On the same date Mr. Hopkins for the town of Plymouth was one of two men who, together with the governor and assistants, were to form a board to assess the inhabitants for the expenses of that war.(r)

July 17, 1637, Stephen Hopkins sold for £60 lawful money of England, to be paid one half on May 1, 1638, and one half Sept. 29, 1638, to George Boare of Scituate his messuage, houses, tenements

---

(n) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 55, 57.
(o) Ib. 59, 60.
(p) Ib. 62.
(q) Ib.

(q1) Pequot.
(r) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 61.

and outhouses at the Broken wharf towards the Eel river, together with the six shares of land thereunto belonging, containing 120 acres.(s)

October 2, 1637, he was appointed one of a committee for the town of Plymouth to act with the governor and assistants and a committee from Eel river, Jones river and Duxbury in agreeing upon an equal course in the division of about 500 acres of meadow between the Eel river and South river.(t)

On the same date he was on a jury.(u)

Oct. 2, 1637, he was charged with suffering men to drink in his house on the Lord's day before the meeting was ended, and also on the Lord's day, both before and after the meetings, servants and others to drink more than for ordinary refreshing. This complaint was adjourned to the next court and was subsequently withdrawn. On the same day he was fined 40s. for suffering servants and others to sit drinking in his house contrary to the orders of the court and to play at "shovell" board, and to commit similar misdemeanors. This fine was subsequently released.(v) Nov. 13, 1637, the estate of William Palmer owed him £1 12s.(w) Jan. 2, 1637-8, he was presented by the grand jury for suffering excessive drinking in his house and was acquitted.(x)

Feb. 5, 1637-8, he requested a grant of lands towards the Six Mile brook.(y)

June 5, 1638, he was presented and fined for selling beer for 2d. a quart not worth one penny a quart, and also for selling wine "at such excessive rates, to the oppressing & impovishing of the colony."(z)

August 7, 1638, the following entry appears:

"Liberty is granted to Mr. Steephen Hopkins to erect a house at Mattacheese, and cutt hey there this yeare to winter his cattle, pvided that it be not to withdraw him from the towne of Plymouth."(a) Mattacheese was afterwards called Yarmouth.

Sept. 4, 1638, he was fined £5 upon two presentments against him the last court and three this court, for selling wine, beer strong waters and nutmegs at excessive rates.(b)

Nov. 30, 1638, for £6 sterling he sold to Josias Cooke his 6 acres of land "lying on the South side of the Towne brooke of Plymouth to the woodward."(c)

Feb. 4, 1638-9, it was ordered concerning Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his servant Dorothy Temple that as by her indenture she had about two years to serve him, he

(c) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 39.

(s) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 21.
(t) 1 Plym. Col Recs. 67.
(u) 7 Plym. Col. Recs. 7.
(v) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 68.
(w) 2 Mf. 148, 151; 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 29.

(x) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 75.
(y) Ib. 76.
(z) Ib. 87.
(a) Ib. 93.
(b) Ib. 97.

should keep her and her child, or provide that she should be kept with food and raiment, during said term. If he refused to do so, the colony was to provide for her and Mr. Hopkins was to pay it. He evidently refused, for the same day he was committed to ward for contempt of the court, to remain committed until he should either receive his servant Dorothy Temple or provide for her elsewhere at his own charge during the term she had yet to serve him.(d)

It appears that the father of Dorothy Temple's child was Arthur Peach, who had been executed for murder and highway robbery before its birth, and that Feb. 8, 1638-9, John Holmes of Plymouth agreed with Mr. Hopkins to hold him and the colony harmless from the said Dorothy Temple and her child, she to serve with him the residue of her time as provided in her indenture with Mr. Hopkins. Mr. Hopkins seems to have paid Mr. Holmes three pounds sterling and other considerations for the agreement.(d1)

Dec. 3, 1639, he was presented for selling a looking glass for 16d., which could be bought in Massachusetts for 9d., and the matter was held over for further information. On the same date he was fined £3 for selling strong water without license.(e)

June 1, 1640, he appears to have received a grant of land.(f)

Nov. 2, 1640, he was granted 12 acres of meadow in the North meadow by Jones river.(g)

March 3, 1639-40, the General Court had granted to the "purchasers or old comers" the privilege of making choice of two or three plantations for themselves and their heirs, and on Dec. 1, 1640, the said "purchasers or old comers" announced that they had chosen three tracts, one of which stretched across Cape Cod from Yarmouth to 3 miles east of Namskaket. Among the 53 purchasers or old comers of Plymouth Colony was Stephen Hopkins.(g1)

Dec. 7, 1641, he had a suit against James Luxford for £12 10s.(h)

Jan. 4, 1641-2, he is mentioned as one of the contributors (a sixteenth part) to the "building of a Bark of 40 or 50 Tunn, estimated at the Charge of 200ll."(i)

April 5, 1642, this entry appears: "Jonathan Hatch, by the consent of the Court, is appoynted to dwell wth Mr. Steephen Hopkins, & the said Mr. Hopkins to have a speciall care of him."(j)

June 8, 1642, William Chase mortgaged to him his house and 8 acres of upland in Yarmouth "and six acres more lying at the Stony Cove," to secure the payment to Hopkins of £5 Nov. 1, 1642.(k)

Nov. 7, 1643, Mr. Stephen Hopkins was the foreman of a jury.(l)

August 20, 1644, Capt. Miles Standish and Mr. William Bradford deposed to his will, and his son Caleb Hopkins, appointed executor, produced an inventory on oath of his goods and chattels.(m)

Nov. 21, 1644, Caleb Hopkins as executor received the mortgage of a black cow from Francis Billington to secure the payment of £3 sterling on or before Dec. 1, 1645, which Billington owed the estate of Stephen Hopkins.(n)

Sept. 26, 1645, Josias Cooke sold six acres of land which he had lately bought of Mr. Stephen Hopkins.(n1)

June 29, 1652, provision was made for the public use of the house that was Mr. Hopkins's.(o)

Land that Mr. Stephen Hopkins had owned in Plymouth is referred to in a deed dated June 24, 1685.(p)

His will was proved August 20, 1644.(q) In his will he mentions his deceased wife and requests to be buried near her. He mentions his son Giles Hopkins, who he says is in Yarmouth, and the latter's son Stephen, his daughters Constance, wife of Nicholas Snow, Deborah, Damaris, Ruth, Elizabeth, and his son Caleb, whom he makes his heir.

He gives Giles his great bull then in the hands of Mrs. Warren(r) and to his grandson Stephen 20s. due from Mrs. Warren for its hire, to Constance his mare, to Deborah a cow and her calf and half of another cow, to Damaris a cow and a calf and half of another cow with Deborah, to Ruth a cow and her calf, a bull and half of another cow and to Elizabeth a cow and her calf, the other half of the cow with Ruth, and a yearling heifer. To his four unmarried daughters he gave equally all the movable goods in his house, including a silver spoon to each, and provided that if any one of them should die unmarried, her share should go to the survivors. To Caleb he gave all his right, title and interest in and to his house and lands in Plymouth and in and to any lands that might come to him or he might have the right to by reason of being one of the first comers. He also gave Caleb a yoke of oxen then in the hands of Richard Church and their hire, and all the debts due him. He provided that his said four daughters should have the right to remain in his house in Plymouth till married. He made his son Caleb his executor and Caleb and Capt. Miles Standish jointly supervisors.

(d) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 111, 112.
(d1) Ib. 113.
(e) Ib. 137.
(f) Ib. 154.

(g) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 166.
(g1) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 4, 177; 11 ib. 34, 35.
(h) 7 Plym. Col. Recs. 27.
(i) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 31.
(j) Ib. 38.

(k) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 83.
(l) 7 Plym. Col. Recs. 36.
(m) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 75.
(n) Ib. 78, 79.
(n1) 12 ib. 114.
(o) 3 Plym. Col. Recs. 14.
(p) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 162, 163.
(q) 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 61-63; 2 Mf. 12-17.

(r) Widow of Richard Warren, a Mayflower passenger (2 Mf. 12; 3 ib. 48, 49).

The will also provides:

"It is also my will that my Executr & Supervisor shall advise devise and dispose by the best wayes & meanes they cann for the disposeing in marriage or other wise for the best advancnt of the estate of the forenamed Deborah Damaris Ruth and Elizabeth Hopkins."

The witnesses were Capt. Miles Standish and Gov. William Bradford.

The inventory of his goods and chattels, taken by Capt. Miles Standish, Mr. Thomas Willet and Mr. John Doane, amounted to £128 16s. 7 d., and included a mare, household goods, wearing apparel, cattle, two pigs, some poultry, 6d. in money, "Divers bookes" valued at 12s., debts due him amounting to £17 6s., &c.

His will and inventory are printed in full in The Mayflower Descendant (vol. 2, pp. 12-17).

The movable estate of Mr. Stephen Hopkins was apportioned to his four daughters by Capt. Miles Standish and Caleb Hopkins in 1644. Deborah, Damaris and Ruth's shares, consisting of various articles, are set out.(s)

Children.

By his first wife, born in England:

Giles,(t) b. .

Constanta (Constance), b. ; m. at Plymouth between 1623 and June 1, 1627, Nicholas Snow, who came over in the Anne in the latter part of July, 1623,(u) and who d. in Eastham Nov, 15, 1676. She d. in Eastham about the middle of October, 1677.(v)

By his second wife:

Damaris, b. in England ; d. in Plymouth before her father and after the division of cattle, May 22, 1627, when she was in Samuel Fuller's company, which drew the 8th lot.(w)

Oceanus, b. on board the Mayflower between Sept. 6 and Nov. 11, 1620; d. before the division of cattle, May 22, 1627.(x)

Caleb, b. in Plymouth probably before June 6, 1623; became a seaman and died at Barbados before 1651.(y) He was made the residuary devisee and legatee and executor by his father's will in 1644. Caleb Hopkins was one of those in Plymouth between 16 and 60 able to bear arms in August, 1643.(z) In 1637 he volunteered in the Pequot war, as above stated. In 1644 he conveyed a part of his father's lands to his brother Giles, as seen below.

Deborah, b. in Plymouth, possibly before Caleb; m. Andrew Ring, April 23, 1646.(a) She consented to a conveyance of land by her husband Feb. 13, 1659-60.(a1)

(s) 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 65; 4 Mf. 115, 116.

(t) Also written Gyles.

(u) 1 Mf. 229, 230; 2 ib. 179. His will and inventory are in 3 Mf. 167-174.

(v) 3 ib. 167.

(w) 1 Mf. 152; 5 Mf. 47-52.

(x) 5 Mf. 48, 50.

(y) Bradford, 411, 412; 1 Mf. 13, 161-163; 4 ib. 114; 5 ib. 50, 51.

(z) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 187, 188.

(a) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 98. See 4 Mf. 193-198; 6 ib. 95-97; 13 Mf. 86.

(a1) 14 Mf. 142.

Damaris, b. in Plymouth ; m. there Jacob^2 (Francis^1) Cooke after June 10, 1646, date of his marriage settlement;(b) d. before Nov. 18, 1669, when Jacob Cooke married again.(c)

Ruth, b. in Plymouth ; d. unmarried before Oct. 1, 1659, the date of the settlement of her sister Elizabeth's estate, and before Gov. Bradford wrote in 1651.(d) Oct. 15, 1644, Richard Sparrow acknowledged that he had received one-half of a cow from Capt. Standish which belonged to Ruth Hopkins and agreed at the expiration of three years or sooner to pay Capt. Standish for Ruth Hopkins two year-old heifers or two year-old steers. On May 19, 1647, Capt. Standish acknowledged that he had received two young steers in full settlement.(e, f)

Elizabeth, b. in Plymouth ; d. presumably before Sept. 29, 1659, when her cattle were valued by John Freeman and Edward Bangs.(f1) It was agreed Nov. 30, 1644, between Capt. Standish and Caleb Hopkins of the one part and Richard Sparrow of Plymouth of the other part that Sparrow should have her until she should marry or reach the age of 19 years. This provision was included in the agreement: "2ly. In consideracon of the weaknes of the child and her inabillytie to prforme such service as may acquite their charges in bringing of her up and that shee bee not too much oppressed now in her childhood wth hard labour It is agreed that Richard Sparrow shall have putt into his hands her whole estate and to have the use of yt for, the tyme of her continuance wth him. Onely one heiffer reserved wch is now in the hands of Gyles Hopkins of Yarmouth."(g)

(b) June 10, 1646, the settlement of Jacob Cooke, in view of his intended marriage to Damaris Hopkins, was made by his parents, Francis Cooke and Hester, his wife. They gave their son upon his marriage about 100 acres of land with meadow lying at the North river, ½ of the land that shall fall to Francis by any division of the Purchase Land or that shall be due him as one of the first comers, one ox, one cow, one calf and the foal of Francis's mare. It was also provided that Jacob might build a house on Francis's land at Rockynook and if he should think it convenient or should be compelled to remove, the said Jacob "at the Judgment of honest and Judicial men shall have satisfaction for any building or buildings fence or fences which otherwise might prove Damage to the said Jacob." It was also provided that upon the decease of the longer survivor of Francis and his wife "the said Jacob or his heires shall have the teame with all the furniture belonging thereunto." Witnesses: Miles Standish, James Hurst and John Howland. (2 Plym. Col. Deeds, 35; 2 Mf. 27, 28; 5 ib. 51.)

(c) 3 Mf. 101, 105.

(d) 5 Mf. 52.

(e, f) 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 66; 4 Mf. 117.

(f1) 4 Mf. 119.

It was further provided that if "Goodwyfe Sparrow" should die, then Elizabeth Hopkins and her estate should be free to be disposed of as Capt. Standish and Caleb Hopkins should think best, but if Mrs. Sparrow's death should occur within three years, then Sparrow was to have 12 months within which to return the estate, and if after three years, then 9 months. It was further agreed that if Elizabeth should die, her estate was to return to Capt. Standish and Caleb Hopkins to be disposed of among the rest of her sisters according to the will of Mr. Hopkins, provided that Sparrow should have 12 months to return it if her death occurred within three years, and nine months if it occurred after three years.

The estate to be returned was £15 1s. 2d. and was to be returned in the following form: a milch cow, a feather bed and things belonging thereto, of the same value as they were delivered, and the rest, one half in wheat and one half in Indian corn. The agreement was witnessed by William Paddy and Thomas Willett.

Oct. 5, 1656, Capt. Myles Standish complained against Richard Sparrow of Eastham in behalf of Elizabeth Hopkins, demanding £20 damages for breach of an agreement made with Sparrow concerning said Elizabeth Hopkins. The parties settled the suit by an agreement in writing.(i)

On Oct. 10, 1657, Elizabeth Hopkins sold to Jacob Cooke of Plymouth "in consideration of a valluable sume to her alreddy satisfyed and fully paid" "all that her portion or prcell of meddow that shee hath in the great meddow att Joanses river viz ten acres of ffresh meddow bee it more or lesse lying betwixt the meddow of Capt: Thomas Willett and Mr. John Done runing from woodside to woodside."(j)

An inventory of her estate in the hands of Jacob Cooke and Andrew Ring was taken Oct. 6, 1659, and verified by them, amounting to £26 14s. There was a small matter in the hands of Mrs. Standish.(k) Sept. 29, 1659, John Freeman and Edward Bangs appraised in the hands of Giles Hopkins, belonging to Elizabeth, one half of three steers, a poor calf, one very small poor cow and an old defective cow at £14 5s.(k1)

On Oct. 5, 1659, it was agreed by Andrew Ring, Jacob Cooke and Giles Hopkins and ordered by the court "that in case Elizabeth hopkins Doe Come Noe more", the above mentioned cattle at their valuation should be the portion of Giles Hopkins in the estate of

---

(g) On the margin of the page is this note: "the tearmes of this agreement are fully prformed by Richard Sparrow."

(h) 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 65; 4 Mf. 116, 117.

(i) 7 Plym. Col. Recs. 80.

(j) 2 Plym. Col. Deeds, pt. 1, p. 196; 4 Mf. 118.

(k) The last known mention of Barbara Standish.

(k1) 4 Mf. 119.

Elizabeth and that Andrew Ring and Jacob Cooke should remain in peaceable possession of what they had of her estate.(l)

SECOND GENERATION.

Giles^2 (Stephen^1) Hopkins, b. in England ; came over in the Mayflower in 1620; m. Oct. 9, 1639, Catherine(m) Whelden, probably daughter of Gabriel Whelden;(n) d. in Eastham between March 5, 1688-9 (date of the codicil to his will), and April 16, 1690 (date of probate). His wife d. after the date of his codicil. He lived at first in Plymouth. In the latter part of 1638 or very early in 1639 he removed to Yarmouth, where his father had erected a house and pastured cattle.(o) This house was the first one known to have been built by a white man in Yarmouth.(p)

His house in Yarmouth was in the extreme N. W. of the town (now Yarmouthport) not far from the Barnstable line. Going E. from that line, it was the third house on the N. side of the road.(q) He took the oath of fidelity in Yarmouth.(r) He was of Yarmouth Oct. 28, 1644, when his brother Caleb conveyed land to him.(s) He later and probably shortly after removed to Nauset (later Eastham). He settled in the part of Eastham which is now Orleans.(t)

June 7, 1637, while in Plymouth, he with his father and brother volunteered to serve in the Pequot war, but his services were not required.(u)

Giles Hopkins Feb. 9, 1638-9, was one of the witnesses of the will of Peter Worden, Sr., of Yarmouth, with Nicholas Simpkins and Hugh Tilly, and swore to it March 5, 1638-9, at Plymouth.(v)

May 3, 1642, Walter Devell of Plymouth owed Giles Hopkins of Yarmouth 9 bushels of corn, for which suit was brought and execution taken out for £3 17s. 2d., which included 14 bushels due Mr. Hedge of Yarmouth and the costs of the suit.(w)

May 12, 1642, Giles Hopkins of Yarmouth, planter, sold to Andrew Hallett, Jr., 10 acres of upland in the west field between the land of Nicholas Simpkins on the N. E. and the land of Robert Dennis on the S. W., with two acres of meadow adjoining at the N. W. end, "for and in consideration of two acres of upland and four acres of meddow . . . lying and being in the prime feild in a furlong there called by the Name of

---

(l) 2 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 1, pp. 90, 91; 4 Mf. 118, 119.

(m) Also written Katherne and Catorne.

(n) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 134; 13 Mf. 85. See "Early Wheldens of Yarmouth," by the compiler.

(o) Aug. 7, 1638, Stephen Hopkins obtained the right to do so.

(p) Swift's Old Yarmouth, 51.

(q) 1 Otis's Barn. Families, 484, 486.

(r) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 185.

(s) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 104.

(t) Josiah Paine, Esq.

(u) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 61.

(v) 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 33; 3 Mf. 75, 76; 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 117.

(w) 7 Plym. Col. Recs. 29, 30.

Book - "Cape Cod Library of Local History + Genealogy" ed by Leonard H Smith et al - MPL R974.4 SC83 GR

STEPHEN HOPKINS

with some account of the descendants of
Joshua Hopkins, his grandson.

By
JOSIAH PAINE OF HARWICH.

Copyright, 1913,
by Charles W. Swift.

STEPHEN HOPKINS, the ancestor of the Eastham branch of the Hopkins family, and one of the signers of the famous compact in the cabin of the Mayflower in Cape Cod harbor, November 11, 1620, was from London, and with his family went on board the Mayflower as it lay ready to sail for the land beyond the western sea, to participate in the joys and sorrows of the company in the new world. His family consisted at the time, of his wife, Elizabeth, Giles and Constanta, children by a former wife, Damaris, a daughter by second wife, and two apprentices, Edward Doty and Edward Litster. On the passage a son was born to him, who, on account of being born on the ocean, was called Oceanus. He did not long survive; but he will ever be remembered as the first born on the Mayflower. To his family, after his settlement in Plymouth, were added more children. Among them was only one son, Caleb, who became a seaman, and fell sick and died at Barbadoes before 1650, leaving no issue.

Of the parentage and early life of Stephen Hopkins there appears nothing that is reliable. He doubtless had seen much of the rough part of life before he concluded to join the Leyden company and settle in the new world. He was an energetic, self reliant, and fearless man, and of good judgment in matters of business, and the pilgrims were, indeed, fortunate in having him with them in the settlement to pass judgment upon secular matters that might come up.

As soon as he landed from the Mayflower at Cape Cod, his helpfulness began. When the company was formed of sixteen men, under Captain Miles Standish four days after signing the co[illegible], to make an exploration of the place in order "to see whether it might be fit . . . to seat in or no," he, with William Bradford and Edward Tilley, "was adjoined for counsel and advice." His selection with such a man as Bradford, showed that the leaders of the Pilgrim band had confidence in his sagacity at the very start.

He again went later with another party of the Pilgrims to resume explorations, returning after spending three days traversing the territory now covered by the towns of Provincetown and Truro. He, with other members of the exploring party, spent the cold nights in the open air behind a "barricado" roughly put up, with sentinels on duty and a good fire to give them warmth, and make it comfortable while the winds were howling about the encampment.

It was while out with this party of explorers that he saw for the first time at a distance the natives, found the first corn buried in the sand, drank from the Truro springs his first "New England water," and discovered and pointed out the deer trap in which Mr. William Bradford incautiously put his foot into the noose, and was immediately caught up by his leg. How high he was lifted by the "jerk up" of the "young sprint" or the merriment it caused the beholders, the journal of the explorers is silent.

He took an active part in the later explorations at the lower end of the Cape up to the final settlement of the Pilgrims at Plymouth. He was with them at Nauset when they experienced their "first encounter" with the natives early in the morning of December 18, on the north side of Great Meadow creek at their night encampment.

In July, 1621, with Edward Winslow, Mr. Hopkins was selected by Gov. Bradford, who had now succeeded Mr. Carver, to visit Massasoit, the old chief of the Wampanoags at Sowams, or as it was sometimes called Pocanoket, as an embassy. They were accompanied by Tisquantum or Squanto as guide and interpreter. It was a long journey at that time through the primitive forest, and it was not without danger; but these men did not fear to pursue their journey. They were men who could meet any emergency. Winslow wrote an interesting account of his visit to Pocanokit which was published not long after.

In 1633, Mr. Hopkins was an assistant to Gov. Edward Winslow. Whether this was his first election to the board of assistants is not known. Up to this year no mention is made of those elected either by Bradford or Morton. He was again elected an assistant in 1634 to Gov. Thomas Prence, and an assistant to Gov. William Bradford in 1635. His last election to the board of assistants was in 1636. At this time he was an assistant to Gov. Edward Winslow, he having as his colleagues, William Bradford, Thomas Prence, William Collier, John Alden, Timothy Hatherly and John Brown.

In 1637, Mr. Hopkins volunteered to go out against the Pequots, a tribe of Indians in Connecticut, that commenced hostilities in that colony, but before the company was in readiness to march word came that the men were not needed, and he did not have the chance to meet the Pequots. The same year he was on a committee engaged in public business in Plymouth. In 1638, liberty was granted him to erect a house at Mattacheese and cut hay there and winter his cattle, "provided it be not to withdraw him from the town of Plymouth."

In 1642, it is mentioned that he contributed towards building a barque at Plymouth, and was owner of one-sixteenth part, showing that in his declining years he was not unmindful of his interest in the prosperity of the place in which for twenty-two years he had lived.

Of the forty-one who signed the memorable compact only twelve bore the prefix of "Mr." in after life. Among them was Stephen Hopkins. The title was an honorable one, and only given to magistrates, ministers, and men of distinction.

The exact date of his death is not known. It must, however, have occurred at Plymouth, between June 6, 1644, the date of his will, and July 17, 1644, the date of the inventory of his estate. The will was "exhibited" at the General Court at Plymouth for proof, August 20, 1644. It was witnessed by Capt. Miles Standish and Mr. William Bradford. After expressing a strong desire to be buried as near as possible to his "wife deceased" he proceeded to the disposition of estate among his living children viz.: GILES, CONSTANCE, CALEB, DEBORAH, DAMARIS, RUTH and ELIZABETH. Notwithstanding the rights of his son, Giles, by primogenture under the English law, he settled his real estate upon his youngest son, Caleb, by second wife, and gave him considerable portion of his personal property, and made him executor of his will, with Capt. Miles Standish as one of the supervisors. He provided well for his four unmarried daughters, viz.: Deborah, Damaris, Ruth and Elizabeth, all by his second wife. He desired that they should have "free recourse to" his "house in Plymouth upon any occasion, there to abide and remain for such time as any of them shall think

meet and convenient, and they single persons." He remembered his son, Giles, and daughter, Constance Snow, by his former wife, giving the latter his mare. He also remembered his grandson, Stephen Hopkins, son of Giles, and gave him twenty shillings. He enjoined his executor and supervisor "to advise, devise and dispose by the best ways and means they can for the disposing in marriage or otherwise for the best advancement of the forenamed Deborah, Damaris, Ruth and Elizabeth."

The only daughters of Mr. Stephen Hopkins that married, were Constance who married Nicholas Snow, and Damaris who married Jacob Cooke. Damaris, it is now thought was the second one of the name,, and not the one of that name who came on the Mayflower. Caleb Hopkins, the youngest son, before mentioned as a seaman, and dying unmarried at Barbadoes before 1650, very willingly granted to Giles one hundred acres of the land at Satuckquett, in October, 1644, that belonged to their father as a "purchaser or old comer." This tract laid within the old township of Harwich.

GILES HOPKINS, the eldest son of Stephen Hopkins "by a former wife," was born in England and came over on the Mayflower in 1620 with his father's family, he being probably about fifteen years of age at the time. Of his early life but little, very little, is known. In 1637, with his father and brother, Caleb, he volunteered to go against the Pequot Indians, but before the company was ready to go forward, word came from the colony of Connecticut it was not needed. In 1638, he went to Mattacheese in Yarmouth which was being settled, to have the charge of his father's cattle which were "to be wintered at Mattakeese." Here he soon cultivated the acquaintance of a young lady by the name of Catherine Whelden, and was married to her, October 9, 1639. They soon became the occupants of the first house (as is supposed) "built by the English on the Cape below Sandwich." Its location, says Swift's History of Old Yarmouth, "was in a field belonging to Capt. Charles Basset, about 75 yards northwesterly from the house of Mr. Joseph Hale."*

At the time Mr. Hopkins became a resident of Mattacheese only a few families were there, and not a white man had ventured to settle between there and the head of the Cape. Here he resided until after 1645, when he sold out to Andrew Hallett and went to Nauset, that part now Orleans, and became a resident.

---

*Mr. Swift's history of Yarmouth was published in 1884.

He is mentioned as of Eastham in 1650, holding the office of surveyor of highways, which at that period in the new town could not have been attended with much difficulty.

Mr. Hopkins was a very large landholder. He had land granted him by the town of Eastham at various times. In 1662, he, with Lieut. Joseph Rogers, who was a passenger on the Mayflower, and Josiah Cooke, had liberty to look out for land for his accommodation between Bridgewater and the bay line. In 1672, with Jonathan Sparrow and Thomas Mayo of Eastham, he purchased Sampson's Neck, in what is now Orleans, which the Indians called "Weesquamscutt." It was a valuable tract. It embraced all the neck of land between Higgin's river and pond on the north, and Potonumecot river on the south, including the pond that has the island in it. As a "purchaser or old comer" he had rights in large tracts of land in the old township of Harwich. He owned tracts at Paomet, now Truro, and had acres of land in what is now Orleans. He seems to have taken pleasure in holding land for the wants of his descendants.

Mr. Hopkins selected some good land for his house lot. It was on the southeast side of Town cove, and extended from the cove easterly up to the road that leads from Main street to Tonset. His house stood on the westerly side of the road, near or on the spot where the old Isaac Seabury house now stands. After his death and the decease of his wife, it passed into the hands of his son, Joshua Hopkins, by will.

The exact date of Mr. Hopkins's death is not now known, but there is reason to believe it occurred the latter part of March or early part of April, 1690. The time of the death of his wife, Catherine, is also unknown. She was alive in March, 1689.

The will of Giles Hopkins bears date January 19, 1682, and the codicil March 5, 1688-9. It was presented for probate and proved April 16, 1690. The executor was his eldest son, Stephen Hopkins. The witnesses to the will were Jonathan Sparrow and Samuel Knowles, his neighbors; the witnesses to the codicil were Mark Snow and Jonathan Sparrow. Mark Snow was his nephew, being the eldest son of his sister, Constance (Hopkins) Snow. He mentions no daughters. His landed estate he disposed of to his sons: Stephen, Joshua, Caleb and William. To Stephen he gave all his land, purchased or unpurchased, "at Satuckit" within the lines defined. To Caleb and Joshua he gave in equal parts all his [illegible]chased or unpurchased upland and meadow in Paomet, one third part of Sampson's Neck, all his land lying in Pochet, and all other land that fell to him "as a purchaser," aside from what was given to Stephen Hopkins. To his son, Joshua Hopkins, he gave meadow at Namskaket, and after his mother's death "the housing and land" given her for her use during life. For the support of his son, William, who appears not to have been able to care for himself, he left means in the hands of Stephen, the executor, and his widow "Catorne." He was to have a living out of the estate "during his natural life in a comfortable decent manner," but he did not long survive his mother.

The latter years of Mr. Hopkins's life were of weakness, and so much so that he was not able "to provide for" his and his wife's support, and he agreed with Stephen, his son, to take all of his "stock and moveable estate" to use for his and his wife's comfortable support.

The following are the names of the children of Giles Hopkins with the dates of birth as they appear in the ancient book of records at Orleans:

i Mary, born in November, 1640.
ii Stephen, born in September 1642.
iii John, born in 1643 "and died being three months old."
iv Abigail, born in October, 1644.
v Deborah, born in June, 1648.
vi Caleb, born in January, 1650.
vii Ruth, born in June, 1653.
viii JOSHUA, born in June, 1657.
ix William, born January 9, 1660.
x Elizabeth, born in November, 1664, died aged one month.

JOSHUA HOPKINS, the fourth son of Giles Hopkins, born in Eastham in June, 1657, married Mary, the daughter of Daniel and Ruth (Collier) Cole, of Eastham, May 26, 1681. He settled in Eastham in that part now Orleans. He occupied a house standing near or on the spot where the house stands that was occupied by the late Isaac Seabury, on the westerly side of the road leading to Tonset, which was without any doubt his father's house spot. The location of his house has been handed down by his descendants, and there can be no doubt of their correctness. He inherited a large estate from his father in Harwich, Eastham and Paomet, now Truro. He added much to his acres by purchase. But few men

About our Constance (Hopkins) Snow's brother

GILES HOPKINS.

Giles Hopkins was the eldest son of Mr. Stephen Hopkins of Plymouth. He was born in England, and came over with his father's family in the Mayflower in 1620, and with the other members of his father's family survived the first winter's sickness, which swept off so many of that company. Of his boyhood days, but little appears. He appears to have been of a retiring disposition, only forward when duty impelled. When, in 1637, the Pequots, a tribe of brave Indians inhabiting the eastern part of Connecticut, commenced war with the English in that region, and Plymouth Colony concluded to send a company to assist in the overthrow of the Indians, he, with his father and younger brother Caleb, volunteered to go out in the company in the defence of his Connecticut neighbors, but happily for the company, before ready to go forth, the troops under Captain Mason had "vanquished" the enemy, and the company was not needed. The next year, Mr. Stephen Hopkins having been allowed by the Old Colony court "to erect a house at Mattacheese" now Yarmouth, "to cut hay there" and "to winter his cattle," it is supposed his son Giles went down there and had charge of his cattle. At any rate, he was at Yarmouth in 1639, and with Hugh Tilley and Nicholas Sympkins, "deposed" to the last will and testament of Peter Warden, the elder, deceased, and also courted and married Catherine Whelden, daughter of Gabriel Whelden, who was licensed to build at Mattacheese the year preceding. The house he occupied while a resident of Yarmouth stood a little to the northwest on the declivity or knoll, and the site was pointed out to the writer by the late Amos Otis a few years before his death. It is believed by Mr. Otis to have been the first house built below Sandwich, and certainly it must have been, if it were the one built by Stephen Hopkins by order of Plymouth court. Mr. Otis, in his account of Andrew Hallett, Jr., says it was sold by Giles Hopkins in 1642 to Mr. Hallett. It would seem that Mr. Hopkins was not a resident of Yarmouth in 1643, as his name does not appear in the list of those able to bear arms that year in the township, but evidence is quite conclusive that he was a resident June 6, 1644. At that date his father made his will, and several times speaks of Giles being at Yarmouth in charge of the cattle. It is probable he was not enrolled on account of being physically unable to do military duty. In what year he removed to Nausett or Eastham, is not known. He was there in 1650, occupying the position of surveyor of highways, which he subsequently occupied several years. For some reason, now inexplicable, his father, by will, made Caleb, his younger son by second wife, the "heir apparent," and consequently the whole of the real estate, which was large, passed into the hands of Caleb at his death. Caleb Hopkins, soon after his father's death in July, 1644, gave up a very large tract of land to Giles, his only surviving brother, lying in what is now Brewster. Upon the death of Caleb, who was a seaman, and who died single at Barbadoes before 1657, Giles came into possession of large tracts. In 1659, Mr. Hopkins had land granted him in Eastham. In 1662, with Lieut. Joseph Rogers and Josiah Cooke, he had liberty allowed him by the Colony court to look out for land for his accommodation between Bridgewater and Bay Line. In 1672, with Jonathan Sparrow and Thomas Mayo of Eastham, he purchased Sampson's Neck in what is now Orleans, then called by the Indians Weesu Neck in what is now Orleans, then called by the Indians "Weesquamseutt." The tract was a valuable one; it embraced the territory between Higgins's river on the north, and Potonumecot river on the south. He seems to have been a very quiet man, caring but little for public positions. He was in 1654 drawn into a lawsuit by the noted William Leveridge, who had defamed him. Mr. Hopkins claimed damages to the amount of £50. Mr. Leveridge was ordered to pay £2 and some shillings for the offence.

The will of Giles Hopkins bears date Jan. 19, 1682; the codicil March 5, 1688-9. The former was witnessed by Jonathan Sparrow and Samuel Knowles, and the latter by Mark Snow and Jonathan Sparrow, and was presented for probate April 22, 1690, Stephen Hopkins, son, executor. There are no daughters mentioned. Sons mentioned are: Stephen, Caleb, Joshua and William. The widow was alive at the date of the codicil, and Mr. Hopkins had become unfit for labor and held out inducements to his son Stephen to supply his wants. It seems quite certain that his farm was in that part of Eastham now Orleans, and some part of it joined Town cove. According to the records, Mr. Hopkins had ten children, five of whom were daughters. They were M[illegible], born November, 1640, who married Samuel Smith; Stephen, born September, 1642; John, born in 1643; Abigail, born in 1644; Deborah, born in 1648, who married Josiah Cooke, Jr.; Caleb, born January, 1650; Ruth, born in 1653; Joshua, born June, 1657; William, born in 1660, and Elizabeth, born in 1664.

Stephen Hopkins, the eldest son, removed to Harwich, now Brewster, and settled, having all his father's possessions there, where he died Oct. 10, 1718, aged 76 years. He was twice married and had eight children. Caleb Hopkins, the third son, removed to Truro, where his father had tracts of land, and died there about 1725, intestate, leaving four sons and one daughter, viz: Caleb, Nathaniel, Thomas, Thankful and Constant. Some of his grandsons lived to great ages. Isaac Hopkins, born in Truro March, 1725, died Jan. 6, 1814, was the oldest person native of the town that had died during the pastorate of Mr. Jude Damon up to that date. Mr. Samuel Hopkins, who died aged ninety-two years, eleven months, in July, 1820, was the eldest person who died in Truro between December, 1786, and September, 1828.

Joshua Hopkins, the third son of Giles, married Mary, daughter of Daniel Cole, May 26, 1681, and settled on the east side of Town cove, near his father's house. His house stood near or on the spot where the house of the late Isaac Seabury now stands. He was a very wealthy man. Much of his landed estate he inherited. He had eight children, viz: John, Abigail, Elisha, Lydia, Mary, Joshua, Hannah and Phebe. Hannah of this family died in Harwich, Oct. 24, 1793, in her 94th year. Mr. Hopkins was a farmer and shoemaker, it is understood. He owned land in Eastham, Harwich and Chatham. His wife Mary died March 1, 1734; he died in 1738. Many of his descendants have lived to great ages. Priscilla, a granddaughter, died in 1818, aged 90. Deacon Asa Hopkins, a great-great-grandson, died a few years since in Orleans, aged above 90 years.

William, the youngest son of Giles Hopkins, was never married. He was living in 1690. He seems not to have been capable of looking out for himself, and his father made ample provision for his support during life, leaving the matter of his support with Stephen, the executor, who, it is presumed, strictly carried out his father's plans in relation to his maintenance.

RALPH SMITH.

Ralph Smith appears to have been the first of the surname who settled in Eastham. He was there as early as 1657. He came from Hingham, where he had been a resident many years. He was originally from Hingham in England, it is understood, not far from the year 1633. While a resident of Eastham, he occupied no important official position. It is inferred from the Colonial records he was not a quiet citizen. He probably was twice married. His death occurred at Eastham in the year 1685. That year, October 27, letters of administration were granted to his widow, Grace, and son, Samuel. There appears no full record of his children, but as far as can be learned they were: Samuel, baptized at Hingham July 11, 1641; John, baptized July 23, 1644; Daniel, baptized March 2, 1647; Deborah, born in 1654, and Thomas. The date of the death of his wife Grace is not known.

Samuel Smith, son of Ralph, married Mary, daughter of Giles Hopkins of Eastham, and settled in that town. He early engaged in the whale and mackerel fishery, and was very successful. The latter years of his life he engaged in agriculture. He was owner of very large tracts of land, his largest tract containing over four hundred acres, situated in that part of Eastham now Orleans, and extending over to Baker's pond, from a line running northerly from Potonumecot river over Island pond to the mouth of the rivulet at the cove, near the house formerly occupied by Vickery Sparrow, which he sold November 1, 1684, to a large number of his townsmen. The tract for many years after this period was known as "Smith's Purchase." His death occurred March 20, 1696-70. His estate, both real and personal, was valued over twelve hundred pounds. He had beside his farm at Eastham, parts of two at Monomoy, now Chatham. The inventory of his estate shows that he was in possession of over fifty head of neat cattle, sixty sheep, and a number of horses at the time of his decease. Mr. Smith had six children; but only Mary, who married Daniel Hamilton, and John, survived him. They went to Chatham and settled. Samuel Smith, the oldest son, married Bashsheba Lothrop. of Barnstable, and died Sept. 22, 1692, leaving Samuel and Joseph, who had their father's share of the estate. Mr. Samuel Smith held no office of importance in the town. He appears to have been a determined and resolute man. He doubtless resided in that part of the town of Eastham now Orleans. The date of his widow's death does not appear.

John Smith, son of Ralph Smith, settled in Eastham. He married probably twice. His first wife, Hannah, was daughter of Thomas Williams, whom we noticed sometime since. They were married May 24, 1667. They had a son John, it is certain, as he was mentioned in the will of Thomas Williams, which bears date 1692. He probably had other children, but the writer has not investigated the records regarding them. There were several John Smiths contemporary with John, the grandson of Thomas Williams, and it would require considerable time to give their lives and descent.

Daniel Smith and Thomas Smith, sons of Ralph, married and settled in Eastham, where some of their descendants reside.

The Smiths are numerous on the Cape; but it is not known that they are all descendants of Ralph of Eastham. A branch of the family of this name, residing in Harwich, claims to descend from an Englishman of the surname who came to this country about the first of the last century, and settled at the west part of the town.

WILLIAM WALKER.

William Walker, the first of the name who settled on the Cape, came from England in 1635, in the Elizabeth, Captain Starr. He found his way to Eastham after the settlement had commenced, courted and married Sarah Snow, daughter of Nicholas, and settled near his wife's father, in Gov. Prence's neighborhood, on the west side of Town cove. He seems to have been a man of character and of education, but not inclined to give great attention to seeking official honors. He was undoubtedly a mariner in early life. In 1653 he was impressed to do duty as a seaman on board of the barque commanded by Richard Knowles, in anticipation of trouble with the Dutch, to carry the military stores. In 1664, with Mr. John Doane, he was appointed to report the amount of liquor brought within the precincts of Eastham. In 1667, he was appointed to receive excise. He was a surveyor of highway Eastham in 1668, '69, '78, '79 and '93. In 1685, the Colony court, in consideration of his "having two natural sons in the training band, and one killed in the wars," and having "some weakness and infirmity of body," relieved him from "training." In 1686, he was appointed to assist in collecting the ministerial tax due Mr. Treat, and in October following, attended the court in Barnstable as a petit juror. He was a grand juror in 1690 and 1694; a petit juror in 1693; and a tithing man in 1695. He was not so large a land owner in Eastham as some of his contemporaries in the settlement. At different periods he received grants of land from the town to meet his wants. He was living in 1699. His wife was Sarah Snow, a daughter of Nicholas. He was married to her, according to the Eastham records, Jan. 25, 1654. His children were: John, born Nov. 24, 1655, who fell in the battle with the Indians at Rehoboth, under Captain Pierce, on March 26, 1676; William, born Oct. 12, 1637, who died in infancy; William, born August 2, 1659; Sarah, born July 30, 1662; Elizabeth, born Sept. 28, 1664; Jabez, born July 8, 1668. From Jabez, the youngest son, descended most of the Walkers upon the Cape. Jeremiah Walker, son of Jabez, married Esther Tomlin or Tumblen in 1724, removed to Harwich and settled, where he died in 1734. From him descended Jonathan Walker, the well-known Abolitionist, a native of Harwich, who died a few years since in Michigan.

WILLIAM MERRICK.

William Merrick was an early resident of Eastham. He came over to this country before 1636; settled first within the limits of Old Duxbury, and had land granted him by the Colonial court near the path to "Green Harbor" in 1637; also land granted him adjoining Mr. William Collier's, in 1630. In 1643, he was a juror for Duxbury, and in 1646 was a surveyor of highways. In 1648, he was on the jury that tried Mrs. Alice Bishop for the murder of her little daughter at Plymouth, whom, with her husband, we shall have occasion to notice in a future article. In 1652, he was admitted a freeman, and not long after moved to Eastham. He was among the settlers there May 2, 1655, as

ER 162

STEPHEN HOPKINS OF THE MAYFLOWER[*] AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS

Compiled by Timothy Hopkins of San Francisco
Prepared for Publication by Margaret Griffith

California Genealogical Society

1. **Stephen^{1} Hopkins**, born in England in 15—, died in Plymouth, Mass., between 16 June and 27 July 1644. He married first ———, who died in England; and secondly, in February 1617, **Elizabeth Fisher**. This second marriage may have taken place in the parish of St. Mary's, Whitechapel, London, England, but this is not probable. It is known that he was married the second time in England and that his second wife came to Plymouth with him and died there before her husband. (The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. 33, p. 300, asserts that he came to America on a former expedition.) Governor Bradford says, "They lived about 20 yrs. in this place".

An extended account of Stephen^{1} and some account of the descendants of his grandson Joshua, written by Josiah Paine of Harwich, Massachusetts, was published in 1913 as #63 of the Library of Cape Cod History and Genealogy. "The Doty-Doten Family in America", by Ethan Allen Doty, 1897, p. 8, states that Stephen Hopkins was a tanner or leather maker.

Stephen Hopkins came over in the *Mayflower* with his wife Elizabeth and one child by her and two children by his first wife. He was a prominent man in the colony, and the details of his service are published in many places.

Captain Miles Standish and Mr. William Bradford deposed to his will 20 Aug. 1644, and his son Caleb was made executor. This and a full history of his records will be found in the booklet of Mr. James W. Hawes published by the *Yarmouth Register* in 1915 and in a similar booklet by Josiah Paine of Harwich.

His will was dated 6 June 1644 and proved 20 Aug. 1644. In it he mentions his deceased wife Elizabeth; his sons Giles and Caleb; his daughters Constance Snow, Deborah, Damaris, Ruth, and Elizabeth; and his grandson Stephen, son of Giles. His son Caleb was named executor. A copy of the will may be found in The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. 4, p. 281.

---

[*] I have no reason to believe that John^{1} Hopkins of Hartford was related to Stephen^{1} of the Mayflower. I have seen statements that he was the son of Stephen; but as Stephen does not mention him in his will, and Bradford makes no reference to such a son of Stephen, and no one has found any authority which is based upon any fact, I do not think that any faith can be placed in such statements. (Letter of T. H., 28 April 1908.)

Children by first wife:

i. **Constance**,^{2} sometimes written Constanta, b. in England ca. 1605; d. in 1670. (Note to Freeman's Cape Cod states that she d. in 1677.) It seems almost positive that she could not have been under 12 years of age when the *Mayflower* landed in 1620, and she was probably 15. She m. prior to 1628 **Nicholas Snow**, who came in the *Ann* in 1623. Governor Bradford says, probably about 1650, "Constanta is also married and hath 12 children, all of them living, and one of them married". There is no positive record of all of their children, but the following are known.

Children (surname *Snow*):[*]

1. *Mark*, b. in 1628; m. (1) Ann Cock; m. (2) Jane Prince.
2. *Joseph*, m. Mary ———; had children.
3. *Stephen*, ancestor of the late Dr. Caleb Hopkins Snow of Boston, who d. in 1835; m. 28 Oct. 1663 the widow of Joseph^{2} Rogers.
4. *John*, m. ———; had children.
5. *Jabez*, m. ———; had children.
6. *Mary*, b. ca. 1630; d. suddenly 28 April 1704 and was buried in Eastham; m. ca. 1650 Thomas Paine. Children (surname *Paine*): (1) Mary, m. (1) Jos. Rogers; m. (2) Israel Cole. (2) Thomas, m. (1) Bennet Freeman; m. (2) Alice Mayo. (3) Elisha, m. Rebecca Doane. (4) John. (5) Nicholas, m. Hannah Higgins. (6) James, m. Bethia Thatcher. (7) Joseph, m. Patience Sparrow. (8) Dorcas, m. Benjamin Vickery.
7. *Elizabeth*, m. in 1665 Thomas Rogers, b. in 1638.
8. *Sarah*, m. William Walker.
9. *Ruth*, m. John Cole.
10. *Hannah*, m. Giles Rickard.
11. *Rebecca*, m. Samuel Rickard.

2. ii. **Giles**, sometimes written Gyles, b. in England ca. 1607.

Children by second wife:

iii. **Damaris**,[†] b. in England; m. in 1646 **Jacob Cook**, son of Francis Cook of the *Mayflower*.

Children (surname *Cook*):

1. *Elizabeth*, b. in 1648; m. John Doty, probably the son of Edward Doty who came with Stephen Hopkins in the *Mayflower*.
2. *Caleb*, b. in 1651.
3. *Jacob*, b. in 1653.
4. *Mary*, b. in 1658.
5. *Martha*, b. in 1660; m. Elkanah Cushman.
6. *Francis*, b. in 1663; m. Elizabeth Latham.

iv. **Oceanus**, b. on the voyage in 1620; d. in infancy.

v. **Deborah**, b. in Plymouth in 1622; m. in 1646 **Andrew Ring**.

Children (surname *Ring*):

1. *William*, m. Hannah Sherman.
2. *Eleazer*.
3. *Mary*, m. John Morton.
4. *Deborah*.
5. *Susannah* (?).
6. *Elizabeth*, b. in 1652; m. (1) William Mayo (?); m. (2) John Mayo of Eastham.
7. *Samuel*.

vi. **Caleb**, a seaman, b. in Plymouth; d. unm. in the Barbadoes before 1651.

---

[*] See The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. 47, p. 83, and "Landmarks of Plymouth" by Davis, p. 246.

[†] Stephen Hopkins may have had a daughter Damaris, b. in England, d. after 1627 and before 1644.

vii. RUTH, b. in Plymouth; may have d. unm. before 1659.
viii. A DAUGHTER, b. in Plymouth; d. in infancy.
ix. ELIZABETH, b. in Plymouth; d. unm. in 1666.

2. GILES^{2} HOPKINS (*Stephen*^{1}), born in England ca. 1607, died in Eastham, an octogenarian, in 1689 or before 26 April 1690. He married in Yarmouth, 9 Oct. 1639, CATHERINE WHELDEN, died in Eastham after 15 March 1689, daughter of Gabriel Whelden of Yarmouth. See Pope's "Pioneers of Massachusetts", p. 489, for a letter from Catherine Whelden to John Shanvat, dated 1639.

He lived for a time in Plymouth but about 1638 moved to Yarmouth. He was highway surveyor of Yarmouth (Matta-keese), 1642–43, and surveyor of Yarmouth and Eastham (Nauset) until 1662. He was among the first settlers of Eastham 22 May 1655 and in 1655 he was one of the list of freemen of Eastham and one of twenty-nine voters there.

His will, dated 19 Jan. 1682, proved 5 March 1689, mentions his wife Catherine and his sons Stephen, William, Caleb, and Joshua. His son Stephen was made executor.

Of the following children, the first four are believed to have been born in Yarmouth, the remainder in Eastham Their names are on record in Orleans.

Children:

i. MARY,^{3} b. in Yarmouth in November 1640; m. in Hingham, 3 Ja 1664/5, SAMUEL^{3} SMITH, bapt. in Hingham 11 July 1641. He i said to have been a merchant and to have died in Eastham 2 March 1696. (Savage says 22 March 1697, ae. 55 years.)
  Children (surname *Smith*):
  1. *A child*, b. and d. in March 1667.
  2. *Samuel*, b. 26 May 1668; d. 22 Sept. 1692; m. Bathsheb Lathrop.
  3. *Mary*, b. 3 June 1669 (Savage says 1670); m. Daniel Hamilto
  4. *Joseph*, b. 10 April 1671; d. 22 Sept. 1692, ae 21.
  5. *John*, b. 26 May 1673; m. 14 May 1694 Bethia Snow, probabl the granddaughter of Nicholas and Constance (Hopkin Snow.
  6. *Grace*, b. 15 Sept. 1676; d. 1 Dec. 1691, ae. 15.
  7. *Deborah* (?), twin, b. 10 Dec. 1678.
  8. *Rebecca* (?), twin, b. 10 Dec. 1678.

3. ii. STEPHEN, b. in September 1642.
iii. JOHN, b. in 1643; "and died being three months old."
iv. ABIGAIL, b. in October 1644; m. 23 May 1667 WILLIAM MYRICK (o MERRICK), son of William Myrick.
  Children (surname *Myrick*):
  1. *Rebecca*, b. 28 Nov. 1668.
  2. *William*, b. 1 Aug. 1670; d. 20 March 1670/1.
  3. *Stephen*, d. 11 March 1732; m. 21 Nov. 1706 Deborah Sno
    Children: (1) Joshua, b. 17 April 1708. (2) Snow, b. 1 Jan. 1709/10. (3) Deborah, b. 20 Jan. 1712. (4) Samuel, b 5 Jan. 1714/15. (5) Oliver, b. 14 Dec. 1716. (6) Thom b. 12 Dec. 1718; m. Hannah Hopkins; (7) Simeon, b. i April 1721. (8) Jabez, b. in February 1722/3. (9) Jethr b. in August 1725.

v. DEBORAH, b. in June 1648; m. 27 July 1668 JOSIAH^{3} COOK, son of Josiah and Elizabeth (Ring) Cook of Eastham.
  Children (surname *Cook*):
  1. *Elizabeth*, b. 12 Oct. 1669; d. young.
  2. *Josiah*, b. 12 Nov. 1670.
  3. *Richard*, b. 1 Sept. 1672.
  4. *Elizabeth*, b. in June 1674; m. in October 1693 Thomas Newcomb, b. in 1668. Nine children.
  5. *Caleb*, b. 15 Nov. 1676.
  6. *Deborah*, b. 15 Feb. 1679; d. 16 April 1743; m. Moses Godfrey, son of George Godfrey.
  7. *Joshua*, b. 4 Feb. 1682/3.
  8. *Benjamin*, b. 28 Feb. 1686.
  9. *Martha*, perhaps, who m. Joshua Freeman Grozier.

4. vi. CALEB, b. in January 1650/1.
vii. RUTH, b. in June 1653; m. SAMUEL^{3} MAYO, son of Nathaniel^{2} and Hannah (Prince) Mayo.
5. viii. JOSHUA, b. in June 1657.
ix. WILLIAM, b. 9 Jan. 1660/1; d. in 1689.
x. ELIZABETH, b. in November 1664; d. "aged one month".

References:
Descendants of Elisha Cole, 1909, p. 10.
THE NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER, vol. 6, pp. 41–43; vol. 7, p. 270; vol. 26, pp. 190–191.
Munsey-Hopkins Genealogy, 1920, p. 31.
Savage: Genealogical Dictionary, 1860, vol. 1, p. 448; vol. 4, p. 132.
Pope: Pioneers of Massachusetts, 1900, p. 489.
Mayflower Descendant, vol. 1, p. 110.
Josiah Paine: Library of Cape Cod History and Genealogy, #63, 1913.

3. STEPHEN^{3} HOPKINS (*Giles*,^{2} *Stephen*^{1}), born in Yarmouth (?) in September 1642, died in what is now Brewster 10 Oct. 1718, ae. 76 years. He married first, 23 May 1667, MARY MYRICK, born 4 Nov. 1650, died after 1694, the daughter of Ensign William and Rebecca Myrick of Duxbury and Bridgewater. She was 17 years of age at the time of her marriage. After 1694 he removed to Harwich. He married secondly, 9 April 1701, BETHIA (LINNAL) ATKINS, who died 28 March 1726. She was admitted to the church 14 Sept. 1701.

He was a freeman of Eastham in 1683 and was there as late as 1695. He removed to Harwich before 1701. He was one of those chosen by the proprietors to determine the bounds between Harwich and Manomoick, report dated 28 May 1703. He was also chosen to perform services of a kindred nature at other times.

Children by first wife, probably born in Eastham:

i. ELIZABETH,^{4} b. in June 1668.
6. ii. STEPHEN, b. 15 July 1670.
iii. RUTH, b. in November 1674.
7. iv. JUDAH, b. 16 Jan. 1677/8.
8. v. SAMUEL, b. in March 1682.
9. vi. NATHANIEL, b. in March 1684.
10. vii. JOSEPH, b. in 1688.
11. viii. BENJAMIN, b. in February 1690.
ix. MARY, b. 15 April 1692; m. (probably) 5 Nov. 1714 JOHN MAKER.

Reference:
Descendants of Elisha Cole, 1909, p. 11.

Book - "Mayflower Descendants"

STEPHEN HOPKINS OF THE MAYFLOWER.

By the Rev. B. F. De Costa, of New York City.

WITH respect to the earlier history of the Plymouth Pilgrims, it is still to be regretted that our knowledge is limited. Down to 1834 there was much uncertainty even with respect to their English homes. Mather said that Bradford was born in "Ansterfield," and that the congregation came from "the North of England." Prince said that they "lived near the joining borders of Nottinghamshire, Lincolnshire and Yorkshire." It remained, therefore, for Mr. Hunter to show that this congregation of Separatists was at Scrooby, and that "Ansterfield" should be "Austerfield," near Bawtry. The manuscript of Bradford in the Fulham Library threw additional light upon the Pilgrims, yet much of what has been written is deduction from general statements.

Mr. Hunter has pointed out the origin of a number of the Plymouth Pilgrims, who, from poverty and obscurity, rose to lasting renown. Information, nevertheless, comes slowly. Amongst those whose history, prior to 1620, is so obscure, we find Stephen Hopkins, one of the signers of the compact drawn up in the cabin of the Mayflower. To his antecedents, therefore, this brief article is devoted, though we have no new document to produce. Nevertheless, the inquiry may not prove altogether in vain. Strongly marked characters, like that of Stephen Hopkins, are all the more easily identified; and when such a character stamps itself in two places upon the clay of history, the separate impressions must show an unmistakable resemblance. We shall, therefore, endeavor to point out two such impressions, one stamped upon the history of New England, and the other upon the history of Bermuda. For the latter impression let us turn to the "most Dreadfull Tempest," of William Strachey, found in "Purchas His Pilgrimes" (vol. iv. p. 1734, Ed. 1625), from which it may appear that the "roaring breakers" which, according to Bradford, drove the Mayflower to Provincetown harbor, were not the first that had been encountered on the American coast by Stephen Hopkins.

Strachey's well-known narrative tells the story of the wreck of the "Sea Adventure" upon Bermuda, July 28, 1609. Amongst those who safely reached the shore was one Stephen Hopkins, whom we propose to identify with Stephen Hopkins of the Mayflower, though in the narrative of Strachey he appears as a condemned malefactor. This question of course must be treated as one of pure history, and with the simple aim of elucidating the truth.

It will be remembered that, after the wreck of the Sea Adventure, Governor Gates and the Admiral, Sir George Summers, resolved to make the most of the situation, and therefore, after duly organizing the people for work, they proceeded to build two small vessels, in which, May 10, 1611, the colonists sailed for Virginia.

As the work of ship-building proceeded, dissensions grew, and the "vex'd Bermoothes," celebrated (as a new study of the old subject will show) in the Tempest of Shakspeare, continued to be vexed, Stephen Hopkins lending his influence to the party of disorder, seeking thereby to justify the ancient name of the place, known as "the Ile of Divels." One Nicholas Bennit, however, was the first mover in the mutinies. This person, "who made much profession of Scripture," was a "mutinous and dissembling Imposter." With his confederates he retreated like an outlaw to the woods, and when captured they were banished to one of the distant islands of the Bermuda group. The worst of the six men thus banished was John Want, "an *Essex* man of *Newport* by *Saffronwalden*, both seditious and a sectary in points of Religion, in his owne prayers much deuout and frequent, but hardly drawne to the publique, insomuch as being suspected by our Minister for a *Brownist* he was often compelled to the Common Liturgie and forme of Prayer." The banished men, however, soon found that life in the solitary wilderness was not altogether desirable, and having made humble petition for restoration with much "seeming sorrow and repentance," they were pardoned.

The clemency of the Governor only encouraged the spirit of mutiny, and accordingly Stephen Hopkins set on foot another conspiracy. He is described as "A fellow who had much knowledge in the Scriptures, and could reason well therein." Strachey continuing, says that their minister chose him "to be his Clarke, to reade the Psalmes, and Chapters vpon Sondayes, at the assembly of the Congregation vnder him: who in Ianuary the twenty foure, brake with one *Samuel Sharpe* and *Humfrey Reede* (who presently discoured it to the Gouernour) and alleaged substantiall arguments, both ciuil and diuine (the Scripture falsely quoted) that it was no breach of honesty, conscience, nor Religion, to decline from the obedience of the Gouernour, or refuse to goe any further, led by his authority (except it so pleased themselues) since the authority ceased when the wracke was committed, and with it, they were all then freed from the gouernment of any man." Continuing the argument, Hopkins maintained that "for a matter of Conscience, it was not vnknowne to the meanest, how much they were therein bound each one to prouide for himselfe, and his owne family: for which were two

---

page 698 of the same work is a copy of the deposition of Capt. Cowell, at the trial of *Capt. Tom.* "As I was returning," he states, "from Marlborough to Boston, in the contoryes searvice, and had 18 men under my conduct, and about 3 miles from Sudbury wee ware Surprysed with divors hundred of Indians, whereof this Indian *Tom* was one, none by a grombleing sign or noyse y^{t} he made; as in my Judgement was y^{e} cause of our being ffyored vpon; at which tjme fower of my company was killed and one wounded; beside ffive horses were disinabled, [being] shot. Vpon Capt. Wadsworth's ingadgen with [y^{e}) Indians, I wentt backe and buryed y^{e} ffower men which ware killed, whereof was *Thomas* [*Har*] and *Hopkinses* son of Roxbury, Goodman, a son of *Robert Wayles* of Dorchister." "Sworn in Court, 19 June, 1676."

apparant reasons to stay them euen in this place; first, abundance of Gods prouidence of all manner of goode foode: next, some hope in reasonable time, when they might grow weary of the place, to build a small Barke, with the skill and help of the aforesaid *Nicholas Bennit*, whom they insinuated to them * * to be of the conspiracy, that so might get cleere from hence at their own pleasures." Again it was asserted, that "when in *Virginia*, the first would be assuredly wanting, and they might well feare to be detained in that Countrie by the authority of the Commander thereof, and their whole life to serue the turnes of the Adventurers with their travailes and labors." This conspiracy neuertheless soon came to an end. Strachey writes: "This being thus laid, and by such a one, who had gotten an opinion (as I before remembered) of Religion; when it was declared by those two accusers, not knowing what further ground it had or accomplices, it pleased the Gouernour to let this factious offence to haue a publiqe affront, and contestation by these two witnesses before the whole Company, who at the tolling of a bell assembled before a Corps du guard, where the Prisoner was brought forth in manacles, and both accused, and suffered to make at large, to euery particular, his answere: which was only full of sorrow and teares, pleading simplicity and deniall. But hee being onely found, at this time, both the Captaine and the follower of this Mutinie, and generally held worthy to satisfie the punishment of his offence, with the sacrifice of his life, our Gouernour passed the sentence of a Martiall Court vpon him, such as belongs to Mutinie and Rebellion."

Under the circumstances, like many other really courageous men who have failed at the first trial, but have gone serenely to martyrdom at a later period, Stephen Hopkins broke down; hence, "so penitent hee was, and made so much moane, alleadging the ruine of his Wife and Children in this his trespasse, as it wrought in the hearts of all the better sort of the Company, who therefore with humble entreaties, and earnest supplications, went vnto our Gouernor, whom they besought (as likewise did Captaine *Newport*, and my selfe) and neuer left him vntil we had got his pardon."

Such was the conspiracy and its end; for there is no reason to infer that he had any part in the plot which followed, whose authors proposed to take the life of the governor and others, and who declared that if they failed they "should happily suffer as Martyrs."

A careful examination of Strachey's narrative shows that theological differences united with the desire to live at ease free from authority to lay the foundations of dissension. It is tolerably clear that Stephen Hopkins was in sympathy with those suspected of being Brownists, and that as the minister's "Clarke" he felt more or less in bondage. Hopkins appears to have gone on quietly with the company to Virginia.

It is now, therefore, time to inquire what reasons exist for identifying Stephen Hopkins of the "Sea Adventure" with Stephen Hopkins of the "Mayflower." In the first place, it should be observed that the name of Hopkins does not appear in any of the lists of the colonists, and is never mentioned in connection with Virginia, which could not well have been the case with so marked a man if he had remained. Moreover, since we have seen that it was his desire to return to England, and since after their experience of the man, the authorities themselves would not be averse to parting with him, it is reasonable to suppose that he went back in one of the first ships, and thus passed out of the history of Virginia.

That he afterwards became a factor in Massachusetts colonization appears to be probable, and for the reason already indicated, that Hopkins of the "Sea Adventure" and Hopkins of the "Mayflower" answer to a common description. As preliminary it may be observed, that Bradford, speaking of the Plymouth Pilgrims, refers to "y^e discontented & mutinous speeches that some of the strangers amongst them had let fall from them in y^e ship—That when they came a shore they would use their own libertie; for *none had power to comand them*, the patente they had being for Virginia, and not for Newengland, which belonged to an other government, with which y^e Virginia Company had nothing to doe. And partly that shuch an acte by them done (this their condition considered) might be as firme as any patent, and in some respects more sure." That Stephen Hopkins was one of the "strangers" will appear further on, while Strachey reports him in Bermuda as saying "that it was no breach of honesty, conscience, nor Religion, to decline from the obedience of the Gouernour, or refuse to goe any further, led by his authority (except it so pleased themselues) since the authority ceased when the wracke was committed, and with it, they *were all then freed from the gouerment of any man*."

But a stronger resemblance is found in the fact that both were Londoners. The Sea Adventure sailed from London, while Mourt's Relation says that "Steeven Hopkins" was one of a certain "three of London." He was one of those who engaged for the enterprise with Mr. Cushman, who managed the details in that city.

Again, Hopkins of Bermuda and Hopkins of Plymouth were both men of mark. Strachey, notwithstanding his prejudice, clearly shows that he was a man of parts. His appointment as "Clarke" indicates that he was of consequence. The same character is revealed in the Relation of Mourt; and when Miles Standish made his first expedition from the Mayflower, then lying at anchor in Provincetown harbor, Hopkins was appointed with Bradford and Tilley to attend the party to give "counsel and advice."

It need hardly be added here that both were extremely religious, and that both made much of "conscience." It was this which won for Stephen Hopkins at Bermuda the good opinion of the colonists, and made him dangerous. Strachey does not say that he was a Brownist, though he evidently sympathized more or less with them. Neither were the Plymouth colonists Brownists. The fourth of the Seven Articles of the Leyden congregation declares that the King has power to appoint bishops, while the sixth says that no ecclesiastical officers have any power unless given by the King. The "Articles" do not mention the liturgy, but the spirit in which they are drawn up is certainly tolerant as respects the appointments of the church. Still, whatever may have been the opinions of Stephen Hopkins of the Sea Adventurer at Bermuda, attendance at "publique Prayer" was imperative, the roll being called there morning and evening, and "such as were wanting, were duly punished." The position of Hopkins at Bermuda as "Clarke" is, therefore, perfectly consistent with that held by Hopkins at Plymouth, and the resemblance admits of the belief that the two men were the same. Besides, the gentle and tolerant character of the Plymouth people is well understood, while the church element was so strong, that, on Christmas Day, 1621, the majority declared that "it went against their consciences to work on y^{t} day."

In connection with the question of theological character, the parallel as respects Scripture knowledge is evident. The Bermuda adventurer, it will be remembered, "had much knowledge in the Scriptures, and could reason well therein," while a man holding the position occupied by Hopkins in the Plymouth Colony must have been so well furnished as to render any formal statement of the fact by Mourt quite superfluous. According to Bradford, he was one of those who, though sorely off at Clark's Island on that memorable second Sunday in December, 1620, when all things were against them, and they were tempted to give the day to secular activity, nevertheless made a conscience of keeping "y^{e} Sabath." Hopkins of the Sea Adventure and Hopkins of the Mayflower were both very "pushing," and adventurous men. There was also something akin to temerity in both, if we may judge Hopkins of Plymouth by the retainer he kept; for Doty and Leister fought the first duel on record at Plymouth, and escaped on "their master's humble request." Hopkins of Bermuda and he of Plymouth, therefore, knew the importance of humility in adversity. All these circumstances, therefore, seem to point to the conclusion that Hopkins of the Mayflower is Hopkins of Bermuda in a new *rôle*. It is indeed nowhere said that the Mayflower Pilgrim had been in the country before, but the figure presented by the Bermuda adventurer in 1610 was not one that he would be likely to feel proud of, and he would be inclined to say as little about his former experience as possible; yet, according to Mourt, it appears as though he was recognized by the Plymouth colonists as an authority; for when the exploring party with which he was connected at Cape Cod found a limb of a tree bent curiously by the Indians over a bow, Hopkins explained its use, Mourt making the entry, "Stephen Hopkins sayed,

it had beene to catch some Deere;" while Strachey indicates the fact that the Sea Adventure's company at Bermuda had once considered the question of trapping deer. Hopkins had evidently seen deer traps before, and if so it must have been in Virginia in 1610.

We have yet to mention another significant fact, for it appears that Hopkins at Bermuda in 1610 had a wife and children, while Hopkins of the Mayflower, 1620, was married a second time. He brought with him in the Mayflower children by his first wife. The facts exactly fit one another, and seem to demonstrate that Strachey and Morton were writing about the same individual. This indeed is not an actual demonstration, yet it may be deemed satisfactory. At least we rest the case here for the present, simply observing that, while the judgment of Hopkins may have been at fault, there is after all no real charge to be brought against his moral character. This is rather a question of personal identity.

Mayflower Descendants (same as NEHGR vol 102 (1948))

STEPHEN HOPKINS OF THE MAYFLOWER*

AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS

Compiled by TIMOTHY HOPKINS of San Francisco
Prepared for Publication by MARGARET GRIFFITH

California Genealogical Society

1. STEPHEN^1 HOPKINS, born in England in 15—, died in Plymouth, Mass., between 16 June and 27 July 1644. He married first ———, who died in England; and secondly, in February 1617, ELIZABETH FISHER. This second marriage may have taken place in the parish of St. Mary's, Whitechapel, London, England, but this is not probable. It is known that he was married the second time in England and that his second wife came to Plymouth with him and died there before her husband. (THE NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL ** AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER, vol. 33, p. 300, asserts that he came to America on a former expedition.) Governor Bradford says, "They lived about 20 yrs. in this place".

An extended account of Stephen^1 and some account of the descendants of his grandson Joshua, written by Josiah Paine of Harwich, Massachusetts, was published in 1913 as #63 of the Library of Cape Cod History and Genealogy. "The Doty-Doten Family in America", by Ethan Allen Doty, 1897, p. 8, states that Stephen Hopkins was a tanner or leather maker.

Stephen Hopkins came over in the *Mayflower* with his wife Elizabeth and one child by her and two children by his first wife. He was a prominent man in the colony, and the details of his service are published in many places.

Captain Miles Standish and Mr. William Bradford deposed to his will 20 Aug. 1644, and his son Caleb was made executor. This and a full history of his records will be found in the booklet of Mr. James W. Hawes published by the *Yarmouth Register* in 1915 and in a similar booklet by Josiah Paine of Harwich.

His will was dated 6 June 1644 and proved 20 Aug. 1644. In it he mentions his deceased wife Elizabeth; his sons Giles and Caleb; his daughters Constance Snow, Deborah, Damaris, Ruth, and Elizabeth; and his grandson Stephen, son of Giles. His son Caleb was named executor. A copy of the will may be found in THE NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER, vol. 4, p. 281.

---

*I have no reason to believe that John^1 Hopkins of Hartford was related to Stephen^1 of the Mayflower. I have seen statements that he was the son of Stephen; but as Stephen does not mention him in his will, and Bradford makes no reference to such a son of Stephen, and no one has found any authority which is based upon any fact, I do not think that any faith ~~can~~ be placed in such statements. (Letter of T. H., 28 April 1908.)

**Page 264, this volume.

Children by first wife:

i. CONSTANCE,^{2} sometimes written Constanta, b. in England ca. 1605; d. in 1670. (Note to Freeman's Cape Cod states that she d. in 1677.) It seems almost positive that she could not have been under 12 years of age when the *Mayflower* landed in 1620, and she was probably 15. She m. prior to 1628 NICHOLAS SNOW, who came in the *Ann* in 1623. Governor Bradford says, probably about 1650, "Constanta is also married and hath 12 children, all of them living, and one of them married". There is no positive record of all of their children, but the following are known.

Children (surname *Snow*):*

1. *Mark*, b. in 1628; m. (1) Ann Cock; m. (2) Jane Prince.
2. *Joseph*, m. Mary ———; had children.
3. *Stephen*, ancestor of the late Dr. Caleb Hopkins Snow of Boston, who d. in 1835; m. 28 Oct. 1663 the widow of Joseph^2 Rogers.
4. *John*, m. ———; had children.
5. *Jabez*, m. ———; had children.
6. *Mary*, b. ca. 1630; d. suddenly 28 April 1704 and was buried in Eastham; m. ca. 1650 Thomas Paine. Children (surname *Paine*): (1) Mary, m. (1) Jos. Rogers; m. (2) Israel Cole. (2) Thomas, m. (1) Bennet Freeman; m. (2) Alice Mayo. (3) Elisha, m. Rebecca Doane. (4) John. (5) Nicholas, m. Hannah Higgins. (6) James, m. Bethia Thatcher. (7) Joseph, m. Patience Sparrow. (8) Dorcas, m. Benjamin Vickery.
7. *Elizabeth*, m. in 1665 Thomas Rogers, b. in 1638.
8. *Sarah*, m. William Walker.
9. *Ruth*, m. John Cole.
10. *Hannah*, m. Giles Rickard.
11. *Rebecca*, m. Samuel Rickard.

2. ii. GILES, sometimes written Gyles, b. in England ca. 1607.

Children by second wife:

iii. DAMARIS,† b. in England; m. in 1646 JACOB COOK, son of Francis Cook of the *Mayflower*.

Children (surname *Cook*):

1. *Elizabeth*, b. in 1648; m. John Doty, probably the son of Edward Doty who came with Stephen Hopkins in the *Mayflower*.
2. *Caleb*, b. in 1651.
3. *Jacob*, b. in 1653.
4. *Mary*, b. in 1658.
5. *Martha*, b. in 1660; m. Elkanah Cushman.
6. *Francis*, b. in 1663; m. Elizabeth Latham.

iv. OCEANUS, b. on the voyage in 1620; d. in infancy.

v. DEBORAH, b. in Plymouth in 1622; m. in 1646 ANDREW RING.

Children (surname *Ring*):

1. *William*, m. Hannah Sherman.
2. *Eleazer*.
3. *Mary*, m. John Morton.
4. *Deborah*.
5. *Susannah* (?).
6. *Elizabeth*, b. in 1652; m. (1) William Mayo (?); m. (2) John Mayo of Eastham.
7. *Samuel*.

vi. CALEB, a seaman, b. in Plymouth; d. unm. in the Barbadoes before 1651.

---

*See THE NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER, vol. 47, p. 83, and "Landmarks of Plymouth" by Davis, p. 246.

†Stephen Hopkins may have had a daughter Damaris, b. in England, d. after 1627 and before 1644.

Genealogical Dictionary of The First Settlers of New England - James Savage vol II 3(of 4)

Feb. 1698; Hannah, 25 Mar. 1700; and Phebe, 11 Mar. 1702. RICHARD, Watertown, was punish. 4 Sept. 1632, for sale to an Ind. of milit. stores. RICHARD, a soldier, Dec. 1675, in Moseley's comp. SAMUEL, Milford 1658, at New Haven, m. 5 Dec. 1667, Hannah, d. of capt. Nathaniel Turner, had Wait; Samuel, b. 30 Aug. foll.; and Hannah, 2 May 1670; rem. soon after from the Col. ‡ STEPHEN, Plymouth, came ✓ in the Mayflower, 1620, with w. Eliz. s. Giles, and d. Constance, both by former w. and by this had Damaris, as also a s. b. on the voyage, call. therefore, Oceanus, but he d. within a yr. He also brot. serv. Edward Dotey, and Edward Leister, the duellists. Deborah was b. prob. in 1622, bef. the div. of ld. Other ch. also, they had, Caleb, Ruth, and ano. d. wh. d. bef. her f. beside Eliz. His w. liv. at P. above 20 yrs.; and he d. 1644, had been an Assist. 1633–6. Constance had m. Nicholas [illegible] Snow, bef. the div. of cattle 1627, and she d. 1676; Deborah m. 1646, Andrew Ring; Damaris m. 1646, Jacob Cooke; and Eliz. d. 1666, unm. Abstr. of his will is in Geneal. Reg. IV. 281. STEPHEN, Hartford, only s. of John, freem. 1657, m. Dorcas, d. of John Bronson, and d. Oct. 1689, in his will ment. six ch. John, Stephen, Ebenezer, Joseph, Dorcas, w. of Jonathan Webster, and Mary, wh. m. Samuel Sedgwick. His wid. d. 13 May 1697. The s. John had eight ch. of wh. one was Samuel, Y. C. 1718, min. of West Springfield; and ano. Timothy was f. of Samuel, Y. C. 1741, of Newport, the Rev. amiab. and ingenious elaborater of the theolog. syst. that bears his name. See Eliot's Biog. Dict. STEPHEN, Eastham, s. of Giles, m. 23 May 1667, Mary, d. of William Merrick, grandson had Eliz. b. the last wk. of June 1668; Stephen, 15 July 1670; Ruth, Nov. 1674; Judah, Jan. 1678; Samuel, Mar. 1682; Nathaniel, 1684; Joseph, 1688; Benjamin, Feb. 1690; and Mary, 15 Apr. 1692. He d. 10 Oct. 1718, hav. m. 1701, 2d w. Bethia Atkins, wh. d. 25 Mar. 1726. All the s. m. and had fams. of wh. I would glad. offer details, were they in my power. * THOMAS, Providence 1641, had foll. Roger Williams in 1636 from Plymouth, m. Eliz. d. of William Arnold the first, had William, and Thomas; sw. alleg. to Charles II. in June 1668, as did Tho. jr. in May 1671; was rep. some yrs. and progenit. of Stephen, the Gov. See 3 Mass. Hist. Coll. I. 4. I suppose he had Joseph, and perhaps other childr. certain. William; and d. 1699. THOMAS, Providence, s. of the first Thomas, m. (or at least was publish.) 1 Apr. 1678, to Mary Smith, yet whose d. she was may not be kn. ‡ WILLIAM, Stratford 1640, an Assist. 1641 and 2, but it is unkn. whence he came, when he d. or what w. or ch. he had. Perhaps it was his d. Mary, wh. after his d. in virtue of a contr. of m. made by her mo. Mary, w. of Richard Whitehead, of Windsor (wh. was liv. 1670), with William Lewis of Farmington, 1644, bec. w. of William Lewis, s. of the bargainer. If so, we might infer, that our Conn. magistr. was then d. and his wid. wh.

m. Richard W. was nam. Mary, but no other deduction of value could be drawn. WILLIAM, Roxbury, had William, Thomas, and Hannah bapt. at once, 6 May 1660; and Mary, 30 Mar. 1662; but the town rec. gives none of the bs. exc. Hannah, 3 Jan. 1657; and ment. d. of s. Ebenezer in 1674; and therefore we may suppose he was a worshipper, not inhab. at R. The s. Thomas in Wadsworth's comp. was k. by the Ind. 21 Apr. 1676, and William was a soldier in 1676, at Northampton, under capt. Turner, k. by the Ind. that yr.; and the f. d. says Farmer, 28 Apr. but my copy of town rec. says 5 Nov. 1688. He is then call. sen. His w. Hannah had d. and d. Mary in 1678. WILLIAM, Providence, sw. alleg. in May 1668 (one mo. bef. his f. Thomas), m. Abigail, d. of John Whipple, had William (wh. by w. Ruth, d. of Samuel and Plain Wilkinson was f. of the venerab. Stephen, Gov. of the State, and immortal signer of the Declarat. of Independ. as also of Esek a disting. naval officer, in support of the same cause); there liv. thro. that war, and was reward. for his constancy. Twenty-nine of this name had been gr. in 1834 at the various N. E. coll. but not one at Harv.

HOPKINSON, CALEB, Bradford, perhaps s. of Michael, m. 25 Nov. 1679, Sarah Wallingford. MICHAEL, Boston 1638, was in the employm. of Jacob Eliot, says the rec. of the ch. when adm. 6 Jan. 1639, on 24 Nov. foll. was dism. for the gathering of ch. at Rowley, where he liv. freem. 13 May 1640, d. 1648, hav. I conject. m. a d. of Richard Swan the first of R. and had Caleb, and John, nam. in the will of Swan, 1678. Farmer thot. that John, wh. d. 29 May 1704, and Jonathan, wh. d. 11 Feb. 1719, aged 76, at R. were his s. and perhaps he had s. MICHAEL, for one of the name, at a later day, m. Sarah, d. of Thomas Coleman of Newbury.

HOPPER, DANIEL, New Haven, adm. freem. 22 May 1654. Possib. the name should be Hooper.

HOPPIN, STEPHEN, Dorchester 1653, liv. on Thompson's isl. m. Hannah, eldest d. of Thomas Makepeace, had in 1666, when only 42 yrs. old, Deliverance, John, Stephen, Hannah, Sarah, Thomas, Opportunity, Joseph, and Benjamin, all nam. then in the will of their gr.f. Some yrs. he was of Roxbury, for the rec. of that town has Thomas, b. 21 Mar. 1655; and Opportunity, 15 Nov. 1657, wh. m. 17 Jan. 1679, Thomas Lunt of Newbury. The name in Geneal. Reg. XI. 330, is pervert. to Hoppie.

HOPSON, see Hobson. JOHN, Guilford 1664, b. it is said 1610, wh. I doubt, emb. 1635 at London in the Globe, was constable 1666, by w. Sarah had John, b. 16 Mar. 1666; and Francis, wh. d. young. His w. d. 9 Sept. 1669; and he at Saybrook m. 3 or 9 Dec. 1672, Eliz. d. of Edward Shipman, had Eliz. b. 22 June 1674; Abigail, 17 Dec. 1677, d.

~~Hopewell, Thomas, Fairfield 1670.~~

Hopkins, Caleb, Plymouth, s. perhaps youngest, of Stephen the first, but old eno. to bear arms 1643, d. at Barbados, prob. unm. yet call. Son "heir apparent," and made excor. in the will of his f. of 6 June 1644; wh. makes more remarka. the fact of Giles being elder s. as relat. by Gov. Bradford, and raises a doubt, whether the f. had not been overruled to injust. by his sec. w. Caleb, Eastham, s. of Giles of the same, had Caleb, Nathaniel, Thomas, and Thankful, but by what w. or whether grandson bef. or after his rem. to Truro is not told. He d. 1728. § ‡ Edward, Hartford, came to Boston 1637, with Rev. John Davenport, and Gov. Theophilus Eaton (the d. of whose sec. w. Yale, was w. of H.), and went to Hartford perhaps the same yr. was chos. Assist. in 1639, and Gov. next yr. and thereafter in alternate yrs. with John Haynes until he went home in 1652, and even in his absence, thro. hope of his coming back, he was again chos. in 1654. He had been, bef. coming hither, "a Turkey merch. in London," says Hutch. I. 82, "of good credit and esteem," yet, tho. a thoro. puritan, he was not a mem. of the Mass. Comp. in London. But his intimate friend Eaton was one of the most active. After reach. home, he was soon made a mem. of Oliver's Parliam. and a commiss. of the Navy, made his will 17 Mar. 1657, and d. soon, in 58th yr. near ten mos. bef. Gov. Eaton, and within two or three days of his friend, Col. Fenwick. His wid. Ann, d. of David, or Thomas, Yale, after insanity of over 50 yrs. d. 17 Dec. 1698. The liberal bequest in fav. of Harv. Coll. did not come to be enjoy. for near fifty-seven yrs. See large extr. from his will in a note to Winth. Hist. I. 228-30. Prob. she had no ch. Giles, Plymouth, eldest s. of Stephen, came with his f. and mo. in the Mayflower; rem. to Yarmouth, m. Oct. 1639, Catharine (on rec. spell. as pronounc. Catorne) Wheldon, had Mary, b. 1640; Stephen, Sept. 1642, wh. was of Eastham, and in infan. was nam. Son in the will of his gr.f.; John, b. and d. 1643; Abigail, Oct. 1644, m. 23 May 1667, William Merrick; Deborah, June 1648; Caleb, Jan. 1651; Ruth, June 1653; Joshua, June 1657; William, 9 Jan. 1661, wh. was infirm in mind; and Eliz. Nov. 1664, d. soon; and he d. a. 1690. The last six ch. were b. prob. at Eastham. John, Cambridge 1634, freem. 4 Mar. 1635, rem. to Hartford, was there an orig. propr. the yr. bef. Gov. Edward, to wh. we kn. not if he were related, d. 1654, leav. wid. Jane, and ch. Stephen, b. a. 1634; and Bethia, a. 1635, as Goodwin presumes. The wid. m. Nathaniel Ward of Hadley. Bethia m. 27 May 1652, Samuel Stocking of Middletown; and next, James Steele of Hartford. Joshua, Eastham, s. of Giles, m. 26 May 1681, Mary, d. of Daniel Cole, grandson had John, b. 16 Apr. 1683, d. at 16 yrs.; Abigail, 9 Mar. 1686; Elisha, 17 Dec. 1688; Lydia, 1 Apr. 1692; Mary, 20 Jan. 1695; Joshua, 20

Leon C. Hill – "Mayflower Planters"
GPC – 1936, '41 reprint 1975

HOPKINS

1. **Hopkins, Stephen,**[1] born England about 1580, possibly bp October 29, 1581, in Wortley, parish of Wotten-under-Edge, Gloucestershire; died between June 6, 1644 and July 17, 1644; the name of his first wife is unknown; married the second time Elizabeth **Fisher,** February 19, 1617/8, as recorded in St. Mary's Church, Whitechapel, London, England. She came over with her husband on the Mayflower, and died at Plymouth, Mass., before 1640.

Stephen Hopkins was a many-sided character. He and Miles Standish had a number of points in common, and were close friends. In fact, Standish was executor of Stephen Hopkins' will. They had both been something of adventurers before making the voyage in the Mayflower.

One historian describes him as follows:

> ''Stephen Hopkins was a man of weight in the Colony. Like many another man he had faults and virtues. He was intelligent, robust, enterprising, practical, quick to see the point, and fertile in expedients, but he was a bit touchy and not at all averse to a setto with anybody who crossed his path.''
>
> The Pilgrims, Nobles, 1907, p. 181.

The history of his family in England is not determined, but there can be no doubt of its respectable standing. It is known he resided in London for some time, and was probably a merchant with some means, and a staunch ''Separatist'', which kept him on the defensive with the authorities.

Some writers claim that he was a great-grandson of Stephen Hopkins, Fellow and Professor in Kings College 1532, and Rector of Norfolk, Eng., 1551, and that his parents were Nicholas Hopkins and Mary Poole, sister of Sir Giles Poole.

The church register of St. Marys, Matfellon (Whitechapel), records the marriage of Stephen Hopkins to Elizabeth Fisher, February 19, 1617/8. This places him in the parish on the high road entering London at Aldgate, near which Bradford, Carver, Cushman and Southworth lived, in or near Heneage House, Aldgate ward.

It appears he was a born fighter, leader and of an extremely adventurous disposition.

The Mayflower voyage was not the first exploit of Stephen. As a matter of fact, when that trip was made in 1620, he was an experienced traveler, and could be useful in many directions, especially in the founding and settlement of new lands, where hardship and danger prevailed. He was well known to the Merchant Adventurers and Thomas Weston of London. They probably felt he was a good type of person for the colony, and encouraged hi[illegible] make the voyage.

On previous occasions Stephen had visited the Virginia Colony. In one instance, on May 15, 1609, the ship ''Sea Adventure'' set sail from London bound for the Virginia shores. Perhaps the name appealed to Stephen for he is on board. It was intended to make Virginia by way of the Bermuda Islands. After many days of peaceful sailing a severe storm wrecked the good ship Sea Adventure on the treacherous coast of Bermuda. Stephen immediately made himself useful.

Among other duties he was chosen to read the Psalms on Sunday, for it is recorded that he ''had much knowledge of the Scripture and could reason well therein''.

After some time on the Islands a certain portion of the party became restless. They desired to continue the voyage in some manner. A meeting was held of those who were not content to lead a peaceful life among the beautiful Bermudas, where the days come and go under a lazy semi-tropical sky, and no hope of anything happening.

The restless souls had a meeting, but it was marked with discord. Stephen Hopkins was a ringleader and outspoken in his opinion.

Sir George Summers, leader of the expedition, could not overlook the matter. He ordered the arrest of the leaders, and Stephen, together with his associates, was tried and found guilty of rebellion.

At last something had happened. Stephen found himself face to face with possible execution for insubordination.

Apparently the predicament did not discourage him, for he is soon petitioning for a pardon. It is recorded that—

> ''so penitent hee was and made soe much moane alledging the ruine of his wife and children''

that upon the plea of the rest of the party, the Governor pardoned him.

Following this exciting experience, a bark was fitted up and the company continued the voyage to Virginia.

After spending some time in the colonies Stephen returned to England, where he seemed to prosper. Probably while a small merchant in London, he became closely affiliated with the ''Merchant Adventurers'', that famous group of English business men who were actively engaged in promoting the settlement of the Virginia Colonies, and most of whom were ''Separatists'', or, at least, in sympathy with that movement.

Just when or how Stephen became attached to the contemplated Mayflower voyage of 1620 is not clear. No doubt it was due in part to the influence of Mr. Thomas Weston, manager for the ''Merchant Adventurers'', who were to finance the Mayflower expedition, and, naturally, were seeking substantial ''Planters'' for the colony.

Evidently the appeal was strong enough to convince Stephen, for bright and early on embarkation day he appeared at the wharves to board the Mayflower.

His party was the largest, and brought much baggage. Bradford in 1646 enumerates it as follows:

> "Mr. Steven Hopkins & Elizabeth his wife, and .2. children, caled Giles, and Constanta a daughter, both by a former wife. And .2. more by this wife, caled Damaris & Oceanus, the last was borne at sea. And .2. servants called Edward Doty and Edward Litster."

The embarkation of this family group must have been a lively event, and probably taxed the "touchy" temper of Stephen to the limit. Getting all parties and baggage aboard a ship in those days was a testy job, especially when the party included women and children.

No doubt, the two "servants" (Ed. Doty and Ed. Litster, boys working way over) were of some help in the matter. These two "servants", by the way, were continually quarrelling with each other, perhaps over division of duties, and soon after landing at New Plymouth fought a duel, drawing blood. It had the distinction of being the first recorded duel in the colonies. Just what part, if any, Stephen had in starting the fight is not clear. However, the records show that Stephen appeared in court at Plymouth and pleaded for the young men.

The Pilgrims were supposed to have been a peaceful group, averse to fighting. However, the record appears to show that they were quite free with fists and other weapons on occasion. This, of course, could not be otherwise, as the venture had no appeal for weaklings.

We are not informed in detail how Stephen managed to get his family and belongings, consisting of an ill wife, baby Damaris, 2 years old (there was another youngster, Oceanus, born on the Mayflower), his thirteen-year-old son Giles, and daughter Constanta, aged fifteen years, deposited in the little row-boat at the wharf, and safely transported to the Mayflower, which was lazily riding at anchor, probably off "Blackhall" or "Wapping" near London, in the Thames, on that momentous mid-July day of the year 1620.

There were eight persons in Stephen Hopkins' party, including the two "servants".

Very likely Giles and Constance, two strong, healthy children, were of great aid to the parents in getting everything snugly on board. All members of this particular party were healthy enough to survive the "first sickness" in New Plymouth, which was an exceptional record, indeed.

To the children of the Mayflower, the confusion of embarking was exciting, with wide-eyed interest they watched the preparations for departure. Neither the children nor their elders realized at the time the historical significance of the event, or the great part they were to play in the drama of founding and building a nation.

With everybody aboard, the Mayflower, on Saturday, July 15, 1620 (O.S.), weighed anchor and dropped down with the tide to Gravesend. Owing to numerous delays at Southampton and other English ports, the ship did not leave Plymouth, England, for the New World until September 6, 1620 (O.S.), and after sixty-five days out sighted Cape Cod.

During the voyage Stephen became a great favorite of the children. He had many stories of adventure, which he was fond of telling and even the older persons were greatly interested in practical instruction which he gave in the art of building houses. He illustrated the constructions on the deck of the Mayflower by means of a series of sticks having suitable notches in them. With these sticks he made different types of "log-house" designs.

During the various landing "explorations" around Cape Cod, Stephen was much in evidence. His name and duties are frequently mentioned.

He became one of the "wealthiest" Planters of New Plymouth, and, in addition to much land, many cattle, and other possessions, he appears to have run a general store or "tavern".

For many years he was a member of the Governor's Council, but did not seek a high public office.

He built the first wharf in New Plymouth and was financially interested in shipping.

His services were called upon quite frequently in dealings with the Indians. He seemed to understand their ways and language, and had no fear of them. At one time it became essential for the colony to negotiate with Massasoit. Stephen, with an Indian named Squanto as a guide, was sent through the forest to see him. No timid man would have undertaken that job.

As previously stated Stephen made himself useful during the voyage, and in various contacts of a diplomatic nature with the Indians. He was a member of exploring parties, especially the Third Expedition which started out on Wednesday, December 16, 1620 (N.S.), to locate the place for settlement. "Mourt's Relation" 1622, states:

> "So ten of our men were appointed who were of themselves willing to undertake it, to wit, Captaine Standish, Master Carver, William Bradford, Edward Winsloe, John Tilley, Edward Tilley, John Howland, and three of London, Richard Warren, Steeven Hopkins, and Edward Dotte."

Not only was Stephen in the Third Expedition, but he was an important member of the First Expedition, in which, from past experience, he identified a small tree bent over and attached to boughs and grasses woven together and covering a deep pit, as a trap used by Indians to catch deer.

When Samoset came to Plymouth to welcome the Pilgrims he was lodged over night at Stephen's house. Apparently he could understand him.

When the messenger of Canonicus brought the snake skin full of arrows to Plymouth, Standish and Hopkins had charge of him, Stephen acting as interpreter, which was his usual job.

The high position held by Hopkins in the little community, especially in "trade", and the rules governing that important occupation is shown in the following court orders, where there are appointed:

> "at the general court held at New Plymouth the 3d of January 1636 in the xijth years of the Raigne of or sovaigne Lord Charles by the grace of God, of England, etc, King defendor of the faith etc before Edward Winslowe gent. Gounour, Wm Bradford, Thomas Prynce, John Alden, Steeven Hopkins, Wm Collier, Tymothy Hatherly, and John Brown Gentle. assistants"
>
> "It is ordered by the court that Mr Collyer, Mr Hopkins, Mr Brown, Mr Done, John Jenny, Jonathan Brewster, John Winslow, Thomas Willet shall treat with those that have the trade in their hands & to prpare such conclusions concerning the same, that the Court being made acquainted therewith and approveing thereof may conclud the same with them."

Some historians have stated that Weston selected Hopkins to accompany the Mayflower Planters because of his previous experience in Virginia.

That Stephen had a fiery temper is amply borne out by the records of Plymouth. They also disclose him to be a man of wealth for that day, owning much land, many cattle, and employing considerable help, which were noted as "servants", but more aptly were plain "hired men".

He apparently maintained also a general store or tavern, and was a merchant to the colonists in some degree. His cattle and lands after a time spread into what is now Kingston and Yarmouth.

Some court orders are illuminating:

> *June 7, 1636*—"John Tisdale, yeoman, entreth an accon. of battery against Steven Hopkins, assistant to the Govrn't by whom the said John was dangerously wounded, as he affirmeth."
>
> "An accon. of battery was tried between John Tisdale, yeoman, plaintiff, & Stephen Hopkins, assistant to the goverment deft. Wherein the deft Stephen Hopkins, was cast in five pownds starling to our Sov. lord the King, whose pease he had broken, wch he ought after a special manner to have kept, and also in forty shillings to the plaintiffe, both wch he was adjudged to pay."
>
> *October 6, 1637*—"Mr Steephen Hopkins psented for suffering servants and others to sit drinking in his house (contrary to the orders of the court), and to play at Shovell boa[illegible] & such like misdemeanors is therefore fined fourty shillings."
>
> *January 2, 1637/8*—"William Renolds is psented for being drunck at Mr Hopkin's his house."
>
> "Mr Hopkins is prsented for sufferinge excessive drinking in his house."

In this instance he was acquitted, but it clearly discloses the problem of strong drink is very old, and still unsolved in the year 1936.

That Stephen sold liquor with an eye to profit seems clear from the following court order. In those days the "general store" sold rum of various types, and almost everybody used or drank a fermented beverage of some kind. For the most part it was home brew, and very mild.

> *June 5, 1638*—"Mr Steephen Hopkins is prsented for selling beere for ijd the quart, not worth jd a quart." He was fined "for selling beere at such excessive rates to the oppressing & impoushing of the Colony."

From this it would seem that Stephen catered to quite a large portion of the Colony.

However, Hopkins sold other things besides rum, and here again he exhibited his "genius" for trying to make a profit. Apparently, Stephen lost the good will of the court, and perhaps his neighbors, whenever he sold anything for much more than he paid for it.

No doubt, he developed the idea of buying at "wholesale," so that he could hide some of his profits. However, even that was not a sure solution, for we have the following court order:

> *October 7, 1639*—"Mr Stephen Hopkins, upon his presentment for selling a looking glasse for 16d the like whereof was bought in the Bay for ixd (9d) is referred to further information."

Apparently, Mr. Hopkins sold the article for about twice what he paid for it. His "misdemeanor" occurred 300 years ago, but the lesson of the "presentment" seemingly has been lost, for modern merchants are still doing the same thing whenever they can get away with it.

After a busy and useful life in New Plymouth of about twenty-five years, Mr. Hopkins died, probably in June, 1644, leaving a large estate, and a very interesting will, as follows:

Will of Stephen Hopkins

Stephen Hopkins died at New Plymouth in 1644, between June 6, the day his will was made, and July 17, the day his inventory was taken.

The will and inventory are recorded in the Plymouth Colony Wills and Inventories, Vol. I, folios 61, 62 and 63.

[61] The last Will and Testament of Mr Stephen Hopkins exhibited upon the oathes of Mr Willm Bradford and Captaine Myles Standish at the generall Court holden at Plymouth the xxth of August Anno dm 1644 as it followeth in these wordes viz,

The sixt of June 1644, I, Stephen Hopkins of Plymouth in New England, being weake, yet in good and prfect memory, blessed be God, yet considering the fraile estate of all men, I do ordaine and make this to be my last will and testament in manner and forme following, and first I do committ my body to the earth from whence it was taken, and my soule to the Lord who gave it, my body to be buryed as neare as conveyently may be to my wyfe Deceased.

And, first, my will is that out of my whole estate my funerall expences be discharged.

Secondly, that out of the remayneing part of my said estate, that all my lawfull Debts be payd.

Thirdly, I do bequeath, by this, my will, to my sonn Giles Hopkins, my great Bull wch is now in the hands of Mrs Warren. Also, I do give to Stephen Hopkins, my sonn Giles, his sonne, twenty shillings in Mris Warren's hands for the hire of the said Bull. Also I give and bequeath to my daughter Constance Snow, the wyfe of Nicholas Snow, my mare, also, I give unto my daughter Deborah Hopkins, the brod horned black cowe, and her calf, and half the cowe, called Motley. Also I doe give and bequeath unto my daughter Damaris Hopkins, the Cowe called Damaris heiffer, and the white faced calf, and half the cowe called Mottley. Also, I give to my daughter, Ruth, the Cowe called Red Cole, and her calf, and a Bull at Yarmouth wch is in the keepeing of Giles Hopkins, wch is an yeare, and advantage old, and half the curld Cowe.

Also, I give and bequeath to my daughter Elizabeth, the Cowe called Smykins, and her calf, and thother half of the Curld Cowe wth Ruth, and an yearelinge heiffer wth out a tayle, in the keeping of Gyles Hopkins at Yarmouth.

Also I do give and bequeath unto my foure daughters, that is to say, Deborah Hopkins, Damaris Hopkins, Ruth Hopkins, and Elizabeth Hopkins, all the mooveable goods, the wch do belong to my house, as linnen, wollen, beds, bed cloathes, pott kettles, pewter, or whatsoevr are moveable, belonging to my said house, of what kynd soever, and not named by their prticular names, all wch said mooveables, to bee equally devided amongst my said daughters foure silver spoones, that is to say, to eich of them one. And, in case, any of my said daughters should be taken away by death before they be marryed, that, then, the part of their division to be equally devided amongst the survivors.

I do also, by this my will, make Caleb Hopkins, my sonne and heire apparent, giveing and bequeathing unto my said sonn aforesaid, all my Right title and interest to my h[illegible] and Lands at Plymouth, wth all the Right title and interrest wch doth, might or of Right, doth, or may hereafter belong unto mee, as also I give unto my saide heire all such lande wch of Right, is Rightly due unto me, and not at prsent in my reall possession, wch belongs unto me by right of my first comeing into this land, or by any other due Right, as by such freedome, or othorwise, giveing unto my said heire my full & whole and entire Right in all divisions, allottments, appoyntments or distributions whatsoever, to all or any pt of the said lande at any tyme, or tymes, so to be disposed.

Also, I do give moreover unto my foresaid heire one paire or yooke of oxen, and the hyer of them wch are in the hands of Richard Church, as may appeare by bill under his hand.

Also, I do give unto my said heire, Caleb Hopkins, all my debts wch are now oweing unto me, or at the day of my death, may be oweing unto mee, either by booke, bill, or bills, or any other way rightfully due unto me. ffurther more, my will is, that my daughters, aforesaid, shall have free recourse to my house in Plymouth, upon any occation, there to abide and remayne for such tyme as any of them shall thinke meete and convenyent & they single persons.

And for the faythfull prformance of this, my will, I do make and ordayne my aforesaid sonn and heire, Caleb Hopkins, my true and lawful Executor, ffurther, I do, by this my will, appoynt and make my said sonn, and Captaine Miles Standish, joyntly supervisors of this, my will, according to the true meaneing of the same, that is to say, that my Executor & supervisor shall make the severall divisions, parts or porcons, legacies or whatsoever doth appertaine to the fullfilling of this, my will.

It is also my will, that my Executor & Supervisor shall advise, devise and dispose by the best wayes & meanes they cann for the disposeing in marriage, or otherwise, for the best advancnt of the estate of the forenamed Deborah, Damaris, Ruth, and Elizabeth Hopkins.

Thus trusting in the Lord, my will shal be truly prformed, according to the true meaneing of the same, I committ the whole Disposeing hereof to the Lord, that hee may direct you herein.

June 6th 1644
Witnesses hereof
Myles Standish, By me
William Bradford STEVEN HOPKINS

[62] An Inventory of the Goods and the cattells of Mr Steven Hopkins taken by Captaine Miles Standish, Mr Thomas Willet and Mr John Done the xviith of July 1644 xx° Cal. Re.

This inventory is too long to insert here in detail, although exceedingly illuminating.

Broadly, the inventory shows clearly, that Mr. Hopkins must have been one of the wealthiest men of the colony, if not the richest.

He left a large herd of cattle for those days, about thirteen head, including a young "heiffer wthout a tayle". Also a yoke of oxen, pigges and poultry.

The debts "oweing unto mee, either by booke, bill, or bills" was considerable. Whether the Executor was able to collect these items is not disclosed.

The household articles included many items of interest. These went to his daughters. There was a "greene Rugg" and a "yellow Rugg", many blankets, and much bedding of all kinds. There were "pillow beares", "boulsters", "checkered blanketts", "table clothes".

There are "dymothy Caps", "wrought Caps", and the like.

He left a library consisting of "Divers Bookes", not named, however.

There are many items of clothing in the inventory, including shoes, garters, "Ruffe", "mohaire petticote", "a petticote of phillip & cheny", "a grogorm coate", "a prpetuam coate", "coate & jerkin", "a muffe".

Items for the kitchen and dining room include "a hogshead", "warming pann", "porringers", "frying pann", "quart potts", "laten candlesticks", "puter candlesticks", "bras pott", "skellets", "1 dozzen & half trenchers", "paire of bellowes", "fire shovell & tongs".

In fact, the inventory discloses that Stephen had a very comfortable home, of which he was very fond, and, as his will clearly indicates, the death of his wife was a great blow to him, as she had been, no doubt, a fine home-maker.

He requested in his will "to be buryed as neare as convenyently may be to my wyfe Deceased".

Known Children by First Wife (Unknown)

+2. Constance, b. Eng. abt. 1605, d. Eastham, Mass. Nov. 25, 1677, or about the middle of Oct. 1677; m. Nicholas^{1} **Snow**.

+3. Giles, b. Eng. abt. 1607, d. abt. 1690, or after Mar. 15, 1689, and before Apr. 26, 1690; m. Catone^{2} **Wheldon** (Gabriel)^{1}.

Stephen, bp. Dec. 22, 1609, St. Stephen, Coleman St., London, Eng. (a possibility only).

By Second Wife, Elizabeth Fisher

4. Damaris, b. Eng. before 1618, d. young probably.
5. Oceanus, b. on the Mayflower, d. before June 1, 1627.
6. Caleb, b. Ply. before 1623, d. single, Barbadoes, before 1651.

+7. Deborah, b. Ply. about 1625, d. after 1666; m. Andre[illegible] Ring.

+8. Damaris, b. Ply. after 1627, d. 1665/9; m. Jacob^{2} **Cooke**, son of Francis^{1} **Cooke**.

9. Ruth, b. Ply, ——, d. single probably.
10. Elizabeth, b. Ply., ——, d. single probably.

Reg. Nos. 17, 69, 78, 79, 93, 136, 140, 171, 184, 264, 292, 502.

3. **Hopkins, Giles**^{2} (Stephen^1), born Eng. about 1607, died about March or April, 1690, at Eastham, Mass., or surely after March 15, 1689, and before April 26, 1690; married Catone **Wheldon** October 9, 16——, daughter of Gabriel Wheldon of Yarmouth.

Giles Hopkins was the eldest son of Mr. Stephen Hopkins of Plymouth. He came over with his father on the Mayflower in 1620, and was one of the boys on that famous voyage. With other members of the family he survived the first winter of sickness and death.

On the voyage he was one of the quieter boys, and developed a retiring disposition as he grew older, entirely unlike his father and brother Caleb.

When in 1637 the Pequots, a tribe of Indians inhabiting the eastern part of Connecticut, began war with the English in that region, and Plymouth Colony decided to send a company to assist in overthrowing the Indians, he, with his father and younger brother Caleb, volunteered to go out in the defense of their neighbors, but fortunately, before starting forth, the troops under Captain Mason had defeated the enemy, and they were not needed.

The next year, Mr. Stephen Hopkins having been allowed by the Old Colony Court "to erect a house at Mattacheese", now Yarmouth, "to cut hay there" and to winter his cattle, it is thought his son Giles went down there to look after matters, and we find him at Yarmouth in 1639, when with Hugh Tilly and Nicholas Sympkins he "deposed" to the last will and testament of Peter Warden, the elder, deceased, and also courted and married Catone Wheldon, daughter of Gabriel Whelden, who had been licensed to build at Mattacheese the year before.

The house Giles occupied while a resident of Yarmouth stood a little to the northwest of the knoll. It was probably the first house built below Sandwich, and surely was, if it was the one built by Stephen Hopkins at the order of the Plymouth Court. It was sold by Giles Hopkins in 1642 to Mr. Hallett. It would seem that he was not a resident of Yarmouth in 1643, as his name does not appear in the list of those able to bear arms that year in the township. However, evidence shows he was a resident June 6, 1644. At that date his father made his will, and several times mentions Giles as being at Yarmouth in charge of the cattle.

It is probable Giles was not enrolled on account of physical disability.

In what year Giles removed to Nausett, now Eastham, is not known. He was there in 1650, a surveyor of highways, and held this position several years.

For some reason, his father, by will, made Caleb, his younger son by the second wife, the "heire apparent" and consequently all of the real estate, and the amount was large, passed into the han[illegible] Caleb. However, Caleb, soon after his father's death in July 1644, gave up a very large tract of land to Giles, his only surviving brother, lying in what is now Brewster. Upon the death of Caleb, who was a seaman, and died at the Barbadoes before 1657, Giles came into possession of much of the land. In 1659 land was granted to him in Eastham.

WILL OF GYLES HOPKINS

Recorded in Vol. I, p. 32, of Probate Records of Barnstable Co., Mass.

The codicil was signed March 15, 1689 (N.S.), and the will was admitted to probate April 26, 1690 (N.S.), therefore the death of Gyles Hopkins must have occurred between these two dates. The will follows:

> To all Christian people to whom these presents shall com know ye that I Giles Hopkins of Eastham being sick and weak of Body and yet of perfit memory do declare this as my last will and testament on this ninteenth day of January in ye year of our Lord 1682.
>
> I, bequeath my Body to ye grave in decent burial when this Temporal Life of mine shall have an end, and my soul to god that gave it, in hopes of a blessed Resurection at ye Last day.
>
> 2ly, my will is that my son Stephen Hopkins shall possess and Injoy all my upland and meadow Lying and being at Satuckit, that is to say all my upland and meadow on ye southerly side of ye bounds of ye Towne of eastham, that is to say all my Right and title Intrest and claime to all those Lands from ye head of Namescakit to ye southermost part of ye long pond where mannomoyet cart way goes over to Satuckit, and from thence to ye head of mannomyet river, and so as our Line shall run over to ye south sea, all ye Lands between thos bounds and ye westermost bounds of ye purchesers at Satuckit river, all these Lands I give unto my son Stephen Hopkins and to his heirs forever; and half my stock of cattill for and in consideration of ye above sd Land, and half stock of cattel, my will is that after my decease my son Stephen Hopkins shall take ye care and oversight and maintaine my son William Hopkins during his natural Life in a comfortable manner.
>
> 3ly, my will is that all my Lands at Palmet, both purchesed and unpurchesed, both meadows and upland, and all my Lands at Pochet, and my third part of Samsons neck, and what other Lands shall fall unto me as a purcheser from ye fore mentioned Bounds of my son Stephen Hopkinses Lands and potanomacot, all these fore specified Lands I give unto my sons Caleb and Joshua Hopkins, to be equaly devided between them: further my will is [illegible] if either of my sons Joshua or Caleb Hopkins dye having no Issew that then these Lands which I have given them to be equally devided between them, fall to him that surviveth.
>
> 4ly, I give unto my wife Catorne Hopkins and to my son William Hopkins the improvement of too acres of meadow Lying at ye head of Rock Harbor during my wifes Life and ye one half of that too acres I give unto my son William during his Life and after ye decease of and after ye decease of my wife and son William I do give this above sd too acres of meadow to my son Joshua Hopkins and his heirs forever: as also after my decease I give unto my son Joshua Hopkins a parcel of meadow Lying at ye mouth of Rock Harbor according to ye bounds thereof specified in ye Towne Records of Lands; it I give unto my son Caleb Hopkins a parcel of meadow Lying at Little Nameskeket according to ye bounds thereof specified in ye Towne Booke of Records of Lands.
>
> It. I give unto my wife my now dwelling House and halfe my Land and halfe my orchard that is by my house: by Land I mean half my Land that is about my house both fenced and unfenced during my wifes natural Life and then ye abovesd housing and Lands to fall unto my son Joshua Hopkins; the other half of my Land and orchard I give to my son Joshua Hopkins after my death that is to say ye other half of my Lands Lying about my house.
>
> It. I give unto my son Caleb Hopkins one pair of plow irons.
>
> It. I give unto my son Joshua Hopkins one payer of plow Irons.
>
> It. I give unto my wife ye other half of my stock and moveables I say to my wife and my son William or what part of ye moveables my wife shall see cause to bestow on my son William Hopkins.
>
> It. I do appointe my son Stephen Hopkins to be my true and Lawful executor of this my Last will and testament to pay what is payable and Receive what is due.
>
> And to ye truth and verity hereof I have hereunto sett my hand and seal ye day and year above written.
>
> Signed and sealed in
> presence of us, ye mark of
> Jonathan Sparrow GILES H. HOPKINS
> Samuel Knowles (seal)
>
> I ye abovesd Giles Hopkins do declare whereas by ye providence of God my Life has been prolonged unto me and by Reason of age and disability of Body I am Incapatiated to provide for my owne support and my wifes, my will further is that my son Stephen Hopkins from this time and forward shall possess and Injoy all my stock and moveable

es provided he take effectual care for mine and my wites comfortable support during our natural Lives: witness my hand and seal this fifth day of March 1688/9.

Witness mark
Mark Snow GILES H. HOPKINS (seal)
'Jonathan Sparrow his

The will and codicil were finally approved on April 22, 1690.

CHILDREN BORN YARMOUTH AND EASTHAM

+21. ^{1}Mary, b. Nov. 1640, d. Mar. 20, 1696/7, m. Samuel^{2} **Smith** (Ralph^{1}).
+22. ^{2}Stephen, b. Sept. 1642, d. Oct. 10, 1718, m. 1st Mary^{2} **Merrick** (William^{1}), m. 2nd Wid. Bethia **Atkins.**
23. John, b. 1643, d. age 3 mos.
+24. ^{3}Abigail, b. Oct. 1644, m. William^{2} **Merrick** (William^{1}).
+25. ^{4}Deborah, b. June 1648, m. Josiah^{2} **Cooke Jr.** (Josiah^{1}).
+26. ^{5}Caleb, b. Jan. 1650/1, d. 1728, m. Mary^{2} **Williams** (Thomas^{1}).
+27. ^{6}Ruth, b. June 1653, m. Samuel^{3} **Mayo** (Nathaniel^{2} Rev. John^{1}).
+28. ^{7}Joshua, b. June 1657, d. 1734/8, m. Mary^{2} **Cole** (Daniel^{1}).
29. William, b. Jan. 9, 1660, d. probably an invalid.
30. Elizabeth, b. Nov. 1664, d. age 1 mo.

4. **H kins, Damaris**^{2} (Stephen^{1}), was born in England and came to America with her parents on the Mayflower. She appears to have been living in Plymouth as late as 1627 when a division of cattle was made among the settlers. She must have died soon after this. Bradford states, in commenting on the family of Stephen Hopkins, that one of his daughters "dyed here", and that he had "4 daus borne here". The one who died was, no doubt, Damaris, and one of the four daughters born in Plymouth was named after her.

5. **Hopkins, Oceanus**^{2} (Stephen^{1}), had the great distinction of being born at sea, on the Mayflower, between September 16th and November 11, 1620. Died, probably before 1623, in Plymouth.

6. **Hopkins, Caleb**^{2} (Stephen^{1}), was born in Plymouth probably before 1623, and died at the Barbadoes without issue after June 6, 1644, and before 1651. He served in the militia when very young in 1637 with his father and brother Giles. Caleb seems to have inherited much of his father's adventurous and restless spirit. In fact, he was named "heire apparent" in his father's will, and, together with Myles Standish was named executor of that document and this, in spite of the fact that his elder brother Giles was still living. However, this preference may have been due to the fact that Caleb was the only son of Elizabeth Fisher, second wife of Stephen Hopkins.

7. **Hopkins, Deborah**^{2} (Stephen^{1}), born about 1625 in Plymouth, Mass.; died soon after 1666. Married **Andrew Ring** April 23 to June 3, 1646, Plymouth, Mass., born England 1616; died Middleboro, Wednesday, February 22, 1692/3(?) in his 75th year. His gravestone may still be seen on Burial Hill in Plymouth. He was a son of widow **Mary Ring**, perhaps widow of **William Ring** of England. She appears early in Plymouth records. **Andrew Ring** married 2nd Lettice Morton, widow of John^{2} **Morton** George^{1}. She died February 22, 1690.

Andrew Ring when about thirteen years old was brought to this country by his widowed mother Mary, and was of Plymouth, Mass., as early as 1629. His mother died in 1631, leaving an interesting will stating, in part,

> "Andrew, my son, be left with my son-in-law, Stephen Deane, and do require of my son Deane he help him forward in the knowledge and fear of god, not to oppress him by any burdens, but be tender to him, as he will answer to God."

It appears, however, that after the death of his mother and when about sixteen years old, he was entrusted to the care of Dr. Samuel Fuller.

In 1640 he owned land in "Ring's" section of Plymouth, and was made a "freeman" in 1646, and was on a list of voters dated December 10, 1646.

Andrew Ring became a large property holder. He was among the first settlers of Middleboro, and served in King Philip's War from that place. In fact, he was among the "twenty six men's Purchase, and sixteen Shilling purchasers".

On October 27, 1662, his name appears among

> "the names of such as desire meddow att the new-found meddow in the south side of Turkey Swamp."

He also

> "desired a pease of meddow lying southerly from cedar bridge."

Andrew Ring m. 1st Deborah Hopkins. He survived both wives.

The Plymouth First Church records contain the following entries of the deaths of Andrew and Lettice Ring:

> "Andrew Ring dyed, february 22 (1692/3); in his seventy fifth yeare"
> "Lettice, the (second) wife of Andrew Ring, February 22 (1690), about 66 years of age."

Andrew Ring's will is in possession of the Connecticut Historical Society, at Hartford, Conn. They have had it for many behind [illegible] smoke screen of the church, and, for one reason or another, the company charters were changed in 1612, and 1618, until they reverted again to crown charters in 1624.

Meanwhile, in the exhileration of victory, on Feb. 27, 1609, a few months before James signed the new charter, letters were written to certain friends in Plymouth, England, all liberty minded, to join the "body politic," before the signing. Many of them did so. More important still was a nicely worded invitation, sent out on June 9, 1609, only seven days after the charter was signed, by the Earl of Southampton, the Earl of Pembroke, Robert Sidney, Thomas West, Lord de La Warr, Sir Thomas Smythe, Sir Robert Mansfield, Sir Thomas Gates, to

> "His majestie's subjects in the Free States the United Provinces,"

offering them in an English colony in America the place of refuge they were seeking in the Netherlands. Now, these people were none other than some of our "Mayflower Planters" in Leyden and elsewhere. The above men sending the invitation were, for the most part, supporters of Sandys in Parliament, and old friends of Philip Sidney and Essex, with whom William Brewster and Davison had served in the Netherlands and other places. They were, to a great extent, the instigators of the "Popular" movement. The execution of Essex in 1601 was probably brought about by the Court party due to his affiliation with the Patriot or Liberal party. Essex was a real friend to Davison and Brewster (see Brewster Family).

Just as soon as James heard of the above invitation he sought Archbishop Bancroft of England, and soon thereafter, the good Bishop finding that certain subjects were preparing to depart "in great numbers, obtained a proclamation from the King forbidding any to go without his Majesty's leave."

However, the organization of the Virginia Company under the new charter progressed in spite of all obstacles.

Sir Thomas Smythe was made Treasurer, chosen probably by his associates because of his assumed loyalty to the Patriot cause. He had been, in fact, imprisoned for his part in the rising of Essex. He was regarded as "a good Patriot."

The new charter of 1609 attracted a long list of adventurers and beneficiaries who affiliated with the company in the undertaking. Many of the surnames are familiar in New England history. Here are a few of the names on the roll. Some came to America, others did not.

Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, friend of William Brewster Sr. and his son William Brewster Jr.

Thomas Cecil, Earle of Exeter.

Robert Sydney, Lord Lisle.

John Stanhope, Lord Stanhope — Postmaster of glan Davison wrote to Stanhope in 1590 regarding the Scrooby Post for William Brewster.

Sir Thomas Smythe
Sir Oliver Cromwell
*Sir Thomas Gates
Sir Robert Kelligrew
Sir Edwin Sandys
Sir Warwicke Heale
Sir Francis Bacon
Sir Samuel Sandys
*Sir George Somers
Sir Baptist Hicks
*Capt. Christopher Newport
Capt. John Martin
Capt. Thomas Button
Esq. John Moore
Esq. Thomas Sandys
Esq. Richard Sandys, son of Sir Edwin Sandys
Esq. William Brewster
Edward Brewster, son of William Brewster
John Robinson
Richard Hakluyt, Minister and Geographer
John Merrick, Merchant
John Pory—an old Cambridge friend of William Brewster. Visited him at Plymouth in 1622.
George Sandys, Gentleman
Nicholas Ferrar
Ralph Hamor
George Yeardley, Gentleman
Peter Latham, Gentleman
John Fletcher
Gabriel Archer
Francis Covell
Richard Rogers
Martin Freeman
William Strachy
Stephen Hopkins, Clerk to Minister
Henry Paine
William Martin
Christopher Martin

These are only a few of the long list of Englishmen who had become vitally interested in the 1609 charter.

After many meetings, most of them at the spacious home of Sir Thomas Smythe, Treasurer and Governor of the Virginia Company, a fleet of ships were obtained and fitted out for the expedition.

2nd Stephen **Hopkins** and resided in Brewster where she died Mar. 25, 1726.

He removed from Plymouth to Eastham before 1655. He purchased some real estate from John Mayo on Apr. 21, 1659, and added to his property from time to time. He was a quiet man, taking slight interest in town affairs.

CHILDREN BY 1ST WIFE

a. Mary, b. Mar. 13, 1647; d. young; m.——.

CHILDREN BY 2ND WIFE

b. Isaac, b. June 15, 1665; d. ; m. .
c. Desire, b. May 7, 1666; d. ; m. .
d. John, b. Dec. 15, 1667; d. young; m.——.
e. Nathaniel, b. Dec. 25, 1668; d. ; m. .
f. Joseph, b. May 4, 1669; d. ; m. .
g. Thomas, b. June 19, 1671; d. ; m. .
h. John, b. Aug. 1, 1674; d. ; m. Elizabeth **Newcomb.**
i. Mary, b. Nov. 24, 1676; d. ; m. .
j. Samuel, b. June 25, 1679; d. ; m. Emlen **Newcomb.**

Refs. 573, 288.

MERRICK

24. **Hopkins,** Abigail³ (Giles², Stephen¹), born Oct. 1644, married William² **Merrick** May 23, 1667; born at Eastham Sept. 15, 1643; died at Harwich Oct. 30, 1732; son of William¹ **Merrick.**

William Merrick was admitted a legal voter of Eastham in 1675. Sometime later he removed to Harwich, where he was one of the original members of the church there in 1700. His wife was admitted in 1704. He was an Ensign in the Militia, and represented the town in the General Assembly in 1719.

CHILDREN BY ABIGAIL HOPKINS

135. Rebecca, b. Nov. 28, 1668; d. ; m. Jonathan **Sparrow.**
136. William, b. Aug. 1, 1670; d. Mar. 20, 1671; m.——.
137. Stephen, b. Mar. 26, 1673; d. Mar. 11, 1732; m. Deborah **Snow.**
138. Nathaniel, b. 1675; d. ; m. Alice **Freeman.**
139. Hannah, b. ; d. ; m. John **Snow.**
140. Benjamin, b. ; d. ; m. 1st Rebecca **Doane;** m. 2nd Wid. Rachel **Lincoln.**
141. John, b. ; d. ; m. Anna **Sears.**
142. Joshua, b. 1680; d. 1740; m. Lydia **Mayo.**
143. Ruth, b. 1684; d. ; m. 1st Samuel **Sears;** m. 2nd Chillingworth **Foster.**

Refs. 292, 136, 550, 297.

Tilley / [illegible]

"Mayflower Planters" – Leon C Hills

DAVISON

I. **Davison,** William, born England; buried at Stepney, Dec. 24, 1608; married Katherina **Spelman** about 1570, daughter of Francis **Spelman** and Mary **Hill.**

He was related to the families of the Earl of Leicester, Lord Burghley, Sir John Cheke and other outstanding lines, and held many positions of trust at the Court of Elizabeth, until the time of the famous "misunderstanding" with the Queen.

From 1584 to the time of his death in 1608, William Brewster was, in one way or another, no doubt, his aide, confidant and friend. There is good reason to suspect that Davison was connected with the East India Company and the early period of the Virginia Company. Anyway, Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, son of Lord Burghley, friend of both Davison and Brewster, appears to have sent young William Brewster, Gent, to Virginia in 1607, on the first expedition.

CHILDREN

a. Francis, b. 1575; d. 1620; m. .
*b. Christopher, b. ; d. ; m. .
c. William, b. ; d. ; m. .
d. Walter, b. ; d. ; m. .
e. Daughter, b. ; d. ; m. ( ) **Townley.**
f. Catherine, b. ; d. ; m. ( ) **Duncombe.**

* Secretary 1621 to Sir Francis Wyatt of Scrooby, and Governor of Virginia.

Ref. 489.

HOPKINS

26. **Hopkins,** Caleb³ (Giles², Stephen¹), born Jan. 1650-1; died 1728 (?); married Mary² **Williams;** died before 1728; daughter of Thomas¹ **Williams** of Eastham.

Caleb was born in Eastham, and died in Truro intestate not long before May 22, 1728, when his son Caleb was appointed administrator. He appears in the first entry in the first book of records in possession of the town of Truro. It bears date June 17, 1690, and shows that he with six others were then proprietors of Pamet (Truro).

CHILDREN BORN EASTHAM OR TRURO

152. Caleb, b. ; d. ; m. Mercy **Freeman.**
153. Nathaniel, b. ; d. ; m. Lydia ( ).
154. Thomas, b. ; d. ; m. Deborah **Bickford.**
155. Thankful, b. May 27, 1709; d. Aug. 1, 1785; m. Ambrose **Dyer.**

Refs. 149, 194, 147.

HOPKINS

28. **Hopkins,** Joshua³ (Giles², Stephen¹), born June 1657; died 1734-8; married Mary² **Cole** May 26, 1681; died Mar. 1, 1734; daughter of Daniel¹ **Cole.**

He resided on the east side of Town Cove, near his father's house, and became quite a landowner, much of it being inherited. His land holdings were in Eastham, Harwich and Chatham.

CHILDREN

164. John, b. Apr. 16, 1683; d. June 24, 1700; m.——.
165. Abigail, b. March 9, 1686; d. ; m. John **Taylor.**
166. Elisha, b. Dec. 17, 1688; d. ; m. Eperience **Scudder.**
167. Lydia, b. Apr. 1, 1692; d. ; m. .
168. Mary, b. Jan. 20, 1695; d. ; m. Joseph **Smith.**
169. Joshua, b. Feb. 20, 1698; d. ; m. Priscilla **Curtice.**
170. Hannah, b. Mar. 25, 1700; d. Oct. 24, 1793; m. Ebenezer **Paine.**
171. Phebe, b. Mar. 11, 1702; d. New York; m. Moses **Byxbee.**

Refs. 133, 134, 145, 158, 135, 742, 291, 158, 135, 742, 146, 264.

Hopkins

Winslow the distinction of being mother of a child born on *The Mayflower* was Mistress Elizabeth Hopkins, whose son, Oceanus, was named for his birthplace. She was the second wife of Stephen Hopkins, who was one of the leaders with Winslow and Standish on early expeditions. With her stepchildren, Constance and Giles, and her little daughter, Damaris, she bore the rigors of those first years, bore other children, —Caleb, Ruth, Deborah and Elizabeth, —and cared for a large estate, including servants and many cattle. The inventory of the Hopkins estate revealed an abundance of beds and bedding, yellow and green rugs, curtains and spinning-wheels, and much wearing apparel. The home-life surely had incidents of excitement, as is shown by the accusations and fines against Stephen Hopkins for "suffering excessive drinking at his house, 1637, when William Reynolds was drunk and lay under the table," and again for "suffering men to drink

in his house on the Lord's Day, both before and after the meeting—and allowing his servant and others to drink more than for ordinary refreshing and to play shovell board and such like misdemeanors."[27] Such lapses in conduct at the Hopkins house were atoned for by the services which Stephen Hopkins rendered to the colony as explorer, assistant to the governor and other offices which suited his reliable and fearless disposition.

These occasional "misdemeanors" in the Hopkins household were slight compared with the records against "the black sheep" of the colony, the family of Billingtons from London. The mother, Helen or Ellen, did not seem to redeem the reputation of husband and sons; traditionally she was called "the scold." After her husband had been executed in 1630, for the first murder in the colony, for he had waylaid and killed John Newcomen, she mar-

---

[26] and [27] Records of the Colony of New Plymouth.

Tilley / Howland

inent in civic affairs of the state and church. He was among the liberals towards Quakers as were his brothers who came later to Marshfield,—Arthur and Henry. At Rocky Neck, near the Jones River in Kingston, as it is now called, the Howland household was prosperous, with nine children to keep Elizabeth Tilley's hands occupied. She lived until past 80 ~~ninety~~ years, and died at the home of her daughter, Lydia Howland Brown, in Swanzey, in 1687. Among the articles mentioned in her will are many books of religious type. Her husband's estate as inventoried was not large, but mentioned such useful articles as silk neckcloths, four dozen buttons and many skeins of silk.[50]

Constance or Constanta Hopkins was probably about the same age as Elizabeth Tilley, for she was married before 1627 to Nicholas Snow, who came in *The Ann.* They had twelve children, and among the names one recognizes such

---

[50] Mayflower Descendants, ii, 70.

familiar patronymics of the two families as Mark, Stephen, Ruth and Elizabeth. Family tradition has ascribed beauty and patience to this maiden who, doubtless, served well both in her father's large family and in the community. Her step-sister, Damaris, married Jacob Cooke, son of the Pilgrim, Francis Cooke.

(Stephen Hopkins and Myles Standish were best friends)

MYLES & ME

The author, who according to family legend is a direct descendant of Myles Standish, surveys the checkered career of his pugnacious Pilgrim ancestor

BY DAVID STANDISH

BECAUSE OF MY LAST NAME, MYLES STANDISH HAS loomed larger in my life than I ever really wanted. For as long as I can remember, upon meeting me, people have smiled and said, "Oh, like Myles?" Yes, like Myles. This had already gotten a little old by the time I hit kindergarten. I'm supposedly a direct descendant. Or so my father always claimed. He said his grandmother had done the genealogy, but I never saw it, and he was a salesman for a big paint company—and paint always makes things look better, so I don't know for sure. In any case, it's family lore. And then while I was in graduate school, avoiding the jungles of Vietnam in the name of scholarship, my favorite professor in American Studies was a specialist in the Colonial period, so I learned more about Standish and the Pilgrims than a normal person might.

He's one of the best-known Pilgrims because of the 1858 Longfellow poem, of course. The one in which he's too shy and diffident about his love for Priscilla Mullins to tell her himself, and so sends his friend John Alden as an intermediary. Priscilla's eyes light up at Alden, and she says, "Speak for yourself, John"—and Standish is out to lunch.

But it never happened. Standish, to a fault, was *nothing* like this. Pugnacious, touchy, short-tempered, aggressive, yes, but no shrinking violet. One contemporary historian would describe him as "a little chimney" that "is soon fired."

He'd been employed as a professional soldier fighting in the Low Countries against Spain when he encountered the Pilgrims, who'd left England for Holland in 1608 in order to follow their religious ideas, which were more independent than the official Anglican church really appreciated. Standish himself wasn't a believer. Even though he became one of the most prominent leaders of the colony, he never did formally join the Separatist church. The Pilgrims apparently didn't care. They wanted him for his military skills.

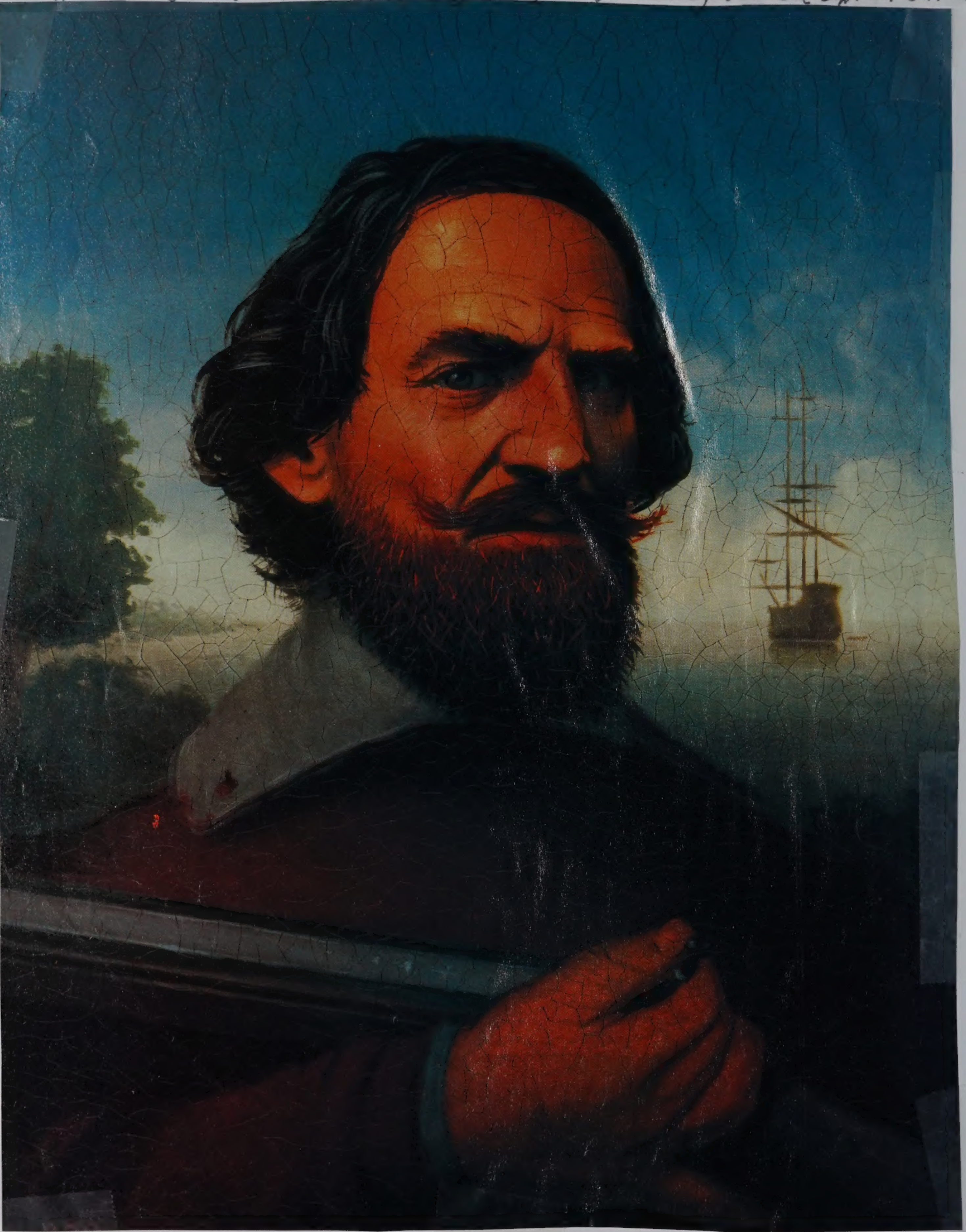
My professor sometimes called him "the first cop in North America."

His life, before joining the Pilgrims at the age of 36, is virtually a blank. His will mentions family land and estates on the Isle of Man, but there aren't any records proving conclusively that he came from there. One possibility that's been suggested is that he's not listed on any birth registers because he'd changed his first name to Myles, derived from the Latin for "soldier," *miles*. His birth name, in this view, might have been a traditional one from the Isle of Man, a most improbable moniker—ready?—Mold. If so, it's hard to blame him for changing it.

Norman Standish, a genuine direct

ILLUSTRATION BY ROB DAY

In actuality, Myles Standish was a short, redheaded, freckled man with thin skin which turned reddish when he was angry or on edge. He was nevertheless kind hearted and good (though not of the Pilgrims' faith) and very brave. ("Captain Shrimp")



descendant (unlike me) and Pilgrim historian, has a theory about Myles' alliance with the Pilgrims that I find appealing. In his reading of the meager evidence, Myles had been off fighting in the Netherlands when his grandfather died (his father had already passed away) and a younger brother back home on the Isle of Man snaked him. The younger brother, believing, or convincing himself, that Myles was no longer alive, aced him out by inheriting everything. Broke and cheated of his patrimony, he took the chancy job as the Pilgrims' military leader in the wilderness, even though he never did sign on as a member of their sect, to earn enough money to lay claim to his own land!

If it's not true, it should be.

The Standish family crest, which demonstrates various permutations over time, is pretty strange. A late 16th-century version features a shield with several "standing dishes" (round objects that look like plates), surmounted by a wide-eyed owl holding a dead rat in its talons. You tell me. Above and below it is a motto in French, which translates as "I desire to do what I must, come what may"—which makes me think I might actually be a descendant after all, explaining the fact that against all good sense I've been a freelance writer for 20 years. And Standish has been said to mean "stony field," a description that pretty well characterizes the lot of most of us freelancers.

Not long after the Pilgrims' arrival, in November 1620, Standish was appointed military commander, and quickly began organizing the Pilgrims into military units. That first winter must have been horrible. They were all still living on the *Mayflower*. Its exact replica sits at anchor in Plymouth Harbor today, and it's incredibly dinky. It's amazing that it made it through the rough North Atlantic crossing, and a winter on it had to be bone-chillingly cold and cramped. Practically everybody got sick. By spring, half their number had died, among them Rose, Standish's first wife. He was one of just six or seven who didn't become ill. In fact, in his history, *Of Plimouth Plantation*, a document magnificent in its direct simplicity, Governor Bradford, longtime leader of the colony, singles out Standish for his tireless ministrations to the sick and dying.

But Standish had a real problem with his temper. He was forever flying off the handle at the slightest provocation. In some ways it's not hard to understand. People made fun of the way he looked. He had a fiery red beard and he was very short. Not something you'd expect a hardened John Wayne type to be. So it's little wonder that he had an attitude—fair or not, it had to make it harder for him to command respect as a military leader if he seemed to be standing in a hole. Not far from Plymouth, one Thomas Morton, leader of the ribald colony Merry Mount, was busted by an expedition led by Standish and sent back to England (more on this shortly). Once Morton returned home, he took his revenge, writing about the incident in his satirical *New English Canaan*, where he dubbed Standish "Captaine Shrimpe."

Standish did indeed have a real problem controlling his volatile temper. He was forever flying off the handle at the slightest provocation.

The Pilgrims didn't encounter huge tribes of vicious "salvages." Luckily for them, if unhappily for the local tribes, there had been a terrible epidemic in 1617 that had decimated the native population—a gift from the Europeans that was likely smallpox. So Standish's small, inexpert army had at first only a few minor alarums and excursions. The epidemic had left a result of equal importance—Indian cornfields, lying fallow and untended. If the Pilgrims had had to clear the land before being able to plant it—backbreaking work in the best of times—it's possible that the colony might never have survived.

And even so, they required the considerable help of Squanto, or Tisquantum. The story of how he helped them is well known, but I've often wondered *why* he did so. Not only had the diseases brought by the Europeans left him as the last remaining member of his tribe, but his own personal experiences with the newcomers had been checkered at best.

He'd been brought to England in 1605, and returned in 1614 with Captain John Smith. Shortly afterward, he and 20 other members of his tribe were kidnapped and taken to Málaga, Spain, where they were sold into slavery. He wound up with some friars, and eventually made his way to England, living there with a merchant for several years before returning on another ship. Squanto was dropped off at his original home near Plymouth—six months before the arrival of the *Mayflower*—where he found that his entire tribe had died of plague. He was living with a neighboring tribe when the Pilgrims landed, and immediately attached himself to them, showing them how to survive in the wilderness. He also served as their interpreter in encounters with local Indians, especially the powerful Massasoit, the sachem, or chief, of the

Wampanoag. Squanto was rightly and literally considered a godsend—though his assistance was not based entirely on altruism. His importance to the Pilgrims gave him considerable influence among the local Indian tribes, which he reveled in.

Squanto's position was further enhanced by a truly creative lie he told: the Pilgrims had the European plague buried beneath their fort, a bearer of death which they could and would unleash at a word from him. In fact, the Pilgrims did keep their gunpowder there, which probably seemed just as marvelous and destructive to the Indians, but you have to give Squanto an *A* for originality. The Pilgrims, canny and pragmatic when it suited their purposes, did little to disabuse the Indians of this fabulous notion.

Even with his help, the Plymouth Colony had a tough time of it for years. It's not generally remembered that this was a business investment, not simply a religious experiment. A number of venture capital investors in London had put up big money for the enterprise and expected both repayment and profit. But it was never forthcoming. The Pilgrims were lousy businessmen, a flaw that was compounded by repeated bad luck.

Beginning with where they had landed and set up shop. They were aiming for "Virginia," which then designated an area extending much farther north than it does now—but not all the way to cold Cape Cod. Their specific goal had been the mouth of the Hudson (which would have made the song go "New Plymouth, New Plymouth, it's a heck of a town . . ."), but the *Mayflower* made landfall in a much harsher region.

Even worse, early in the fall of 1621, Standish led an exploring expedition up the coast from Plymouth, and they came upon for the first time what would soon be known as Boston Harbor. They must have felt like kicking themselves. Here, so close, was a harbor far better than their own, with adjoining fields both more extensive and potentially productive—and it could have been theirs. The site at Plymouth was a poor second. They talked about relocating, but the prospect was a daunting one. The swift success of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, planted there in 1630 and quickly outstripping them, must have been galling.

As they were looking over Boston Harbor on this first visit, they were spotted by a number of Massachusett Indian women on a beach, most of them young, and all wearing abbreviated garments made from stitched-together beaver pelts. The Pilgrims were more aroused by the pelts than the women—since beaver was one valuable commodity they hoped to send back to England to pay off their debt. Seeing this, Squanto matter-of-factly suggested that they simply strip the women and head for home. But they didn't need to. When the women saw the "bright trinkets" one of the Pilgrims produced to suggest a trade, they stripped off their pelts without hesitation. The Pilgrims departed, valuables secured.

The bountiful First Thanksgiving did turn out to be a really good party.

The bountiful First Thanksgiving did not herald lasting prosperity, even though it did turn out to be a really good party. With Squanto's help, the Pilgrims had established friendly relations with Massasoit—perhaps too friendly. He showed up with 90 hungry braves. Standish, happy for any occasion to do his military thing, had his troops perform a dress review. They played games, and ate and drank and made merry for three days.

This calls to mind another misconception about the Pilgrims (like the idea that they only wore drab black and white clothing—in fact, except on Sunday, they wore various colors). They were decidedly *not* teetotalers. They drank beer at all their meals—children included. When the beer they'd brought along on the *Mayflower* ran out, and they were reduced to drinking dread *water*, they fairly howled at the hardship. By the time of the First Thanksgiving, they seem to have managed a more festive scenario, at least foodwise.

Much as we might wish for a complete account of that legendary feast, no exhaustive rendition exists. (The Pilgrims, after all, didn't realize this was the inception of a national holiday.) Foods that may have graced their table included venison, duck, goose, clams and other shellfish, cod, eels, bass, Indian corn and corn meal, leeks and watercress, with dried wild plums and berries as dessert. Bradford's account of that year's harvest season does mention wild turkey, which was abundant in the forests. Something else the Pilgrims might have eaten, since it's recorded that they sometimes did so, but which isn't mentioned, are eagles—so they might have had a little roast National Bird as well.

But they were celebrating too soon. Greater demands than the Pilgrims had anticipated were going to be imposed on their food supply. They thought that additional supplies had arrived in November—the First Thanksgiving was held most likely in October—when the *Fortune* put in at anchor. But all it brought was 35 newcomers—and no provisions, simply more mouths to feed. They loaded up the ship with cargo for a return voyage, mainly beaver pelts and lumber for clapboard, which when sold in England would have put a noticeable dent in their debt to the "Adventurers," as their London investors were known. But the *Fortune* should have had "Bad" appended to its name. It set sail in December and was captured by French pirates, who diverted it to an island off the French coast, where they took everything of value. Those aboard were robbed and put in prison for two weeks before being released. Finally, the poor beat-up *Fortune* limped to England, empty and forlorn. The Adventurers were more put out by their loss than sympathetic to the Pilgrims.

More bad luck followed in July 1622 with the arrival of two more ships, the *Charity* and the *Swan*. Once again, the Pilgrims' hopes brightened at the sight of the sails—surely they must be carrying more supplies!—and again the cargo consisted entirely of newcomers, 60 of them this time. Worse still, this group carried a document authorizing them to establish a rival colony nearby on Boston Bay. And this crowd was decidedly low-rent. "The expedition . . . ," as Colonial historian John S. Erwin put it, "consisted of men utterly devoid of principle."

A letter to Bradford from a friend in England, secretly carried on board the ship, cautioned: "The people

It did not take long for the newcomers at Wessagusset on Boston Bay to decide they would simply steal corn from the Indians.

they take are no men for us. . . . I fear these people will hardly deal so well with the savages as they should. . . . Signify to Squanto that they are a distinct body from us, and we have nothing to do with them, neither must be blamed for their faults, much less can we warrant their fidelity."

Good advice, but it didn't work.

Soon this motley crew had begun a settlement at Wessagusset on the south end of Boston Bay. Conducting themselves as grasshoppers, not ants, they rapidly "made havoc of their provisions." It didn't take long for the newcomers to decide they would simply steal the corn from the Indians. Word of this spread among the local tribes. The tentatively established Anglo-American relations hit a new low, further exacerbated when it was learned that the Wessagusset colonists had a desperate plan to go on a plundering expedition for corn, to "take it by violence" from the tribes living on Cape Cod. Suspicions compounded by misunderstandings quickly had both sides bristling.

This set the scene for Standish's first big military moment.

The events leading up to it are too tangled to go into here, but the situation became so volatile that the leaders of the Plymouth colony felt they had to take action. They believed that a number of Massachusett Indians, led by a "notable insulting villain" named Wituwamat, were planning an attack on the Wessagusset bunch—but intended to do in the Pilgrims, too, since they would no doubt come to the aid of their scheming white brothers. The Pilgrims decided on a preemptive strike.

It was, however, not to be a head-on assault. Rather, they determined on a stratagem to "take them in such traps as they lay for others." Standish was to lead a small contingent to Wessagusset and "pretend trade as at other times." The strategy called for drawing the Indians to the settlement, and then falling upon them in a sneak attack when the time seemed right.

What followed wasn't exactly the high point in Pilgrim history.

Standish and eight others made for Wessagusset and went straight to the governor, informing him of their plans. So Standish and his men put on a happy face and began trading. After a couple of days Wituwamat, and a companion, one Pecksuot, showed up—and made the mistake of insulting Standish.

Pecksuot, an imposing figure, told Hobomok, an Indian who like Squanto had attached himself to the Pilgrims, "Tell him we know it [the planned sneak attack], but fear him not. Neither shall we shun him, but let him begin when he dare." And Pecksuot probably sealed his fate when he said directly to Standish: "Though you are a great Captain, yet you are but a little man, and though I be no sachem, yet I am a man of great strength and courage."

You can practically see Standish chewing his beard, steam coming out of his ears.

And he had it in for Wituwamat anyway, having suffered his derision during an earlier encounter at an Indian settlement on the Cape. Standish had been there on a trading expedition, and was already miffed because, in his opinion, the tribe's sachem wasn't giving him "entertainment" as grand as the chief had earlier provided for Bradford. Standish was perhaps overly sensitive to such social slights. And then Wituwamat showed up and proceeded to make a long speech putting down the whites. He "derided their weakness," wrote one Pilgrim, "especially because (as he said) they died crying, making sour faces, more like children than men." This was bad enough, but the tribe's sachem also began giving Wituwamat better "entertainment" than he gave Standish—though what that might mean exactly is a little puzzling. Superior cuts of meat? The best log to sit on? In any case, Standish exploded. He "scorned at their behavior, and told them of it."

Standish got his chance for reprisal at Wessagusset.

Wituwamat and Pecksuot, along with two others, one of them Wituwamat's 18-year-old younger brother, were talked into coming inside the building where the Pilgrims were trading, lured by an invitation to a feast, it was later said. Without warning, the door was locked, and Standish and his men went at it. Standish ripped the knife from the thong Pecksuot wore around his neck and stabbed him. Outnumbered as they were, the Indians nevertheless demonstrated considerable courage. The Pilgrims' own account later called it "incredible how many wounds they received before they died, not making any fearful noise, but catching at their weapons and striving to the last." Only Wituwamat's younger brother would live through the gory encounter, but not for long. (Soon afterward, "the Captain caused to have [him] hanged.")

The colonists killed three more braves and then pursued another band of Indians who were in the vicinity. These Indians made it to a swamp, where they holed up in safety, shouting insults at their pursuers. Standish didn't get the fight he was looking for when he called for their leader "to come out and fight like a man, showing how base and womanlike he was in tongueing it as he did."

After this incident, most of the Wessagusset settlers took off for Maine.

He took a trophy of war back with him to Plymouth—Wituwamat's bloody head. It was displayed on a spike at the fort, where it remained as a reminder of the skirmish, bleaching in the sun, for years to come.

On hearing of this incident back home in Holland, the Pilgrims' spiritual leader, John Robinson, wrote to Bradford regarding Standish, saying: "Let me be bould to exhorte you seriously to consider of ye disposition of your Captaine, whom I love. . . . He is a man humble and meek amongst you and towards all in ordinarie course. . . . But there may be wanting that tendernes of ye life of man. . . . It is a thing more glorious in men's eyes than pleasing in God's, or conveniente for Christians, to be a terrour to poore barbarous people."

The killings did, however, have the desired result. The Indians were dazed and confused: It "hath so terrified and amazed them . . . they forsook their houses, running to and fro like men distracted, living in swamps and other desert places, and so brought manifold diseases amongst themselves, whereof very many are dead."

After this incident, most of the Wessagusset settlers took off for Maine, where they could catch English fishing vessels home. Not only had the Pilgrims gotten rid of a moral blight and a nuisance, they'd eliminated noticeable competition in the profitable beaver trade.

Finally, by 1625, the Pilgrims were having a better time of it. The Plymouth colonists had gotten the knack of growing and harvesting corn, so they were no longer half-starving most of the time, troubles with the Indians had stopped and, around that time, a recent arrival named Francis Sprague opened the first tavern in New England. Bradford wrote to a friend that they had "never felt the sweetness of the country till this year."

But it's always something.

Yet another rival colony had sprung up not far from Wessagusset, on the site of the present town of Quincy. It was first called Mount Wollaston, but soon had another name—the infamous Merry Mount, made into legend more than 200 years later in a short story by Hawthorne. Standish doesn't figure in the Hawthorne story, but Merry Mount provided him the opportunity to make his next big bust.

Its object was Thomas Morton.

Morton had come as an associate of the colony's original leader, Captain Wollaston. Their purpose was purely profit, expecting to become "great men & rich all of a sudaine." But on discovering the hardscrabble reality, that their dreams of easy wealth were "castls in ye aire," Wollaston came up with a surefire money-making scheme. Since most of the colony consisted of indentured servants—Morton had brought along 30 of his own—Wollaston decided to take a portion of them and sail south to Virginia, where he could sell them for their term of indenture. Which he did, finding it so profitable he wrote from Virginia telling his lieutenant to send more.

Morton had other ideas. The Pilgrims liked to paint him as the Devil incarnate, but what he did next had its humanitarian as well as its wild party-down side. At a drunken feast that he hosted, Morton suggested to the remaining indentured servants and others in the colony that they simply ignore Wollaston, get rid of the guy he'd left in charge, and take over. As far as he was concerned, they were all free men.

Morton, an Oxford-educated aristocrat who had been a drinking buddy of Ben Jonson's, rechristened the colony "Ma-re Mount," or "Mountain by the Sea." But his Latin pun was not lost on the Pilgrims, who knew he meant "merry." One of Morton's first acts was to cut down an 80-foot pine tree and turn it into a maypole, celebrating by brewing up a lot of beer and inviting any who cared to join the party—including the Indians. The festivities seem to have gone on unabated, continuing for many days, a "riotous prodigality," according to Bradford, who characterized Morton as the "lord of misrule," and his colony a "schoole of Athisme."

It brings to mind H. L. Mencken's famous line defining Puritanism as the fear that someone, somewhere, might be having a good time. But in fairness to the Pilgrims, their displeasure regarding Merry Mount had more cause than mere pious disapproval. Merry Mount was giving them two fairly practical problems.

One was that it was serious competition in the fur trade. Morton got on well with the Indians, to the extent that he was teaching them how to use muskets and hiring them to hunt for him. Since they were far better in the woods than the Englishmen, Merry Mount was cleaning up. The Pilgrims' protests were framed in terms of Morton's arming of the Indians, but this may have had more to do with the number of pelts being snagged for Morton than any immediate threat posed by the Indians.

The second was that Morton's overly democratic ideas were causing a servant problem in Plymouth. Not only had he freed all the indentured servants that had been brought to Mount Wollaston, there was an open invitation for anybody else to join Merry Mount—and be free. The prospect of a nonstop party and no tedious unpaid chores was having a certain appeal to the indentured servants stuck in Plymouth. As Bradford put it—I do love his writing style and spelling—they “would entertaine any, how vile soever, and all ye scume of ye countrie or any discontents would flock to him from all places.”

So the Pilgrims decided they had to raid Merry Mount and shut it down.

So the Pilgrims decided they had to raid Merry Mount and shut it down. Standish led the assault, naturally. But this one, happily, was considerably more seriocomic than their previous foray, on Wessagusset. Morton left his version in *New English Canaan,* his lively satiric rendering of what happened, and the Pilgrims left theirs. Both are as self-serving as you might expect—so much so it's hard to tell what really occurred.

According to Morton, the Pilgrims were overbearing bumblers. He says they burst into Merry Mount to nab him, but he was off in a small settlement nearby. They tracked him down and put a guard around the house he was in. They celebrated their easy success—he says—by getting drunk, which allowed him to slip away unnoticed in the night, back to Merry Mount. On discovering this the next morning, Standish was in a fury. Morton observed that Captaine Shrimpe “took on most furiously and tore his clothes for anger to see the empty nest, and their bird gone.” Following him back to Merry Mount, they demanded his surrender, which he says he agreed to so that no one would be killed. But on coming out of his house, Standish leapt upon him, and others joined in: “So eagerly was every man bent against him . . . that they fell upon him,” Morton wrote of himself, “as if they would have eaten him.”

In the Pilgrim version of things, on arriving at Merry Mount, they found Morton and several others barricaded in a building, heavily armed. But in this alternate reality, it was Morton and his friends who were drunk—so bombed they were incapable of doing any damage, and so lacking in judgment that they burst out of the building to attack but were too befuddled to use their weapons, and so were easily captured.

The Pilgrims, it was said, “made a great shewe of Religion, but no humanity.”

In both accounts, however, Morton was taken back to Plymouth to go before the council. Standish argued urgently for Morton's execution. No surprise there. But Bradford and his council decided on a milder course, though still a tough one. He was to be sent back to England, no great hardship, but to keep him out of mischief until the next ship left, they dumped him on a small offshore island with little more than the “thinne suite” he was wearing—and with winter coming on. He commented in *New English Canaan* that they made a “great shewe of Religion, but no humanity.”

Morton shivered on the island for a month before his forcible return to England. But he was back a year later—having gotten himself a job as secretary to Isaac Allerton, the Pilgrims' business representative in England and an assistant governor of the colony. When the pair arrived in Plymouth, Allerton “brazenly led [Morton] right into town and lodged him at his own house.” Bradford was miffed: it was “as if it were to nose them,” he reported.

Hard to say what Allerton was thinking, but the Saints were having none of it. They ran Morton out of town—and quickly he was once again up to his old tricks at Merry Mount. Nobody in England had taken the charges against him seriously, so there was nothing the Pilgrims could do about it. Morton went on like this for some time, until his antics—and, once again, his success at the fur trade—finally provoked Governor John Endecott of the Massachusetts Bay Colony to bust him and send him back to England yet again, after chopping down the maypole and burning down his house. It's this event that Hawthorne drew upon for “The May-Pole of Merry Mount,” the short story that made Morton's stomping ground famous.

According to Bradford's account, Morton didn't fare so well in England the second time. “He lay a good while in Exeter Gaole,” recorded Bradford, “for besids his miscarriage here, he was vemently suspected of ye murder of a man that had adventured moneys with him when he came first into New England”—statements historian George Willison characterizes as “libels.” According to Willison: “Morton, on the contrary, went to work for Sir Ferdinando Gorges [a rival Adventurer], with the specific assignment of voiding the Plymouth and Bay patents. And what a joy that must have been for ‘mine Host of Ma-re Mount.’”

He was to come back to haunt “Captaine Shrimpe” one more time. In 1643, the irrepressible Morton reappeared in Plymouth, this time as the representative of several wealthy Englishmen who owned a lot of land in New England. Since he was so well connected, the Pilgrims felt they couldn't simply throw him out this time. And so, reluctantly, they allowed him to spend the winter there.

HOPKINS

Classification: Maternal Line

IMMIGRANT ANCESTOR: MR. STEPHEN HOPKINS
Came To America (1) In A.D. 1610, Jamestown, Virginia
Came To America (2) In A.D. 1620, Mayflower Passenger
14th Signer Of "The Mayflower Compact", 11th November, 1620, (Old Style Calendar), on board the "Mayflower", at "Cape-Codd"

*I. (a) STEPHEN HOPKINS, Immigrant Ancestor, b. probably in Coventry, England, date unknown, d. Plymouth, Massachusetts, between 16 June and 27 July, 1644. His Will was dated 6 June, 1644; "an inventory of his estate was taken July, 1644, by Captain Standish, Thomas Willt, and John Done"; and "his Will was exhibited at court August, 1644". Mr. Stephen Hopkins described as a "physical as well as intellectual power", was titled "Mister", indicating that he was a man of worth and standing, for only 12 men had the prefix of "Mister" in the whole list of passengers on the "Forefather Ships", "Mayflower", "Fortune", and "Little James". "Mr. Stephen Hopkins was a man of great enterprise", and had "The gift of speech, perhaps controversy always rested with him, and the legal instinct". "Stephen Hopkins was a Nonconformist, of the same comany (The Virginia Company), as Elder William Brewster, and his son Edward, people of like thought and convictions, which they adhered to until "Edward Brewster conformed, and returned to the church", remaining in England. This bond between Stephen Hopkins and Elder William Brewster, in their discussions with Governor Carter, in charge of fitting out the Mayflower, who was in England in 1618 and 1619, was strengthened, and they decided to come to America to establish homes and live according to their own beliefs. This decision was made after Stephen Hopkins had made his first trip to America, and had returned to London.

Sea Venture Passenger to Virginia, 1609/1610:
On 23 July, 1609, we find, Stephen Hopkins as a passenger on the "Sea Venture", one 300 ton ship of a fleet of seven ships and two pinnaces, with Christopher Newport as the Captain, and with Sir Thomas Gates, Deputy Governor of the Virginia Colony, and Sir George Summers, Admiral of the Seas aboard, began a voyage to Virginia. However, the "Sea Venture" was wrecked in a terrible storm and driven ashore on the Island of Bermuda, 28 July, 1609, where the 150 men, women, and children, which comprised the passengers and crew, were stranded. In an effort to save the remaining persons who had survived the hardships, Stephen Hopkins urged them to act independently, and make their way to the mainland of Virginia. He was accused of conspiracy, but conducted his own defense so effectively, that he was pardoned, and was able to build a small boat, assisted by the few surviving men, and gathering the few left of the "Sea Venture", they reached Virginia on 21 May, 1610, only to find about sixty starving settlers surviving of the approximately original six hundred settlers who had come

in the other six ships, as arranged by Sir Thomas Gates. Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Summers, and Captain Christopher Newport, decided to abandon the project, and in 1611 or 1612, Stephen Hopkins returned to England, living in London, where he married his second wife, Elizabeth Fisher in March, 1617.
Note: John Fiske, the historian, has been reputed to have said that the wreck of the "Sea Venture" gave William Shakespeare inspiration for some of the material which he used in writing "The Tempest", which was performed before the King in 1611.
Mayflower Passenger to Plymouth, 1620: Mr. Stephen Hopkins of London, England, and his second wife, Elizabeth Fisher, with their daughter, Damaris, who was under 2 years of age, and their child Oceanus, who was born on the Mayflower, and his two children by his first marriage, Constance and Gyles, and two servants, Edward Doty and Edward Leister, came as Passengers on the "Mayflower", and after the third exploring party, landed at Plymouth on 11th December, 1620 (Old Style Calendar),/21st December, 1620. Stephen Hopkins was the 14th Signer of "The Mayflower Compact", on 11th November, 1620 (Old Style Calendar),/21st November, 1620, and he was a member of the first exploratory expedition to select a suitable site for the Mayflower Passengers to settle. He was also a member of the third exploratory expedition on 16 December, 1620, which engaged in the first encounter 18 December, 1620 with the Indians, afterwhich the site of Plymouth was selected for the settlement. Stephen Hopkins and his family settled near the Eel River, but his real home was in Plymouth on a strip of land reaching from Leyden Street to Middle Street, where he built one of the largest and best houses in Plymouth Colony, in which he operated a general store, although he was chiefly engaged in the beaver trade. He built the first wharf in the Colony, at his place on Eel River, (Plymouth), and he was part owner of the first ship built at Plymouth. He owned the first horse on record in the Colony, in 1644, and he sold the first looking glass in Plymouth. His record of officeholding and public service was almost continuous from the signing of "The Mayflower Compact", as he was a member of the Governor's Council from Plymouth, 1623 through 1626. He was an Assistant, 1633 to 1636, and in 1637, he was one of the volunteer in the aid of Massachusetts Bay and Connecticut in their war with the "Pequods", or Pequot War as it was called, and was of the Committee appointed to levy an assessment to pay the charges of the expedition. In 1642 he was chosen to the Council Of War from Plymouth, and served to 1644. He was mentioned several times in court orders, and was always a man with the courage of his convictions, cool in the face of danger, filled with the spirit of adventure, yet conscientious in the responsibilities of leadership, who in his two trips to America, Virginia in 1609/1610, and Plymouth, 1620, had proven himself an explorer, pioneer, and settler, who as the Immigrant Ancestor was a most worthy progenitor of the Hopkins family in America. Although some historians and genealogists hold that Mr. Stephen Hopkins was of Watton-under edge Gloucestershire, England, b. abt. 1585, d. 1644, Plymouth, Massachusetts, it is thought that Mr. Stephen Hopkins,

in the other six ships, as arranged by Sir Thomas Gates. Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Summers, and Captain Christopher Newport, decided to abandon the project, and in 1611 or 1612, Stephen Hopkins returned to England, living in London, where he married his second wife, Elizabeth Fisher in March, 1617.

Note: John Fiske, the historian, has been reputed to have said that the wreck of the "Sea Venture" gave William Shakespeare inspiration for some of the material which he used in writing "The Tempest", which was performed before the King in 1611.

Mayflower Passenger to Plymouth, 1620: Mr. Stephen Hopkins of London, England, and his second wife, Elizabeth Fisher, with their daughter, Damaris, who was under 2 years of age, and their child Oceanus, who was born on the Mayflower, and his two children by his first marriage, Constance and Gyles, and two servants, Edward Doty and Edward Leister, came as Passengers on the "Mayflower", and after the third exploring party, landed at Plymouth on 11th December, 1620 (Old Style Calendar),/21st December, 1620. Stephen Hopkins was the 14th Signer of "The Mayflower Compact", on 11th November, 1620 (Old Style Calendar),/21st November, 1620, and he was a member of the first exploratory expedition to select a suitable site for the Mayflower Passengers to settle. He was also a member of the third exploratory expedition on 16 December, 1620, which engaged in the first encounter 18 December, 1620 with the Indians, afterwhich the site of Plymouth was selected for the settlement. Stephen Hopkins and his family settled near the Eel River, but his real home was in Plymouth on a strip of land reaching from Leyden Street to Middle Street, where he built one of the largest and best houses in Plymouth Colony, in which he operated a general store, although he was chiefly engaged in the beaver trade. He built the first wharf in the Colony, at his place on Eel River, (Plymouth), and he was part owner of the first ship built at Plymouth. He owned the first horse on record in the Colony, in 1644, and he sold the first looking glass in Plymouth. His record of officeholding and public service was almost continuous from the signing of "The Mayflower Compact", as he was a member of the Governor's Council from Plymouth, 1623 through 1626. He was an Assistant, 1633 to 1636, and in 1637, he was one of the volunteer in the aid of Massachusetts Bay and Connecticut in their war with the "Pequods", or Pequot War as it was called, and was of the Committee appointed to levy an assessment to pay the charges of the expedition. In 1642 he was chosen to the Council Of War from Plymouth, and served to 1644. He was mentioned several times in court orders, and was always a man with the courage of his convictions, cool in the face of danger, filled with the spirit of adventure, yet conscientious in the responsibilities of leadership, who in his two trips to America, Virginia in 1609/1610, and Plymouth, 1620, had proven himself an explorer, pioneer, and settler, who as the Immigrant Ancestor was a most worthy progenitor of the Hopkins family in America. Although some historians and genealogists hold that Mr. Stephen Hopkins was of Watton-under edge Gloucestershire, England, b. abt. 1585, d. 1644, Plymouth, Massachusetts, it is thought that Mr. Stephen Hopkins,

Immigrant Ancestor, Passenger on the "Sea Venture" to Virginia, in 1609/1610, and 14th Signer of "The Mayflower Compact", and Passenger on the "Mayflower" to Plymouth, in 1620, descended as follows:

mistaken

A. Stephen Hopkins, b. probably Coventry, England, d. ___, m. ___ ___, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue. Stephen Hopkins, entered as scholar, King's College, Cambridgeshire, afterwards became a fellow and served as provost of the college. He was Chaplain to Cardinal Pole, and was instituted March, 1556/1557, to the living of East Northam, in the gift of Eaton College, and held the two benefits in unison. Termed Confessor to the Bishop of Aquila, the Spanish Ambassador. His son:

B. William Hopkins, b. probably Coventry, England, d. ___, m. ___ ___, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue. William Hopkins represented Coventry in the 22nd and 23rd reign of Edward IV of England. William Hopkins had the following sons:
   1. William Hopkins.
   2. Richard Hopkins.
   3. Nicholas Hopkins.

C. Nicholas Hopkins, b. probably Coventry, England, d. ___, m. Mary Poole, sister of Sir Giles Poole, Colonel Of Arms, b. ___, d. ___. Nicholas Hopkins was the Sheriff of Coventry, England, 1561. Nicholas Hopkins and his wife Mary Poole had at least two sons:
   1. Giles/Gyles Hopkins.
   2. Stephen Hopkins, Mayflower Passenger, and 14th Signer of "The Mayflower Compact", of whom more follows in detail.

Note: The generation number is not given for the father, grandfather, and great-grandfather of Stephen Hopkins. They are merely designated as A, B, C, and the Roman Numeral I, is assigned to Mr. Stephen Hopkins, the Immigrant Ancestor, who was the progenitor of the Hopkins Family in America, with whom we are concerned.

Genealogical Note:-Regarding the name of the first wife of Mr. Stephen Hopkins: Although it has been generally accepted that the name of the first wife of Mr. Stephen Hopkins is unknown, after much research the writer is inclined to believe that her name was probably Constance/Constanta Dudley, whose mother was probable Constanta Mompesson. Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his first wife named their daughter Constance/Constanta Hopkins, most probably naming her for both his first wife Constance/Constanta Dudley, and her mother Constanta Mompesson. The name Constanta is most unusual, and the fact that Elder William Brewster, who had been well acquainted with Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his family in England before coming to America, referred to the daughter of Mr. Stephen Hopkins as "Constanta", as did Governor William Bradford, strengthens the belief. Material presented by Annie Arnoux Haxton in "Signers Of The Mayflower Compact", would also appear to strenghten the belief. It would therefore appear reasonable to assume that "Constance" was the anglicized version of "Constanta." It has been proven and is agreed by all that Constance/Constanta

Immigrant Ancestor, Passenger on the "Sea Venture" to Virginia, in 1609/1610, and 14th Signer of "The Mayflower Compact", and Passenger on the "Mayflower" to Plymouth, in 1620, descended as follows:

mistaken

A. Stephen Hopkins, b. probably Coventry, England, d. ___, m. ___ ___, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue. Stephen Hopkins, entered as scholar, King's College, Cambridgeshire, afterwards became a fellow and served as provost of the college. He was Chaplain to Cardinal Pole, and was instituted March, 1556/1557, to the living of East Northam, in the gift of Eaton College, and held the two benefits in unison. Termed Confessor to the Bishop of Aquila, the Spanish Ambassador. His son:

B. William Hopkins, b. probably Coventry, England, d. ___, m. ___ ___, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue. William Hopkins represented Coventry in the 22nd and 23rd reign of Edward IV of England. William Hopkins had the following sons:

1. William Hopkins.
2. Richard Hopkins.
3. Nicholas Hopkins.

C. Nicholas Hopkins, b. probably Coventry, England, d. ___, m. Mary Poole, sister of Sir Giles Poole, Colonel Of Arms, b. ___, d. ___. Nicholas Hopkins was the Sheriff of Coventry, England, 1561. Nicholas Hopkins and his wife Mary Poole had at least two sons:

1. Giles/Gyles Hopkins.
2. Stephen Hopkins, Mayflower Passenger, and 14th Signer of "The Mayflower Compact", of whom more follows in detail.

Note: The generation number is not given for the father, grandfather, and great-grandfather of Stephen Hopkins. They are merely designated as A, B, C, and the Roman Numeral I, is assigned to Mr. Stephen Hopkins, the Immigrant Ancestor, who was the progenitor of the Hopkins Family in America, with whom we are concerned.

Genealogical Note:-Regarding the name of the first wife of Mr. Stephen Hopkins: Although it has been generally accepted that the name of the first wife of Mr. Stephen Hopkins is unknown, after much research the writer is inclined to believe that her name was probably Constance/Constanta Dudley, whose mother was probable Constanta Mompesson. Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his first wife named their daughter Constance/Constanta Hopkins, most probably naming her for both his first wife Constance/Constanta Dudley, and her mother Constanta Mompesson. The name Constanta is most unusual, and the fact that Elder William Brewster, who had been well acquainted with Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his family in England before coming to America, referred to the daughter of Mr. Stephen Hopkins as "Constanta", as did Governor William Bradford, strengthens the belief. Material presented by Annie Arnoux Haxton in "Signers Of The Mayflower Compact", would also appear to strenghten the belief. It would therefore appear reasonable to assume that "Constance" was the anglicized version of "Constanta." It has been proven and is agreed by all that Constance/Constanta

Hopkins was the daughter of Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his first wife, who this writer believes to have been Constance/Constanta Dudley. Continued research will be made in an effort to establish the indisputable proof of the name of the first wife of Mr. Stephen Hopkins as being Constance/Constanta Dudley.

*I. (a) Mr. Stephen Hopkins, Immigrant Ancestor, Mayflower Passenger, 14th Signer of "The Mayflower Compact", b. prob. in Coventry, England, ___, d. Plymouth, Massachusetts, between 16 June, 1644/27 July, 1644, m. (1), England, ___ ___, thought to have been Constance/Constanta Dudley, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue; he m. (2), at St. Mary Matfellon (White Chapel), London, England, 19 February, 1617/1618, Elizabeth Fisher, b. ___, d. Plymouth, Massachusetts, between 1640/1644, and had issue. The children of his two marriages were:

Children by 1st m. to ___ ___, thought to have been Constance/Constanta Dudley:

(2-a) 1. Constance/Constanta Hopkins, b. before 1613, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, after mid October, 1677, m. Plymouth, Massachusetts, between 1623 and 1 June, 1627 (some records show 22 May, 1627), Nicholas Snow, Immigrant Ancestor who came on the "Ann", of Hexton, Middlesex, England, b. ___, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 15 November, 1676/25 November, 1676, and they had issue, of whom more later.

(2-b) 2. Giles/Gyles Hopkins, b. abt. 1607, d. Yarmouth, Barnstable County, Massachusetts, before 16 April, 1690/26 April, 1690, m. Plymouth, Massachusetts, 9 October, 1639/19 October, 1639, Katherine Wheldon, dau. of Gabriel Wheldon, b. ___, d. Yarmouth, Massachusetts, after 5 March, 1688/1689,/ 15 March, 1689, and had the following children:

(3-a) 1. Mary Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, November, 1640, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 2 July, 1700, m. Eastham, Massachusetts, 3 January, 1665, Samuel Smith, b. bapt. Hingham, Massachusetts, 11 July, 1641, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 22 March, 1696/1697, and had issue.

(3-b) 2. Stephen Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, September, 1642, d. Harwich, Massachusetts, 10 October, 1718, m. (1), Eastham, Massachusetts, 23 May, 1667, Mary Merrick, dau. of William Merrick, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, 4 November, 1650, d. before 1701; m. (2), 7/9 April, 1701, Bethia Atkins, b. ___, d. Harwich, Massachusetts, 24/25 March, 1726. He left issue only by his first wife, Mary Merrick. Their children were:

Children by 1st m. to Mary Merrick:

1. Elizabeth Hopkins, b. 1668, d. ___.

(4-a) 2. Stephen Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, 1670, d. 9 April, 1732/1733, m. 1692, Sarah Howe/Howes, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue:

1. Jonathan Hopkins, b. 1693, d. 1717.
2. Thankful Hopkins, b. April, 1700, d. ___.
3. Elkanah Hopkins, b. 12 August, 1703,

Immigrant Ancestor, Passenger on the "Sea Venture" to Virginia, in 1609/1610, and 14th Signer of "The Mayflower Compact", and Passenger on the "Mayflower" to Plymouth, in 1620, descended as follows:

mistaken

A. Stephen Hopkins, b. probably Coventry, England, d. ___, m. ___ ___, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue. Stephen Hopkins, entered as scholar, King's College, Cambridgeshire, afterwards became a fellow and served as provost of the college. He was Chaplain to Cardinal Pole, and was instituted March, 1556/1557, to the living of East Northam, in the gift of Eaton College, and held the two benefits in unison. Termed Confessor to the Bishop of Aquila, the Spanish Ambassador. His son:

B. William Hopkins, b. probably Coventry, England, d. ___, m. ___ ___, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue. William Hopkins represented Coventry in the 22nd and 23rd reign of Edward IV of England. William Hopkins had the following sons:

1. William Hopkins.
2. Richard Hopkins.
3. Nicholas Hopkins.

C. Nicholas Hopkins, b. probably Coventry, England, d. ___, m. Mary Poole, sister of Sir Giles Poole, Colonel Of Arms, b. ___, d. ___. Nicholas Hopkins was the Sheriff of Coventry, England, 1561. Nicholas Hopkins and his wife Mary Poole had at least two sons:

1. Giles/Gyles Hopkins.
2. Stephen Hopkins, Mayflower Passenger, and 14th Signer of "The Mayflower Compact", of whom more follows in detail.

Note: The generation number is not given for the father, grandfather, and great-grandfather of Stephen Hopkins. They are merely designated as A, B, C, and the Roman Numeral I, is assigned to Mr. Stephen Hopkins, the Immigrant Ancestor, who was the progenitor of the Hopkins Family in America, with whom we are concerned.

Genealogical Note:-Regarding the name of the first wife of Mr. Stephen Hopkins: Although it has been generally accepted that the name of the first wife of Mr. Stephen Hopkins is unknown, after much research the writer is inclined to believe that her name was probably Constance/Constanta Dudley, whose mother was probable Constanta Mompesson. Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his first wife named their daughter Constance/Constanta Hopkins, most probably naming her for both his first wife Constance/Constanta Dudley, and her mother Constanta Mompesson. The name Constanta is most unusual, and the fact that Elder William Brewster, who had been well acquainted with Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his family in England before coming to America, referred to the daughter of Mr. Stephen Hopkins as "Constanta", as did Governor William Bradford, strengthens the belief. Material presented by Annie Arnoux Haxton in "Signers Of The Mayflower Compact", would also appear to strenghten the belief. It would therefore appear reasonable to assume that "Constance" was the anglicized version of "Constanta." It has been proven and is agreed by all that Constance/Constanta

Hopkins was the daughter of Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his first wife, who this writer believes to have been Constance/Constanta Dudley. Continued research will be made in an effort to establish the indisputable proof of the name of the first wife of Mr. Stephen Hopkins as being Constance/Constanta Dudley.

*I. (a) Mr. Stephen Hopkins, Immigrant Ancestor, Mayflower Passenger, 14th Signer of "The Mayflower Compact", b. prob. in Coventry, England, ___, d. Plymouth, Massachusetts, between 16 June, 1644/27 July, 1644, m. (1), England, ___ ___, thought to have been Constance/Constanta Dudley, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue; he m. (2), at St. Mary Matfellon (White Chapel), London, England, 19 February, 1617/1618, Elizabeth Fisher, b. ___, d. Plymouth, Massachusetts, between 1640/1644, and had issue. The children of his two marriages were:

Children by 1st m. to ___ ___, thought to have been Constance/Constanta Dudley:

(2-a) 1. Constance/Constanta Hopkins, b. before 1613, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, after mid October, 1677, m. Plymouth, Massachusetts, between 1623 and 1 June, 1627 (some records show 22 May, 1627), Nicholas Snow, Immigrant Ancestor who came on the "Ann", of Hexton, Middlesex, England, b. ___, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 15 November, 1676/25 November, 1676, and they had issue, of whom more later.

(2-b) 2. Giles/Gyles Hopkins, b. abt. 1607, d. Yarmouth, Barnstable County, Massachusetts, before 16 April, 1690/26 April, 1690, m. Plymouth, Massachusetts, 9 October, 1639/19 October, 1639, Katherine Wheldon, dau. of Gabriel Wheldon, b. ___, d. Yarmouth, Massachusetts, after 5 March, 1688/1689,/ 15 March, 1689, and had the following children:

(3-a) 1. Mary Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, November, 1640, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 2 July, 1700, m. Eastham, Massachusetts, 3 January, 1665, Samuel Smith, b. bapt. Hingham, Massachusetts, 11 July, 1641, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 22 March, 1696/1697, and had issue.

(3-b) 2. Stephen Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, September, 1642, d. Harwich, Massachusetts, 10 October, 1718, m. (1), Eastham, Massachusetts, 23 May, 1667, Mary Merrick, dau. of William Merrick, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, 4 November, 1650, d. before 1701; m. (2), 7/9 April, 1701, Bethia Atkins, b. ___, d. Harwich, Massachusetts, 24/25 March, 1726. He left issue only by his first wife, Mary Merrick. Their children were:

Children by 1st m. to Mary Merrick:

1. Elizabeth Hopkins, b. 1668, d. ___.

(4-a) 2. Stephen Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, 1670, d. 9 April, 1732/1733, m. 1692, Sarah Howe/Howes, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue:

1. Jonathan Hopkins, b. 1693, d. 1717.
2. Thankful Hopkins, b. April, 1700, d. ___.
3. Elkanah Hopkins, b. 12 August, 1703, d. 1720.
4. Thomas Hopkins, b. June, 1705, d. ___.

(5-a) 5. Ebenezer Hopkins, b. January, 1705/1706, d. ___, m. 12 October, 1732, Rebecca Crosby, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue:

1. Mary Hopkins, b. 20 March, 1732,d. ___.
2. Eunice Hopkins, b. 18 October, 1734, d. ___.
3. Phebe Hopkins, b. 12 April, 1737, d. ___.
4. Stephen Hopkins, (twin) b. 1 May, 1739, d. ___.
5. Abijah Hopkins, (twin) b. 1 May, 1739, d. ___.

3. Judah J. Hopkins, b. ___, d. ___.
4. Ruth Hopkins, b. 1674, d. ___.
5. Nathaniel Hopkins, b. 1680, d. ___.
6. Samuel Hopkins, b. 1682, d. ___.
7. Joseph Hopkins, b. 1688, d. ___, m. Mary Mayo, b. ___, d. ___.
8. Benjamin Hopkins, b. 1689, d. ___, m. Rachel Lincoln, b. ___, d. ___.
9. Mary Hopkins, b. 1692, d. ___, m. John Maker, b. ___, d. ___.

3. John Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, 1643, d. 1643, at age of 3 months.

(3-c) 4. Abigail Hopkins, b. Yarmouth, Massachusetts, October, 1644, d. ___, m. Eastham, Massachusetts, 23 May, 1667, William Merrick, b. 15 September, 1643, d. Brewster, Massachusetts, 30 October, 1732. He m. (2), after 22 April, 1691, Elizabeth (___) Snow, widow of Jabez Snow, b. before 1656, d. after 8 January, 1732/1733. Issue.

(3-d) 5. Deborah Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, June, 1648, d. between 28 February, 1686 and 7 December, 1727, m. Eastham, Massachusetts, 27 July, 1668, Josiah Cook, b. ___, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 31 January, 1731/1732, and had issue.

(3-e) 6. Caleb Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, January, 1650, d. before 22 May 1728, m. before 10 May, 1692, Mary Williams, b. ___, d. after 26 May, 1709 and before 5 June, 1728, and had issue.

(3-f) 7. Ruth Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, June, 1653, d. ___, m. Samuel Mayo, b. ___, d. ___. Issue.

(3-g) 8. Joshua Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, June 1657, d. before 31 August, 1738, m. Eastham, Massachusetts, 26 May, 1681, Mary Cole, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, 10 March, 1658, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 1 March, 1733/1734, and had issue.

9. William Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, 9 January, 1660, d. ___, unmarried.

10. Elizabeth Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, November,

d. 1720.
4. Thomas Hopkins, b. June, 1705, d. ___.
(5-a) 5. Ebenezer Hopkins, b. January, 1705/1706, d. ___, m. 12 October, 1732, Rebecca Crosby, b. ___, d. ___, and had issue:
   1. Mary Hopkins, b. 20 March, 1732,d. ___.
   2. Eunice Hopkins, b. 18 October, 1734, d. ___.
   3. Phebe Hopkins, b. 12 April, 1737, d. ___.
   4. Stephen Hopkins, (twin) b. 1 May, 1739, d. ___.
   5. Abijah Hopkins, (twin) b. 1 May, 1739, d. ___.

3. Judah J. Hopkins, b. ___, d. ___.
4. Ruth Hopkins, b. 1674, d. ___.
5. Nathaniel Hopkins, b. 1680, d. ___.
6. Samuel Hopkins, b. 1682, d. ___.
7. Joseph Hopkins, b. 1688, d. ___, m. Mary Mayo, b. ___, d. ___.
8. Benjamin Hopkins, b. 1689, d. ___, m. Rachel Lincoln, b. ___, d. ___.
9. Mary Hopkins, b. 1692, d. ___, m. John Maker, b. ___, d. ___.

3. John Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, 1643, d. 1643, at age of 3 months.

(3-c) 4. Abigail Hopkins, b. Yarmouth, Massachusetts, October, 1644, d. ___, m. Eastham, Massachusetts, 23 May, 1667, William Merrick, b. 15 September, 1643, d. Brewster, Massachusetts, 30 October, 1732. He m. (2), after 22 April, 1691, Elizabeth (___) Snow, widow of Jabez Snow, b. before 1656, d. after 8 January, 1732/1733. Issue.

(3-d) 5. Deborah Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, June, 1648, d. between 28 February, 1686 and 7 December, 1727, m. Eastham, Massachusetts, 27 July, 1668, Josiah Cook, b. ___, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 31 January, 1731/1732, and had issue.

(3-e) 6. Caleb Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, January, 1650, d. before 22 May 1728, m. before 10 May, 1692, Mary Williams, b. ___, d. after 26 May, 1709 and before 5 June, 1728, and had issue.

(3-f) 7. Ruth Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, June, 1653, d. ___, m. Samuel Mayo, b. ___, d. ___. Issue.

(3-g) 8. Joshua Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, June 1657, d. before 31 August, 1738, m. Eastham, Massachusetts, 26 May, 1681, Mary Cole, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, 10 March, 1658, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 1 March, 1733/1734, and had issue.

9. William Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, 9 January, 1660, d. ___, unmarried.

10. Elizabeth Hopkins, b. Eastham, Massachusetts, November,

LINEAGES AND GENEALOGICAL NOTES

A Compilation Of

Some Of The Lineages And

Family Lines

In The Genealogy

Of

Louise Elizabeth Burton

(Mrs. Harry Joseph Morris)

With

Genealogical Notes

Researched and Compiled from Public Records, Published Authorities
and Books, Private Collections and Records which include Family
Bible Records, Family Letters, Memorabilia, Personal Interviews,
for all of which credit is given as documented,
and Original Research

Researched, Compiled, Edited, Published

By

Mrs. Harry Joseph Morris, F.H.G., C.G.

(Louise Elizabeth Burton Morris)

Copyright

By

Mrs. Harry Joseph Morris

(Louise Elizabeth Burton Morris)

1967

GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY
OF THE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST
OF LATTER-DAY SAINTS

Printed
By
B & W Printing & Letter Service
1315 West Davis
Dallas, Texas
United States Of America

behin[illegible]e smoke screen of the church, and, for one reason or another, the company charters were changed in 1612, and 1618, until they reverted again to crown charters in 1624.

Meanwhile, in the exhileration of victory, on Feb. 27, 1609, a few months before James signed the new charter, letters were written to certain friends in Plymouth, England, all liberty minded, to join the "body politic," before the signing. Many of them did so. More important still was a nicely worded invitation, sent out on June 9, 1609, only seven days after the charter was signed, by the Earl of Southampton, the Earl of Pembroke, Robert Sidney, Thomas West, Lord de La Warr, Sir Thomas Smythe, Sir Robert Mansfield, Sir Thomas Gates, to

> "His majestie's subjects in the Free States the United Provinces,"

offering them in an English colony in America the place of refuge they were seeking in the Netherlands. Now, these people were none other than some of our "Mayflower Planters" in Leyden and elsewhere. The above men sending the invitation were, for the most part, supporters of Sandys in Parliament, and old friends of Philip Sidney and Essex, with whom William Brewster and Davison had served in the Netherlands and other places. They were, to a great extent, the instigators of the "Popular" movement. The execution of Essex in 1601 was probably brought about by the Court party due to his affiliation with the Patriot or Liberal party. Essex was a real friend to Davison and Brewster (see Brewster Family).

Just as soon as James heard of the above invitation he sought Archbishop Bancroft of England, and soon thereafter, the good Bishop finding that certain subjects were preparing to depart "in great numbers, obtained a proclamation from the King forbidding any to go without his Majesty's leave."

However, the organization of the Virginia Company under the new charter progressed in spite of all obstacles.

Sir Thomas Smythe was made Treasurer, chosen probably by his associates because of his assumed loyalty to the Patriot cause. He had been, in fact, imprisoned for his part in the rising of Essex. He was regarded as "a good Patriot."

The new charter of 1609 attracted a long list of adventurers and beneficiaries who affiliated with the company in the undertaking. Many of the surnames are familiar in New England history. Here are a few of the names on the roll. Some came to America, others did not.

Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, friend of William Brewster Sr. and his son William Brewster Jr.

Thomas Cecil, Earle of Exeter.

Robert Sydney, Lord Lisle.

John Stanhope, Lord Stanhope — Postmaster [illegible]gland. Davison wrote to Stanhope in 1590 regarding the Scrooby Post for William Brewster.

Sir Thomas Smythe
Sir Oliver Cromwell
*Sir Thomas Gates
Sir Robert Kelligrew
Sir Edwin Sandys
Sir Warwicke Heale
Sir Francis Bacon
Sir Samuel Sandys
*Sir George Somers
Sir Baptist Hicks
*Capt. Christopher Newport
Capt. John Martin
Capt. Thomas Button
Esq. John Moore
Esq. Thomas Sandys
Esq. Richard Sandys, son of Sir Edwin Sandys
Esq. William Brewster
  Edward Brewster, son of William Brewster
  John Robinson
  Richard Hakluyt, Minister and Geographer
  John Merrick, Merchant
  John Pory—an old Cambridge friend of William Brewster. Visited him at Plymouth in 1622.
  George Sandys, Gentleman
  Nicholas Ferrar
  Ralph Hamor
  George Yeardley, Gentleman
  Peter Latham, Gentleman
  John Fletcher
  Gabriel Archer
  Francis Covell
  Richard Rogers
✓ Martin Freeman
  William Strachy
✓ Stephen Hopkins, Clerk to Minister
✓ Henry Paine
  William Martin
  Christopher Martin

These are only a few of the long list of Englishmen who had become vitally interested in the 1609 charter.

After many meetings, most of them at the spacious home of Sir Thomas Smythe, Treasurer and Governor of the Virginia Company, a fleet of ships were obtained and fitted out for the expedition.

Hopkins

Virginia's Indian tribes haven't found harmony

They see a 400-year legacy of oppression, discrimination

By BILL BASKERVILL
Associated Press

King William, Va. — In a week in which Americans celebrated a holiday of harmony between colonists and Indians sharing a grateful meal, some descendants of tribal peoples said they are still fighting a "colonial mentality" that is glossed over in history books.

In Virginia, where a proposed reservoir project between two reservations is said to threaten Indian archaeological and sacred sites, even attempts to officially commemorate history have revived friction.

Earlier this year, the state angered Indians by designating a planned observance of the 400-year anniversary of Jamestown as "Celebration 2007." Arrival of the English settlers was nothing to celebrate, the Indians said. The complaints prompted the state to remove the word "celebration" from any official references to the event.

"I see 400 years of a legacy of oppression and discrimination," said Chief G. Anne Richardson of the Rappahannock Indians, one of the state's eight main tribal groups with a total of 2,700 members. She said the state has "not been able to move past the colonial mentality."

Many in other tribes that came into contact with early settlers share Richardson's views. In Massachusetts, the Wampanoag have staged days of mourning near Plymouth Rock, casting Thanksgiving as a symbol of America's poor treatment of Indians.

Tears of society

Last week in Richmond, Debora "Littlewing" Moore wore tears of red paint on her face to the 354th annual Indian tribute in which the Pamunkey and Mattaponi tribes present dead game to Virginia's governor at the Capitol.

"These are tears of the blood of our people," Moore said. "We'll never be understood and accepted. There is an oppression still in this country. I came here at war today."

Even before Massachusetts' Pilgrim settlers shared their Thanksgiving meal with the Indians, relations between the first permanent English settlers in America and the native people had gotten off to a rocky start. Those first settlers had arrived at a small peninsula along the James River on May 14, 1607. This was Jamestown.

A few weeks later they were attacked by the Powhatan chiefdom, an alliance of about 30 tribes with 13,000 people.

The conflict lasted until 1614 * when the English captured Pocahontas, daughter of the Powhatans' chief. Her uncle, Opechancanough, chief of the Pamunkey tribe, raided English settlements in 1622, killing nearly 350 colonists and nearly driving the remaining settlers back to England.

Hostilities persisted until 1632, when both sides agreed to peace. But colonial expansion continued apace, gobbling up Powhatan land. Opechancanough retaliated again in 1644 in a final spasm of attacks, killing more than 500 colonists.

But by then the English population was too large to be defeated, and Opechancanough was eventually captured and killed.

Virginia's native people have been nearly invisible ever since, said Danielle Moretti-Langholtz, a cultural anthropologist at the College of William and Mary. "The remnant population of the time kept a very low profile," maintaining a subsistence lifestyle almost into the 20th century, she said.

The Racial Integrity Act of 1924 tried to legislate Indians out of existence, linking Indians and blacks into a larger non-white culture and barring marriage between whites and non-whites. The act, an effort by Virginia's Southern aristocracy to maintain white supremacy, made it a crime for people to identify themselves as Indian. It was overturned by the U.S. Supreme Court in 1967.

Colony sets Indian policy

Virginia's 17th-century policy toward its native people set a tone for the nation's treatment of Indians, said Edward D. Ragan, a historian and expert on American Indian culture at Syracuse University.

Eradication and land grabs were embraced by Virginians George Washington and Thomas Jefferson when they were president, policies that had their origins in Virginia early in the 17th century.

The Indians called Washington "Conotocarious" — devourer of villages. He ordered the destruction of villages in New York during the Revolutionary War and warned other tribes he would do the same thing to them if they fought Americans, Ragan said.

Jefferson sought to peacefully eradicate Indian culture, Ragan added.

"When Thomas Jefferson comes along, his policy tends to be to educate children in Christian ways, to reconstruct Indians socially by emphasizing agriculture as a way of confining men to a plot of land instead of hunting and roaming," Ragan said.

Seeking sovereignty

Virginia's Indians continue to fight for federal recognition of their sovereignty, first sought in 1921 when Rappahannock Chief George Nelson went before Congress.

Note: Our Stephen Hopkins was there in Virginia during Powhatan's first attack! His wife died about then considering herself a widow. He brought his new wife & children on the Mayflower

Family Record

Family No.

Snow
Surname

Father — Nicholas ^{3}SNOW

1623 "Ann" to Plymouth

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	25	Jan	1599/1600	bp. St. Leonard's Shoreditch London (lived Hoxton, Middlesex)			← This was near the Hopkins' residence) in London after 1610.	
Death	15	Nov	1676	Eastham	Cape Cod	Ply. Colony (MA)	Perhaps the families met in	
Buried				Old Cove Cemetery,	Orleans (Barnstable)	MA	England ??	
Married	22 May or 1 June		1627	Plymouth		Plymouth Colony		

Occupation surveyor, deputy, tax collector, constable + selectman — Town Clerk for 16 years - Eastham Military Church

Places Lived — Family to Eastham "Nauset" in 1646 with 6 or 7 others

Other Wives

his parents {Nicholas Snow
Katerina Harwood

His Father's Name Nicholas Snow

His Mother's Maiden Name Elizabeth Rowelles

See Paine Family for Children of Thomas and Mary (Snow) Paine

Mother — Constance HOPKINS

1620 "Mayflower" to Plymouth

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	160_	Wotton Under Edge, Gloucestershire		England	Tradition says Constance was	
Death	15	Oct	1677	Eastham	Cape Cod	Plymouth Colony	"beautiful as well as patient."	
Buried								

Occupation Military Church ? Anglican / Pilgrim

Places Lived

Other Husbands

Her Father's Name Stephen Hopkins

Her Mother's Maiden Name Constance Dudley

Reports say there were 3 more daughters after Ruth *(Hannah, Rebecca + "an infant" bef. April 1651) but I suspect these were grandchildren! These Hannah + Rebecca wrong ages for Richard's wives.)

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Mark Snow	Birth	9	May	1628	Plymouth		Plymouth Colony	
		Death	bef. 9	Jan	1694/5	Eastham		"	
	Spouse - ① Anna Cooke (1636-1656) ② Jane Prence (1637-1712)	Married	① 18 ② 9	Jan Jan	1654 1669	" Harwich		"	
+	2. Mary Snow (10 Ch)	Birth		ca	1630	Plymouth			
		Death	28	Apr	1704	Eastham			
	Spouse - Thomas Paine (-1706)	Married		ca	1650	"			
	3. Sarah Snow	Birth			1632	Plymouth			
		Death			1703+				
	Spouse - William Walker (1620-1703)	Married	25	Jan	1654	Eastham			
	4. (Lt) Joseph Snow	Birth	24	Nov	1634	Plymouth			
		Death	3	Jan	1722/3	Eastham			
	Spouse - Mary Higgins (-1723+)	Married		ca	1670				
	5. Stephen Snow	Birth		ca	1636	Plymouth			
		Death	17	Dec	1705	Eastham			
	Spouse - ① Susanna Deane (widow of Jos Rogers) ② Mary Bickford (-21 May 1706)	Married	① 28 ② 9	Oct Apr	1663 1701	" "			
	6. John Snow	Birth		ca	1638	Plymouth			
		Death	before 4	Apr	1692	"			
	Spouse - Mary Smalley (1647-1699) She m/2 Ephraim Doane	Married	19	Sep	1667	"			
	7. Elizabeth Snow	Birth		ca	1640	Plymouth			
		Death	16	June	1678	"			
	Spouse - Thomas Rogers (1638-1678)	Married	13	Dec	1665	"			
	8. Ruth Snow	Birth		ca	1644	Plymouth			
		Death	27	Jan	1716/7	"			
	Spouse - John Cole (1644-1724/5)	Married	12	Dec	1666	"			
	9.	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							
	10. * A younger William Snow (came 1638)	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse - did have daus. Hannah + Rebecca	Married							

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

○ In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

This chart does not agree with TAG 14:228 - May supersede it.

Dodge
D 166

Family Group Sheet

Snow
English Ancestors

Grandparents: - Parish - ~~St [illegible]~~ St Martin in the fields church, co. Middlesex
Hoxton MDX

Father: Nicholaus Snow m. 10 May 1559 Mother: Katherine Harwoode

TAG 14: 228; (C A Torrey)

Parents:

Father: Nicholas Snowe
married 9 May 1599 at St Dunstan's, Stepney, Mdx

Mother: Elizabeth Rowells of Ratcliff? (Rowe)

children: (there may be others not reported)
(8½ mos. later)

Nicholas Snowe (bp 25 Jan 1599/1600) son of Nicholas Snowe of Hoxton
(at St. Leonard's Shoreditch, London)

This baby is believed to have been the immigrant to New England in 1623.

(Banks says that the Hopkins family came from the adjoining parish in London i.e., St Mary's Whitechapel, and he may have followed them to New England to marry Constance)

double check this

Check this out!

(See) - This does not agree with Snow charts showing his mother was Mary Wookin

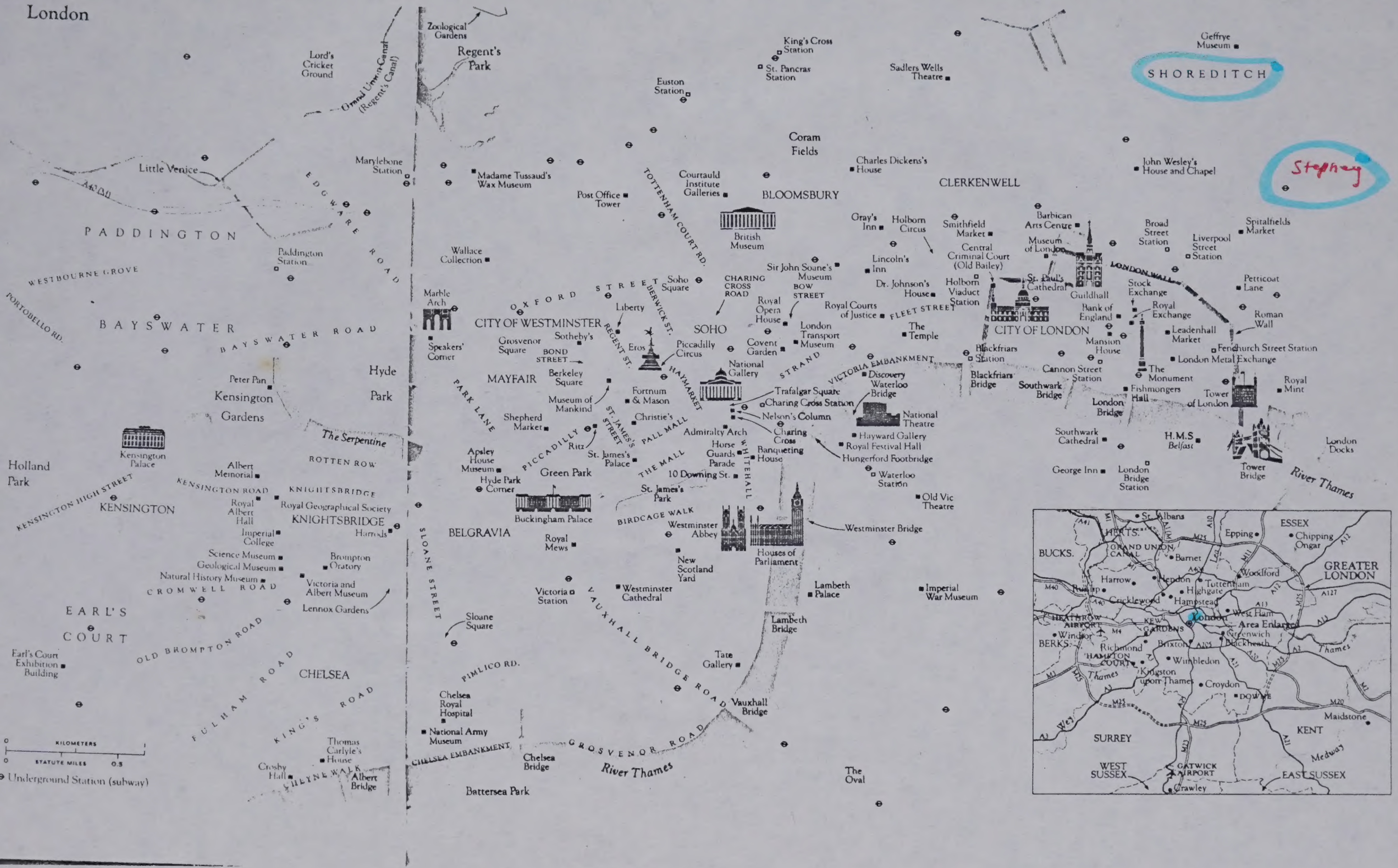
OVER

5970

OVER

Nicholas Snow's relatives? married 9 May 1599 at St Dunstan's, Stepney. He was baptized 25 Jan 1600 at St Leonard's Shoreditch, which is not very far from where the Stephen Hopkins' family lived after 1610.

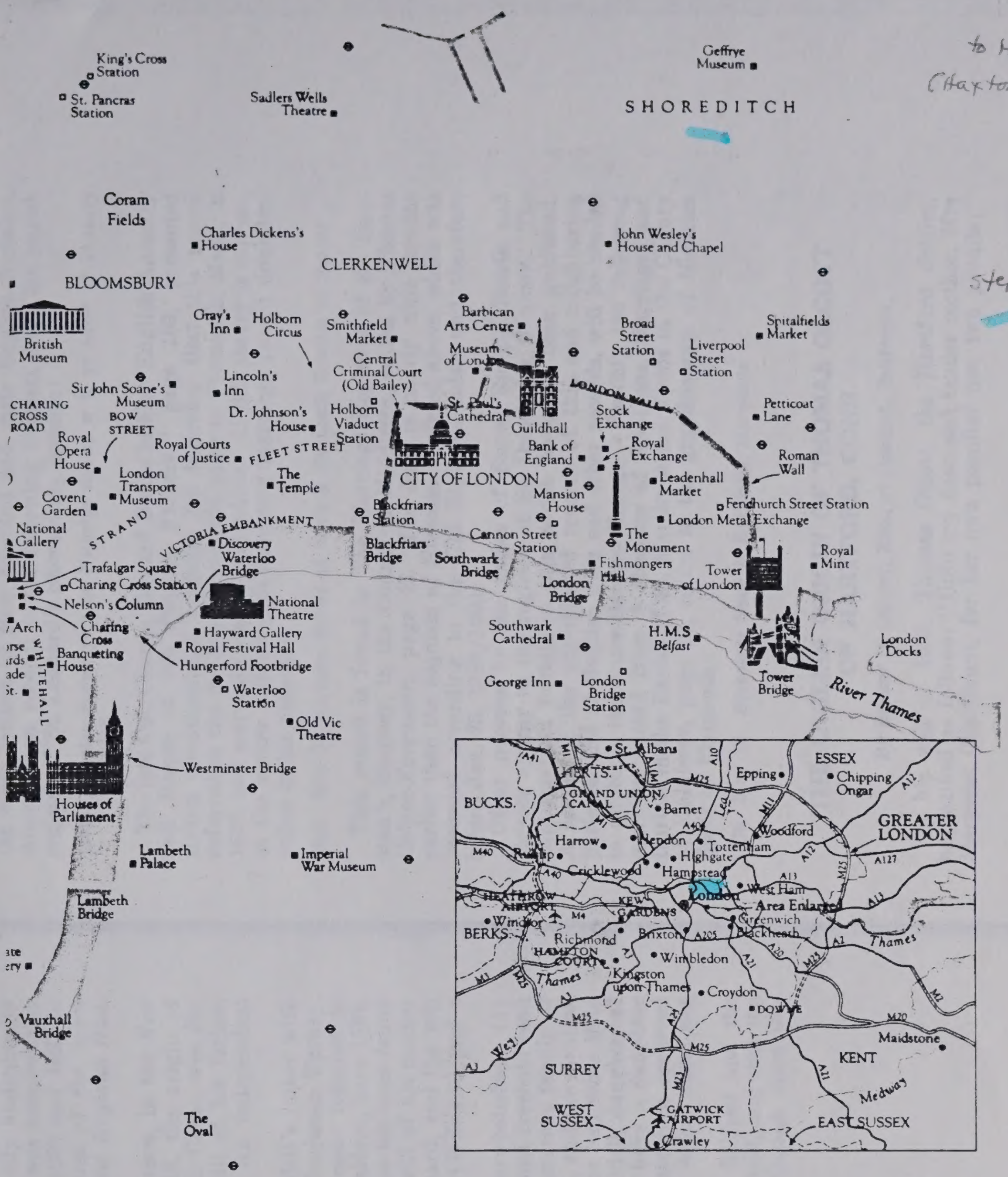
London



Lord's Cricket Ground
Grand Union Canal (Regent's Canal)
Zoological Gardens
Regent's Park
King's Cross Station
St. Pancras Station
Sadlers Wells Theatre
Geffrye Museum
SHOREDITCH
Euston Station
Coram Fields
Charles Dickens's House
CLERKENWELL
John Wesley's House and Chapel
Stephney
Little Venice
A40(M)
Marylebone Station
Madame Tussaud's Wax Museum
Post Office Tower
TOTTENHAM COURT RD.
Courtauld Institute Galleries
BLOOMSBURY
EDGWARE ROAD
PADDINGTON
Paddington Station
Wallace Collection
British Museum
Gray's Inn
Holborn Circus
Smithfield Market
Barbican Arts Centre
Broad Street Station
Liverpool Street Station
Spitalfields Market
WESTBOURNE GROVE
PORTOBELLO RD.
Marble Arch
OXFORD STREET
Soho Square
CHARING CROSS ROAD
Sir John Soane's Museum
Lincoln's Inn
Central Criminal Court (Old Bailey)
Museum of London
LONDON WALL
Petticoat Lane
BAYSWATER
BAYSWATER ROAD
CITY OF WESTMINSTER
Liberty
BERWICK ST.
BOW STREET
Royal Opera House
Dr. Johnson's House
Holborn Viaduct Station
St. Paul's Cathedral
Guildhall
Stock Exchange
Royal Exchange
Bank of England
Roman Wall
Speakers' Corner
Grosvenor Square
Sotheby's
BOND STREET
REGENT ST.
SOHO
Royal Courts of Justice
FLEET STREET
The Temple
CITY OF LONDON
Mansion House
Leadenhall Market
Fenchurch Street Station
London Metal Exchange
Hyde Park
Peter Pan
Kensington Gardens
MAYFAIR
Berkeley Square
Eros
Piccadilly Circus
Covent Garden
London Transport Museum
STRAND
VICTORIA EMBANKMENT
Blackfriars Station
Blackfriars Bridge
Cannon Street Station
The Monument
Royal Mint
PARK LANE
Museum of Mankind
Fortnum & Mason
HAYMARKET
National Gallery
Trafalgar Square
Charing Cross Station
Discovery
Waterloo Bridge
Southwark Bridge
Fishmongers Hall
London Bridge
Tower of London
Shepherd Market
Christie's
Nelson's Column
National Theatre
The Serpentine
Kensington Palace
ST. JAMES'S STREET
PALL MALL
Admiralty Arch
Charing Cross
Hayward Gallery
Royal Festival Hall
Hungerford Footbridge
Southwark Cathedral
H.M.S. Belfast
London Docks
Holland Park
Albert Memorial
ROTTEN ROW
Apsley House Museum
PICCADILLY
Ritz
St. James's Palace
THE MALL
Horse Guards Parade
WHITEHALL
Banqueting House
Waterloo Station
George Inn
London Bridge Station
Tower Bridge
River Thames
KENSINGTON HIGH STREET
KENSINGTON ROAD
KNIGHTSBRIDGE
Hyde Park Corner
Green Park
10 Downing St.
St. James's Park
Old Vic Theatre
KENSINGTON
Royal Albert Hall
Royal Geographical Society
Buckingham Palace
BIRDCAGE WALK
Westminster Abbey
Westminster Bridge
Imperial College
Harrods
SLOANE STREET
BELGRAVIA
Royal Mews
Houses of Parliament
Science Museum
Geological Museum
Brompton Oratory
Natural History Museum
New Scotland Yard
CROMWELL ROAD
Victoria and Albert Museum
Victoria Station
Westminster Cathedral
Lambeth Palace
Imperial War Museum
EARL'S COURT
Lennox Gardens
VAUXHALL BRIDGE ROAD
Sloane Square
Lambeth Bridge
Earl's Court Exhibition Building
OLD BROMPTON ROAD
CHELSEA
PIMLICO RD.
Tate Gallery
FULHAM ROAD
KING'S ROAD
Chelsea Royal Hospital
Vauxhall Bridge
National Army Museum
GROSVENOR ROAD
KILOMETERS
STATUTE MILES
0.5
Thomas Carlyle's House
Crosby Hall
CHEYNE WALK
Albert Bridge
CHELSEA EMBANKMENT
Chelsea Bridge
River Thames
The Oval
Underground Station (subway)
Battersea Park
St. Albans
HERTS.
Epping
ESSEX
Chipping Ongar
BUCKS.
GRAND UNION CANAL
Barnet
Woodford
GREATER LONDON
Harrow
Hendon
Tottenham
Highgate
Ruislip
Cricklewood
Hampstead
HEATHROW AIRPORT
KEW GARDENS
London
West Ham
Area Enlarged
Windsor
Greenwich
Blackheath
BERKS.
Richmond
Brixton
HAMPTON COURT
Wimbledon
Thames
Kingston upon Thames
Croydon
Dover
Maidstone
KENT
SURREY
Medway
WEST SUSSEX
GATWICK AIRPORT
EAST SUSSEX
Crawley

to Hackney (Haxton?)

stepney


King's Cross Station
St. Pancras Station
Sadlers Wells Theatre
Geffrye Museum
SHOREDITCH
Coram Fields
Charles Dickens's House
John Wesley's House and Chapel
CLERKENWELL
BLOOMSBURY
British Museum
Gray's Inn
Holborn Circus
Smithfield Market
Barbican Arts Centre
Museum of London
Broad Street Station
Liverpool Street Station
Spitalfields Market
Central Criminal Court (Old Bailey)
Lincoln's Inn
Sir John Soane's Museum
CHARING CROSS ROAD
BOW STREET
Dr. Johnson's House
Holborn Viaduct Station
St. Paul's Cathedral
Guildhall
LONDON WALL
Stock Exchange
Petticoat Lane
Royal Opera House
Royal Courts of Justice
FLEET STREET
Bank of England
Royal Exchange
Roman Wall
The Temple
CITY OF LONDON
Leadenhall Market
London Transport Museum
Covent Garden
Mansion House
Fenchurch Street Station
Blackfriars Station
London Metal Exchange
National Gallery
STRAND
VICTORIA EMBANKMENT
Discovery
Waterloo Bridge
Blackfriars Bridge
Southwark Bridge
Cannon Street Station
The Monument
Royal Mint
Trafalgar Square
Charing Cross Station
Fishmongers Hall
London Bridge
Tower of London
Nelson's Column
National Theatre
Arch
Charing Cross
Hayward Gallery
Royal Festival Hall
Southwark Cathedral
H.M.S. Belfast
London Docks
Banqueting House
WHITEHALL
Hungerford Footbridge
George Inn
London Bridge Station
Tower Bridge
River Thames
Waterloo Station
Old Vic Theatre
Westminster Bridge
Houses of Parliament
Lambeth Palace
Imperial War Museum
Lambeth Bridge
Vauxhall Bridge
The Oval
St. Albans
HERTS.
ESSEX
Epping
Chipping Ongar
GRAND UNION CANAL
BUCKS.
Barnet
GREATER LONDON
Woodford
Harrow
Hendon
Tottenham
Highgate
Ruislip
Hampstead
Cricklewood
London
West Ham
HEATHROW AIRPORT
KEW GARDENS
Area Enlarged
Windsor
Greenwich
Blackheath
BERKS.
Richmond
Brixton
Thames
HAMPTON COURT
Wimbledon
Kingston upon Thames
Croydon
DOWNE
Maidstone
KENT
Medway
SURREY
WEST SUSSEX
GATWICK AIRPORT
Crawley
EAST SUSSEX
M1
M4
M25
M40
M11
M20
M2
M3
M23
A1
A10
A12
A13
A127
A2
A20
A21
A205
A3
A40
A41
A406
Lea
Wey

Snow ancestors lived in Middlesex localities
called St Dunstan's - Stepney
St Leonard's - Shoreditch
Ratliff
St. Martin's in the Fields

These places appear to be part of present-day London - probably more rural then than now but not entirely so.

V14

Odell Family of Newport Pagnell, Bucks

Newport Pagnell, Bucks, is very close to Salford, Beds, and only about five miles from Cranfield, Beds, the home town of the Wheelers of Concord and Fairfield, and both parishes are some ten miles south of Odell, where Rev. Peter Bulkeley, leader of the Concord group, was minister. The family undoubtedly derived its name from the town of Odell. It was numerous in Cranfield. All Odell family entries between 1600 and 1625 in the Bishop's Transcripts of Cranfield and most of the other Bedfordshire parishes were published in the *New England Hist. and Gen. Register*, Vol. 45, pp. 7-12.

In a subsequent article, by Lea and Hutchinson, in the *New York Gen. and Biog. Record*, Vol. 44, p. 118, the origin of William Odell of Concord, Mass., and Fairfield, Conn., was disclosed, and an abstract was printed of the will of his father, Richard Odell, of Newport Pagnell, Bucks. An independent abstract of the same has been quoted above.

It is tempting to seek to identify William Odell's father with Richard Odell, uncle of Mary Odell, wife of Benjamin Turney. In favor of it: (1) the Odells and Turneys came together to Concord and Fairfield; (2) Richard Odell of Salford, born 1581, was of the proper age, and since no record of him has been found at Salford, presumably moved away; (3) the will of his mother in 1621 mentioned a daughter and son of Richard, and the will of Richard of Newport Pagnell named a son (William) and a daughter.

Against this theory, the facts are almost overwhelming; (1) the will of Richard of Newport Pagnell mentioned freehold land in Cranfield, so he probably came from the numerous family of that place; (2) he called William his eldest son, and the mention of the education of his children implies that he had more than the two named; (3) he mentioned Elizabeth Odell, daughter of his brother John. Now John of Salford did have a daughter Isabel or Elizabeth, but unfortunately her marriage occurred over three years before Richard made his will, so her name was not then Odell.

It is quite likely that both the Odells of Salford and the Odells of Newport Pagnell originated in Cranfield, and that the emigrants Mary and William were related, though more distantly than first cousins.

NICHOLAS^1 SNOW'S MOTHER

By Clarence Almon Torrey, Ph.B., of Dorchester, Mass.

The Waters-Withington-Lea Collection in the Library of the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass., contains many records relating to the early settlers of New England and their English forbears. Among these records is the following baptism from the parish register of St. Leonard's Shoreditch, London:

1599 Nicholas Snowe y^e s of Nicholas Snowe w b. y^e xxvth of January
Hoxton

The late Col. Charles Edward Banks in his "English Ancestry and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers," page 160, presented strong circumstantial evidence for believing that this record referred to the Nicholas Snow who came to Plymouth, Mass., in 1623, and married Constance Hopkins. If this theory is correct, as the writer believes, the following marriage record doubtless refers to his parents:

1599 May 9 Nicholas Snowe of Bowe & Elizabeth Rowlles of Ratclif ✓

This record is found in The Marriage Registers of St. Dunstan's, Stepney, in the County of Middlesex, edited by Thomas Colyer-Fergusson, page 42. The date is nearly nine months earlier than the baptism of Nicholas as stated above, which was recorded according to the Old Style calendar and therefore meant Jan. 25, 1599/1600.

Other persons by the names of Snow, Rowell, Rowle and Rowles appear in the register of St. Dunstan's, Stepney. The baptisms and burials in this parish have not been published. A search of the unpublished records of this and neighboring parishes, and of English wills and other records, will be needed to establish the Snow-Rowlles lineage. Possibly the following marriage record from A Register of Baptisms, Marriages and Burials in the Parish of St. Martin in the Fields in the County of Middlesex, page 59, refers to the grandparents of Nicholas Snow of Plymouth:

1559 May 10 Nicholaus Snow & Katherina Harwoode

THE ENGLISH ORIGIN OF THOMAS OLCOTT OF HARTFORD, CONN.

By Robert H. Olcott, Esq., of Oakland, California.

In his will of 1653, Thomas Olcott, the Hartford Settler, bequeathed as follows: "Unto my dear and tender mother, Mrs Margaret Charlfount, for her own peculiar use, two pounds;"

CONSTANCE^{2} HOPKINS, daughter of STEPHEN^{1} HOPKINS and his deceased first wife, thought to have been CONSTANCE^{A} DUDLEY? (refs. 1 and 12) although no positive proof exists. CONSTANTA/CONSTANCE^{2} was born circa 1608, probably at London, England. She died the middle of October in 1677 at Eastham, MA.

CONSTANTA/CONSTANCE^{2} came to Plymouth, MA, aboard the "Mayflower" in 1620 with her father, step-mother Elizabeth (Fisher) HOPKINS, brother Giles^{2}, step-brother Damaris^{2} and two servants, Edward Doty and Edward Litster. Perhaps influenced by the earlier departure of she and her family, who lived nearby, and whom he may well have known, NICHOLAS^{1} immigrated in 1623 to Plymouth aboard the "Anne". A ship of 140 tons under master (Capt.) William Pierce, brother of ancestor MICHAEL^{1} PIERCE, the "Anne" arrived late in July or early in August. It was followed seven to ten days later by the "Little James", a 44 ton vessel that had become separated from the "Anne" during rough weather on the trip. The two ships brought much-needed supplies and 60 new settlers. All but one arrived in good health and that person soon recovered--a remarkable feat for the time. Some of the passengers, like NICHOLAS^{1}, made noteworthy settlers, and "'some were so bad, as they were faine to be a charge to send them home again ye next year'" (ref. 12).

NICHOLAS^{1} received lands in 1623. In 1627 he was among those of Lot Number Seven in the division of the town's cattle. There were 13 people in a lot, and lot number seven was headed by STEPHEN^{1} HOPKINS. The group included five Hopkinss, two Snows, three Palmers and three Billingtons. By 1633 NICHOLAS^{1} had officially joined the church; he was made a Freeman that year.

As time passed and the population grew, residents of the Plymouth Colony became increasingly unhappy over the location of the town of Plymouth. In 1643 the Plymouth Church, with Gov. Bradford's backing, responded to this growing unrest by sending out a party to search for a new site for the town. Among them was NICHOLAS^{1}, by this time well-respected and an advocate of relocation. They were to explore the Nauset area of Cape Cod as a site for possible resettlement of the entire Plymouth population (see ancestor JOHN^{1} DOANE for details of the problem and the steps taken). Upon their return, the group reported that the area was not large or central enough for the relocation of Plymouth, the capital of the Plymouth Colony. However, NICHOLAS^{1} volunteered to take his family to accompany ancestor Deacon JOHN^{1} DOANE and five others, 49 people in all, to settle Nauset. He purchased the seventh and southernmost lot at Nauset, a rectangular section of land two-plus miles long from the Bay to the Atlantic Coast. It was located where the center of Orleans, MA, is today.

The seven families moved to the area in April of 1644. There NICHOLAS^{1} presumably built his first shelter, typical of the period and the region, with daub and wattle walls covered by hand-hewn horizontal or vertical planking and a roof thatched with marsh grass. It perhaps may even have had window(s) of oiled paper. In this same year NICHOLAS^{1} began a long career of dedicated community service for the town of Nauset-Eastham. At the first town meeting, held in 1644, NICHOLAS^{1} was elected town clerk and treasurer. He held this position until 1662, when he was replaced by his son Mark^{2} who served in this capacity until 1675. NICHOLAS^{1} was also elected deputy sheriff in 1648, serving for three years, and selectman in 1663, serving for seven. He was elected as a representative to the old Colony court in 1648, 1650 and 1652, and was appointed surveyor of highways in 1647, 1653 and 1671. He was a constable in 1662 and was appointed tax collector 7 June 1648. He and son Mark^{2} were also among those in 1655 to sign a letter "calling" (asking) Rev. John Mayo to become the town's first minister.

On 2 June 1646, the settlement received permission from the General Court to become a town and thereby gain representation on the Court and have a say in Colony affairs. On 7 June 1651, the Colony Court ordered that the name of the town be changed from "Nauset" to "Eastham".

NICHOLAS^{1} died a relatively wealthy man, highly respected by his neighbors and the Colony. His will was executed in the old style 14 November 1676, the day after he died, and was proved 5 March 1677. He did not mention his daughters in this document, having presumably awarded each their portions as a dowery when they were married. His widow Elizabeth was well cared for, but the bulk of his estate went to his oldest son Mark^{2}, according to the practice of the time. However his other sons were all mentioned, and received unusually generous gifts of land. Also, after the death of his wife, NICHOLAS^{1} bequeathed 10 shillings to his Church. CONSTANCE^{2}, his wife, died the next year and was buried in Cove Burying Ground in Eastham, MA, where a memorial stone in her honor currently stands. (See JOSEPH^{2} ROGERS for details and a picture of the cemetary.)

NICHOLAS^{1} and CONSTANTA/CONSTANCE^{2} (HOPKINS) SNOWS' children were:

I 2. Mark^{2}, b. 9 May 1628 at Plymouth, MA; d. 1695 at Eastham, MA; m. as 1/wf 18 Jan 1654-5, prob. at Eastham, Anne Cook who d. 24 July 1656, m. 2/wf 9 Jan 1660-1, prob. at Eastham, Jane Prence, dau. of Gov. Thomas Prence.

✓ II 3. Mary^{2}, b. 1630 at Plymouth, MA; d. 18 Apr 1704; m. 1650, prob. at Nauset (Eastham), MA, Thomas Paine.

III 4. Sarah^{2}, b. ca. 1632 at Plymouth, MA; d. aft. 1703; m. 25 Jan (Feb) 1654-5 at Eastham, William Walker.

IV 5. Joseph^{2}, b. ca. 1634, Plymouth, MA; d. 3 Jan 1722-3; m. ca. 1670, prob. at Eastham, MA, Mary Higgins.

V 6. Stephen^{2}, b. 1636 at Plymouth, MA; d. 17 Dec 1705; m. 28 Oct 1663 at Eastham, MA, Susannah (Deane) Rogers, wid. of Joseph^{3}, s., ances. JOSEPH^{2} ROGERS.

VI 7. John^{2}, b. 1638 at Plymouth, MA; d. 1692 at Eastham, MA; m. as 1/hs 19 Sep 1667, prob. at Eastham, Mary Smalley who m. 2/hs Ephraim Doane, s. of ances. JOHN^{1} DOANE.

VII 8. ELIZABETH^{2}, b. ca. 1640 (1642?) at Plymouth, MA; d. 16 Jun 1678 at Eastham, MA; m. 13 Dec 1665 at Eastham, THOMAS^{3} ROGERS (see ROGERS).

VIII 9. Jabez^{2}, b. 1642 (1644?) at Plymouth, MA; d. 27 Dec 1690, prob. at Eastham, MA; m. as 1/hs 29 Oct 1670, prob. at Eastham, Elizabeth Smith who m. 2/hs, aft. 1690, William Merrick.

IX 10. Ruth^{2}, b. ca. 1644 (1646?) at Plymouth or Nauset (Eastham) MA; d. 27 Jan 1716-7 at Eastham, MA; m. 10 Dec 1666 at Eastham, Lt. John Cole.

X 11. Hannah^{2}, b. ca. 1646 at Nauset, MA; m. 7 Nov 1683 Giles^{3} Rickard, Jr. who d. without ch., m. 2/hs by 1701?, Joseph Howes.

XI 12. Samuel^{2}, b. 28 May 1647 at Nauset, MA; d. 1750-1754.

XII 13. Rebecca^{2}, b. ca. 1648 at Nauset, MA; d. 1740; m. 31

NICHOLAS SNOW - CONSTANTA/CONSTANCE HOPKINS
ELIZABETH SNOW - THOMAS ROGERS
ELEAZER ROGERS - RUHAMA WILLIS
THOMAS ROGERS - PRISCILLA CHURCHILL
DESIRE ROGERS - SAMUEL BARROWS
BETHIA BARROWS - JOHN HAFFORD
ALMIRA HAFFORD - JOHN A. JOHNSON
LUCY HARRIET JOHNSON - EDWARD OCTAVIUS EMERSON
CHARLES FRANCIS^{9} EMERSON - BESSIE^{9} BENSON

FIRST GENERATION

No. 1

1. NICHOLAS^{1} SNOW (NICHOLAS^{A,B}) was baptized 25 January 1600 at St. Leonard's Shoreditch, London, England, and died 13 November 1676 at Eastham, MA. He was the son of NICHOLAS^{A} and ELIZABETH^{A} (ROWELLES) SNOW of Bowe and the grandson of NICHOLAS^{B} AND KATHERINA^{A} (HARWOOD) SNOW of Hoxton, county Middlesex, England. NICHOLAS^{1} married 22 May 1627 at Plymouth, CONSTANTA/

(cont'd over)

Snow

Dec 1689, prob. at Eastham, MA, Samuel Rickard.

REFERENCES

1) Barnard, Ruth L., op. cit., 13, 16-9.
2) Caffrey, K., op. cit., 306, 357-9.
3) Colket, M. B., op. cit., 289.
4) Daniel, E. S. and Sawtelle, J. E., op. cit., 6, 8.
5) Emerson, J. L., op. cit., HOPKINS LINE, ROGERS LINE and SNOW LINE.
6) Ferris, M. W., op. cit, *Dawes-Gates*, II:442-51.
7) "Joseph Rogers", Eastham Historical Society, Bulletin No. 32, 21-3.
8) Lowe, A. A., op. cit., 11-7, 24-7, 54-7, 62-75.
9) Morse, J. S., op. cit., 1-11.
10) Pierce, R. Andrew, personal correspondence, research on the Rogers line, 10 January 1992, LET and MAT, Swigart, E. K., Washington, CT.
11) Savage, J., op. cit., II:492; IV:138-9.
12) Snow, W. A., op. cit., 1-6.
13) Snow, F. W., op. cit., 3-7, 18.
14) Torrey, C. A., op. cit., 169, 394, 504, 552, 624, 635, 691-2, 775.
15) Torrey, C. A., "Nicholas Snow's Mother", TAG, 14:229. ✓
16) Westgate, A. W., op. cit., 155-9.

Plymouth Colony - Its History + Its People 1620-1691
by Eugene A Stratton (1986) pgs. 354-5

SNOW, NICHOLAS–Nicholas arrived on the *Anne* in 1623, and by the time of the 1627 division he was married to *Mayflower* passenger Constance Hopkins, daughter of Stephen. Banks wrote that he was of Hoxton, County Middlesex. He was a Purchaser and was on the 1633 freeman list. On 5 January 1634/35, the servant of Nicholas Snow, unnamed, was willing to serve out his time with John Cooper, according to the terms of the indenture (*PCR* 1:33). Twyford West, whose indenture had been assigned by Edward Winslow to Nicholas Snow, complained to Winslow that he disliked being with Snow, and on 11 February 1635/36 voluntarily increased his indenture from six to seven years in consideration of Winslow reacquiring his indenture from Snow (*PCR* 1:37). Snow served as highway surveyor, on the grand jury, and in other similar positions, and as a Purchaser he enjoyed various land grants. On 1 December 1640 he was one of several highway surveyors presented for not mending the highways (*PCR* 2:5). He was one of the Plymouth residents moving to Nauset in the 1640s, and he was a surveyor, deputy, tax collector, constable, and selectman there (*PCR*, passim). In 1664 he was among those allowed to bring liquors into Eastham (*PCR* 4:100). He died 15 November 1676, having made his will 14 November 1676, and he named his wife Constant and his sons Mark, Joseph, Stephen, John, and Jabez, and after his wife's death his livestock and moveable estate would be divided among all his children (*MD* 3:167). He also had married daughters Mary, Sarah, Elizabeth, and Ruth, and Bowman thought he had three other probably married daughters. For additional information see Mrs. M. L. T. Alden, "The Snow Genealogy," *NEHGR* 47:81, 186, 341, 48:71, 188, 49:71, 202, 451, 51:204, 64:284, which should be used cautiously.

SNOW, WILLIAM–On 31 August 1638 William Snow, "lately brought out of old England by Mr. Richard Derby," had his indenture transferred to Edward Doty and was to serve Doty seven years (*PCR* 1:94). Inasmuch as Derby had contracted specifically with Doty at Plymouth on 12 July 1637 to procure "one able man servant to serve the said Edward Doty" (*PCR* 12:21), and inasmuch as Derby returned to his home in Sturtle, near Burfort, Dorsetshire, at this time (see John Chipman), we have a clue that Snow may have come from this area, too. William Snow was tried in court on 8 June 1651 for vain, light, and lascivious carriage, and he was admonished on 7 October 1651 for the same (*PCR* 2:170, 172). Ca. 1654 he married Rebecca Browne, daughter of *Mayflower* passenger Peter Browne, q.v., and on 25 March 1667/68 William Snow of Bridgewater, husbandman, sold to Ephraim Tinkham one-third share of land at Dartmouth which had been granted by the court to Peter Browne, a Purchaser (*Ply. Colony LR* 3:111). On 7 November 1679 Snow sold to John Brown another one-third of his land formerly belonging to Peter Browne, and his wife Rebecca consented to the sale (*Ply. Colony LR* 5:197). Snow dated his will 9 March 1698/99, proved 4 March 1708/09, and he mentioned an unnamed wife, his sons William, Joseph, and Benjamin, and his daughters Mary, Lydia, Hannah, and Rebecca (*MD* 8:101). He also had a son James who died in 1690 on the Canadian expedition (*Genealogical Advertiser* 2:62). Although Mitchell, *Bridgewater*, p. 27, stated that William Snow was on a 1657 freeman list for Bridgewater, he actually took the Oath of Fidelity as a resident of Bridgewater in 1657, which was not the same thing, and there is no record that he ever became a freeman (*PCR* 8:185), nor was his name on the 1658 list which is believed to be of all the colony's freemen (*PCR* 8:197-202).

was he kin?

"Search for the Mary + John" Vol 16 - (1991)

SNOW, NICHOLAS (1599-1676) of Plymouth, MA. English home: Worth says he came from Plymouth, Devon. But TAG (14:230) claims he was probably baptized 25 Jan. 1599/1600, St. Leonard's Shoreditch, London and probably son of Nicholas Snow of Bow, who m. Elizabeth Rowlles of Ratclif there.

Dodge
D16a

Snow

Saints + Strangers - p 450 - Says Anne + Little James - Strangers - (1623 July + Aug)
Snow, Nicholas (c 1605-1677) - of Hoxton, Middlesex
Married, c 1625, to Constance Hopkins (see Mayflower - Strangers) removed to
Eastham, 1644; town clerk, 1645-1662; 11 children

~~332, 345, 449,~~
332-
450-
449

332 - families that moved to "Nauset" on Cape Cod (Eastham)
Dea. John Doane, Richard Higgins, John Smalley, Edward Bangs, Josiah Cooke + Nicholas Snow

Pope's Pioneers p 425

Anthony, feltmaker, Plymouth, 1639. Res. at Marshfield, atba. 1643. He m. 8 Nov. 1639, Abigail, dau. of Richard Warren. Ch. (rec. at Marshfield,) son b. 25 March, 1655, Ales b. 18 [Jan.] 1657.

Will dated 20 Dec. 1685, prob. Jan. 3, 1692-3, beq. to wife Abigail, son Josiah, daus. Lydia, Sarah and Alice and the children of dau. Abigail; gr. ch. James, Hannah and Abigail Foord. Bro. Joseph Warren one of the overseers.

✓ Nicholas, Plymouth, came in 1623; taxed in 1632, frm. 1633; atba. 1643. Rem. to Eastham. He m. before 1627, Constance, dau. of Stephen Hopkins. Ch. Mark b. May 9, 1628.

He d. Nov. 16, 1676. He made will 14 Nov. 1676. Beq. to ch. Mark, Joseph, Stephen, John and Jabez; to wife Constant; to the church of E. The widow d. Oct. 1677.

Richard, Woburn, propr. 1645. Ch. Daniel b. Feb. 4, 1644-5, d. July 18, 1646, Samuel b. May 28, 1647, Zachariah b. March 29, 1649.

He d. 5 May, 1677. Will dated 30 (11) 1676, prob. 19 June, 1677, beq. to wife Anis and sons John, James, Samuel and Zachary. Genealogy in Reg. XLVII, 81.

Thomas, barber, Boston, adm. chh. 5 (7) 1644, frm. May 18, 1642. Wife Milcah adm. chh. 18 (4) 1643. They mortg. their house, to which the sign of the dove was fixed, 16 Dec. 1667. Ch. Melatiah b. (8) 1638, bapt. 12 (7) 1641, ae. about 3 years, Hannah bapt. 21 (2) 1644, Samuel bapt. 6 (3) 1649, Abigail b. 10 (1), bapt. 14 (1) 1651, Mehetabel b. 8 Feb. 1654, Milcha, (m. 22 March, 1659, Samuel Fisher.)

He d. in 1668-9. Will dated 10 Nov. 1688, prob. April 28, 1669. Wife Milcha to dispose of the est. at her discretion among his children. [Reg. XX, 240.]

William, ae. 18, came in the Susan and Ellen in April, 1635, as a servant of Mr. Richard Derby to Plymouth. Was transferred 31 Aug. 1630, to Edward Dotey, to serve 7 years longer.

Colket "Founders of American Families" p 269

SNOW

NICHOLAS Came on "Ann" 1623, Plymouth (Mass.) 1624, Eastham 1645, d there 15 Nov 1676. Town clerk. Deputy. ner 47:81 (desc); *Library of Cape Cod* no 34; tag 14:229 (clue); "Snow families of Maine" 1920 (typescript pamph in LC); Banks. #935, 950, 951, 3185, 3583.†

RICHARD Woburn (Mass.) 1645, d there on or before 5 May 1672. Dawes-Gates, v 1. *Snow-Estes ancestry* 1939, v 1; "Descendants of Richard Snow" 1934/5 (ms and clippings).

WILLIAM Plymouth (Mass.) 1635, West Bridgewater 1657, d there 1708. *Descendants of William Snow* 1908 (pamph); Banks. #2521, 3447.

Banks - "The English Ancestry + Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers" - GPC 1962

NICHOLAS SNOW

HE is probably identical with the Nicholas, son of Nicholas Snow of Hoxton, Middlesex, baptized 25 January, 1599, at St. Leonard's, Shoreditch, London, the parish adjoining St. Mary's, Whitechapel, where Stephen Hopkins (whose daughter Constance became his wife), was married in 1618. It may be inferred that the emigration of the Hopkins family was the occasion of Nicholas Snow's following them to Plymouth.

(See Warren.)

160

Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620-1720 page ccxxiii by Frank R Holmes :

SNOW
From Dutch word *snoo*, cunning, subtle, crafty, sly.
ANTHONY, resident Plymouth, Mass., 1638, removed Marshfield, Mass., 1643.
James, resident Woburn, Mass., 1674.
JOHN, brother of the preceding living Woburn, Mass., 1668.
JOSEPH, brother preceding identified with Eastham, Mass., 1671.
JOSIAH, married Marshfield, Mass., 1669.
NICHOLAS, first comer, Plymouth, Mass., 1623, removed Eastham, Mass., 1654.
RICHARD, living Woburn, Mass., 1645.
STEPHEN, married Eastham, Mass., 1663.
THOMAS, barber, resident Boston, Mass., 1636.
WILLIAM, b. Eng., 1617, came Plymouth, Mass., 1635, removed Bridgewater, Mass., 1682.

"James Middleton Snow - His Ancestors, Descendants and Allied Families" by Dorothy May Snow Nelson

FHL US/CAN 929.273 Sn61snd (charts) Copied Oct 1995, rjb

HUSBAND'S NAME Nicholas Snow — Pedigree Chart #2 A
When Born 25 January 1599/1600 — Where Hoxton, near London. England
Christened January 1599 — Where St. Leonard's, Shoreditch, England
When Died 15 November 1676 — Where Eastham, Cape Cod, Mass.
When Buried — Where Old Cove Cemetery, Orleans, Mass.
When Married 22 May or 1 June 1627 — Where Plymouth Colony, Plymouth
Other Wives (if any) Number (1) (2) etc.
His Father Nicholas Snow — His Mother's Maiden Name Mary Walker

Constance arrived in 1620 on the "Mayflower"; Nicholas in 1623 on the "Ann".

WIFE'S MAIDEN NAME Constance Hopkins — Pedigree Chart #2 A
When Born 1605 — Where London, England
Christened — Where
When Died 15 October 1677 — Where Eastham, Cape Cod, Mass.
When Buried — Where Old Cove Cemetery. Orleans. Mass.
Other Husb. (if any) Number (1) (2) etc.
Her Father Stephen Hopkins — Her Mother's Maiden Name (1) Constance Dudley

Nicholas Snow (Husband's Full Name)
Constance Hopkins (Wife's Maiden Name)

This information obtained from
"Snow Family Descended from Nicholas Snow & Constance Hopkins by William J. Snow
Plymouth Scrapbook, Hempstead L. I. Public Library
Wm. A. Eardsley MS-L I Hist Soc.
Church Records, Eastham, Mass.
Date
Compiler Dorothy (Snow) Nelson
Address 4 Ridgewood Lane
City Hampton Bays State N. Y.

Male or Female	CHILDREN (Arrange in order of birth)	WHEN BORN Day Month Year	WHERE BORN Town or Place	County	State or Country	WHEN DIED* Day Month Year	Married
M	1 Mark **	9 May 1628	Plymouth Colony		Mass.	9 Jan. 1695	Date 18 January 1654 To Anna Cooke (1)
F	2 Mary	c.1630	"	"	"	28 Apr 1704	Date 1650 To Thomas Paine
F	3 Sarah	c.1632	"	"	"	8 July 1668	Date 25 January 1654 To William Walker
M	4 Joseph	24 Nov 1634	"	"	"	3 Jan. 1722	Date c. 1670 To Mary Higgins
M	5 Stephen **	c.1636	"	"	"	17 Dec 1705	Date 28 October 1663 To Susanna (Deane) Rogers (1)
M	6 John	c.1638	"	"	"	1692	Date 19 September 1667 To Mary Smalley or Small
F	7 Elizabeth	c.1640	"	"	"	16 June 1678	Date 13 December 1665 To Thomas Rogers
M	8 Jabez	c.1642	"	"	"	27 Dec 1690	Date 29 October 1670 To Elizabeth Smith
F	9 Ruth	c.1644	Eastham, Cape Cod		"	27 Jan 1716/7	Date 12 December 1666 To John Cole
F	10 Hannah	c.1646	"	"	"		Date To
F	11 Rebecca	c.1648	"	"	"		Date To
F	12 infant	before April 1651	"	"	"		Date To
	13 ** Mark #1 above married twice						Date 9 January 1661 (2) To Jane Prence
	14 ** Stephen #5 above married twice						Date 4 September 1701 (2) To Mary Bigford or Bickford

Family Group Sheet, Form F3
The Everton Publishers, P.O. Box 368, Logan, Utah 84321
*If burial date is known on children and not death date, write burial date prefix (Bur). Use reverse side for additional information

Dodge Ancestors
D 16a

Snow

Family Group Sheet

He came July 1623 "Anne"

Father: Nicholas Snow (ca1600 - 15 Nov 1676)
Eastham

marriage before 22 May 1627 at Plymouth

Mother: Constance Hopkins (ca 1607 - ~~aft~~ Oct ~~1677~~ 1677) 1620 "Mayflower"
London Eastham
(Constantia)

Tradition says Constance was beautiful as well as patient

Children:

(front Chart does not show as much data on husbs. + wives)

1. Mark (9 May 1628 Ply - bef 9 Jan 1694/5) m ① 18 Jan 1654 Eastham Anna Cooke (1636/9 dau 25 Jul 1656 Eastham)
①

m ② 9 Jan 1661 Harwich Jane Prence (1 Nov 1637 Duxbury d Mayor Jan 1712)

(John Howard Payne "Home Sweet Home" - desc)

2. Mary (bef 1636 ca1630 - 28 Apr 1704) Plymouth Eastham m. ~~bef Apr 1651~~ ca 1650 Thomas Paine (1612 ca) (d 16 Aug 1706 Eastham)
⑧

3. Sarah (~~bef 1644 - aft 8 Jul 1669~~ 2 1635 - 1703 f) m ~~(aft)~~ 25 Jan 1654 Eastham William Walker (1620 - 1703)
⑧

4. Stephen (bef ~~1640~~ ca 1636 - 17 Dec 1705 Eastham) m ① 28 Oct 1663 Eastham Susanna (Doane) Rogers (- bef Apr 1701) Deane (widow Jos3 Jos2 Thos1)
③

m ② 9 Apr 1701 Eastham Mary Bigford (Bickford?) (- aft 21 May 1706)

5. Elizabeth (~~bef Apr 1651~~ ?, 1640 - 16 June 1678 Eastham) m 13 Dec 1665 Eastham Thomas Rogers 3 Jos2 Thos1 (29 Mar 1638 Sandwich - bef 5 Nov + 30 Oct 1678 (prob Eastham))
⑦

6. Ruth (bef ? 1644 - 27 Jan 1716/7 Eastham) m 12 Dec 1666 Eastham John Cole (15 Jul 1644 Eastham - 6 Jan 1724/5 Eastham)
⑨

Charted

this has these details

7. John (ca 1638 - bef 4 Apr 1692 Eastham) m 19 Sep 1667 Eastham Mary Smalley (11 Dec 1647 Eastham - 7 Dec 1699)
④

She m/2 Ephraim Doane

8. Jabez (bef ca 1642? - 27 Dec 1690 Eastham) m ~~bef~~ 27 Oct 1670 Elizabeth Smith (bef 1656 - after 8 Jan 1723) (Daniel's Ralph)
⑤

She m/2 after 22 Apr 1691 William Merrick

(1st) 9. Joseph (~~bef~~ 24 Nov 1634 p. 634 - 3 Jan 1722/3 Eastham) m ca 1670 Eastham Mary ~~Higgins~~ (- d after he did)
⑩

Notes from ⑩ Hannah + Gilbert Richard ⑪ Rebecca NER 102:46 (1948)

10 }
11 } three daughters (bef Apr 1651 - or children
12 }

→ another account says "probably died young." "probably married" names unknown

for children of Thomas and Mary (Snow) Paine - see Paine Family

Sources - ("Families of the Pilgrims" by Hubert K Shaw - pub Mass Soc MF Desc 1956) Re; ~~Hopkins~~

2 accounts in "Cape Cod Library of Local History + Genealogy" edited by Leonard H Smith, (2 sketches)
TAG 14; 229; Leon C Hills "Mayflower Planters" NER 47: 81 etc; Savage, Appendage to ~~[illegible]~~
Paine Genealogy, Banks, Pope, "Saints + Strangers," Gilbert

John Richard (-1754?) - b. Eng. ca 1677/1678 (b. Eng)
Mary Coker/Snow - 1758+

Samuel Rickard - Rebecca Snow
1683-1727 31 Dec 1689; Ply
Plympton

1740 for 3y
67
1673

c2 4

Dec.
c 74- 5 1676

Hannah
f(1), f(2)
f(3), f(4) ~~4~~
sisters

The Great Migration Begins (Vol 3) Robert Charles Anderson

NICHOLAS SNOW

ORIGIN: Unknown
MIGRATION: 1623 in *Anne*
FIRST RESIDENCE: Plymouth
REMOVES: Eastham

OCCUPATION: Carpenter (inventory begins with list of cooper's and carpenter's tools).
FREEMAN: In "1633" Plymouth list of freemen in close proximity to those admitted on 1 January 1632/3 [PCR 1:4]; in list of 7 March 1636/7 [PCR 1:52]. In Plymouth section of 1639 Plymouth Colony list of freemen, then erased and moved to Eastham section of list [PCR 8:174, 177]. In Eastham section of lists of freemen of 1658 and 29 May 1670 [PCR 5:278, 8:201].
EDUCATION: His inventory included "a parcel of old books" valued at 4s., "a psalm book" valued at 1s., and "1 book" valued at 1s.
OFFICES: Deputy (from Eastham), 3 June 1652, 3 June 1657 [PCR 3:9, 115]. Committee to lay out highways, 23 July 1634 [PCR 1:31]; surveyor and supervisor of highways, 3 March 1639/40, 2 June 1640, 1 June 1647, 7 June 1653, 5 June 1671 [PCR 1:141, 155, 2:115, 3:33, 5:58]. Committee to lay out lands, 5 May 1640 [PCR 1:151]. Plymouth grand jury, 5 June 1638 [PCR 1:87]; coroner's jury, 5 June 1638 [PCR 1:88]; jury, 2 October 1637, 6 March 1637/8, 3 March 1639/40, 1 September 1640, 1 June 1641, 3 August 1641, 7 March 1642/3, 6 June 1643 [PCR 7:7, 8, 16, 17, 20, 23, 34, 35]. Lot layer, 1 February 1640/1 [PCR 2:7]. Excise collector, 7 June 1648 [PCR 2:125]. Committee member, 7 June 1648, 4 June 1650 [PCR 2:123, 154].

Eastham selectman, 7 June 1670, 5 June 1671, 5 June 1672, 3 June 1674, 1 June 1675 [PCR 5:35, 57, 92, 143, 164]. Constable, 3 June 1662 [PCR 4:15].

In Plymouth section of 1643 Plymouth Colony list of men able to bear arms [PCR 8:189].

ESTATE: In the 1623 Plymouth land division granted an unknown number of acres (but almost certainly one) at Hobes Hole near the Eel River as a passenger on the *Anne* [PCR 12:6]. In the 1627 Plymouth cattle division "Nickolas Snow" and Constance Snow were the sixth and seventh persons in the seventh company (headed by Stephen Hopkins) [PCR 12:11].

Assessed 18s. in the Plymouth tax list of 25 March 1633 and 12s. in the list of 27 March 1634 [PCR 1:10, 27].

Assigned mowing ground, 20 March 1636/7 [PCR 1:57]; requested more hay ground, 2 July 1638 [PCR 1:90]. He was one of the purchasers [PCR 2:177].

On 7 May 1638 Nicholas Snow was one of a group of men desiring "lands towards the Six Mile Brooke" [PCR 1:83], and on 7 August 1638 he requested "5 or 6 acres of land lying on the north side the lands granted lately to Mr. Atwood" [PCR 1:93]. On 6 July 1638 Nicholas Snow acknowledged that he sold to Samuell Eddy his house and garden in Plymouth where he "now dwelleth" [PCR 12:31].

Granted ten acres meadow in the South Meadows, 2 November 1640 [PCR 1:166]. About March 1645/6 Nicholas Snow sold his house and buildings and upland, with two acres of meadow at High Pines and ten acres of upland meadow at Colebrook meadows, totalling fifty-two acres to Thomas Morton [PCR 12:134]. On 10 March 1645[/6] Nicholas Snow sold one acre to Nathaniel Morton [PCR 12:135]. In an account of liquors brought into Eastham, dated 28 November 1664, Nicholas Snow was responsible for one and a half gallons of liquor [PCR 4:100].

In his will, dated 14 November 1676 and proved 5 March 1676/7, "Nicholas Snow of Eastham being weak and infirm of body" bequeathed to "my son Marke Snow" all twenty acres of upland lying at Namskekitt where his house now stands, and two acres of meadow and all that broken marsh at Namscekett and two thirds of "my great lot at Satuckett"; to "my son Joseph Snow I give that other third part of my great lot at Satuckett, and two acres and an half of meadow lying at Namscekett near the head and an neck of upland"; to "my son Steven Snow I give twenty acres on the southside of my great lot at Pochett, and ten acres of my little lot at Satuckett ... an acre and an half of meadow at the boat meadow ... and that part of my meadow at the great meadow that lyeth between Josiah Cooke and the Eel creek"; to "my son John Snow I give all that my land at Paomett purchased or unpurchased ... and all my right and title or privilege there"; to "my son Jabez Snow I give all this my land lying between my house and my son Thomas Paine's, and seven acres at the Bass pond ... and an half acre of marsh at the end of it and six acres of upland at the Herring pond, and an acre and half of meadow at Silver spring ... and that part of my house he lives in as long as my wife or I do live ... and two acres of meadow at the Great Meadow"; to "my son Jabez I give that my four acres of meadow at Billinsgate due to me yet unlaid out"; "my meadow about my house I give to my son Jabez"; to "my loving wife Constant Snow all my stock of cattle, sheep, horses, swine, whatsoever, to be at her disposal for the comfort and support of her life, with all the moveable goods I am possessed of and after her decease, stock and movables to be equally divided amongst all my children ... the use and disposal of the part of my house she now dwells in during her lifetime, and after her decease to be my son Jabez Snow's"; to "my loving wife that ten acres of upland at Pochett and twenty on Billinsgate Iland, for her disposal for the comfort of her life, but if she need it now, and leave it undisposed, I give it then to my son Steven Snow";

"twenty acres of upland at Billingsgate if my wife leave it undisposed, then to be my son Jabez Snow's"; to "the church of Eastham for the furniture of the Table of the Lord, with pewter or other necessaries, I say I do give 10s. out of my estate after my wife's decease" [MD 3:167-69, citing PCPR 3:2:71-72].

The undated inventory of the estate of Nicholas Snow of Eastham totalled £102 10s. 9d., with no real estate included [MD 3:169-74, citing PCPR 3:2:73-77].

On 6 March 1676/7 letters of administration were granted to Constant Snow, Mark Snow and John Snow, on the estate of Nicholas Snow, deceased [PCR 5:220].

BIRTH: Possibly the Nicholas Snow, son of Nicholas Snow, baptized St. Leonard's Shoreditch, London, 25 January 1599/1600 [TAG 14:229].
DEATH: Eastham 15 November 1676 [MD 6:203].
MARRIAGE: By 1627 Constance Hopkins, daughter of STEPHEN HOPKINS [MF 6:9-10]. She died at Eastham in the middle of October 1677 [MD 6:203].
CHILDREN:

i MARK, b. Plymouth 9 May 1628 [MD 7:14]; m. (1) Eastham 18 January 1654[/5] Anna Cooke [MD 7:14], daughter of JOSIAH COOKE; m. (2) Eastham 9 January 1660[/1] Jane Prence [MD 7:14], daughter of THOMAS PRENCE [Hopkins 14-15].

ours ✓ ii MARY, b. say 1630; m. say 1650 Thomas Paine (called "my son" in Nicholas Snow's will; she was probably the "one married" in 1651 as described by Bradford).

iii SARAH, b. say 1632; m. Eastham 25 February 1654 William Walker [PCR 8:15].

iv JOSEPH, b. say 1634; m. say 1670 Mary _____ [NEHGR 47:83].

v STEPHEN, b. say 1636; m. (1) Eastham 28 October 1663 Susanna (Deane) Rogers, widow of Joseph Rogers and daughter of STEPHEN DEANE [MD 8:15, 31:37-41 (as George Bowman notes, the alternate marriage date for this couple must be in error); TAG 42:200]; m. (2) Eastham 9 April 1701 Mary Bigford [MD 6:14].

vi JOHN, b. say 1638; m. Eastham 19 September 1667 Mary Smalley [MD 7:17], daughter of JOHN SMALLEY.

vii ELIZABETH, b. say 1640; m. Eastham 13 December 1665 Thomas Rogers [MD 6:14], son of Joseph Rogers and grandson of THOMAS ROGERS [MF 2:160].

viii JABEZ, b. say 1642; m. say 1670 as her first husband Elizabeth _____ [NEHGR 47:83].

ix RUTH, b. say 1644; m. Eastham 10 December 1666 John Cole [PCR 8:57].

x Child, b. say 1646; living 1651 [Bradford 445]; no further record.

xi Child, b. say 1648; living 1651 [Bradford 445]; no further record.

xii Child, b. say 1650; living 1651 [Bradford 445]; no further record.

COMMENTS: Bradford, in describing the family of STEPHEN HOPKINS in 1651, stated that "His daughter Constanta is also married and hath twelve children, all of them living and one of them married" [Bradford 445]. (In 1893 Mrs. M.L.T. Alden suggested that two of the children who are implied by Bradford's accounting but do not otherwise appear in the records were Hannah and Rebecca "on the authority of Davis's Landmarks of Plymouth. Both married Rickards" [NEHGR 47:83]; she cites no evidence.)

In January 1634/5 the Plymouth court noted that "The servant of Nicolas Snow was willing to serve out his time with John Cooper, according to the tenor of his indenture" [PCR 1:33]. This servant was not the same as Twiford West who, after brief service with Nicholas Snow, agreed on 12 February 1635/6 to return to Edward Winslow, with whom he had originally made his indenture [PCR 1:37].

Nicholas Snow and others were presented 1 December 1640 for failing to mend the highways [PCR 2:5].

BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTE: In 1893 Mrs. M.L.T. Alden published a substantial article on Nicholas Snow and his children [NEHGR 47:81-84, 186-89, 48:71-73]. In 1948 Donald Lines Jacobus prepared an account of Nicholas Snow and a line of descent through his son Stephen [Brainerd Anc 270-72].

Leon C. Hills - "Mayflower Planters" GPC

2. **Hopkins, Constance**² (Stephen¹, born Eng. about 1605; died Eastham, Mass., October 1677; married **Nicholas**¹ **Snow** in Plymouth 1623-27; born Eng., died Eastham, Mass., November 15, 1676. Will dated November 14, 1676, signed November 14, 1676 (O.S.).

Nicholas¹ Snow was one of those who arrived at Plymouth in the Anne in the year 1623, and found the settlers so sadly destitute of food and clothing. He was very young, and must have felt the matter keenly on viewing the poor, ragged and half-fed Pilgrims, but he soon began to lend a helping hand, and his romance with Constance Hopkins started without much delay. He received a share of land in Plymouth in 1624, and was married before 1627.

He became a freeman and taxpayer of Plymouth in 1633, and for a number of years was a man of note in that place.

In April, 1644, he with six other prominent men of Plymouth, seven families of forty-nine persons, began the settlement of Eastham (Nauset) across the bay from Plymouth, and from the beginning became an important person in that place. He was a deputy and selectman for a number of years. (See history of Eastham.)

In 1646, it was enacted by the Court that every Town within the Government "shall have a clerk, or some one appointed to keep a register of the day and year of the marriage, birth and burial of every man, woman and child within the Township".

Eastham immediately appointed Nicholas Snow to this important office, and he held the place with honor for sixteen years, and his son Mark Snow succeeded him.

He was one of Governor Prence's intimate associates, and it was partly through his efforts that the Rev. John Mayo was prevailed upon to settle as Minister in Eastham in 1655.

Nicholas Snow became a large landowner in Harwich, Eastham and Truro. His sons Mark, Joseph and Stephen came into possession of the land in Harwich; John of Truro and Jabez received the land in Eastham including the homestead.

Will and Inventory of Nicholas¹ Snow

Ply. Col. Wills and Inv., Vol. III, Part II, p. 71-77.

A writing ordered to be Reorded Declareing the manor of Nicholas Snow his Disposing of his Estate as followeth viz Nicholas Snow of Eastham Late Deceased:

I, Nicholas Snow of Eastham being weake and Infeirme of body but of prfect Memory and understanding, not knowing the Day of my Departure but yett Dayly expecting my last change; I thinke meet to leave this behind mee as my last Will and Testament; Impr: I commend my soule into the armese of Gods Mercye through Christ Jesus in whom I hope to sleep and my body to a Decent buriall; and as Concerning my temporall estate that God of his Goodness hath Given me It is my last Will and Testament that after this manor it should be Disposed off.

Note: Several Snow early genealogies were collected but passed out because they were almost repetition copies of this.

Impr: to my son Marke Snow I Give and bequeath all that twenty acrees of upland lying att Namskekitt wher his house now stands, and two acrees of Meddow; and all that broken marsh there of mine att Namscekett; Item, two thirds of my Great lott att Satuckett lying next the Indians Ground; and that syde of my lott next the Indians land I Give to him and his heires lawfully begotten of his body forever; and what hee Can purchase more of upland and meddow of the Indians there att Satuckett I Give to him all this abovesaid lands or meddow or Marsh purchased or unpurchased I Give to him and to his heires lawfully begotten of his body forever;

Item. To my son Joseph Snow I Give that other third prte of my Great lott att Satuckett; and two acrees and an halfe of meddow lying att Namscekett neare the head and an Necke of upland lying between it lying on the westsyde of William Twinings, all this abovesaid land and meddow I Give to my son Joseph Snow and to his heires Lawfully begotten of his body forever;

Item: To my son Steven Snow I Give twenty acrees on the southsyde of my Great lott att Pachett, and ten acrees of My little lott att Satuckett lying beween Daniell Cole and Edward Banges by the side of a Little pond, an acree and an halfe of Meddow att the boat meddow, lying between Thomas Williams, and Samuel Freeman and that prte of my Meddow att the Great Meddow, That lyeth between Josiah Cooke and the Eel-creeke; all this abovesaid land and meddow I Give to my son Steven and the heires lawfully begotten of his body; forever:

Item: To my son John Snow I Give all that my land att Paomett Purchased or unpurchased whether upland or meddow; and all my Right and title or privilidge there; all the abovesaid upland or Meddow right and Privilidge att Paomett I Give to my son John Snow; and to the heires lawfully begotten of his body, forever;

Item: To my son Jabez Snow I Give all this my Land lying between my house and my son Thomas Paines, and seaven acrees att the basse pond lying between Daniel Cole and William Browne; and an halfe acree of Marsh att the end of it and six acrees of upland att the herring pond; and an acree and halfe of meddow att silver springe lying on the Northsyde of William Walkers, and the Clift of upland adjacent to the above said meddow, and all the sedge about it, to Ephraime Done; and that prte of my house hee lives in as longe as my wife or I Doe live.

Item: I Give him two acrees of Meddow att the Great Meddow lying between the Eel Creeke and Joseph Hardings;

Item: To my son Jabez I give that my four acrees of meddow att Billingsgate Due to mee yett unlayed out; All this above-s[illegible] upland and meddow I give to my son Jabez Snow and the h[illegible]s of his body lawfully begotten for ever;

Item: This my meddow about my house I give to my son Jabez;

Item: I give to my Loveing wife Constant Snow all my stocks of Cattle sheep horses, swine whatsoever, to be att her Disposall for the Comfort and support of her life, with all the moveable Goods I am posessed of and after he Decease, stocke and movables to be equally Devided amongst all my children.

Item: To my wife I Give the use and Disposall of the prte of my house shee now Dwells in During her life time, and after her Decease to be my son Jabez Snowes;

Item: I give to my loveing wife that ten acrees of upland att Pachett, and 20 on Billingsgate Iland, for the Desposall for the comfort of her life, but if shee need it not, and leave it undesposed; I Give it then to my son Steven Snow;

That twenty acrees of upland att Billingsgate if my wife leave it undesposed then to be my son Jabez Snowes.

I Doe Give to the Church of Eastham for the furniture of the Table of the Lord, with pewter or other nessesaries I say I Doe Give ten shillings, out of my estate after my wifes Descease.

That this is my last will and Testament I have sett to my hand and Seale: this fourteenth Day of November one thousand six hundred seaventy and six.

Witnes
Signed & Sealled in
the presence of us
Samuel Treate
Thomas Paine Senr
The overseers were,
Dea. Samuel Freeman
John Mayo.

NICHOLAS SNOW
and a (Seale)

Letters of administration were granted to Constant Snow, Marke Snow and John Snow on March 16, 1676/7 (N.S.).

Nicholas Snow left a large estate which was carefully inventoried and sworn to:

> "Constant Snow The Relict of Nicholas Snow late Deceased of Eastham made oathe to the truth of this Inventory before Mee John ffreeman Assistant this 22cond of March 1676/77."

In the inventory were many cooper and carpenter's tools, farm tools, and the like.

He left some live stock, including "3 hives of bees", oxen, cows, steers, young cattle, swine, etc.

There was an ample assortment of furniture, cooking utensils, etc.

There were several pounds of powder, shot, and b[illegible]ets. A "smale Gun", "1 rapier", "barrell of a Gun".

A number of books were listed, including the inevitable "Psalm Booke".

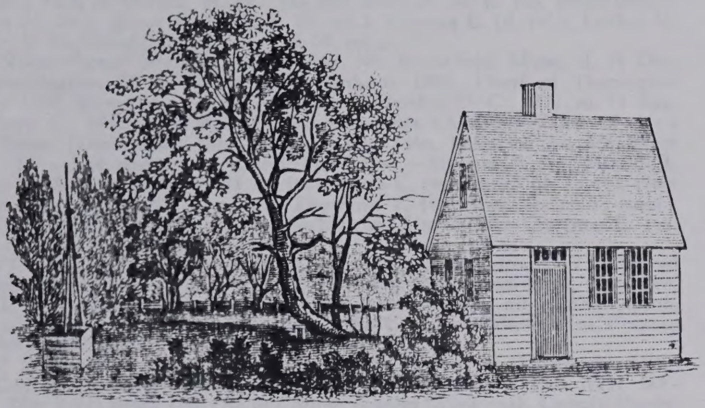
CHILDREN BORN PLYMOUTH

+11. Mark, b. May 9, 1628, d. 1695(?); m. 1st Anna^2 **Cooke** (Josiah^1); m. 2nd Jane^2 **Prence** (Gov. Thomas^1).
+12. Mary, b. 1630(?), d. Apr. 28, 1704, m. Thomas^2 **Paine** (Thomas^1).
+13. Sarah, b. 1632(?), m. William^1 **Walker.**
+14. Joseph, b. Nov. 24, 1634, d. Jan. 3, 1722, m. Mary (   ).
+15. Stephen, b. 1636(?), d. Dec. 17, 1705; m. 1st Sussanah (Deane^2) **Rogers** (Stephen^1); m. 2nd Mary **Bigford.**
+16. John, b. 1638(?), m. Mary^2 **Smalley** (John^1).
+17. Elizabeth, b. 1640(?), m. Thomas^3 **Rogers** (Lt. Joseph^2 **Thomas**^{1}).
+18. Jabez, b. 1642(?), d. Dec. 20, 1690, m. Elizabeth (   ).
+19. Ruth, b. 1644(?), d. Jan. 27, 1716-17, m. John^2 **Cole** (Daniel^1).
20. Child living unmarried in 1651.
20a. Child living unmarried in 1651.
20b. Child living unmarried in 1651.

Ref. Nos. 28, 34, 71, 125, 129, 173, 290, 501.

EASTHAM.

THE original Indian name of Eastham was *Nauset.* After being purchased from the natives, it was granted by the court to the settlers at Plymouth, in 1644. This included the present townships of Eastham, Wellfleet, and Orleans. Some of the principal settlers were Thomas Prince, John Doane, Nicholas Snow, Josias Cook, Richard Higgins, John Smalley, and Edward Bangs: these persons are said to have been among the most respectable inhabitants of Plymouth. The settlement commenced the year (1644) the grant was made, and was incorporated as a town in 1646. A church was gathered soon after their arrival, but the inhabitants were not sufficiently numerous to support a minister till 1672, when Rev. Samuel Treat, of Milford, Con. was ordained.



Ancient Pear Tree in Eastham.

The above is a representation of an ancient pear tree, on the land now owned by Mr. Nathan Kenny, twenty-one miles from Barnstable court-house. It was brought from England by Thomas Prince, for many years governor of Plymouth colony. Governor Prince removed from Duxbury to Eastham in 1640 or 1645, and, leaving Eastham, returned to Plymouth in 1665, so that this tree, planted by him, is now probably about two hundred years old. It is still in a vigorous state. The fruit is small, but excellent; and it is stated that it yields annually, upon an average, fifteen bushels of fruit. Governor Prince's house stood about thirty or forty rods eastward of this place. Mr. Treat, the first minister, lived about one fourth of a mile to the north-east. The house seen in the engraving stands on the site formerly occupied as a garrison house.

This town is situated on a narrow part of the peninsula of Cape Cod, and the soil, for the most part, is but a barren waste of sand. In an account given of the town in 1802, it is stated, "On the west side, a beach extends to Great Pond, where it stretches across the township almost to Town Cove. This barren tract, which does not now contain a particle of vegetable mould, formerly produced wheat. The soil, however, was light. The sand, in some places, lodging against the beach grass, has been raised into hills fifty feet high, where twenty-five years ago no hills existed. In others, it has filled up small valleys and swamps. Where a strong-rooted bush stood, the appearance is singular: a mass of earth and sand adheres to it, resembling a small tower. In several places, rocks which were formerly covered with soil are disclosed, and, being lashed by the sand, driven against them by the wind, look as if they were recently dug from a quarry." There are two churches, one Methodist and one Congregational. Population 1,059. Distance, twenty-three miles north-easterly from Barnstable, and, in a straight line, sixty-eight miles from Boston. In 1837, there were fifty-four establishments for the manufacture of salt, which produced 22,370 bushels; thirteen vessels employed in the cod and mackerel fishery; 1,200 quintals of cod-fish and 4,550 barrels of mackerel were caught.

Mr. Treat, the first minister in this town, was distinguished for his evangelical zeal and labors, not only among his own people, but also among the Indians in this vicinity; and he was the instrument of converting many of them to the Christian faith. He learnt their language, and once a month preached in their villages, visited them at their wigwams, and, by his kindness and affability, won their affections: they venerated him as their pastor, and loved him as their father. In 1693, Mr. Treat states that there were four Indian villages in the township under his care. These Indians had four teachers of their own choice and four schoolmasters. They also had of their own people six magistrates, who regulated their civil affairs; they held stated courts and punished criminals. There were five hundred adult persons in the villages, all of whom attended public worship. But notwithstanding every exertion made for the benefit of the Indians, they wasted away by fatal diseases and other causes, so that in 1764 they were reduced to four individuals only. Mr. Treat, having passed near half a century of most active labor, died soon after the remarkable storm, distinguished in the annals of New England by the name of the *Great Snow*, in February, 1717. The wind blew with violence; and whilst the grounds about his house were left entirely bare, the snow was heaped up in the road to an uncommon height. It was in vain to attempt making a path. His body was therefore kept several days, till an arch could be dug, through which he was borne to the grave; the Indians, at their earnest request, being permitted in turn to carry the corpse, and thus to pay the last tribute of respect to the remains of their beloved pastor. The second minister of Eastham was the Rev. Samuel Osborn, who was educated at the University of Dublin, and ordained here in 1718; the next year, the church being divided into two, Mr. Osborn removed into the south part of the township, and Rev. Benjamin Webb was ordained pastor of

Ebenezer^4 Snell, b. 1 Oct. 1738, Bridgewater, d. 2 Aug. 1813, Cummington, Mass. Moved to Cummington 1772 and fought in Revolution 1777; member Mass. Genl Court and judge court of sessions. m. 5 Apr. 1764, Sarah, 1737–1831, dau. Abiel and Sarah (Ames) Packard of Hingham, Mass. (Descendant of Francis Cook of *Mayflower* party). Their children, all b. No. Br., were—Abigail (m. Elisha Fish), Martha, Samuel (d. inf.), Sarah (m. Peter Bryant) (parents of William Cullen Bryant), Ebenezer (m. Deborah G. Porter; Lydia Richards) and *Thomas*.

Dr. Thomas^5 Snell, b. 11 Nov. 1774, Cummington, Mass., d. 4 May 1862, North Brookfield, Mass. Clergyman, Dartmouth 1795, on faculty Haverhill Academy. Photograph and biography in Temple's History of North Brookfield; Memoirs in N.E.H.G.Reg. m. 11 Sept. 1800, Tirzah, 1780–1855, dau. Judah and Martha (Alvord) Strong of Bolton, Conn. Their children, all b. No. Brookfield, were—Ebenezer S. (m. Sabra C. Clark), Samuel (d. inf.), Martha A. (m. Moses Porter), *Thomas*, Edward (d. inf.), Sarah P. (d. unm.), Tirzah S. (m. Elijah C. Emerson), William W. (m. Jane E. Fay; Martha W. Fay), Abigail F. (d. unm.) and Phebe M. (m. Lewis Thorpe).

Thomas^6 Snell, Jr., b. 17 Aug. 1809, No. Brookfield, d. 21 Dec. 1893, No. Br. Farmer, m. (1) 16 May 1836, Lucretia C., 1810–1857, dau. Moses and Amy (Colt) Porter of Hadley, Conn. (Descendant of Rev. Jonathan Edwards and Elder William Brewster of the *Mayflower* party), and (2) 28 Aug. 1861, Mary W., dau. Elisha Fish of Gilsum, N. H. He had children, all b. No. Brookfield,—Daughter (d. inf.), *Moses P.*, Sarah E. (d. inf.), Thomas E. (d. inf.), Luther K. (m. Mary S. McDonald) and Thomas E. (d. inf.).

Rev. Moses Porter^7 Snell, b. 3 May 1839, No. Brookfield, Mass., d. 31 Dec. 1909, Washington, D. C. Clergyman, Amherst 1861, Hartford Theological Seminary 1868, Breveted captain Civil War. Moved to D. C., 1871. m. 31 Aug. 1862, Mary C., 1843–1924, dau. Gerard and Eliza (Allen) Hallock of New Haven, Conn. (Descendant John Howland and John Tilley of the *Mayflower* party). They had children, b. Conn. and D. C.—Merwin P. (m. Minnie A. Sprague; Joy Andrews), Gerard H. (d. inf.), Eliza C. (m. Joseph M. Long), Cora L. (d. unm.), Carleton E. (d. unm.), Theodore T. (m. Alice Spelman; Emma Dodge), *Charles L.*, William A. (m. Barbara A. Dean), and Clarence E. (m. Idabelle L. Russell; Edith E. Gravestock).

Major Charles Livingston^8 Snell, b. 11 Dec. 1877, Washington, D. C. Served in Spanish-American and World War I. m. 16 May 1906, Sarah E., d. 1915, dau. Charles E. and Helen S. Rittenhouse, and they have children, all b. Washington, D. C.—Elizabeth R. (m. Charles H. Hayes, USMC), Alden Edwards (m. Frances R. Gillette) and Hallock Pierrepont Snell (married).

Banks' Emigrants to New England; Mitchell's History of Bridgewater; Plymouth County Court records; Moore's Lives of Governors, p. 133; XIII NEHGReg. 248; XVII supra 160; (As to Chilton descent) Plymouth County Deeds; Mass. S&S in Rev.; Temple's History of North Brookfield; Godwin's Life of Wm. Cullen Bryant.

Washington, D. C. HALLOCK PORTER LONG.

THE SNOW GENEALOGY.

By MRS. M. L. T. ALDEN, of Troy, N. Y.

NICHOLAS, Anthony and William Snow came over early. There was also a Richard of Woburn, and Thomas of Boston. Anthony married Abigail Warren, and lived in Plymouth and Marshfield, and

had one son Josiah, and daughters. Josiah had no sons. These three are supposed to be related. William was an apprentice, married a Barker and went to Bridgewater. Mitchell has an account of his descendants, which are found later in Providence.

1. NICHOLAS^1 SNOW came in the Ann in 1623, and had share in the division of land in Plymouth, 1624; settled in Eastham in 1645; a man of much note. We find where he lived, and his neighbors, from Plymouth Colony Records, vol. 1, page 59. "A heigh waye" "from Plymouth to the Eele River. . . . The upper way to Thomas Clarkes still; the lower way from Ralph Wallens right out to Holmans Rock; allowed fourty foote on the west side, and so straight to Manesses Kempton's ground, whose fence is to be removed twenty foote inward, and so passing betweene two rocks at the brooke, straight to Edward Banges, leaveing his house west, and so along, leaveing Nicholas Snowes house east & so to Mr Hopkin's house, leaveing it east, and so up the valley to Thomas Clarkes uper stile, the foote way to be continued from Mr Hopkin's, in the old path, belowe Thomas Clarkes to the heigh way," etc.

He was freeman 1633. He with six others—Mr. Thomas Prence, John Doane, Nicholas Snow, Josias Cook, Richard Higgins, John Smally, and Edward Bangs—seven families, in all forty-nine souls, began the settlement of Eastham—at first called Nauset, early in 1645. It "is granted to be a township, and to have all the privileges of a township as other towns within the government have" in 1646. "Thus recognized a meeting of the inhabitants, duly convened, elected Nicholas Snow Town clerk, Edward Banks town treasurer, & Josias Cooke town constable." Nicholas Snow was town clerk from 1646, sixteen years; was deputy from 1648, three years; was selectman from 1663, seven years. He and his son Mark signed the call to Rev. John Mayo to settle as their minister in 1655. He was one of Gov. Thomas Prence's associates. We think he was born in England.

Henry F. Waters, in his Genealogical Gleanings in England (REGISTER, vol. 39, page 166), states that Joseph Walker of St. Margaret's, city of Westminster, gentleman, in his will dated 13 Feb. 1666, proved Feb. 27, 1666, bequeaths "to my kinswoman Mary Snow, wife of Nicholas Snow, citizen & armourer of London, whome I nominate executrix." Also the will of George Upham Wiveliscombe, Somerset, dated 1653, mentions testator's brother-in-law Nicholas Snow. This Nicholas Snow and Mary his wife may have been the parents of our Nicholas. He names his oldest daughter Mary.

He died at Eastham, Nov. 15, 1676. He married in Plymouth, Constance Hopkins, daughter of Mr. Stephen Hopkins, and a former wife. They came in the Mayflower. Bradford, in his History of Plymouth Plantation (Collections of Massachusetts Historical Society, 4th Series, vol. 3, page 448), gives in the list of the Mayflowerites:—"Mr Steven Hopkins & Elizabeth his wife, & 2 children caled Giles & Constanta a doughter, both by a former wife; and 2 more by this wife caled Damaris & Oceanus, the last was borne at sea, & 2 servants, called Edward Dotey, & Edward Litster." In 1650 he writes, "Mr Hopkins & his wife are now both dead, but they lived about 20 years in this place, & had one sone & 4 daughters born here. Their son became a seaman & dyed at Barbadoes, one daughter dyed here, & two are married, one of them hath 2 children, & one is yet to marry. So their increase which still survive are 5, but his son Giles is married, & has 4 children. His daughter Constanta is also married, & hath 12 children, all of them living, & one married." (*Ibid*, page 452.)

Goodwin, in his Pilgrim Republic (page 185), says that the Martins, Molines and Hopkins joined the Pilgrims in England.

Constance (Hopkins) Snow died Oct. 1677.

Nicholas does not mention his daughters in his will, and we suppose they received their portions when they married. The ages of his children are only guessed at, and the order in which they came, and I should be very glad of corrections. Nicholas Snow and Constance (Hopkins) Snow had children:

2. i. MARK,^{2} born at Plymouth, May 9, 1628.
3. ii. MARY, " " about 1630.
4. iii. SARAH, " " " 1632.
5. iv. JOSEPH, " " " 1634.
6. v. STEPHEN, " " " 1636.
7. vi. JOHN, " " " 1638.
8. vii. ELIZABETH, " " " 1640.
9. viii. JABEZ, " " " 1642.
10. ix. RUTH, " " " 1644.
11. x. HANNAH, born probably at Eastham, about 1646.
12. xi. REBECCA, " " " " 1648.
xii. Unknown.

I give Hannah and Rebecca on the authority of Davis's Landmarks of Plymouth (page 246). Both married Rickards.

The following is the

Will of Nicholas Snow.

I, Nicholas Snow of Eastham being old and infirm of body but of perfect memory and understanding, not knowing the day of my departure but yet daily expecting my last change I think it meet to leave this behind mee as my last will and testament.

Impt. I commend my sole into the arms of God's Mercy through Christ Jesus in whom I hope to sleep, and my body to a decent burial; and as concerning my temporal estate that God of his Goodness has given me, it is my last will and testament that after this manner it should be disposed of.

Impt. To my son Mark I give and bequeath all that twenty acres of upland lying at Namskaket where his house now stands, and two acres of meadow, and all that broken marsh thereof mine at Namskakett. Item, two thirds of my great lott at Satuckett lying next the Indian Ground, and that side of my lott west of the Indian land I give to him, and his heirs lawfully begotten of his body forever; and what he can purchase more of upland and meadow of the Indians thereatt Satuckett, I give to him all this abovesaid lands or meadow or marsh purchased or unpurchased, I give to him and to his heirs lawfully begotten of his body forever.

Imp. To my son Joseph Snow I give the other third part of my great lott at Satuckett aud two acres and a half of meadow lying at Namskekett near the head, and an neck of upland between it on the west side of William Twinnings all his abovesaid land and meadow I give to my son Joseph Snow, and to his heirs lawfully begotton of his body forever.

Imp. To my son Stephen Snow I give twenty acres on the south side of my great lott at Porchett, and ten acres of my little lott at Satuckett, lying between Daniel Cole and Edward Bangs by the side of a little pond an acre and a half of meadow at the Boat Meadow lying between Thomas Williams and Samuel Freemans and that part of my medow at the Great Meadow, that lyeth between Josiah Cooke and the Eel Creek; all this abovesaid land and meadow, I give to my son Steven, and the heirs lawfully begotton of his body, forever.

Item. To my son John Snow, I give all that my land at Paomet, purchased or unpurchased whether upland or meadow; and all my right, title or privilege at Paomett, I give to my son John Snow and to the heirs lawfully begotton of his body forever.

It. To my son Jabez Snow I give all my land lying between my house and my son Thomas Paines, and seven acres att the Bass Pond lying between Daniel Coles and William Browns and a half an acre of marsh at the end of it; and six acres of upland at the Herring Pond, and an acre and a half of meadow att Silver Springs lying on the north side of William Walkers, and the Cliff of upland adjacent to the abovesaid meadow and all the sedge ground about it to Ephriam Doanes and that part of my house he lives in as long as my wife or I do live.

Item. I give him two acres of meadow at the Great Meadow lying between the Eel Creek and Joseph Hardings.

Item. To my son Jabez I give that my four acres of meadow at Billingsgate due to me unlayed out, all this aforesaid upland and meadow I give to my son Jabez Snow, and the heirs of his body lawfully begotton forever.

Item. This my meadow about my house I give to my son Jabez.

Item. I give to my loving wife Constant Snow all my stock of cattle, sheep, horses, swine whatsoever to be at her disposall for her comfort and support of her life with all the moveable goods I am possessed of; and after her decease stock and moveables to be equally divided amongst all my children.

Item. To my wife I give the pte. and disposal of that part of my house shee now dwells in during her life time, and after her death to be my sons, Jabez Snow.

Item. I give to my loving wife that ten acres of upland att Porchett and 20 on Billingsgate Island, for her disposall for the comfort of her life; but if shee need it not, and leaves it undisposed of I give it then to my son Steven Snow; that 20 acres of upland att Billingsgate if my wife leaves it undisposed of, then to be my sons Jabez Snow.

I do give to the Church at Eastham for the furniture of the Table of the Lord with pewter, or other. I do say I do give ten shillings out of my estate after my wife's decease.

That this is my last Will and Testament I have sett my hand and seal, this fourtenth day of November, one thousand six hundred and seventy and six.

Witnessed, signed and sealed, NICHOLAS SNOW.
In the presence of us:
SAMUEL TREAT
THOMAS PAINE, SEN.

It is my desire that Dea. Samuel Freeman and John Mayo would oversee the same and faithful performance of this my last will and testament; and be helpful in any case of need concerning the same.

Above transcribed from the Record at Plymouth by me Josiah Paine.
(Original orthography followed.)

2. MARK^2 SNOW (*Nicholas*^{1}), born May 9, 1628; was a man of large usefulness and influence. In 1679 "Select Courts" "being established by law, Capt Jonathan Sparrow, Mr Mark Snow & Mr John Doane were commissioned to hold them in this town." In 1675 Mark Snow was chosen deputy, and continued deputy for six years. In 1667 Mark Snow was chosen selectman, and was selectman eighteen years. In 1663 he was chosen town clerk, and was town clerk fifteen years. He died in 1695, in Eastham. He married 1st, probably in Eastham, Jan. 18, 1655, Anne Cook, daughter of Josiah Cook, and had one child:

13. i. ANNE^3 SNOW, born in Eastham, July 7, 1656; the mother died July 25, 1656. Mark Snow married 2d, Jane Prence, Jan. 9, 1660, daughter of Gov. Thomas and Mary (Collier) Prence. She was born in Duxbury, Nov. 1, 1637; died at Harwich, about 1711. "Widow Jane Snow admitted to church in Harwich, April, 1701."

Children by second wife, all born in Eastham:

ii. Mary,^{6} b. Nov. 30, 1661.
14. iii. Nicholas, b. Dec. 6, 1663.
iv. Elizabeth, b. May 9, 1666; died Jan. 18, 1675.
15. v. Thomas, b. Aug. 6, 1668.
vi. Sarah, b. May 10, 1671.
16. vii. Prence, b. May 22, 1674; d. May 24, 1742.
viii. Elizabeth, b. June 22, 1676; d. March 22, 1677–8.
ix. Hannah, b. Sept. 16, 1679.

He does not mention his daughters in his will, which is as follows:

Will of Mark Snow.

In the name of God Amen. I Mark Snow of Eastham being weak of body but in sound mind and disposing memory, do make this my last will and testament in manner and form following. That is to say, first and principally I resign my soul unto God that gave it in hopeful assurance of a blessed resurrection at ye last day in and through ye merits of my blessed redeemer; and secondly, I commit my body to ye earth from whence it was taken to be decently buried at ye discretion of my executor hereafter named. As for my temporal estate that ye Lord hath lent unto me I dispose of that as followeth:

Imprimis—I give unto my son, Nicholas, a parcel of land where his house stands, computed at twenty and six acres, according to bouuds set down in ye Purchasers book of records, with two acres of meadow lying at ye head of Namskaket, according to record as above said.

Imp. I give unto my son, Nicholas ye one half of my lot of land lying at Satuckett, between Jonathan Bangs and ye Indian land. I give unto my son Nicholas, ye one half of a parcel of meadow lying in ye township of Yarmouth in a place called ye Blue Meadow in ye south side of Bass River.

It. I give to my son Thomas Snow ye extra half of my lot where his house stands on that side and next the Indian range, and ye one half of my meadow in Yarmouth yt above specified meadow.

It. I give unto my son Prince Snow after my wife's decease or widowhood, my now dwelling house, and all ye land adjoining and fifteen acres of land above ye common road according to bounds specified in ye record abovesaid. I give to my son Prince Snow three acres of meadow that lies below my now dwelling house according to bounds set down in ye before specified book of records.

It. I give unto my son Thomas Snow an acre of land at ye northermost end my lot in ye old fields commonly so-called and another small division of land estimated at three quarters of an acre of land lying in ye before specified old field at Satuckett between Ensign Bangs and Thomas Freeman.

It. I give to my son Prince Snow ye remainder of my lot of land in ye before specified Indian fields after my wife's decease.

It. I give to my son Nicholas and Thomas my lot of land containing three acres of land according to record lying between John Freemans pasture and ye common road. I give unto my son Prince after my wife's decease an acre and a half of meadow lying between James Cole and Stephen Hopkins in Namskaket meadow according to bounds specified in ye before specified records. All my land that lie undivided after my wife's decease I give and bequeath to my three sons, Nicholas Thomas and Prince to be equally divided between them.

It. I give and bequeath to my loving wife Jane Snow all my whole personal estate after my debts and funeral charges are paid. I do appoint my loving wife, Jane Snow my whole and sole executor after my decease. It. I give to my son, Prince Snow, my musket cat-box and cutlass and one pistol. I give to my son Thomas Snow my back sword and one pistol. It. I give to my grandchild Jonathan Snow my carbine. To ye truth and verity hereof I have set my hand and seal this twenty and third day of November 1694.

Signed & sealed in the
presence of us
Samuel Knowles
Thomas Crosby Jr.
Jonathan Sparrow.

Mark Snow.

Copied from Bamstable Court Probate Records, Book 1.

He applied for permission to be freeman in 1655, and was received 1657. He is on the lists of those able to bear arms in 1643, with a cross + at his name. He was not 16 then.

All my dates are corrected by Mr. Josiah Paine of Harwich, and I have made a thorough study of Plymouth Colony Records, Freeman's History of Cape Cod, and N. E. Hist. and Gen. Registers, and am indebted to Mr. B. F. Cummings of Salt Lake City for some facts. I shall be glad to receive any facts or corrections. Address Mrs. Charles L. Alden, 4 Gale Place, Troy, N. Y.

[To be continued.]

THE SNOW GENEALOGY.

By Mrs. M. L. T. ALDEN, of Troy, N. Y.

2. **MARK^2 SNOW** (continued).

The will of his wife, Mrs. Jane Snow, is as follows:

The Will of Jane Snow.

In the name of God, Amen. I, Jane Snow, widow, of Harwich, being weak of body, but of sound and disposing memory, blessed be God for it, do make this my last will & testament in manner following; That is to say, first and principally, I resign my soul into ye merciful hand of Almighty God, my Creator, assuredly hoping through ye merits of my blessed Savior to obtain the pardon & remission all my sins; and my body I commit to the earth whence it was taken, to be decently buried at ye discretion of my executors hereafter named. And as for the temporal estate that God has given me I dispose of it as followeth:

Imp. I give to my son, Nicholas Snow, my Casin and ewer, and small brass kettle and one spit.

It. I give unto my son Thomas Snow, one copper kettle.

It. I give to my son, Prince Snow, my great iron kettle.

It. For my cattle, my will is that they be equally divided among all my children.

It. I give to Anne Atwood a pewter wine cup, and a dram cup, & a sucking bottle.

It. I give my cabinet unto my grand child Jane Nickerson.

It. I give my little trunk unto my grand child Jane Snow.

Furthermore my will is, that ye rest of my moveable estate be equally divided betwixt my two daughters, Mary & Sarah.

Furthermore, I do appoint my son Nicholas Snow, and my brother Jonathan Sparrow, for to see this my last will performed.

As witness my hand and seal, this twenty and first day of December, 1703.

Signed, Sealed & delivered
in presence of us.
Mary Sparrow.
Martha Cobb.

her
JANE + SNOW.
mark.

The above will proved July 2, 1712.

3. **MARY^2 SNOW** (*Nicholas*^{1}), born about 1630, probably in Plymouth; married about 1650 Thomas Paine, who came from Kent, England, in 1622, and was then aged "10 or 12," and who died in Eastham, where his children were born. Mr. Josiah Paine writes: "Mary Snow, who married Thomas Paine, I think was among the eldest of Nicholas Snow's children. She was doubtless a very remarkable woman. Her son John, to whom we are indebted for much respecting her, was lavish in his praise of her. Her seven sons all were men of character, and highly respected in towns in which they settled. Four of the grandsons were ministers." * * * "It is quite strange that Nicholas Snow did not give the names of his daughters in his will. It could not have been for his dislike of them, for those whose history has reached our time appear to have been women of the first order. Mary (Snow) Paine died in 1704, and her distinguished son, Dea. John Paine, great grandfather of John Howard Payne, left in verses much relating to her, showing she possessed many excellent traits of character." Children:

i. **MARY^3 PAINE**, m. James Rogers, son of Lieut. Joseph Rogers of the Mayflower band, Jan. 11, 1670. He d. in 1678, and she again m. Israel Cole, son of Daniel and Ruth (Chandler) Cole of Eastham, April 24, 1679. By both husbands she had five children. Israel Cole was the wealthiest man in Eastham of his time. He died in 1724. His wife then dead.

ii. **SAMUEL PAINE**, b. about 1652; m. Patience, dau. of Maj. John and Mercy (Prence) Freeman of Eastham, Jan. 31, 1682. He d. Oct. 13, 1712. He had nine chileren. He lived in Eastham. Descendants widely scattered. Ancestor of Josiah Paine, Harwich. His widow d. Feb. 15, 1745.

iii. **THOMAS PAINE**, b. in the year 1657; m. for his first wife, Hannah, dau. of Jonathan and Phebe (Watson) Shaw, Aug. 5, 1678. She d. July 24, 1713, aged 51. He m. for his second wife, Mrs. Elizabeth Eairs of Boston, March 8, 1714–15. He d. at Truro, where he settled June 23, 1721, aged 64. He was a prominent man. He had fourteen children.

iv. **ELIEZAR PAINE**, b. March 10, 1658.

v. **ELISHA PAINE**, m. Rebecca Doane, dau. of John and Abigail Doane of Eastham, Jan. 26, 1685. He resided in Eastham, Barnstable, and Canterbury, Conn. He d. at the latter place Feb. 4, 1735. His wife d. very aged, Dec. 19, 1758. He was a prominent man in Canterbury. He had three sons, who were Newlight ministers. He had ten children. Descendants scattered. The late Hon. Abraham Payne of Providence, R. I., was a descendant.

vi. **JOHN PAINE**, b. March 14, 1660–1; m. for his first wife Bennet Freeman, dau. of Maj. John and Mercy (Prence) Freeman, March 14, 1689. She d. May 30, 1716. He m. for his second wife, Alice, dau. of Nathaniel and Hannah (Prence) Mayo, March 3, 1719–20. He d. at Eastham, now Orleans, Oct. 26, 1731, aged 70 years. She survived him, and d. Oct. 12, 1748, in her 63d year. He was an eminent citizen of Eastham. He had by both wives eighteen children. John Howard Payne, the author of "Home, Sweet Home," was a great grandson.

vii. **NICHOLAS PAINE**, m. Hannah Higgins, dau. of Jonathan and Elizabeth (Rogers) Higgins, and settled in Eastham. He d. in 1733. His wife Hannah d. Jan. 24, 1731–2. He had seven children. His only son, Philip, d. unm. at the age of 21 years.

viii. **JAMES PAINE**, b. July 6, 1665; m. Bethiah Thacher, dau. of Hon. John and Rebecca (Winslow) Thacher of Yarmouth, April 9, 1691. He settled in Barnstable, Mass., where he d. Nov. 17, 1728. His wife, Bethiah, d. July 8, 1734. He had seven children. His son Thomas, b. April 9, 1694, graduated at Harvard College, and settled in the ministry at Weymouth, was the father of Hon. Robert Treat Paine, the distinguished lawyer, and one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence.

ix. **JOSEPH PAINE**, the youngest son, m. Patience, daughter of Jonathan and Hannah (Prence) Sparrow of Eastham, May 27, 1691. He settled in Harwich, that part now Brewster. He was one of the founders of the First Church in Harwich in 1700. He was a prominent man. He d. of a fever Oct. 1, 1712. His widow m. John Jenkins of Barnstable, Nov. 28, 1715. She d. Oct. 28, 1745. He had eleven children. His descendants widely scattered; many reside in Maine. Prof. J. K. Paine, of Harvard College, is a descendant.

x. **DORCAS PAINE**, m. Benjamin Vickerie of Hull, Mass., about 1689. She d. at the birth of her youngest child, Oct. 30, 1707. She had seven children.

4. **SARAH^2 SNOW** (*Nicholas*^{1}), born probably in Plymouth, about 1632; married Jan. 25, 1654–5, William Walker, of Eastham, born 1620 in England.—(See Walker Genealogy.) Freeman's History of Cape Cod, Vol. II., page 367, says he came over in 1635, aged fifteen; in Hingham, 1636. He died at an advanced age. His will was proved

1703. His name is on the list of those able to bear arms in 1643; admitted to freedom June 3, 1656. Tradition says he lived on the North Bank of the great Pond, about 500 yards west of his father-in-law, Nicholas Snow. I cannot find when his wife died. Children:

i. **John**³ **Walker**, b. Nov. 24, 1655; killed by the Indians in their assault upon Eastham in 1676.
ii. **William**³ **Walker**, b. Oct. 12, 1657; d. young.
iii. **William**³ **Walker**, b. Aug. 16, 1659. He d. January, 1743–4; m. and had: (1) *William*,⁴ b. 1692–3; (2) *Mehitable*, m. John Knowles; (3) *John*; (4) *Susanna*, m. Jonathan Collins.
iv. **Sarah**³ **Walker**, b. July 30, 1662; not mentioned in her father's will.
v. **Elizabeth**³ **Walker**, b. Sept. 28, 1664; spoken of in her father's will by her maiden name.
vi. **Jabez**³ **Walker**, b. July 8, 1668, d. 1742; m. Elizabeth ——, and had: (1) *Richard*,⁴ b. June 12, 1695, m. Joanna Tomline of Needham; (2) *Rejoice*, b. May 13, 1697, m. Joseph Leven of Plymouth; (3) *Mary*, b. Sept. 14, 1699, m. John Berry of Yarmouth; (4) *Jeremiah*, b. Sept. 17, 1702, m. Esther Tomlin; (5) *Mercy*, b. November, 1704, m. Nathaniel Smith of Harwich: (6) *Jabez*, b. ———, m. July, 1748, Sarah Atwood of Provincetown; (7) *Sarah*, m. Nathaniel Higgins, Aug. 7, 1727, second wife; (8) *Patience*, m. Oct. 15, 1747, William Chase of Harwich.

5. Lieut. **Joseph**² **Snow** (*Nicholas*¹), born probably in Plymouth, about 1634; married once, at least, Mary ——. He died Jan. 3, 1722–3. His wife was alive in 1717. Children, born in Eastham:

21. i. **Joseph**,³ b. Nov. 24, 1671.
22. ii. **Benjamin**, b. June 9, 1673.
iii. **Mary**, b. Oct. 17, 1674; dead in 1717.
23. iv. **Sarah**, b. April 30, 1677.
24. v. **Ruth**, b. Oct. 14, 1679.
25. vi. **Stephen**, b. Feb. 24, 1681.
26. vii. **Lydia**, b. July 20, 1684.
viii. **Rebecca**, b. Dec. 4, 1686; unm. in 1717.
27. ix. **James**, b. March 31, 1689.
x. **Jane**, b. March 27, 1692; either she or her sister Mary m. a Hamilton, and had a child, Rebecca Hamilton, alive in 1717, while the mother was probably dead, as she was not mentioned in Lieut. Joseph Snow's will.
28. xi. **Josiah**, b. Nov. 27, 1694.

The Will of Joseph Snow, of Eastham.

In the name of God, Amen. The twenty-third day of November, 1717. I, Joseph Snow of Eastham, in the County of Barnstable in the province of Massachusetts Bay in New England, yoeman, being stricken in years, and not knowing how soon it may please the Lord to put an end to this my frail and mortal life, & being yet sound in knowledge, memory, & understanding, do make this my last will and testament in manner & form following; that is to say first of all I recommend my soul to the mercy of God in Jesus Christ, and my body to the earth to be decently buried at the discretion of my executors hereafter named, and as to such worldly estate as I have, I dispose of, give & bequeath in manner following; that is to say after my just debts & funeral charges are paid.

I give & bequeath to my two grandsons, namely, Nathaniel Snow & Joseph Snow, to them, their heirs and assigns forever, one half of my lot of meadow at Lieut Island, next the southerly side of said Island, near the great rock; that is to say, one third of said half to Nathaniel, and two thirds of said half to Joseph. Also I give to them my sd two grandsons, and to their heirs and assigns forever, equally alike, one third part of my wood lot, of upland, on the southerly side the fresh brook, laid out & set to me in the last division of land.

Item, I give & bequeath to my son Benjamin Snow, and to his heirs & assigns forever, one quarter part of my lot of Meadow lying on the southerly side of Lieut. Island, near the great rock. Item, I give to my son Stephen Snow, and to his heirs & assigns forever, one third part of my meadow at Silver Spring, with one third part of all my upland there adjoining. Item, I give to my son James Snow, and to his heirs & assigns forever, one quarter part of my lot of meadow, lying on the southerly side of Left. Island, near the great Rock, and also one third part of my meadow at Silver Spring, with one third part of all my upland there adjoining. Item, I give to my son Josiah Snow, and to his heirs and assigns forever, all my homestead or house lot, with all my housing, only in case my wife Mary Snow out lives me. then she shall have the use and improvement of third part thereof during the time she continues to be my widow; also I give to my son Josiah Snow all that plain lot of land, adjoining to my homestead, laid out in the former division and also my tenement lot adjoining, laid out in the former division; also my wood lot laid out in ye last division on ye southerly side of the Fresh Brook; also my plain lot laid out in ye last division near my homestead; also all my part of meadow at Left Island, called a money share in the division of meadow; also one third part of my meadow at Silver Spring, with one third part of my upland there adjoining all to him & his heirs & assigns forever. Item I give unto my daughter Lydia Lincoln, and to her heirs and assigns forever, one third part of my wood lot of land in the last division on the southerly side the Fresh Brook. Item, I give to my wife, Mary Snow, my best bed and the bedding thereto belonging; also, I give her one cow & six sheep, and all her wearing clothes both woolen & linen. Item All the rest of my personal estate, I give one half part thereof equally to be divided among my four daughters & grand daughters, namely, Sarah Young, Lydia Lincoln, Ruth Brown, Rebecca Snow & Rebecca Hamilton, and the other half part thereof to and among my four sons, and two grandsons, namely Benjamin Snow, Stephen Snow, James Snow, Josiah Snow and my two grandsons, namely, Nathaniel Snow and Joseph Snow between them, to have one equal part with my said sons, and in case my right in common meadow should ever be divided, then my said sons & grandsons to have the same equally alike among them to their heirs & assigns forever.

And I constitute & appoint my aforesaid son James Snow, executor of this my last will & testament. In witness thereof I do hereunto set my hand and seal the day & year above written.

Witnessed, signed, sealed & declared
to be his last will & testament in the
presence of
Joseph Doane.
Mary + Doane.
John Shaw.

mark
Joseph ‡ Snow.
his

Barnstable Co. Records.

[To be continued.]

THE SNOW GENEALOGY.

By Mrs. M. L. T. ALDEN, of Troy, N. Y.

STEPHEN^2 SNOW (*Nicholas*^{1}), third son of Nicholas and Constance (Hopkins) Snow. He was born, probably in Plymouth, about 1636, and died "Nauset Records December 17, Monday, 1705." He married 1st, December 13, 1663 (Eastham Records), Susanna (Deane) Rogers, daughter of Stephen and Elizabeth (Ring) Deane. She was born in Plymouth before 1634; married 1st, Joseph Rogers, Jr., son of Lieut. Joseph Rogers (who came as a boy in the Mayflower).

[Joseph Rogers, born 17 July, 1635, and died from a fall in wrestling with his friend Richard Hawes, "Christmas Day, 1660." Susanna Deane's mother married for her second husband Josias Cooke, and was mother of Ann, first wife of Mark^3 Snow.]

Susanna (Deane, Rogers) Snow died before 1701, for then Stephen Snow married 2d, Mary Bigford, April 9, 1701. He resided in what is now East Orleans. Children, born in Eastham:

29. i. BATHSHUA, b. July 25, 1664.
30. ii. HANNAH, b. Jan. 2, 1666.
31. iii. MICAJAH, b. December 22, 1669.
32. iv. BETHIAH, b. July 1, 1672.
v. MEHITABLE.
33. vi. EBENEZER.
Perhaps more.

Will of Stephen Snow, of Eastham.

"Stephen Snow of Eastham, being weak of body, and yet of disposing memory, blessed be God, do make this my last will & testament. First, I bequeath my soul unto God that gave it when this temporal life shall have an end, in hopes of a blessed resurrection at the last day, in and through the merits of my blessed Redeemer. Further my will is that when this temporal life of mine shall have an end, I bequeath my body to the earth to be decently buried at the discretion of my executors hereafter named.

Further my will is, that my two sons Micajah and Ebenezer Snow, shall have and enjoy to them & their heirs all that my houseing & lands, both upland & meadow within the township of Eastham, for to be equally divided betwixt them after the decease of my wife, who is for to enjoy the use of the house during her natural life. Further my will is that, my two sons aforenamed, shall take care to maintain their mother during her life, out of the profits of my land with what was hers before marriage. Further, my will is my son, Micajah, shall have & enjoy to him & his heirs forever, that my ten acres of land at or near Satucket situate within the township of Harwich, which was given to me by my father, Nicholas Snow. Further my will is that my son Ebenezer Snow, my daughter Mehitable, shall each of them have the beds & furniture which belong to them, that they usually lie upon. The rest of my estate, I leave with my executors for the maintenance of my wife, during her life, and what of my estate shall be left, my will is that it shall be equally divided between my children after the debts & funeral charges are paid. Further my will is that I do make & appoint my loving son, Micajah Snow, to be my whole & sole executor to this my last will and hereby revoking all former wills by me made, and to the truth & verity hereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this second day of April, 1691.

Signed, sealed & declared STEPHEN SNOW.
Higgins
• les
Sparrow.
Will proved Jan. 10, 1705–6.

[To be continued.]

THE SNOW GENEALOGY.

By Mrs. CHARLES L. ALDEN, of Troy, N. Y.

7. **JOHN^2 SNOW** (*Nicholas*^{1}), born about 1638; died 1692 in Eastham. He married Sept. 19, 1667, in Eastham, Mary Smalley, daughter of John and Ann (Walden) Smalley, born in Barnstable, 11 Dec. 1647. She and her twin brother Isaac were baptized in Barnstable Church, 27 Feb. 1648. She died in 1703 in Eastham. She married 2d, Ephraim Doane. We find no will of John Snow. The Inventory of the estate of John Snow was made by John Freeman and William Walker, April 4, 1692. "He doubtless lived within the present town of Eastham. The settlement of the estate of John Snow, late of Eastham, deceased, at the County Court held at Barnstable April y^e 19, 1692, as followeth; after debts paid, one third part of his real estate, to Mary Snow, widow, relict of sd deceased during her natural life, and one third part of the personal estate forever; and ye rest of sd personal estate for bringing up ye children of sd deceased, saving her paying to each of the daughters four pounds apiece as they come of age or married; & the sons of the said deceased to have the lands & housing according to law."

Children, born in Eastham:

i. HANNAH,^{3} b. Aug. 26, 1670.
ii. MARY, b. March 10, 1672.
iii. ABIGAIL, b. Oct. 14, 1673.
iv. REBECCA, b. July 23, 1676.
34. v. JOHN, b. May 8, 1678.
35. vi. ISAAC, b. Aug. 10, 1683.
vii. LYDIA, b. Sept. 29, 1685.
36. viii. ELISHA, b. Jan. 10, 1686.
ix. PHEBE, b. June 27, 1689.

8. **ELIZABETH^2 SNOW** (*Nicholas*^{1}), born about 1640; died June 16, 1678, in Eastham; married in Eastham, Dec. 13, 1665, Thomas Rogers, son of Lt. Joseph Rogers of the Mayflower. He was born in 1638 in Plymouth, and died in Eastman, 1678.

Children, all born in Eastham:

i. ELIZABETH ROGERS,^{3} b. Oct. 8, 1666.
ii. JOSEPH ROGERS, b. Feb. 1, 1667; m. Prudence?; settled in Eastham, and had *Sarah*, b. Nov. 20, 1691; *Elizabeth*, b. Sept. 20, 1693; *Joseph*, ... "Deacon John Payne says, 'Joseph Rogers died of a strange distemper, of which he had long laid sick, April the 29th, 1696.'"
iii. HANNAH ROGERS, b. March 20, 1669.
iv. THOMAS ROGERS, b. March 6, 1670–1; "died 9 days old."
v. THOMAS ROGERS, b. May 6, 1672; m. Sarah Treat, Dec. 10, 1700, daughter of Rev. Samuel Treat. He settled in Truro, and his children were all born and baptized there June 13, 1716, except the last, baptized Sept. 22, 1718. *Sarah*, b. Oct. 27, 1701; *Phebe*, b. Nov. 1, 1703; *Elizabeth*, b. March 27, 1706; *Lucy*, b. June 6, 1708; *Hannah*, b. April 6, 1710; *Thomas*, b. Dec. 11, 1712; *Joseph*,

b. March 24, 1715; *Huldah*, b. Aug. 13, 1717. (For further particulars in regard to this family see Treat Genealogy, published by John Harvey Treat, of Lawrence, Mass.)

vi. Eliezar Rogers, b. Nov. 3, 1673; settled in Plymouth; m. Ruhamah, and had *Elizabeth*, 1698; *Thomas*, 1701 (who married Priscilla Churchill, and had Ruth 1722, Priscilla 1723, Desire 1725, Willis 1727, Samuel 1728, Thomas 1730, Hannah 1734, Eleazur 1736, Priscilla 1739, John 1740); *Hannah*, 1703; *Experience*, 1707, m. Samuel Totman; *Eleazur*, 1710; *Willis*, 1712; *Abijah*, 1714; *Meriah*, 1716; *Ruth*, 1718.
(This family I find in Davis's Landmarks of Plymouth).

vii. Nathaniel Rogers, b. Jan. 18, 1675. Nothing further known of him or his sisters.

9. Jabez^2 Snow (*Nicholas*^{1}), born about 1642; died in Eastham, Dec. 20, 1690; married in Eastham, probably about 1670, Elizabeth ?

Lieut. Jabez Snow was in Capt. John Gorham's Company in the Canada Expedition, 1690. He was a prominent man in Eastham. He left no will. The probate records show he had nine children. His "six daughters" to have "fourteen pounds & four shillings each."

Children, born in Eastham:

37. i. Jabez,^{3} b. Sept. 6, 1670.
38. ii. Edward, b. March 26, 1672.
iii. Sarah, b. Feb. 26, 1673.
39. iv. Grace, b. Feb. 1, 1674–5.
v. Thomas, b. April 2, 1677; d. April 2, 1697, in Eastham; never married. "His death is mentioned by his cousin John Paine in his Diary, 'About the 22^d or 23^d of March, Thomas Snow, our faithful & trusty apprentice, was taken down, & lay sorely ill of a violent fever, and died on the 2^d of April, 1697, early in the morning.'"
40. vi. Elizabeth, probably } before
41. vii. Deborah, " } 1690.
42. viii. Rachel, " 1685.

10. Ruth^2 Snow (*Nicholas*^{1}), born about 1644; died in Eastman, Jan. 17, 1716–17; married Dec. 2, 1666, in Eastham, John Cole, son of Daniel Cole and Mary, his wife. He was born probably at Plymouth or Duxbury, 1644, and died in Eastham, Jan. 6, 1725–6. He was a lieutenant. He made his will Oct. 20, 1717; mentions John, Joseph, Ruth, Hepsibah, Hannah, Mary and Sarah. He settled in Eastham.

Children, born in Eastham:

i. Ruth Cole,^{3} b. March 11, 1667–8; m. March 21, 1688–9, in Eastham, W^m Twining, son of W^m and Elizabeth (Deane) Twining, and had *Elizabeth*, 1690; *Thankful*, 1697; *Ruth*, 1699; *Hannah*, 1702; *William*, 1704; *Barnabas*, 1705; *Mercy*, 1708.
ii. Lt. John Cole, b. March 6, 1669; d. Dec. 13, 1746; m. about 1693, Mercy or Mary Mayo. (Mr. Josiah Paine says she was a widow.) She d. Feb. 17, 1731, and they had *Jonathan*, b. Oct. 4, 1694; *John*, Oct. 14, 1696; *Mary*, Aug. 25, 1698; *James*, Oct. 23, 1700; *Nathan*, Jan. 21, 1702-3; *Joshua*, March 20, 1704-5; *Moses*, July 22, 1707; *Phebe*, Oct. 29, 1709–10; *Thankful*, Oct. 20, 1712; *Joseph*, Oct. 13, 1714; *Thankful*, Oct. 19, 1716.
iii. Hepsibah Cole, b. June , 1672.
iv. Hannah Cole, b. March 27, 1675.
v. Joseph Cole, b. June 11, 1677; m. Feb. 4, 1701–2, Elizabeth Cobb, daughter of James Cobb. She d. March 16, 1714. They had: *Gershom*, b. March 1, 1702–3; *Ruth*, March 11, 1704–5; *Patience*,

Dec. 8, 1706; *Eliz.*, Feb. 10, 1708–9; *Sarah*, March 8, 1710–11; *Reliance*, Aug. 2, 1713, d. Aug. 23, 1729.

11. Hannah^2 Snow (*Nicholas*^{1}), born probably in Eastham about 1646; "married in 1683, Giles Rickard, son of Giles and Hannah (Dunham) Rickard, and appears by his will to have only had an adopted child, Desire Doten." Davis says Hannah was *probably* daughter of Nicholas Snow; but, if so, it seems strange that he did not provide for her or her sister, Rebecca, in his will, as they were unmarried. There are some slight indications of a second Nicholas^2 Snow (Nicholas^1), who may have died before his father; and these might have been his daughters. But if this is so, it seems strange they or he were not referred to in Nicholas^1 Snow's will.

12. Rebecca^2 Snow (*Nicholas*^{1}) probably born in Eastham in 1648; married Samuel Rickard of Plympton, son of the "2d Giles," in 1689, and had:

i. Rebecca,^{3} b. 1691.
ii. Hannah, b. 1693.
iii. Samuel, b.
iv. Bethiah, b. 1698.
v. Henry, b. 1700.
vi. Mary, b. 1702.
vii. Elkanah, b. 1704; m. Keturah Bishop.
viii. Mehitabel, b. 1707.
ix. Eleazur, b. 1709.

[To be continued.]

THE SNOW GENEALOGY.

By Mrs. Charles L. Alden, of Troy, N. Y.

13. Anne^3 Snow (*Mark*,^{2} *Nicholas*^{1}), ~~son~~ dau of Mark Snow and ~~Jane (Prence)~~ Anne Cook Snow, born in Eastham, July 7, 1656; married Oct. 14, 1684, Eldad Atwood, son of Stephen and Abigail (Dunham) Atwood, born probably about 1651, and died 1715. Children, born in Eastham:

i. Mary^4 Atwood, b. Nov. 4, 1684.
ii. John^4 Atwood, b. Aug. 10, 1686; m. Thankful Williamson, Sept. 15, 1721, and had (1) *William*,^{5} b. April 14, 1721; (2) *Mary*, b. Oct. 28, 1723; (3) *John*, b. Sept. 25, 1725; (4) *Thankful*, b. May 28, 1727; (5) *Ephraim*, b. March 9, 1728; (6) *Timothy*, b. July 5, 1731; (7)

& dyed at Barbadoes, one daughter died here & two are married, one of them hath 2 children & one is yet to marry. So their increase which still survive are 5, but his son Giles is married & has 4 children. His daughter Constanta is also married & hath 12 children all of them living & one married."

One of these children was Mary Snow, who married Thomas^{2} Paine.

APPENDIX

THE SNOW FAMILY

Mary Snow, wife of Thomas^{2} Paine of Eastham, was a daughter of Nicholas Snow of Plymouth and Eastham. Mr. Snow came to New England in the *Ann*, in 1623. He had a share in the division of land at Plymouth in 1624. He was a man of much note. He was made a freeman in 1633. In 1648, Nicholas Snow, together with Governor Thomas Prence, John Doane, Josias Cook, Richard Higgins, John Smalley and Edward Bangs, with their families, began the settlement of Eastham. This place was first called Nauset. Mr. Snow became town clerk and remained in that position sixteen years. He was deputy to the General Court from 1648 to 1651, and selectman for seven years, beginning in 1663. In business he was associated with Governor Thomas Prence.

Nicholas Snow married at Plymouth, Constance, daughter of Mr. Stephen Hopkins. Both father and daughter had come to this country on the *Mayflower*. Constance (Hopkins) Snow died in October, 1677, at Eastham. Mr. Nicholas Snow died at Eastham on Nov. 15, 1676.

Stephen Hopkins was a prominent man in Plymouth Colony, and one of the few passengers of the *Mayflower* who came to this country with servants. Governor William Bradford, in his enumeration of the passengers of the *Mayflower* thus describes him in his *History of Plymouth Plantations*:

> "Mr. Steven Hopkins and Elizabeth, his wife, and two children, called Giles and Constanta, a daughter, both by a former wife, and two more by this wife, called Damaris and Oceanus, the last was born at sea, and two servants called Edward Dotey and Edward Lister."
>
> In 1650, Governor Bradford writes:
>
> "Mr. Hopkins & his wife are now both dead, but they lived about 20 years in this place & had one sone & 4 daughters born here. Their son became a seaman

Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors) Family No.

Paine
Surname

Father — Thomas PAINE Jr.

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			1615	○			England	Came with father at age 10. As a	○
Death	16	Aug	1706	○	Eastham		MA	child he lost one eye - shot by	○
Buried				○				an Indian arrow	○
Married		ca	1649	○	"		Plymouth Colony		○

Occupation Constable, cooper, millwright + mill builder - had beautiful penmanship, owned much land. Church ○

Places Lived Lived in Boston a while for business ca 1669 but returned to Eastham ○

Other Wives ○

His Father's Name Thomas Paine, settled at Yarmouth Plymouth Colony (Freeman 1637) (living 1650) (first rep to Old Colony Court from Y.) ○

His Mother's Maiden Name Hannah ? ○

Mother — Mary SNOW

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			1630	○					○
Death	28	Apr	1704	○	Eastham				○
Buried				○					○

Occupation Military Church ○

Places Lived ○

Other Husbands ○

Her Father's Name Nicholas Snow ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name Constance Hopkins, (dau Stephen) ○

Children

Sex	Full Given Name		Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Mary Paine	○	Birth		ca	1650	Eastham			○
			Death							○
	Spouse - James Rogers (-13 Apr 1678) Israel Cole	○	Married	① 11 ② 24	Jan Apr	1670 1679				○
	2. (Lt) Samuel Paine	○	Birth		ca	1652	Eastham			○
			Death	13	Oct	1712				○
	Spouse - Patience Freeman (dau Maj John)	○	Married	31	Jan	1682				○
	3. (Judge) Thomas Paine III (Justice, Ct of Common Pleas Barnstable Co)	○	Birth			1656/7	Eastham			○
			Death	23	June	1713	Truro			○
	Spouse ① Hannah Shaw (dau Jonathan) | ② Elizabeth Earis of Boston	○	Married	① 5 ② 8	Aug Mar	1678 1714/5				○
	4. Elisha Paine (Clerk wrote Eliezar)	○	Birth	10	Mar	1658	Eastham			○
			Death	7	Feb	1735/6	Canterbury	Windham	CT	○
	Spouse - Rebecca Doane	○	Married	5	Jan	1685	Eastham			○
+	5. John Paine	○	Birth	14	Mar	1660/1	Eastham			○
	(long illness)		Death	26	Oct	1731				○
	Spouse - Bennett Freeman (1671-1716) Alice Mayo (1686 - 1204 1748)	○	Married	① 14 ② 3	Mar Mar	1689 1719/20				○
	6. Nicholas Paine	○	Birth		ca	1663	Eastham			○
			Death		fall	1733				○
	Spouse - Hannah Higgins (-2 Jan 1731/2)	○	Married			16	lived at Orleans			○
	7. James Paine (In expedition to Canada with Phipps)(Grandfa of Robert T Paine who signed Declaration of Independence)	○	Birth	6	July	1665	Eastham			○
			Death	12	Nov	1728				○
	Spouse - Bethia Thacher (-7 July 1734) dau Col John	○	Married	9	Apr	1691				○
	8. Town clerk Joseph Paine (very stout, champion wrestler)	○	Birth		ca	1667	Eastham			○
			Death	1	Oct	1712	Harwich (now Brewster)			○
	Spouse - Patience Sparrow (-28 Oct 1745)	○	Married	27	May	1691				○
	9. Dorcas Paine (7 ch)	○	Birth		ca	1669	Eastham			○
			Death	30	Oct	1707	Hull?			○
	Spouse - Benjamin Vickerie	○	Married			1690				○
	10.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

○ In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

Family Record

(Dodge Ancestors)
Family No.
Paine ②
(also see over)
Surname

Father – (Deacon) John PAINE

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	14	Mar	1660/1	Eastham			Died after long illness.	○
Death	26	Oct	1731					○
Buried	14	Mar	1689					○
Married								○

Occupation Military Church

Places Lived

Other Wives ① Alice Mayo 3 Mar 1719/20

His Father's Name Thomas Paine, Jr.

His Mother's Maiden Name Mary Snow

Mother – Bennett FREEMAN

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		Mar	1671				Died 4 mos after death of last child, a toddler 22 mos. old.	○
Death	30	May	1716					○
Buried	(sudden illness, same day)							○

Occupation Military Church

Places Lived

Other Husbands

Her Father's Name (Major) John Freeman² (Edmund¹)

Her Mother's Maiden Name

(Note that one dau – Mercy Cole on reverse – settled in Connecticut)

For children of (Deacon) Samuel & Mary (Paine) Freeman, see Freeman Family

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. John Paine, Jr.	Birth	18	Sep.	1690				○
	Spouse - ① unknown ② Thankful Linnell ③ Mrs Mary Treat (widow Joshua?)	Death		Nov	1771				○
		Married	① ② 3 ③ 28	ca Dec Nov	1712 1743 1754				○
+	2. Mary Paine (ae 76)	Birth	28	Jan	1692/3				○
	Spouse (Deacon) Samuel Freeman	Death	5	Mar	1770				○
		Married	9	Oct	1712				○
	3. (Lt) William Paine (Royal justice, Rep to CT; died in service at Cape Breton – Louisburg)	Birth	6	June	1695				○
	Spouse - ① Sarah Bacon ② Mrs Sarah (Osborn) Myrick	Death	Aug or Sep		1746				○
	grandson wrote "Home Sweet Home."	Married	① 2 ② 14	Sep Jan	1727 1744/5				○
	4. Benjamin Paine age 16	Birth	22	Feb	1696/7				○
	Spouse - Boat he was in smashed to pieces by whale. Dec 8 – thrown in cold water – carried home on litter with grievous pain – lasted 1 wk	Death	19	Dec	1713				○
		Married		—					○
	5. Sarah Paine	Birth	14	Apr	1699				○
	Spouse - Joshua Knowles	Death	12	July	1772				○
		Married			17				○
	6. Stillborn	Birth	28	Jan	1701				○
	Spouse -	Death	28	Jan	1701				○
		Married							○
	7. Elizabeth Paine	Birth	2	June	1702				○
	Spouse - (Deac) Jabez Snow	Death	6	July	1772				○
		Married	27	Oct	1720				○
	8. Theophilus Paine (Killed French-Indian War Expedition to Canada)	Birth	7	Feb	1703				○
	Spouse - Hannah (6 young children)	Death	2	Sep	1755				○
		Married							○
	9. Josiah Paine age 2 mos	Birth	8	Mar	1705/6				○
		Death	7	May	1728				○
	10. Nathaniel Paine age 21	Birth	18	Nov	1707				○
		Death	4	Nov	1728				○
	11. Rebecca Paine	Birth	31	Oct	1709				○
	Spouse - Elisha Linnell	Death	18	Feb	1742/3				○
		Married			17				○

(See Over) ☒ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

○ In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

Children Continued - Children of John + Bennett (Freeman) Paine

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	12 Mercy Paine	Birth	3	Apr	1712	Eastham		MA	○
		Death		Jan	1774				○
	Spouse - Ebenezer Cole	Married	9	Oct	1735			Connecticut	○
	13. Benjamin Paine (again)	Birth	18	May	1714				○
		Death	14	Jan	1716/7				○
	Spouse - died age 20 mos. The mother died suddenly 4 months later	Married		—					○

Children of John And Second Wife, Alice (Mayo) Paine:

(Thomas and the twins were quite young when John died in 1731)

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	14. Hannah Paine	Birth	11	Jan	1720/1				○
		Death	28	Jan	1724				○
	Spouse - age 3 epidemic?	Married		—					○
	15. James Paine age 2 mos	Birth	17	Dec	1723				○
		Death	23	Feb	1724				○
	Spouse - prob from same sickness as sister	Married		—					○
	16. Thomas Paine active in resisting British during Rev War, Excellent businessman, but the	Birth	6	Apr	1725				○
		Death	22	Jan	1802	Portland	(home of son Josiah)	Maine	○
	Spouse - (need name) War ruined his fortune.	Married							○
twins	17. Alice Paine	Birth	4	Dec	1728				○
		Death	18	Apr	1777				○
	Spouse - James Knowles of Chatham	Married	12	Dec	1755				○
	18. Hannah Paine	Birth	4	Dec	1728				○
		Death		ca	1808				○
	Spouse - ?	Married		?					○
		Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse -	Married							○

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information -- then list each on the reverse side.

○

PAYNE OF DOMESDAY,* A. D. 1041–1086.

BY PROF. T. O. PAINE, LL. D.

"DOMESDAY Book, or the Great Survey of England, was made by order of William the Conqueror, A. D. 1086. It is contained in two volumes, the first of which, called Great Domesday Book, is a folio of 760 pages, two columns on a page; the second, called Little Domesday Book, containing the survey of the counties of Norfolk, Suffolk, and Essex, is a large octavo of 900 pages, one column on a page. These volumes contain the Census of the Kingdom, made up from the returns from each county of England, excepting the four northern counties, viz: Northumberland, Cumberland, Westmoreland, and Durham."—*Introduction to Photozincograph.*

The date (1086) is found at the end of the work itself, in Little Domesday. The Book does not include a survey of Wales and Scotland. William sent out all over the conquered portion of England and took the names of all the men who owned land; found how much each held; how many serfs, bordercottagers, villani, etc., were on each lot; how much each piece was worth in the time of King Edward, and how much now; how much forest there was, pasture, and meadow; how many hogs, oxen, and sheep could be kept on the ground; and like particulars.

The original copy of Domesday has been preserved through all the centuries, 1086—1880. It has recently been photozincographed: photographed into printer's ink. A copy is owned by the Boston Public Library. It is in thirty-two thin volumes, exactly the size of the originals. They are very beautiful. Every letter and figure is sharp and very black. The language is Latin. The words are mostly shortened—often to a single letter, but the meaning is always certain.

I looked at every line and word of all these volumes (Nov. 6, 1879—Feb. 2, 1880): in some volumes twice and thrice. I have translated, and published in the following

---

*Never "Doomsday" in the Book itself, or Catalogues.

On page 56 this lists the children of John^3 (Thomas^{2,1}) Paine & Rebecca Sayes Freeman
their daughter Mary #62 married Samuel Freeman
but does not follow here. Our information
comes from the Samuel of Watertown
Freeman Genealogy

PL-7 missing.

PAINE FAMILY RECORDS.

A Journal of Genealogical and Biographical information respecting the American Families of
Payne, Paine, Payn, &c.

EDITED BY H. D. PAINE, M.D.

VOLUME II.

NEW YORK.

1883.

see p 53

STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY
1884
OF WISCONSIN.

pages, for the first time since the days of William the Conqueror, all the passages of Domesday describing the holdings of Payne, and of his son Edmund, and of Edmund's sister.

I have made the great discovery that Payne—first name not given—owned land in fifteen counties; that these counties touched each other; that he did not own in any other counties; that they formed four sides of a square; that every one of the four corners of this square touched an important body of salt water: the English Channel, the Wash, the Irish Sea, and the Bristol Channel.

I have found that not only Payne owned in this way, but that many others owned in a similar manner. Hence I have made it appear that a man could not travel from one county into another unless he owned land in that other county. His passport was his certificate of ownership in the county through or into which he wished to go. The King and Church owned in every county. Of others it is often said: "He (or they) could go whithersoever he (they) would"; they owned in one county after another, in every direction, so that they held passports for every point.

I have proved that Payne owned in England before William conquered it: ☞ "tenuit paganus t. r. e. iiii. car'. trae." *Payne used to hold, in the time of King Edward, four ploughlands of land.* ☜ See NORFOLK, below. Edward the Confessor reigned, A. D. 1041–1065. William conquered A. D. 1066.

Beginning at the English Channel in Sussex, Payne could drive horse and hound from Sussex (2), through Hampshire (3), Berkshire (2), Oxfordshire (1), Buckinghamshire (8), Hertfordshire (3), Cambridgeshire (6), Norfolk County (1) on the North East, to the Wash in the North Sea. Thence North West, through Cambridgeshire again, Northamptonshire (1), Leicestershire (1), Staffordshire (1), Cheshire (4), to the Irish Sea. Thence South, through Worcestershire (1), Gloucestershire (1), to the head of the Bristol Channel. Thence South East, through Wiltshire (2), Hampshire and Sussex again, home, to the English Channel. He could do business on the ocean at the four points. The figures (2), etc., denote the number of holdings in the shire or county—37 in all. Twenty-six of these lay in the line between the English Channel and the Wash. When he crossed over to the Irish Sea he bought only one holding in each shire—Northampton, Leicester, Stafford. When he reached the Irish Sea he bought four holdings in Cheshire; then one each in Worcester and Gloucester; proving these single holdings to be mere steppingstones across otherwise impassible gulfs. His first holdings thus lay between Sussex and Norfolk.

Other men held similarly, as said. Notice that Payne holds land from William, son of Ansculf, in Buckinghamshire, Staffordshire, and Worcestershire. Of William Pevrel, in Buckinghamshire, Northamptonshire, and Leicestershire. Most of the men in Domesday have no name at all. They are simply called villani, serfs, bordercottagers, radmen, etc. When a man has a name he has only one; as, Payne. A second man of the same name is Edmund, son of Payne; Hugh the Earl, Hugh de Port, Hugh de St. Quintin, etc. The Payne of Domesday is never called anything but Payne. He had no brother, as some translators make him to have, but one son, Edmund, and one daughter, name not given, simply: "Daughter of Payne" (NORFOLK). These three are all the Paynes of Domesday; there is not one other.

Payne's name appears in two forms. His real name is Pagen—so written about half the time. As often, it is Latinized into Paganus. This *g* was soft, and was afterwards changed into *y* and *i*. Compare Old *legen* (Anglo-Saxon), New *lain; paenig*, penny; *daeg*, day; *daeglic*, daily. This *g* even disappears in a long *a*, as, *thegen*, thāne. Hundreds of examples could be added. He was a Norman.

"Payne holds of the King" in HAMPSHIRE, and "Edmund, son of Payne, holds Bertune of the King" in SOMERSETSHIRE; marks of royal favor. Each shire and county has a head-list of first tenants—King, Church, and High Churchmen, Earls, etc. In Great Domesday Payne's name does not appear in any of these head-lists. But in Little Domesday appears the name of Edmund, son of Payne, in the head-list of Norfolk County.*

When the Conqueror made his New Forest, "Nova Foresta," in Hampshire, he seized all three of Payne's holdings, which lay in the New Forest region. This, and

---

*In Great Domesday the writer calls his divisions *Shires.* In Little, a different writer calls his *Counties*—Norfolk, Suffolk, and Essex *Counties.*

a great many other items of interest, may be picked out of the following full translation.

My brother, Hon. A. W. Paine, has already made use of facts herein stated, for which he was urgent for permission to give credit to me; but I would not consent, because my researches were not completed.* Even now "Edmund, son of Payne," is reported only where this full designation is written out in Domesday. But "Edmund" alone means "Edmund, son of Payne:" but I need to study here yet further.

All the Paines of America and England, for eight hundred years, would most surely be looked upon by Payne of Domesday as his children and relatives, including the founder of the Knights Templar. This article would thus properly head the Records of our vast and ancient family, uniting us in one brotherhood, joining hands across a great ocean and the great centuries.

All the Payne Text of Domesday.

SUSSEX (Photo Zincograph, Vol. 28, p. xv. a.) *Land of Earl Roger.* Of the land of this manor Payne holds from the earl one hide; William, one hide; Goiffrid, two hides. In demesne, there is one ploughland; and there are three villani, and one bordercottager, and three serfs, with half a ploughland. Unto this manor belong nine house enclosures, in Chichester. They pay seven shillings and fourpence; and there is one mill of forty pence; and of herbage, fifteen shillings.

(P. XVII. a). *Land of Earl Roger.* Of this land Payne holds four hides. Alric held up to the monastery. In demesne, there is one ploughland; and there are eight villani, and five bordercottagers, with two ploughlands; and one mill of ten shillings; and two acres of meadow. In Chichester, there is one house enclosure of twelve pence. The whole manor, in the time of King Edward, used to be worth thirty pounds; and afterwards, ten pounds; now, forty pounds; which manor the earl holds, and yet pays fifty pounds. Now, Payne holds it. It is and was worth sixty shillings.

HAMPSHIRE (PZ. 11. XXIX. a). Payne holds in Buckholt, one hide and one yardland, of the King. Sawin used to hold it in parcenary. It was assessed at five yardlands. It is now in the Forest. The land contains six ploughlands. It was worth a hundred shillings.

(PZ. 11. XXIX. a). Payne used to hold two manors, called Boldre. Two lords of manors held this land in parcenary. It was then assessed at two hides. It is now in the Forest; except six acres of meadow, which Hugh de St. Quintin holds. The land contained four ploughlands. It used to be worth three pounds.

---

* "BANGOR, Sept. 5, 1880.—*Dear Brother:* Domesday . . . For all this part of the history you alone deserve the credit; and I am very sorry you would not let me say so as we went along. Brother,

"ALBERT."

(PZ. 11. XXIX. b). Hunta and Payne used to hold, in parcenary, two yardlands and a half; and it was assessed at so much. It is now in the Forest; except one acre of meadow, which Aluric holds. The land contains two ploughlands. It was worth twenty shillings.

BERKSHIRE (PZ. 2. XIII. a). *Land of Gislebert de Bretevile.* The same Gislebert holds Hevaford; and Payne, from him. Two brothers used to hold it in parcenary. Each had a court; and they could go whithersoever they would. It then was and now is assessed at ten hides. The land contains six ploughlands. In demesne, there are two ploughlands; and there are three villani, and eleven bordercottagers, with two ploughlands. There is a church there; and three serfs; and a hundred acres of meadow. It used to be worth eight pounds; and, afterwards, a hundred shillings. Now, ten pounds. [Very next section]:—

The same Gislebert holds Niwetone, and Payne from him. Alric used to hold it; and he could go whithersoever he would. It was then and is now assessed at two hides. The land contains one ploughland; and it is there in demesne, with four bordercottagers, and two serfs, and thirteen acres of meadow. It is worth thirty shillings.

OXFORDSHIRE (PZ. 22. XI. a). *Land of Roger de Iver.* Payne holds of Roger Chonefelde. There are there seven hides minus one yardland of land. The land contains eleven ploughlands. There are now, in demesne, four ploughlands; and four hides of the same land are in demesne. There are there four serfs; and fourteen villani, with thirteen bordercottagers, have seven ploughlands. There are there a hundred acres of meadow, and six quarentenas of pasture in length and three in breadth. It was and is worth seven pounds. This land is of the first copyhold of the King.

BUCKINGHAMSHIRE (PZ. 3. XI. b). *Land of William Pevrel.* MANOR. Payne holds of William Tochingewiche for two hides. The land contains two ploughlands: In demesne there is one ploughland; and three villani have two ploughlands. There are there one serf; meadow, two ploughlands; forest for fifty hogs. This land is worth thirty shillings. It lately brought twenty shillings; in the time of King Edward, thirty shillings. This manor, Alwin, thane of King Edward, held; and he had power to sell.

(PZ. 3. XII. a). *Land of William son of Ansculf.* In Hochestone Payne holds of William eight hides and two yardlands and a half. The land contains ten ploughlands. In demesne there are two ploughlands; and twelve villani with seven bordercottagers have eight ploughlands. There are there five serfs. Of meadow, ten ploughlands. In all, it is and was worth seven pounds. In the time of King Edward, a hundred shillings. Of this manor, Almer, vassal of Bundi the Standard-bearer, held seven hides for one manor; and a vassal of the Abbess of Barking, one hide; and a vassal of Eddeva the Fair holds two yardlands and a half: and all these had power to sell. [Next]:—

(XII. a). In Soleberie Payne holds of William five hides and a half and a third part of one yardland. The land contains seventeen ploughlands:—In demesne are three ploughlands; and fourteen villani with five bordercottagers have nine ploughlands; and, in addition to these, there may be five ploughlands. There are there three serfs; and one mill of sixteen shillings; meadow, three ploughlands. In all, it is and was worth seven pounds. In the time of King Edward, eight pounds. This manor eleven socagers held and had power to sell. [Next] :—

(XII. b). In Holendone Payne holds of William three yardlands and a half. The land contains one ploughland; and he is there with three villani. It is and always was worth ten shillings. This land four socagers held. Of these, three vassals of Brictrice had two yardlands and a half; and the fourth, a vassal of Wige, had one yardland: and these all had power to sell their land. [Next] :—

(XII. b). In Litecote Payne holds of William one hide and a half. The land contains one ploughland and a half. There is there one ploughland with one bordercottager; and perhaps a half. Meadow, one ploughland. It is worth twenty shillings. It lately brought forty shillings. In the time of Kind Edward, thirty shillings. This land two vassals of Brictrice held; and they had power to sell. [One holding; then] :—

(XII. b). In Sweneberie Payne holds of William fifty yardlands. The land contains two oxgangs. It is and always was worth two shillings. This land Oswi, vassal of Brictrice, held; and he had power to sell.

(XIII. a). In Cicelai Payne holds of William three hides and three yardlands for one manor. The land contains four ploughlands:—In demesne is one ploughland; and five villani with six bordercottagers have three ploughlands. Meadow, ploughland. It is worth sixty shillings. It lately brought a hundred shillings; in the time of King Edward, four pounds. This manor nine thanes held; and they had power to sell without leave of their lords.

(XIII. a). In Herouldmede Paine holds of William half a yardland. There is land for two oxen; and there are meadow there for two oxen, forest for five hogs. It is and was worth two shillings; in the time of King Edward, two pounds. This land Godric, vassal of Oswi, held; and he had power to sell.

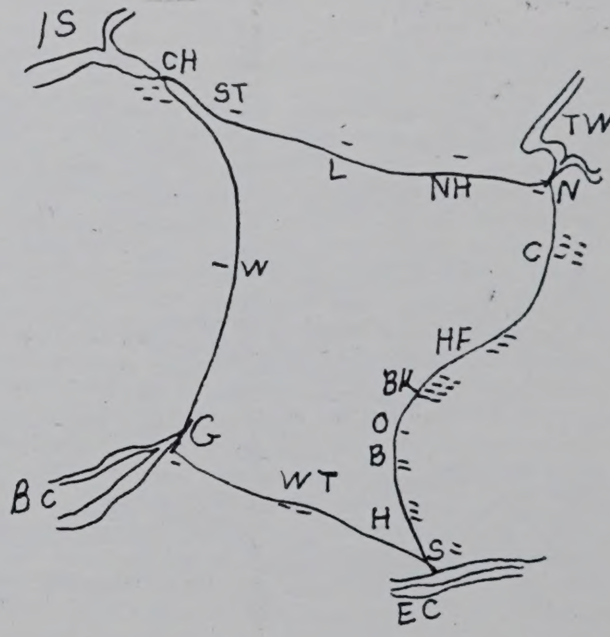
HERTFORDSHIRE (PZ. 13. IV. b). *Land of the Bishop of London.* In Pelcham Payne holds of the Bishop one hide. The land contains three ploughlands:—In demesne are two ploughlands; and one villanus hath half a ploughland, and perhaps another half. There are there three bordercottagers and three cottagers: forest for six hogs. It is and was worth forty shillings: in the time of King Edward, fifty shillings. This manor Alured, vassal of Algar the Standardbearer, held; and he had power to sell.

(IV. b). In Mesdone Payne holds of the Bishop one hide. The land contains five ploughlands:—In demesne are perhaps two ploughlands; and three villani with a prebendary have three ploughlands. There are there one . . . and one serf: meadow, three ploughlands: pasture to let: forest for four hundred hogs. It is and was worth twenty shillings: in the time of King Edward, six pounds. This manor Alward, vassal of Stigand the Archbishop, held; and he had power to sell.

(XXI. a). *Land of Hardwin de Scalers.* In Anestet Payne holds of Hardwin half a hide. The land contains one ploughland and a half; and they are there with four bordercottagers and four cottagers and one serf. Meadow, half a ploughland. Pasture to let. Forest for twelve hogs. This land is worth twenty shillings. It lately brought ten shillings. In the time of King Edward, twenty shillings. This, Alward, vassal of Algar the Earl, held; and he had power to sell.

PAYNE OF DOMESDAY, A. D. 1041–1086.

BY PROF. T. O. PAINE, LL. D.



T O Paine

Map of Payne's Holdings in England, A. D. 1041–1086.

E. C., English Channel.
T. W., The Wash.
I. S., Irish Sea.
B. C., Bristol Channel.
S., Sussex.
H., Hampshire.

B., Berkshire.
O., Oxfordshire.
B. K., Buckingham.
H. F., Hertford.
C., Cambridge.
N., Norfolk.
W. T., Wiltshire.

N. H., Northampton.
L., Leicester.
S. T., Stafford.
C. H., Cheshire.
W., Worcester.
G., Gloucester.

the time of King Edward, four ploughlands of land: always twelve villani: then and before, four oxen; now thirteen: then four serfs; before and now, two: fourteen acres of meadow: always one ploughland in demesne . . . . daughter of Payne . . . .

NORTHAMPTONSHIRE (PZ. 20. XV. a). *Land of William Pevrel.* Payne holds of William two hides in Berchebi. The land is five ploughlands: In demesne are two ploughlands, with one serf; and ten villani and eight bordercottagers are with three ploughlands. There are there six acres of meadow; forest, six perticas long and four wide. It was worth thirty shillings: now, sixty shillings.

LEICESTERSHIRE (PZ. 16. XI. b). *Land of William Pevrel.* Payne holds of William six ploughlands of land and five oxgangs in Wapenter. The land is four ploughlands: In demesne are two; and ten villani and six bordercottagers, who, with two socagers living in Brandestorp, have two ploughlands and five ploughing oxen. These two socagers have five oxgangs of land. There are there forty acres of meadow; barren forest, six quarentenas in length and one quarentena in breadth. It was worth fifty shillings; now, four pounds.

STAFFORDSHIRE (PZ. 25. VIII. b). *Land of William, son of Ansculf.* The same William holds in Elmelecote one hide and Payne from him. Two vassals of Algar the Earl held without socage. The land is two ploughlands. There are there four villani and two bordercottagers and one serf with two ploughlands. There are there four acres and a forest. It was and is worth ten shillings.

CHESHIRE (PZ. 5. VI. a). *Richard de Vernon.* The same Richard holds Cocheshalle and Payne from him. Levenot and Dedou held it for two manors; and they were free men. There, half a hide paid geld. The land is one ploughland. He is there with one radman and one bordercottager. Forest, one mile long and half a mile wide. In the time of King Edward it used to be worth two shillings; now, five shillings.

(VIII. b). *William, son of Nigdle.* The same William holds Estone and Payne from him. Levenot held it as a free man. There, two yardlands and a half pay geld. The land is one ploughland, which there is in demesne; and there are two oxgangs and one radman and one bordercottager and one serf. There is a forest there one mile long and forty perticas broad: and there are two hedges there. [Next]:—

(VIII. b). The same William holds Budewade and Payne from him. Edward held it as a free man. One hide there paid geld. The land is two ploughlands. In demesne is half a ploughland; and one serf and a prebendary and two villani and one bordercottager are with one ploughland; and a mill . . . There is there an acre and one half of meadow. In the time of King Edward it used to be worth six shillings; now, eight shillings. [Next]:—

(VIII. b). The same William holds Witelei and Payne and Odard from him. Levenot held it as a free man. There, two hides paid geld. The land is two ploughlands. In demesne is one, with one serf. There is one acre of meadow there. Forest, one mile long and half a mile wide. It is worth six shillings.

WORCESTERSHIRE (PZ. 31. XI. b). *Land of William, son of Ansculf.* The same William holds Cradeleie and Payne from him. Wigar held it. There is one hide there. In demesne, nothing. There are four villani there and eleven bordercottagers with seven ploughlands. It was worth forty shillings; now, twenty-four shillings.

GLOUCESTERSHIRE (PZ. 10. XVII. a). *Land of Hunfride de Medehal.* Hunfride de Medehalle holds Utone. *Payne used to hold it. In demesne, one ploughland; and three serfs and four bordercottagers are with two ploughlands. It was worth thirty shillings; now, twenty shillings.

WILTSHIRE (PZ. 30. XIII.). *Land of Hunfride of the Isle.* Payne holds of Hunfride Contone. Levenot used to hold it in the time of King Edward, and paid geld for five hides and a half. The land is four ploughlands: Of this, there are, in demesne, two hides and one yardland of land; and there are two ploughlands there and four serfs and four villani and four coscez with two ploughlands. A third part of two mills there pays ten shillings; and there are twenty acres of meadow, and ten acres of pasture, and as many of forest. It was and is worth four pounds and ten shillings. [Two holdings; then]:—

(XIII.). Payne holds of Hunfride Cumbrewelle. Levenot held it in the time of King Edward and paid geld for four hides. The land is five ploughlands: In demesne are two ploughlands with one serf; and two villani and four cottagers are with three ploughlands. There are four acres of meadow there, and five acres of forest. It is worth three pounds. Of the same land the King hath one hide in his own demesne, and there is nothing there; and One Englishman holds a half of the King. It is worth eight shillings.

Edmund, son of Payne, had one holding in Norfolk County, as above, In Somersetshire, three—"holds Bertune of the King." . . . "Picote. Waltone" (PZ. 24. XXVI. b),—and:—

HAMPSHIRE (11. XXVII. b). †Edmund, son of Payne, holds of the King, and Hugh [de Port] of him, one yardland in Derleie. Saulf used to hold it of King Edward, in parcenary. There are two villani there, with one ploughland, and half an acre of meadow. Forest for six hogs: was, but is not. It was worth ten shillings; now. three shillings.

KEY.—*Hide*, about 120 acres. *Yardland*, $\frac{1}{4}$ hide. *Ploughland*, 60 to 100 acres. *Oxgang*, $\frac{1}{8}$ of ploughland. *Villanus*, a man superior to a bordercottager, or boor, and to a serf. *Parcenary*, joint tenantry. *Radmen* ploughed, harrowed, mowed, reaped, in the time of King Edward. *The Forest* spoken of in Hampshire is the "New Forest," made by William the Conqueror. *Geld*, tax. *Ineward*, some service not known. *Quarentena*, 40 perches.

---

*Payne disappears here from his old line. See NORFOLK.

†NOTE.—"Edmvnd, f. pagen"—"Edmund, son (f.) of Payne": not "brother of Payne. In Domesday, *f.* is for *filius*, son: and *fr.* is for *frater*, brother. Payne has no "brother" in Domesday. The "King" here is William the Conqueror.

THOMAS PAINE, FOUNDER OF THE EASTHAM FAMILY, AND HIS POSTERITY.

By Josiah Paine, of Harwich, Mass.

Of the ancestry of Thomas Paine, of Eastham, founder of that family of Paines which settled on Cape Cod, but very little is certainly known as yet. Credible traditionary accounts that came down in several branches of the family, and committed to writing before the commencement of the present century, have it that he came over from England with his father, who bore the same name, when a lad of about ten years of age, having lost the sight of one of his eyes by an arrow, married Mary Snow, and settled in Eastham Mass. As to the date of their arrival, and the name of the place whence they came, traditional accounts differ. The descendents in the line of James, of Barnstable, have it that they came from the "North of England," while those in the line of John, of Eastham, have reported they came from "Kent." In what vessel they found passage, or at what place they landed on the New England coast, no account, oral or written has come to the knowledge of the writer.

Of what became of the elder Thomas, there is nothing positively known. It is supposed by some he found his way to Yarmouth, and was the Thomas Payne who was the first Deputy from that place to the Old Colony Court at Plymouth, in June, 1639, who took the freeman's oath June 4, that year, who was able to bear arms in 1643, and who was a resident in that town as late as 1650.

Thomas Paine, the son, who came over when a lad of about ten years of age, married Mary Snow, and settled in Eastham, as tradition has it, but at what date, cannot be ascertained either from the Colonial or the ancient records of Eastham. He was there, however, in 1653, and was acting in the capacity of a constable. In 1655 he was one of the nineteen mentioned as among the townsmen of Eastham.

He was propounded at the Colony Court, at Plymouth and admitted a freeman June 1, 1658. In 1662, he was appointed, with Nicholas Snow, Jonathan Sparrow, and Giles Hopkins, to view and lay out the meadow between Namskaket and Silver Spring, within the limits of Eastham, to those of the inhabitants entitled to the same; and the same year, with Giles Hopkins, was appointed a surveyor of highways. In 1664, he was appointed one of the Deputies to the Colony Court, and one of the Jury. In 1667, he was, with eleven others, called to investigate the causes that led to the deaths of Robert Chappell, James Nichols, and James Pidell, of Capt. John Allen's company, who were put ashore at Cape Cod. The same year he was allowed by the Colony Court to select a tract of land for his use; and in June, 1669, he was allowed, with Experience Michell, Henry Sampson, and Thomas Little, to purchase land at Namskaket, now Middleboro'. Mass. With these persons, July 20, the same year, he purchased of Tuscaquin, the Black Sachem, and his son, William, for ten pounds sterling, their right to the grant. This land laid adjoining to John Alden's tract at the famous Assowamsett Pond. In 1670, with Jonathan Sparrow, he was appointed an inspector of the Ordinaries in town, and to see that there was no excessive drinking; and the same year, one of the Grand Inquest.

In 1670, he became interested in the purchase of land in what is now Truro, Mass., of the proprietors. His first purchase was of Gov. Thomas Prence, of Plymouth, May 2, 1670, his "half share," lying between "Bound Brook" and "Eastern Harbor" or "Lovell's Creek," for which he paid the sum of twenty pounds, which tract he sold to his son Thomas, March 30, 1690, for the same sum. The first day of June, 1673, he purchased of Jabez Howland, for fifteen pounds, all his right to land purchased and unpurchased in the same vicinity, which he sold March 30, 1690, to his son Thomas, for twenty pounds in silver.

For many years anterior to 1670, the head of the Cape, now Provincetown, had been the resort of fishermen from various parts, and it being within the limits of the Colony of Plymouth, the Court that year, upon complaint being made of careless persons "casting their ballast near the shore," where seines were drawn, and "leaveing the garbidge of ffish or dead ffish to lye there," decreed that for every offense a penalty of forty shillings; also, that whoever, within the limits of the Colony, should "draw mackerall on shore there" should pay six pence per barrel for every barrel taken for the Colony's use; also, that all "fforaigners" should pay for every barrel taken one shilling and six pence, and give "sufficient cecuritie" unto the bailiff for the fulfilment of every promise made, before "entrance on the voyage," etc., and Thomas Paine, of Eastham, was appointed the "bayley by land and water to demand and receive for the Colonie's use the above mensioned sums," etc., etc., in June, this year. He served the Colony in this office many years, giving entire satisfaction.

The following year, 1671, he represented Eastham at the Colony Court; also a Deputy in 1672, '73, '76, '78, '80, '81, and in 1690. He was a Selectman of Eastham in 1671, and reëlected several years after. In 1676 he was one of the committee to collect a debt from Sandwich, and one of the committee chosen to superintend the building of the meeting-house in Eastham. He was the Treasurer of Eastham from 1674 to 1694.

In 1677, with Mr. Huckins, of Barnstable, Mr. Edward Gray, of Plymouth, and Mr. Constant Southworth, the Colonial Treasurer, he hired the fishing privileges and profits at the head of the Cape for a period of seven years, paying yearly the sum of thirty pounds. In 1685, with Rev. Samuel Treat, Capt. Jonathan Sparrow, John Mayo, Sen., and Jabez Snow, he was chosen by the town, with full authority, to hear and "determine the differences between those called Purchasers and the town," respecting land within the limits of Eastham.

Some time previous to 1695 he removed from Eastham to Boston, where, the records say, he purchased of Thomas Stableford, of Philadelphia, March 14, 1694, his homestead, situated at the South End, paying the sum of one hundred and thirty pounds. This estate he conveyed to Eleazer Darby, a mariner, for the same sum, October 13, 1697. This year, June 7, he, then a resident of Boston, sold to Ephriam Little, of Plymouth, his share of land at a place in Bristol County, Mass., called Showamet, it being his thirtieth part of that whole tract of land which Constant Southworth, Esq., the late treasurer of the Colony of New Plymouth, on the twelfth of November, Ano Dom. 1677, by ye order of the General Court . . . did grant, sell and confirm unto sundry persons whose names are particularly expressed," of whom "the said Thomas Paine" was one. How long after this period he resided in Boston does not appear, but evidently not long.

By trade he appears to have been a cooper, yet from

what can be learned from records he was skilled in the art of mill building, and was employed in erecting them in various parts of the county. For the great expense he was at "in building two Grist Mills in Eastham for the use of the town" he was allowed, in 1683, a large tract of land on the northerly side of "Kescayogansett Cove," which is now included within the limits of Orleans.

So far as can be ascertained he was a man of more than ordinary education. He was a splendid penman. The writer has a specimen of his penmanship when well advanced in years, with his signature. He wrote his name Tho. Paine.

He died at Eastham, August 16, 1706, but at what age is not known. That he was "aged" is certain. He affirms it in his will, and his son John, also, in his diary, points to the same fact when speaking of the death of his "aged father." As no stone, with inscription, points out the resting place of Thomas Paine, it is unknown where he was buried; but the supposition is his ashes lie in the old burying ground west of Town Cove, in Eastham, Mass., where lie the early settlers of that town.

(not Truro

Mary Snow, the wife of Thomas Paine, was a daughter of Nicholas and Constance Snow. Nicholas came over in the Ann, in 1623, and married Constance, daughter of Stephen Hopkins, of the Mayflower band of Pilgrims. Nicholas Snow was a prominent man in the Colony. With six others, it appears, he began the settlement of Eastham in 1645. His death occurred in 1676. Mary Paine was a woman of whom much has been said in her praise. She was a "faithful wife," "a careful mother," a good and "quiet neighbor," a "diligent reader of God's Holy Word," and a lover of and an attendant at "God's house of worship." Dea. John Paine, her son, thus speaks of her last hours and death in his diary: "On the 28th day of April, 1704, my honored mother, Mary Paine, departed this life, being suddenly taken and struck with death, she having been in reasonable health all day, was taken ill about sunset so she never after spoke reasonable; but decaying gradually gave up the Ghost about the dawning of the day." Neither the date of her birth or marriage appears. No stone, with inscription, marks her resting place.

The will of Thomas Paine is on record at Barnstable. The following is a copy, *verbatim*:—

In the name of God. Amen. The twelvth day of May, 1705, I, Thomas Paine of Eastham, in ye County of Barnstable, in ye Province of Massachusetts Bay, being aged and weak in body, but of sufficient mind and memory—thanks be given to God—therefore calling to mind the mortality of my body, and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die, do make and ordain this my last Will and Testament; that is to say, principally and first of all, I give and recommend my soul into ye hands of God that gave it, and my body I recommend to the earth to be buried in decent Christian burial at ye disposition of my Executors, nothing doubting but at ye general ressurection I shall receive ye same again by the mighty power of God. And as touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this life, I give, demise and dispose of the same in ye following manner and form. *Imp.* I give and bequeath my son Nicholas Paine, his heirs & assigns forever all my lands, mills, house and housing at Keaskokagansett in the town of Eastham, with all my right title to all town's privileges and my two shares in ye land purchased of Mr. Samuel Smith, called the ten pound purchase; also all my meadow lying on or by Sampson's Island, and between Sampson's Island and Hog Island in sd Eastham; as also my upland at both ends of Sampson's Island; and my share of meadow which lies to the southward of Porchy Island, which was granted me by ye town in ye year of our Lord, 1703. *Imp.* I give to my daughter, Mary, the wife of Israel Cole, ten shilllngs in money; all the rest and residue of my estate, both real and personal, goods & chattels whatsoever, I give and bequeath to be equally divided to and among my children, viz:—Samuel Paine, Thomas Paine, Elisha Paine, John Paine, Nicholas Paine, James Paine, Joseph Paine, Dorcas Vickery, the wife of Benj., and three eldest children of Mary, my daughter, the wife of Israel Cole, viz:—James Rogers, Mary Cole, and Abigail Yates; (that is to say) the sd. children of my sd. daughter shall have (with the ten shillings which she is to have) one share or equal portions with ye rest of my sd. children, which shall be equally divided among them. And I do also hereby constitute, make and ordain my two sons Samuel Paine & Thomas Paine, to be ye Executors of this my last Will and Testament, & I do hereby utterly disallow, revoke and disannul all and every other former Testament & Will, legacy and bequest & executors, by me in any way before named willed & bequeathed.

Ratifying & confirming this, and no other, to be my last Will & Testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal, ye day and year above written.

THOMAS PAINE. [L. S]

Signed, sealed, published, pronounced and declared by the said Thomas Paine as his last Will and Testamen, in ye presence of us, the subscribers,

his
JOHN X ROGERS,
mark.
JOHN ROGERS, JR.,
ELEAZAR ROGERS.

The will was presented to Probate and proved October 2, 1706, and letters granted to executors therein named.

The following is a *verbatim* copy of the inventory of the estate of Thomas Paine:

Inventory of all & singular the goods, chattels & credits of Mr. Thomas Paine of Eastham, in the County of Barnstable, deceased, prized at Eastham, August ye 30, 1706, by ye subscribers:

Imprimis: To lands, meadows housing & mills, two hundred pounds	£200 00 00
It. To cash at 15 penny weight to six shillings, ninety-two pounds fourteen shillings & four pence	92 14 04
It. To plate at eight shillings per ounce, nine pound, six shillings & four pence	9 06 04
It. To beds, bedsteads, and household stuff, clothes, tools, old iron and lumber, seventy-six pounds five shillings & four pence	76 05 04
It. To debt, nine & twenty pounds fifteen shillings and a penny	29 15 01
It. To desperate debts four & twenty shillings and eight pence	1 04 08
	£499 10 09

SAMUEL FREEMAN, } App.
JOSHUA BANGS, }

[*To be continued.*]

EASTHAM FAMILY.

BY JOSIAH PAINE, OF HARWICH, MASS.

(Continued from page 17.)

It is supposed that Thomas Paine conveyed much of his real estate by deeds to his sons before he made his last will; but it is now impossible to tell to what extent his gifts were, as all the books of records of deeds of Barnstable County were destroyed by fire in 1827. A deed of gift of meadow from him in his own handwriting, to his son, Thomas, in 1684, witnessed by his sons, James and Nicholas, is yet extant.

There is no list of the children of Thomas and Mary Paine in the Eastham books of records. The Plymouth Colony Records give them one child—ELIEZAR—born March 10, 1658; and as nothing farther appears of Eliezar, either upon the records of Eastham or Plymouth Colony, it has led some to believe that Elisha was the one intended, and that either the Colonial Secretary made the mistake in copying or the Clerk of Eastham in making up the returns, and Eliezar was substituted for Elisha. The will, it will be seen, mentions no Eliezar, and if one of that name was born, it seems certain he did not survive long.

Children of THOMAS and MARY PAINE, of Eastham.

3. I. MARY married for first husband, James Rogers, Jan. 11, 1670; for second husband married Israel Cole of Eastham, April 24, 1679.
4. II. SAMUEL.
5. III. THOMAS born in 1656, or 1657.
6. IV. ELIEZAR born March 10, 1658.
7. V. ELISHA.
+ 8. VI. JOHN born March 14, 1660–1. ours
9. VII. NICHOLAS.
10. VIII. JAMES born July 6, 1665.
11. IX. JOSEPH.
12. X. DORCAS who married Benjamin Vickerie, of Hull about 1690, and died at that place Oct. 30, 1707.

Of the above sons, seven married and were highly respected citizens of the towns in which they respectively settled.

Third Generation.

3.

Mary Paine, daughter of Thomas and Mary Paine, and probably the eldest child, married James, son of Lieut. Joseph Rogers who came in the Mayflower in 1620, January 11, 1670. He died April 13, 1678. She again married Israel Cole, son of Daniel of Eastham, April 24, 1679.

Her children by James Rogers were:

13. I. James born Oct. 30, 1673, who married Susanah Treasy, Feb. 17, 1697–8.
14. II. Mary born Nov. 9, 1675, who married —— Cole.
15. III. Abigail born March 2, 1677–8, married John Yates in 1698.

By Israel Cole her children were:

16. IV. Hannah born June 28, 1681, who married —— Higgins.
17. V. Israel born June 28, 1685.

4.

Samuel Paine, eldest son of Thomas and Mary Paine, married Patience Freeman of Eastham, January 31, 1682, and settled in Eastham where he was a prominent man. He took the freeman's oath, June 6, 1684. He was a selectman of Eastham in 1697, 1700, 1701, 1702 and 1705. He was a Lieutenant of the military company, and held other positions. He was of a religious turn of mind, and his brother John says he "departed and fell asleep * * leaving comfortable hopes that" he "slept in Christ," October 13, 1712, surviving his brother Joseph twelve days. His widow, Patience, took out letters of administration Jan. 27, 1712–13. His estate was valued at £127, 03, 0. His guns, swords and amunition were valued at three pounds. No division was made of the estate, as the following extract from the Probate Records will show, until Jan. 29, 1717:

> "Set out unto sd Patience Paine, the widow, for her dower, the one third of all the real estate of the deceased during her life; then there remains to Eben Paine, the eldest son of the deceased, ninety-three pound and five shillings, and to each of the other children of sd deceased, viz: Joshua Paine, Isaac Paine, Seth Paine, Mercy Paine and Mary Paine forty-sixth pound twelve shillings and six pence a piece which to be paid as followeth, viz: thirty-three pounds five shillings and nine pence a piece to be paid by the administratrix to the five younger children out of the personal estate, and out of that part which Eben Paine, ye eldest son, is to pay before his mother's decease, and the remainder to be paid out of that part of the money that sd Ebenezar Paine is to pay after ye decease of ye said Patience Paine his mother. And for as much as it is represented to me that the dividing of the real estate of ye deceased will tend to the predjudice or spoiling the whole, and he, the sd. Ebenezar Paine, the eldest son, disposing to have the same settled upon him as the law directs, I do, therefore, hereby order and settle all the housing, lands, and other the real estate of sd deceased lying within the town of Eastham aforesaid, upon and him the said Ebenezar Paine, his heirs and assigns forever, he having given bonds for payment of ye remaining part of the value of said lands, as they were appraised upon oath more than his own double portion of the whole estate; part to be paid before and the remainder after the decease of his said mother, she only enjoying her third thereof during life as aforesaid. In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and the seal of the Court of Probate aforesaid, this 29th day of January, in the fourth year of his Majesty's reign, Annoque. Domini 1717.
>
> John Otis."

The precise spot where Samuel Paine located in Eastham is not positively known. A descendent in the line of Joshua, the next eldest son, informed the writer some years since, that he had understood the place to be near where Dea. Eben. Paine resided, in the present town of Eastham, then in possession of Joshua Paine; but could afford no documentary or strong traditional proof of the fact. It is quite certain that Joshua Paine, the second son, settled near the place pointed out.

Patience Paine, the wife of Samuel, was a daughter of Major John Freeman by his wife, Mercy, who was daughter of Gov. Thomas Prence, and granddaughter of Elder William Brewster of the famous band of Pilgrims who came in the Mayflower in 1620, and was named for her grandmother Patience (Brewster) Prence. Major John Freeman was a very prominent man in the Colony of Plymouth; was for many years an assistant to the Governor, and very justly regarded as "one of the fathers of Eastham." The date of her death does not appear.

The children of Samuel and Patience Paine according to the records of Eastham:

18. I. Samuel born October 30, 1683, died Oct. 5, 1706 aged 23 years.
19. II. Mercy born Aug. 5, 1686, m. Benjamin Cook Nov. 30, 1710.
20. III. Nathaniel born July 9, 1689. He died March 14, 1706–7.
21. IV. Ebenezar born June 17, 1692.

22. v. ELIZABETH born June 11, 1694.
23. vi. JOSHUA born May 20, 1696.
24. vii. ISAAC born Jan. 15, 1698–9.
25. viii. MARY born Feb. 24, 1703–4.
26. ix. SETH born Oct. 5, 1706; died March 23, 1722.

5.

THOMAS PAINE, the second son of Thomas and Mary Paine, was born in the year 1656 or 57. He was twice married. He married first, Hannah, dau. of Jonathan Shaw, August 5, 1678. She died in Truro, July 24, 1713, in her 52d year. For his second wife, he married Mrs. Elizabeth Eairs of Boston, March 8, 1714–15. He was admitted a freeman June 6, 1684. Having purchased of his father the several tracts of land at Pamet, now Truro, in 1690, which his father had bought of Gov. Prence and Jabez Howland, he became a Proprietor, and was interested in the settlement of the place, and removed thither some time after this period, and located on the north side of Little Pamet River, where his house spot is yet to be seen. He was an influential and highly respected citizen. He was clerk of the proprietors and of the town many years. He was selectman of Truro six years, and a Representative five years to the Provincial Legislature at Boston. He was Clerk, Selectman and Representative of Eastham before the incorporation of Truro. Besides being a captain of the Military Company and a Justice of the Peace, he was a special Justice of the Court of Common Pleas for Barnstable County, having been appointed July 5, 1713, and was holding the office at time of his death, which took place at Truro, June 23, 1721, in the 65th year of his age. He lies interred in the old church-yard at that place where a slate stone marks the place with this inscription:

HERE LYES YE BODY OF THOMAS PAINE, ESQ, OF TRURO,
DIED JUNE 23, 1721, IN YE 65 YEAR OF HIS AGE.

A cane of his was in existence in Truro a few years ago, and tradition has it that it was brought from England.

His second wife, Elizabeth, survived him, and it is said, was living in Bellingham very aged in 1754. His first wife, Hannah, was buried in Truro. The following is the inscription upon her gravestone:

HERE LYES YE BODY OF MRS. HANNAH, WIFE TO CAPT'N
THOMAS PAINE. DIED JULY 24th, 1713, IN
YE 52 YEAR OF HER AGE.

The will of Thomas Paine bears date April 6, 1720. It was presented for approval July 4, 1721, and is upon record at Barnstable. It is a lengthy document. The following is the list of his children as found upon record.

27. I. HANNAH born April 6, 1679; died Nov. 17, 1681.
28. II. HUGH born July 5, 1680; died Nov. 29, 1681.
29. III. THOMAS born Feb. 28, 1681–2.
30. IV. HANNAH born March 12, 1684, married John Binney of Hull, May 5, 1704. She died Jan. 14, 1757. From her sprang the late Hon. Horace Binney.
31. V. JONATHAN born Feb. 1, 1685–6.
32. VI. ABIGAIL born March 4, 1687; died Jan. 25, 1688–9.
33. VII. ABIGAIL born Nov. 5, 1689, mar. Ebenezar White Nov. 8, 1711. She died at Attleboro, July 15, 1731.
34. VIII. PHEBE born Mar. 14, 1691; died Jan. 21, 1695–6.
35. IX. ELKANAH born Feb. 1, 1692–3.
36. X. MOSES born Sept. 28, 1695.
37. XI. JOSHUA born Aug. 28, 1697.
38. XII. PHEBE born Feb. 11, 1698–9, mar. Paul Knowles Feb. 28, 1729, died June 3, 1748.
39. XIII. LYDIA born Dec. 4, 1700, mar. Josiah Hinckley Mar. 2, 1719–20.
40. XIV. BARNABAS born Nov. 13, 1705.

son 7

7.

ELISHA PAINE, son of Thomas and Mary Paine of Eastham, married Rebecca Doane of Eastham, January 5, 1685. In 1689 he was a resident of Barnstable, and with ten citizens of that town, had a grant of a number of acres of land at Goodspeed's River, and the benefit of the stream forever, on condition of setting "up a fulling mill on that river," and maintaining "the same twenty years, and full and dress the town's cloth on reasonable terms." His residence here, it seems, was not long; removing back to Eastham, he, about 1700, removed to Connecticut, and located upon the large tract which he had purchased on the west side of Quinebang River in what is now the township of Canterbury. ← * He took an active part in the organization of the town, was one of the eight who formed the first church there, June 11, 1711, and a prominent man in the town and county. He died Feb. 7, 1735–6.

* to CT on Quinebaug River (present Canterbury) ca 1700

EASTHAM FAMILY.

By Josiah Paine, of Harwich, Mass.

(*Continued from page 48.*)

8.

ours

✓ John Paine, son of Thomas and Mary Paine of Eastham, was born, according to his own statement, March 14, 1660–1. For his first wife he married Bennet Freeman, March ~~14, 1689. She dying, for his second wife he married Alice Mayo~~, March 3, 1719–20. He was admitted a freeman in June, 1690. In 1693 he was elected a Selectman of Eastham, and afterwards held the office five years. He was chosen clerk of the town in 1703, and was re-elected yearly until 1729. He was Treasurer from 1709 to 1730, and a Representative to the General Court at Boston in 1703, 1709, 1714, 1716, 1718, 1724, and in 1725. He was often chosen an agent by the town to transact important business; and was frequently called upon by parties to settle disputes respecting titles to land in various parts of the County, and to settle such other matters of importance that needed arbitration among his townsmen, and among the people of the neighboring towns. Mr. Paine was an esteemed member of the church at Eastham, and for many years was a deacon. By trade his descendants say he was a "whale-boat builder;" and there is some evidence that he was interested in the whale fishery. He was of a literary turn of mind, and some of his spare moments were devoted to literary pursuits. A portion of a diary kept by him, in which are entries as early as 1695 and as late as 1717 in prose and poetry, is yet extant, in the possession of a descendant. His death occurred after a long illness, October 26, 1731, and he was interred in the old churchyard in the town of Orleans, which was then the South Precinct of Eastham, where a slatestone marks the spot with this inscription:

HERE LYES BURIED THE BODY OF MR. JOHN PAINE,
AGED 70 YEARS, 7 MONTHS AND 12 DAYS,
DECEASED OCT. YE 26, 1731.

The will of John Paine is recorded at Barnstable, and is a lengthy document, too long to be given in full in this paper. It bears date July 14, 1731. He mentions wife, Alice, who, "in special consideration for extraordinary care and trouble in tending" him in his "long illness," was well considered. He mentions sons, John, William, Theophilus and Thomas Paine, and daughters Mary Freeman, Sarah Knowles, Elizabeth Snow, Rebecca Paine, Mercy Paine, Alice Paine and Hannah Paine. Executors mentioned were John and William Paine, the two eldest sons. Witnesses to the will were Nathaniel Mayo, Samuel Higgins and Jonathan Higgins, Jr., who evidently were his neighbors.

The precise spot where his house stood cannot be pointed out with certainty. It is in the present town of Orleans, and not far southwardly of the old churchyard where his ashes now repose.

ours

✓ Bennet Freeman, the first wife of Dea. John Paine, was daughter of Maj. John and Mercy (Prence) Freeman of Eastham. She was born in March, 1671. She died very suddenly, May 30,* 1716, aged "five and forty years, two months and five and twenty days." She was, says his diary, "a pleasant companion, a most loving and obedient wife, a tender and compassionate mother, a kind mistress, a courteous neighbor, and a steady and fast friend; but above all and that which crowned all she was a good Christian; one that delighted to attend the worship of God both in public and private, and was not a stranger to closet communion with God. But, alas! alas!! The temple wherein this blessed soul did dwell is lain in the dust, there to abide till the ressurection of the just; then by the almighty power of God to be raised in glory . . . . where, I hope, through the riches of free grace to meet her; and till then adieu my dearest mate." She was buried in the southeast part of the old burying ground in Eastham, in which reposes the dust of her parents, and a rough stone, bearing her name and year of her death, marks the spot.

Alice ~~Freeman~~ Mayo, the second wife of Dea. Paine, was a daughter of Nathaniel Mayo, and great grand-daughter of Rev. John Mayo, and Gov. Thomas Hinckley, and was b[illegible] in 1686. She died at Eastham, October 12, 1748, in her 63d year. She was buried in the churchyard at Orleans beside her husband, where a stone marks the spot with this inscription:

---

* Dea. John Paine in his diary says her death occured "on the thirteenth of May, Anno Domini, 1716;" but Moses Paine, his nephew, then a young man residing in the family, in his diary says: "May ye 13, 1716, being Lord's Day I went to meeting" and heard "Mr. Treat" preach; and "May ye 30, 1716, my Uncle John Paine's wife died, and that very suddenly." Dea. Paine, it is evident, intended to have written it thirtieth instead of "thirteenth."

HERE LYES YE BODY OF MRS. ALICE PAINE,
WHO DIED OCTOBER YE 12, 1748,
IN THE 63d YEAR OF HER AGE.

Children of JOHN PAINE by wives BENNET and ALICE PAINE, according to Eastham and his own records:—

51. I. JOHN born Sept. 18, 1690.

(ours) ✓52. II. MARY born Jan. 28, 1692–3, mar. Deacon Samuel Freeman Oct. 9, 1712; died Mar. 5, 1770, aged 76.

The book has no word about our line -

53. III. WILLIAM born June 6, 1695.

54. IV. BENJAMIN born Feb. 22, 1696–7; died Dec. 15, 1713.

55. V. SARAH born April 14, 1699, mar. Joshua Knowles; died July 12, 1772.

56. VI. Stillborn Jan. 28, 1701.

57. VII. ELIZABETH born June 2, 1702, mar. Jabez Snow; died July 6, 1772.

58. VIII. THEOPHILUS born Feb. 7, 1703.

59. IX. JOSIAH born March 8, 1705–6, died May 7, 1728.

60. X. NATHANIEL born Nov. 18, 1707; died Nov. 4, 1728.

61. XI. REBECCA born Oct. 31, 1709, mar. Elisha Linnell, July 17, 1735; died Feb. 18, 1743–4.

62. XII. MERCY born ~~Oct.~~ Apr. 3, 1712, mar. Eben. Cook, Oct. 9, 1735; died in Connecticut, June, 1774.

63. XIII. BENJAMIN born May 18, 1714; died Jan. 14, 1716–17.

By wife ALICE children were:

64. XIV. HANNAH born Jan. 11, 1720–1; died Jan. 28, 1723–4.

65. XV. JAMES born Dec. 17, 1723; died Feb. 23, 1724.

66. XVI. THOMAS born April 6, 1725.

67. XVII. ALICE born December 4, 1728, mar. James Knowles of Chatham, Dec. 12, 1775; she died April 18, 1777.

68. XVIII. HANNAH born Dec. 4, 1728; died about 1808.

9.

NICHOLAS PAINE, son of Thomas and Mary Paine of Eastham, settled in Eastham. His wife was Hannah, but who her parents were, is not as yet known. The date of their marriage the records of Eastham do not show. She died, say the Eastham Records, January 24, 1731–2. He appears not have been much in public employment. As it may be seen, his father by will, gave him a greater part of his real estate, including the homestead at Keeskokagansett now included in the township of Orleans, but then in the south precinct of Eastham. It is supposed he resided with his father the latter years of his life, and attended him in his last days. Nicholas Paine died in the autumn of 1733, at the supposed age of about three score and ten.

The following is a copy *verbatim*, of his last will as recorded at Barnstable:

"In the name of God, Amen. The twentyth ninth day of of July, 1732, I Nicholas Paine of Eastham, in the County of Barnstable, within the Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England, laboring under the infirmities of old age but of perfect mind and memory; therefore calling to mind the mortality of my body, and knowing it is appointed for all men once to die, do make and ordain this my last will and testament—that is to say—principally and first of all I give and recommend my soul into the hands of God that gave it, and my body I recommend to the earth to be buried in a decent christian burial at the discretion of my Executors, nothing doubting but at the general ressurection I shall recieve the same again by the mighty power of God; and as touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me with in this life, I give, demise and dispose of the same in the following manner and form. *Imprs.* I give all and singular my lands and meadows, together with my house and barn which I have in the town of Eastham, unto my son in law, William Norcut, and his wife, Precillah, my daughter, and to their heirs and assigns forever.

Item. I give unto my two grand children namely Thankful Smith and Lois Freeman, thirty shillings apiece out of my moveable estate; and after my just debts and funeral charges are paid, I give the remainder of my moveable estate unto my two daughters in equal shares, namely: to my daughter Abigail Higgins and Lydia Young, forever. I do constitute, make and ordain my *cousin, William Paine, my sole Executor of this my last will and testament by me made—ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my last will and testament. In witness witness whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and seal, the day and year above written. NICHOLAS PAINE.

Signed, sealed, pronounced and declared
by the said Nicholas Paine to be his last
will and testament, in witness of

James Cole
Eleazar Cole
Israel Cole.

---

* Nephew was intended.

Visitations.

In this connection it has been thought a matter of sufficient impo ance to justify its mention here, as bearing on the work of genealogica research, to refer to the fact, that in the latter part of the 16th century and the early part of the 17th, a very general interest seems to have existed to collect and perpetuate the history and lineage of leading families in the different counties of England. The work was done by a class of "HERALDS" who perambulated the country and made note of their discoveries. These were afterwards published under the name of "Visitations," each work usually embracing a single city, or county. The principal counties of England and city of London were thus visited and their histories published. The great interest now felt in such literature has led to the republication of the works, mostly under the favor of the Harleian Society, of London. They are replete with information of the choicest character to all who are interested in family history, such as found an insertion in their heraldic pages.

These different subjects now discussed have been regarded as of peculiar value and importance to be published in this connection, as affording a key to help unlock the otherwise closed doors of past genealogical history. This will be more evident in the future numbers of the Records.

(*To be continued.*)

THE PEDIGREE OF THOMAS PAINE, OF EASTHAM, MASS.

THOMAS PAINE, the undoubted founder of the Eastham branch of our family, is first mentioned in the Records of Plymouth colony as Deputy from Yarmouth, on Cape Cod, to the first General Court, in 1639. He subsequently removed to Eastham, before 1655, and was one of the first proprietors of that town.

A widely accepted tradition among his descendants has assigned a much earlier date to his first arrival in New England. It has been asserted that his father, also named THOMAS, and his mother, *Mary Snow*, formed a part of the first company of pilgrims to Plymouth in 1621, and that he, a young lad, accompanied them. Dr. Lemuel C. Paine, one of his descendants and a zealous genealogist, investigated this claim of priority, many years ago, and satisfied himself, at least, of its validity, although he has not given, so far as the writer knows, the evidence upon which his conclusion was based. Some additional remarks upon the subject may be found on page 6 of this volume.

Of the history of the family subsequent to the emigration and previous to the first appearance of the younger Thomas in Eastham, but few particulars have been ascertained. He was still an inhabitant of Yarmouth in 1643, and his name appears in Eastham Records as early as 1655. It is a cause of much regret to the present compiler that he has not been able to avail himself of the later labors of his former diligent and obliging correspondent, the late Dr. Paine, of Albion, N. Y., in preparing the following summary of the early generations of this extensive family. It is many years since he published the result of his inquiries into the early history of his family up to that time; but it is understood that large additions to his store of authentic facts were accumulated and arranged by him before his death, that have not yet seen the light. The following account is derived mainly from his former report, but with considerable additions and corrections drawn from notes and memoranda in the possession of the writer. Further emendations and additional information will be thankfully received, and published in future numbers. The notation employed in the original is preserved.

THOMAS PAINE, 2d, had a family of eight sons and two daughters. All born in Yarmouth, or Eastham, viz:

174 ✓

I. SAMUEL. II. THOMAS. III. ELISHA. IV. JOHN. (
V. NICHOLAS. VI. JAMES. VII. JOSEPH. VIII. ELEAZER.
IX. MARY. X. DORCAS.

These may be conveniently taken as the root, or source, of as many different branches, and in the following summary each will be designated by its corresponding Roman numeral.

I. SAMUEL, son of Thomas Paine, 2d, married *Patience Freeman*, probab[illegible]ughter of Edmund of Eastham, Jan. 31, 1682. He resided in Eastham, where he died, Oct. 13, 1712.

He had the following children :

1. Samuel.
2. Mercy.
3. Nathaniel.
4. Ebenezer.
5. Elizabeth.
6. Joshua.
7. Isaac.
8. Mary.
9. Seth.
10. John.

Second Generation.

I. 4. EBENEZER, third son of I. Samuel, married *Hannah Hopkins*, Dec. 13, 1722, and had two sons and two daughters :

1. Ebenezer.
2. Elizabeth.
3. Nathaniel.
4. Abigail. All born in Eastham.

I. 6. JOSHUA, fourth son of I. Samuel and Patience, married *Phebe Snow*, Mar. 19, 1829. His children, all born in Eastham, were :

1. Samuel.
2. Isaac.
3. Seth.
4. Joshua.

I. 10. JOHN, seventh son of I. Samuel and Patience, married *Mary Lombard*, of Truro, Mass. He had one son :

1. John.

Of the other children of I. Samuel, no authentic records have been obtained.

II. THOMAS, second son of Thomas 2d, of Eastham, married *Hannah*, daughter of Jonathan and Phebe (Watson) Shaw., of Plymouth, Aug. 5, 1678. She was born about 1658. His children, born in Eastham, were :

1. Thomas.
2. Hannah.
3. Jonathan.
4. Abigail.
5. Elkanah.
6. Moses.
7. Joshua.
8. Phebe, (or Lydia).
9. Barnabas.

The most of these settled in Truro, which was formerly included in Eastham.

Second Generation.

II. 2. HANNAH, the second child of Thomas and Hannah (Shaw) Paine, was married to John Binney Jr., of Hull Mass., May 31, 1704, by Jonathan Sparrow, Esq., father-in-law of her brother Joshua. They were admitted to the church in Hull, April 13, 1727, and on the same day, Mr. Binney was elected Deacon She died Jan. 14 1757. A Methodist minister from Boston officiated at her funeral ; the first that had ever visited Hull.*

The children of Hannah and John Binney were :

1. John, b. Ap. 23, 1705.
2. Joshua, b. Jan. 26, 1707 ; d. 1730.
3. Mercy, b. May 5, 1709.
4. Amos, b. Feb. 5, 1711.
5. Jerusha, b. 1713 ; mar. Elkanah Hayden, Oct. 5, 1732.
6. Elkanah, b. Dec. 28, 1715.
7. Hannah, b. Oct. 18, 1717.
8. Benjamin, b. 1719 ; mar. Abigail Corey, 1737.
9. Dorcas, b. June 20, 1721 ; mar. Anderson Phillips 1741.
10. Barnabas, b. Mar. 10, 1723.
11. Phebe, b. Nov. 11, 1725 ; mar. Joseph Spear 1748.

II. 3. JONATHAN, second son and third child of Thomas and Hannah (Shaw) Paine, was born in that part of Eastham since called Truro, Feb. 1, 1685. His wife's name was Sarah. He died May 1751.

The children of Jonathan and Sarah Paine, as far as known, were :

1. Jonathan, b. Sept. 20, 1711.
2. Daniel.

On Eastham Town Records is entered the marriage, in 1732, of a Jonathan Paine to Mary Dean, and the names of their children, viz :

Jonathan, Daniel, Phebe, Experience and Mercy. Dr. Lemuel Paine concluded that this record referred to another family, but it seems more probable that Mary Dean was a second wife of Jonathan II. 3. and the mother of the three daughters ; Jonathan the father being in 1732, 47 years old, and the names of Jonathan and Daniel occuring in both lists.

II. 7. JOSHUA, the fourth son and seventh child of II. Thomas and Hannah (Shaw) Paine, was born in 1697. He resided first in Truro, afterwards in Canterbury, Conn., and still later in Amenia, N. Y.

He married, Oct. 20, 1720, *Rebecca Sparrow*, of Eastham, who died Sept. 15, 1736, aged 31. He married second, *Constance*, the widow of William Baker and daughter of Elisha (III) of Canterbury, Conn.

---

* So reported in a published statement, but as Methodism was not introduced into thi country until nine or ten years later than the date given, the statement must be an error.

Deacon
IV John Paine m. Bennet Freeman

dau Mary Pain m. Samuel IV Freeman

who d May 15, 1787, aged 82 years. He died Mar. 20, 1775, at 78 He h family of eleven children, all but three by the first wife viz:

1. **Joshua**, resided in Amenia, N. Y.; unmarried.
2. **Ruth**.
3. **Abijah**, went to sea in 1745, and never returned.
4. **Elijah**.
5. **Benajagh**, went to sea with his brother, and was never heard of after.
6. **Ephraim**, distinguished as a physician, Judge and Legislator.
7. **Rebecca**.
8. **Ichabod Sparrow**, M. D., died 1765.
9. **Barnabas**, M. D., died 1822.
10. **Abigail**.
11. **Phebe**, mar. 1st, Seth Covell, 1761; 2d, Samuel Monroe Jr.: 3d, William Bentley.

Of the other children of II. Thomas and Hannah Shaw Paine, information is still wanting.

III. ELISHA, third son of Thomas Paine 2d, of Eastham, marriec *Rebecca*, probably daughter of John Doane of Eastham, Jan. 20, 1685. About 1700 he purchased a large tract of land in Conn., west of the Quinebaug river—about two thousand acres, in what is now the Township of Canterbury. He took an active part in the organization and settlement of that town, and was, during the remainder of his life, prominent in all the affairs of Windham county. His death occurred Feb. 7, 1735. His wife, Rebecca, survived him till Dec. 19, 1758.

The names of his children were as follows:

1. **Abigail**, who married Josiah Cleveland.
2. **Elisha**, mar. Mary Johnson Sept. 25, 1720. He was a successful practitioner of law, and "universally conceded to be the man of the most sense in those parts." During the great religious revival in Windham county, started by the preaching of the Rev. Ebenezer Wheelock, his spirit was greatly aroused, and by his alledged extravagancies and insubordination to the constituted ecclesiastical authorities, brought against himself much violent opposition, and, finally, confinement in the "dirtiest prison he ever saw." He remained in jail from February to May, rather than give bonds for his future submission.

(Rev) Elisha Paine Jr. became an extremely influential "New Light" preacher.

208. III. **Elihu**, born Aug. 5, 1725; married Elizabeth Cleaveland, Nov. 24, 1748.
209. IV. **Ichabod**, born Sept. 7, 1727; married Hannah Boswell, Jan. 16, 1748.
210. V. **David**, born June 18, 1729; married Lydia ~~Fitch~~, Fussett April 5, 1759.

By wife Priscilla:

211. VI. **Solomon**, born March 8, 1732–3; married Mary Bacon, June 8, 1756.
212. VII. **Priscilla**, born Aug. 20, 1734; married Josiah Spaulding.
213. VIII. **Elisha**, born Nov. 16, 1736; died Nov. 27, 1755.

46.

Dorcas Paine, daughter of Elisha and Rebecca Paine, was born in Eastham, and at the time of her father's removal the youngest of the family. She married David Adams, at Canterbury, Aug. 27, 1723. She died at that place, March 3, 1745–6.

Children of Dorcas Paine, who married David Adams:

214. I. **Jonathan**, born May 25, 1724; married Desire Ashcroft, Dec. 27, 1745; died in 1763.
215. II. **Abel**, born Jan. 5, 1730–31. He was a physician.
216. III. **Elisha**, born July 5, 1733.
217. IV. **Dorcas**, born June 5, 1735.
218. V. **Leah**, born Aug. 18, 1738.
219. VI. **Rebecca**, born Aug. 6, 1742.

50.

John Paine, the youngest son of Elisha and Rebecca Paine, of Canterbury, was born in that town in July, 1707. He united with the Canterbury Church in 1731. He took part with the Separates, and finally became pastor of the Separate* Church formed in that part of Rehoboth, now included in the town of Seekonk, R. I. He was ordained August 3, 1748. Mr. John Greenwood was then the pastor of the First Church, and strongly opposed the ordination. He sent a letter to the Separate Council convened to ordain Mr. Paine, which was very pointedly answered by Mr. Elisha Paine in a letter under date, August 10, 1748. Mr. John Paine was a member of the Council convened at Harwich, in 1749, to ordain Joshua Nickerson, pastor of the Separate Church, and gave the right hand of fellowship. This year, with the Separates, or Newlights, he petitioned the Provincial Legislature of Massachusetts to forbid "ye execution of ecclesiastical laws," and to allow no distinction between any class of Christians in supporting public worship. He and Samuel Peck took lead in the matter, but were unsuccessful. He was a rigid disciplinarian; and it was not long before many of the members who assented to his ordination became turbulent, and refused to allow him to enter their houses "to administer." In consequence, a council was convened at Rehoboth, May 8, 1751, and, after considering the whole matter, "it was declared that John Paine, pastor, had fulfilled his pastoral charge over this church, until all the brethren he was ordained over had fallen by transgressions out of the church, and had shut all their doors against his administering in their houses, so that he is dismissed from his relation to them; and we give him the right hand of fellowship as a faithful minister of Christ, and to minister wherever God shall call him." What became of him after this period we have been, as yet, unable to learn. Any person having any information, respecting him or his descendants, will confer a favor by giving it to the compiler. He married Sarah Church, of Canterbury, Feb. 12, 1730. Their children were, as far as is known:

* New Light

220. I. **Sarah**, born in Canterbury, Nov. 6, 1730.
221. II. **Sybil**, born in Canterbury, Jan. 18, 1734–5.

51.

John Paine, Jr., son of Deacon John and Bennet Paine, of Eastham, was a resident of Eastham, and a householder early as 1714. From memoranda in possession of C. C. Paine, Esq., Troy, Pa., we learn that he was three times married, and died in November, 1771. There appears no record of his first marriage, which must have been about 1713. His second wife was doubtless Thankful Linnell, as the Eastham records show she married John Paine, Dec. 3, 1743. His third and last wife was undoubtedly Mrs. Mary Treat, as she married John Paine, Nov. 28, 1754. She was probably widow of Mr. Joshua Treat, a son of the Rev. Samuel Treat. The Probate Records show nothing respecting the settlement of his estate, nor do the records of Eastham show anything respecting his family. His father in his journal thus alludes to him: "This day, being the 14th day of March, 1711–12, I have taken some steps towards the promoting of that which may have great influence into the comfort or discomfort of my son, John, being a matter of as great concern to his outward state in the world as any he is like to be concerned in." From the records of Eastham, we learn he had land several times granted him. Under date of Aug. 20, 1711, John Paine, Jr., had a parcel of land granted him at the north end of Sheep Pond, so called, between the highway and Cedar Swamp. He had a "tenement lot" at the head of Namskaket granted him, Sept. 22, 1711, and a lot to set his house upon, Sept. 12, 1713. The land granted him was out of the common land, and to which he had a right. The land, laid out by the town for a burial place, March 23, 1719–20, which is now a part of the Orleans Cemetery, was between his land and the Meeting house.

If it can be shown that Samuel Paine,* who died at Eastham, in the spring of 1784, was the son of John Paine, Jr., then the following were John's children:

222. I. ELIZABETH, married —— Sparrow.
223. II. MARY, married Warren Green, March 13, 1733–4.
224. III. BENNET, married Abial Crosby, Nov. 5, 1763.
225. IV. NATHANIEL, married Thankful Young, April 20, 1753.
226. V. SAMUEL, married Mary Gould, of Harwich, Mar. 25, 1762; died 1784.

They skip #52,

52, our Mary Paine Freeman

53.

WILLIAM PAINE, son of Dea. John and Bennet Paine, of Eastham, was a man of note in that town. He was a Representative to the Provincial Legislature from Eastham in 1731, 1732, 1735, 1738, 1739, 1740, 1743 and in 1744. He was one of His Majesty's Justices, receiving his appointment in 1738. He was much employed by the town to settle important and difficult matters. In 1740, he was allowed to take porpoises with nets, and became engaged in the business, employing considerable number of men. But from what can be learned it did not prove to him a lucrative business. He became interested in the movements for the capture of Louisbourg, the stronghold of the French at Cape Breton, and, after the capture, succeeded his brother Theophilus to the Lieutenancy of Capt. Elisha Doane's Company, and was commissioned by Gov. Shirley, Nov. 4, 1745. This Company was in Col. Shubael Gorham's Seventh Massachusetts Regiment, and had seen much hard service. Lieut. Paine died at that place in August or September, 1746, at the age of 51. His brother Theophilus took out letters to settle his estate, Jan. 20, 1746–7. The estate was appraised by Dea. John Freeman, Jonathan Higgins, Jr., and Amos Knowles, March 10, 1746–7. He was in possession of considerable property at the time of his death, but it was found necessary to pay only "two shillings and nine pence on ye pound" to the creditors. The administrator charged thirteen pounds and ten shillings "cash for freight and charge of his goods from Louisbourg." How he became so deeply involved in debt is not now known.

French/Indian War

He was twice married. His first wife was Sarah Bacon, of Barnstable, to whom he was intended Sept. 2, 1727. She was daughter of Nathaniel Bacon, of Barnstable. She died at Eastham, and lies buried in the Orleans cemetery, where a slate stone marks the spot with this inscription:

HERE LIES THE BODY OF MRS. SARAH PAINE,
THE WIFE OF WILLIAM PAINE, ESQ.,
DIED JANUARY YE 16, 1743-4.

His second wife was widow Elizabeth Myrick, to whom he was married January 14, 1744–5. She was a daughter of Mr. Samuel Osborn, who had long been pastor of the South Church, in Eastham, and sister of Dr. John Osborn, the distinguished physician and poetical writer, of Middletown, Conn. Widow Myrick's first husband (William Myrick, to whom she was married January 23 1733–4,) was lost at sea, leaving her with a son, William Myrick. By her second husband, WILLIAM PAINE, ESQ., she had one son, whom she named William Paine for his father, who was then dead. This son was a distinguished school teacher, and father of John Howard Paine, who wrote "Home Sweet Home." Widow Elizabeth Paine married Nov. 10, 1749, Edmund Doane, and they removed to Barrington, Nova Scotia, where they were residing during the Revolutionary war, and where it is probable she died. Upon her removal, she left her two sons, each named William, in Eastham. The former married, and the latter a lad with Rev. Joseph Crocker, who had undertaken to educate him.

---

* The Probate Records at Barnstable show that SAMUEL PAINE, of Eastham, made his will Jan. 19, 1784, and that it was presented for Probate May 4, 1784. The will mentions wife Mary, brother Nathaniel, who had heirs: sisters Eliz. Sparrow, Bennet Crosby, and "Sister Green." This will mentions no children of his own. If this Samuel Paine was not a son of JOHN PAINE, JR., *who* was he? He must have been born about the year 1720. BENNET CROSBY was doubtless named for John Paine, Jr.'s mother, who was BENNET FREEMAN.

Children of WILLIAM PAINE, ESQ., by wife SARAH, as far as known:

227 I. SARAH, born in Barnstable, Sept. 17, 1728; married Thomas Sturges, of Barnstable, January 24, 1744-5.
228 II. RUTH, born March 23, 1730; died Sept. 21, 1736.
229. III. JOSIAH, born June 20, 1732.
230. IV. JEDIDA, born May 13, 1734.

By wife ELIZABETH:

231 V. WILLIAM, born —— 1746; married first Lucy Taylor, Nov. 14, 1775: second Sarah Isaacs, Dec., 1780; died at New York, March 12, 1812, aged 66.

54.

BENJAMIN PAINE, son of John and Bennet Paine, of Eastham, died young. His death is thus noticed in his father's journal: "On the fifteenth day of Dec., 1713, my son, Benjamin, departed this life; who on the eighth day of the same month, being at sea on a whaling design, the boat in which he was, was staved to pieces by a whale, and he thrown into the water and wounded in his body, which, with the cold of the water and weather, set him into a grievous fever, which, co-operating with his bodily hurt, were the means of his death. He was a lovely child, both in life and death. The last words almost which he uttered were: 'Lord Jesus, receive my soul.'"

58.

THEOPHILUS PAINE, son of John and Bennet Paine, of Eastham, married Hannah Bacon, and settled in Eastham, in that part now Orleans. He was at the siege of Louisbourg. He was Lieutenant of the Company commanded by Capt. Elisha Doane, of the same town, and was commissioned by Gov. Shirley, Feb. 20, 1744-5. This Company was in the Seventh Massachusetts Regiment, commanded by Col. Shubael Gorham, of Barnstable, which was one of the most efficient regiments in the service. After the reduction of the fortress, he

returned to Eastham, and was succeeded by his brother, William, as Lieutenant. He died in 1755, and letters were granted his wife, Hannah, to settle his estate, Sept. 2, 1755. The children of Theophilus Paine are not fully shown by the Eastham records. The following list is made up from the records at Orleans, and at the Probate office in Barnstable.

Children of LT. THEOPHILUS and HANNAH PAINE, of Eastham:

232. I. RUTH, born Feb. 3, 1737-8; probably married Samuel Pierce, Feb. 8, 1757.
233. II. NATHANIEL, born Feb. 3, 1737-8; probably married Phebe Mayo, Nov. 17, 1757.
234. III. JOHN, born July 20, 1739.
235. IV. SARAH, born ——
236. V. REBECCA, born ——
237. VI. HANNAH, born ——

66.

Patriot

THOMAS PAINE, ESQ., son of Dea. John Paine, of Eastham, by his second wife, Alice, was a prominent man in Eastham. He was among the foremost in that patriotic town to resent the encroachments of British Parliament upon the liberties of the colonies. He was one of the nine who reported the series of patriotic resolves adopted by Eastham in town meeting, Feb. 24, 1773, and one of the foremost in the movement at Barnstable, in 1774, to stop the opening of the Court; also the same year, one of the Committee who reported the resolves in the regard to their duties as to the use and sale of tea, and one of the Committee of correspondance for the County, appointed that year. He was a Representative in 1767, 1770, 1780 and in 1781. He was a Justice of the Peace, receiving his first commission in 1776. He was engaged in trade in Eastham many years, occupying the place afterwards occupied by Timothy Bascom, but more recently by the wife of the late John H. Higgins. The war proved disastrous to his business, and he lost most of his property. He removed to Boston about 1781, and in 1783 went to Mt. Desert, Me., where he resided several years. He died at the house of his son, Josiah, in Portland, Me., January 22, 1802, in the 77th year of his age. Mr. Paine "was a man of considerable literary taste, and was at times a correspondent of Hon. Robert

DESCENDANTS OF THOMAS PAINE, OF EASTHAM.

(*Continued from page* 144.)

The family record of ELISHA, the 3d son of THOMAS PAINE, 2d, was left incomplete in the previous article. The following list gives the tally of his large household, in full:

III. ELISHA, third son of Thomas Paine [see p. 144], married *Rebecca Doane*, 1685, and had the following children:

1. ABIGAIL, mar. *Josiah Cleveland.*
2. ELISHA, mar. *Mary Johnson*, Sept 25, 1720.
3. MARY, mar., 1st, *Robert Freeman*; 2d, *William Fitch.*
4. SOLOMON, mar., 1st, *Sarah Carver*, 1720–1; 2d, *Priscilla Fitch.*
5. DORCAS.
6. CONSTANCE, mar., 1st, *William Baker*; 2d, *Joshua Paine*, II, 7.
7. REBECCA, mar. *Edward Cleveland*, 1717.
8. ABRAHAM, mar. *Ruth Adams*, 1717.
9. HANNAH, mar. ——— *Watts.*
10. JOHN, mar. *Sarah Church.*

Second Generation. Children of III ELISHA.

III. 2. ELISHA, son of III ELISHA & *Rebecca* (*Doane*) *Paine*, was a lawyer of much reputation in Windham Co., Conn. He was an enthusiastic promoter of the religious excitement in Canterbury and neighboring towns about 1741. He married *Mary Johnson*, Sept. 25, 1720. He is reported to have had children, but no account of their number, or names has been received.

III. 4. SOLOMON, 4th child and 2d son of III ELISHA, of Canterbury, Conn., married, 1st., *Sarah Carver*, Nov. 2, 1720, who died August 9, 1731; 2d, *Priscella Fitch*, who died May 31, 17—. Like his brother Elisha, he participated in the great religious revival in Windham Co., Conn., that after a period of extraordinary excitement extending over six years, stirring to the very depths both church and society in Canterbury and the regions all about, resulted in a schism in the former and no end of ill feeling in the latter. Solomon joined the "Separatists," as they were called, and shared with his brother Elisha the persecution and opprobrium which their zealous but erratic proceedings provoked. For an extended narrative of this controversy and of the leading parts taken therein by Elisha and Solomon Paine see Miss Larned's "*History of Windham Co.*"

He had the following children:

1. SOLOMON, who died in infancy.
2. F who married *Elisha Cleveland.*
3. ELISHA [Elihu?] who married *Elizabeth Cleveland.*
4. ICHABOD, who married *Hannah Boswell*, 1748.
5. DAVID, married *Lydia Johnson*, 1759.
6. SOLOMON, married *Mary Bacon*, 1756.
7. PRISCILLA.
8. ELISHA.

P174

The last three were by the second wife. The name of the 3d child and 2d son is variously reported by different correspondents. As the last child was called Elisha, it is probable that the first of that appellation is a mistake.

✓ IV. JOHN, fourth son of THOMAS PAINE, 2d, of Eastham, was born March 14, 1661; married, 1st, *Bennett Freeman*, March 14, 1689. She was born March 7, 1671, and died May 13, 1716. He married, 2d, *Alice Mayo*, March 3, 1719–20. She was born April 29, 1686, and died Oct. 1748, He died Oct. 18, 1731. By his first wife, he had twelve children, and by the second, five, including one pair of twins, all born, and nearly all lived and died in Eastham or its vicinity. The following is the roll of the children:

1. JOHN, born ———; married three times; died Nov. —, 1771.
2. MARY, born Jan. 28, 1692; mar. *Samuel Freeman*, 1712; died, a widow; 1770. ✓ 6th gen.
3. WILLIAM, born June 6, 1695; died 1746, at Louisburg.
4. BENJAMIN, born Feb. 22, 1696; died Dec. 19, 1713.
5. SARAH, born April 14, 1699; mar. *Joshua Knowles*; died July 11, 1772.
6. ELIZABETH, born June 2, 1702; mar. *Jabez Snow*; died July 6, 1772.
7. THEOPHILUS, born Feb. 7, 1703–4; died 1775.
8. JOSHUA, born March 8, 1705; died May 7, 1728.
9. NATHANIEL, born Nov. 18, 1707; died May 4, 1728.
10. REBECCA, born Oct. 31, 1709; mar. *Elisha Sinnel*; died March —, 1774.
11. MERCY, born April 3, 1712; mar. *Eben Cook*; died June, 1774.
12. BENJAMIN, born May 18, 1714; died Jan. 14, 1716.
15. HANNAH, born Jan 11, 1720–1; died Jan. 28, 1723–4.
14. JAMES, born Dec. 17, 1723; died Feb. 23, 1724–5.
15. THOMAS, born April 6, 1725.
16. ALICE, } born Dec. 4, 1728; mar. *Jason Knowles*; died April 18, 1777.
17. HANNAH, } born Dec. 4, 1728; lived to an advanced age.

Second Generation. Children of IV JOHN.

IV. 3. WILLIAM, born June 6, 1695; married, 1st, ———, 2d, *Sarah Bacon*, of Barnstable, 1727. She died Feb. 16, 1743–4. He was a soldier at Louisburgh, where he died 1746. He had four children, by the second wife, as follows:

1. SARAH, born Sept. 17, 1728.
2. RUTH, born March 23, 1730.
3. JOSIAH, born June 20, 1732.
4. JEDIDAH, born May 13, 1734.

VII. 7. THEOPHILUS, born Feb. 7, 1703; married —— *Hannah Bacon.* He was a Lieutenant at Louisburg in the French and Indian war; died June, 1775. Their children as far as known, were:

1. RUTH, born Feb. 3, 1737–8. } twins.
2. NATHIEL, born Feb. 3, 1737–8. }
3. JOHN, born July 20, 1739.

P175

VII. 15. THOMAS, born April 6, 1725; married, 1st, *Phebe Freeman*, Jan. 24, 1758. Married, 2d, *Mrs. Mason*, of Mt. Desert, Me. His children were:

1. JAMES, born Dec. 17, 1759; married *Sally Wingate.*
2. JOSIAH, born April 8, 1760; married *Phebe Stone*; died 1832.
3. SETH, born ———, 1764; died Jan. 17, 1765.
4. ENOCH, born Jan. 29, 1764. He was taken prisoner on a privateer during the Revolutionary war, and subsequently made many voyages. Settled in Baltimore; removed to Athens, Pa., where he died, unmarried, April 19, 1815.
5. SETH, born June 22, 1766. He resided in

"Cape Cod Library of Local History & Genealogy" - ed. by Leonard H. Smith et al

According to the records, he died Jan. 25, 1690, and his wife Abigail, April 7, 1692. No stones with inscriptions mark their resting places. "Goodman" Young died testate, and his will is on record at Barnstable. He had eleven children, two of whom died in infancy. His children that survived were John, born 1649, at Plymouth; Joseph, born in 1654; Nathaniel, born in 1656; Mary, in 1658; Abigail, in 1660; David, in 1662; Lydia, in 1664; Robert, in 1667; Henry, in 1672. These all survived their parents.

John, the eldest, died in 1769, leaving nine children. His wife was daughter of Daniel Cole, and at the decease of her husband, John Young, she married Jonathan Bangs of Harwich.

Joseph Young, son of John, married Sarah Davis of Barnstable, Oct. 25, 1679, and had four children. Nathaniel Young, his brother, married Mercy Davis of Barnstable.

David Young, born in 1662, married Ann Doane of Eastham, Jan. 20, 1687, and had eleven children. His son, John Young, married Widow Dinah Baker, daughter of Joseph Harding, and settled in the western part of Chatham on the old road to Harwich. He died April 20, 1788, aged 93. His wife Dinah died Jan. 3, 1779, aged 78. They lie interred in the old burying ground at Chatham. He had several children. His son, Prince Young, removed to Harwich and settled. He was the first of the name who settled within the limits of the present town of Harwich. There appears to be no full record of the children of John Young, son of David.

THOMAS PAINE. ✓

Eastham had been settled but a very few years when Thomas Paine became a resident. He was born in England, but the particular place is not known with certainty. Credible traditionary accounts that came down several branches of the family, and committed to writing before and soon after the commencement of the present century, have it that he came over when a lad of about ten years of age, with his father, Thomas, and married Mary Snow and settled in Eastham. But as to the father, Thomas, beyond that he settled in Plymouth Colony, tradition is silent. It has been supposed the father was the Thomas Paine who settled in Yarmouth, and the first representative to the Colony court in 1639, but the evidence to establish the fact is yet wanting. It has also been supposed that the lad, the subject of this article, was the Yarmouth Thomas, and that he removed to Eastham from that town. Of this there is no evidence. If he were the man he must have reached a great age at his death in 1706. That Thomas Paine, the lad, did marry Mary Snow and settle in Eastham, as tradition has it and accepted by his descendants, the records clearly show.

His name first appears upon the records as a constable of Eastham in 1653. He was in that town in 1655, and is mentioned as one of the nineteen men then townsmen. He was propounded at the Colony court at Plymouth in 1658, and June 1, that year, was admitted as freeman. In 1662 he was appointed, with Nicholas Snow, Jonathan Sparrow and Giles Hopkins, to view and lay out the meadow between Namskaket and Silver Springs, then within the limits of Eastham, to those of the inhabitants that were entitled to the same; and the same year, with Giles Hopkins, was selected a surveyor of highways. In 1664, for the first time, he was chosen deputy to the Plymouth Colony court, and a juryman. In 1667, with eleven others, he was called to investigate the cause of deaths of Robert Chappell, James Nichols and James Pidell, of Captain John Allen's company, who were put ashore at Cape Cod. The same year he was allowed by the Colonial court to select a tract of land for his use, and in June, 1669, he was allowed, with Experience Michell, Henry Sampson and Thomas Little, to purchase land at Nams~~kaket~~asket, now Middleboro. With these persons, July 20, the same year, he purchased of Tuscaquin, the Black Sachem, and his son William, for £10 sterling, their right to the grant. This land adjoined John Alden's tract, at the famous Assawamsett pond. In 1670, with Jonathan Sparrow, he was appointed an inspector of the ordinaries in town, to see that there was no excessive drinking; and the same year, one of the Grand Inquest.

In 1670, Mr. Paine became interested in purchasing land in what is now Truro, of the proprietors. His first purchase was made of Gov. Prence of Plymouth, May 2, 1670, of his "half share" lying between "Bound Brook" and "Eastern Harbor," or "Lovell's Creek," paying the sum of £20. This tract some twenty years after, he sold to his eldest son, Thomas, for the same sum,

This shows only 1st 2 generations. Thomas Paine
& son [illegible] Paine who m. Mary Snow.

together with the tract he had bought of Jabez Howland in 1673, in the same vicinity for the same amount. In 1670, he was appointed to the office of "bayle by land & water," an officer created to "demand and receive for the Colony's use" the fines of those who disregarded the laws regulating the fishing at the head of the Cape, now Provincetown, and the territory adjacent, now Truro. This office he held many years, giving entire satisfaction. While acting as bailee, he resided during the fishing season in that region. In 1671, he represented Eastham in the Colony court at Plymouth; also in 1672, '73, '76, '78, '80, '81 and '90. He was selectman of Eastham in 1671 and several years afterwards. In 1676, he was one of the committee to collect a debt of Sandwich and to superintend the building of the meetinghouse in Eastham. This meetinghouse was the second one built there and stood near the ancient burying ground. The first one was thatched roof and stood nearby, and had been erected many years. It was now considered unsuitable for the congregation of their minister, Mr. Samuel Treat, who was now regularly settled. Mr. Paine was clerk and treasurer of Eastham, it is understood; but how many years in service is not clear from the record. Mr. Pratt says he was treasurer of the town for nineteen years, and Mr. Freeman says twenty-four years. The sources from which they derive the information the writer cannot find. The early records of the town, covering the years of his active public life, certainly give us but little as to the clerks and treasurers of the town. Mr. Paine was many years a "rate maker" or assessor. In 1685, with Rev. Samuel Treat, Captain Jonathan Sparrow, John Mayo, Sen., and Jabez Snow, he was chosen by the town "to hear and determine the difference between those called the purchasers and the town," respecting land within the limits of Eastham.

In 1667, together with Thomas Huckens of Barnstable, Edward → Gray of Plymouth, and Mr. Constant Southworth, the Colonial treasurer, he hired the "fishing privileges and profits" at the head of the Cape for the period of seven years, for which was given £30 a year. By trade he seems to have been a cooper and millwright. He built mills in various parts of the county. In 1683, he conceived the importance of a mill in the southern part of the town, at a place called by the Indians Kescayogansett, and laid his plan before the town of erecting a mill on the river leading out of the cove. The town entered into an agreement with him, and two mills were built by him; in consideration of which, he had a large tract of land granted him, extending northerly from Kescayogansett cove and river, containing upwards of twenty-six acres, early in the year 1684, together with meadow on Sampson's Island. Whether both of the mills he built were tide mills, we are unable to learn. One was, it is certain, and the millstones from near site many years since, are pointed out. The land given by the town to Mr. Paine for his building the mills, was the parcel claimed by Jefferie and Sampson, Indians, and which the town laid out for them in June, 1682, and afterwards bought of them for the town's use. The tract, upon Mr. Paine's death, passed into the hands of his son, Nicholas, who occupied it until his death. It passed out of the possession of Mr. Paine's heirs about the year 1743. Sometime previous to 1695 he removed to Boston, where the records say he purchased of Thomas Stableford of Philadelphia, March 14, 1694, a homestead at the South end, paying the sum of £130. Here he was residing in 1697. Selling out this year to Eleazar Darby, he returned to Eastham, to his house at Kescayogansett, where he spent, it is supposed, the remainder of his life, passing away Aug. 16, 1706. He appears to have been a man of more than ordinary education. He was an excellent penman. Specimens of his chirography, when "well in years," are yet preserved. His wife Mary, daughter of Nicholas Snow and granddaughter of Mr. Stephen Hopkins, one of the Pilgrims who came over in the Mayflower in 1620, to whom he was married in 1650, was a woman of whom much has been said in her praise. She was "a faithful wife," "a careful mother," "a good quiet neighbor," "a diligent reader of God's hold word," and "a lover of, and attendant at God's house of worship." Her son, Deacon ([illegible]) John Paine, thus gives in his diary an account of her last hours and death: "On the 28th day of April, 1704, my honored mother, Mary Paine, departed this life, being suddenly taken and struck with death, she having reasonable health all day, was taken ill about sunset, so she never after spoke reasonable; but decaying gradually, gave up the ghost about the dawning of the day."

The will of Thomas Paine bears date May 12, 1705. It was presented for probate Oct. 2, 1706. He mentions seven sons: Samuel, Thomas, Elisha, John, Nicholas, James and Joseph; two daughters: Dorcas, wife of Benjamin Vickery of Hull, and Mary, wife of Israel Cole. To Nicholas Paine, his fifth son, he gave all his "lands, mills, house and house at Keaskokagansett, in the town of Eastham," with all his "right title to all town's privileges," etc. He appointed his two eldest sons, Samuel and Thomas, executors. His house at Keaskokagansett stood between the cove and Fresh pond, near where the house of James Percival now stands. His son Nicholas occupied it until his death, when it passed into possession of his daughter Patience, and her husband, William Norcot; and upon their removel to Connecticut after 1740, it passed into the hands of Mr. Samuel Knowles, and became the residence of Mr. Enos Knowles.

The first place of Mr. Paine's residence in Eastham, it is understood, was within the limits of the present town of Eastham, near the Prence place, and not far distant from the residence of his father-in-law, Nicholas Snow. It is supposed he conveyed much of his real estate to his sons by deeds, before he made his will; but to what extent cannot now be ascertained, as all the books of records of deeds of the county were destroyed by fire in 1827. A deed of gift of meadow to his son Thomas, in his own handwriting is yet extant, bearing date 1684, and witnessed by his two sons, Nicholas and James.

Samuel Paine, the eldest son, married Patience Freeman, daughter of Major John Freeman of Eastham and granddaughter of Gov. Prence, Jan. 31, 1687. He settled within the limits of the present town of Eastham, near the house of the late Deacon Joshua Paine. He was much employed in public affairs. He was six years selectman of Eastham, and for some time lieutenant of the military company. He was cut down by a fever, Oct. 13, 1712. He left a wife and nine children. Only two of his sons left descendants, and they are widely scattered. Hon. Samuel James Bridge, who recently caused to be placed on the college ground at Cambridge, Mass., the statue of John Harvard, the founder of the college, is one of the descendants.

} sister of our
} Bennet Freeman

Thomas Paine, the second son, born in 1657, was a [illegible] of prominence. He succeeded Mark Snow, as clerk of Eastham, in 1695, and was yearly elected until 1701, when he was succeeded by his younger brother, John. He was an excellent clerk. He was a selectman of Eastham seven years. He became a landholder at Pamet, now Truro, and removed there and settled on the north side of Little Pamet river, where the house spot is yet to be seen. He was clerk of the proprietors many years. He was selectman of Truro seven years, representative five years, and town clerk several years. He was justice of the peace, deacon of the church, captain of the military company, and a special justice of the court of common pleas, to which office he was appointed July 5, 1713. He died June 23, 1721, in the 65th year of his age. He was twice married, and father of fourteen children. His descendants are widely scattered, numerous and highly respected. From his daughter Hannah descended the late Hon. Horace Binney of Philadelphia.

Elisha Paine, the third son, married Hannah Doane, daughter of John Doane of Eastham, Jan. 5, 1685. In 1689, he was a resident of Barnstable. He removed back to Eastham, and resided in "Little Skaket Neck" until 1703, when he bought a tract of 500 acres of wild land in that part of Plainfield now Canterbury, Conn., and removed thither. Here he took an active part in public affairs. He was one of the founders of the first church in that town in 1711. He died Feb. 7, 1736. His wife died very aged, Dec. 19, 1758. He was the father of ten children. His sons, Elisha, Solomon and John, were ministers. The two former were leaders of the Newlights in Connecticut, and distinguished preachers of that denomination. Among his descendants is the author of "Cape Cod Folks."

✓ (ours) Deacon John Paine, the fourth son, settled in that part of Eastham, now Orleans. He was a prominent man in the town. He succeeded his brother Thomas as clerk in 1701, and held the office until ill health compelled him to decline an election in 1730. He was several years selectman and seven years representative to the General court. He was treasurer of the town for more than thirty years, being first elected in 1696. He was twice married, and father of thirteen children. His first wife, Benner, was daughter of Major John Freeman. He died in 1731. He was great-grandfather of John Howard Paine, author of "Home, Sweet Home." His descendants are widely scattered. He was of a literary turn of mind, and some of his spare moments were devoted to literary pursuits. A portion of a diary kept by him in which are entries as early as 1695 and 1717, is yet extant.

Nicholas Paine, the fifth son, married Hannah Higgins, daughter of Jonathan, and settled at Keaskakogansett. He was a miller and farmer, and had not much to do with public affairs. He died in the autumn of 1733. He was the father of seven children. His only son, Philip, died unmarried, April 10, 1725, aged 20 years and 5 months. Hannah, his mother, died Jan. 24, 1731-2. He had his father's place and a large share of his property.

James Paine, the sixth son, born July 6, 1665, married Bethiah, daughter of Col. John Thacher of Yarmouth, April 9, 1691. He went to Barnstable to reside in 1689. He was a school teacher, miller, cooper and clerk. He was in Captain John Gorham's company at the expedition against Canada in 1691, as "clerk." For his services, his heirs in 1736 received a grant of land in Maine. He was the first clerk of the East precinct or parish in Barnstable. He died at Barnstable, Nov. 12, 1718, and lies buried in the old cemetery, where a headstone marks the spot; he also was a man of a literary turn of mind. He was a member of the Barnstable church. He had seven children. Thomas, his only son, was educated at Harvard college, graduating in 1711. He married Eunice Treat, and had Robert Treat Paine, the distinguished lawyer, who signed the Declaration of Independence and was the first attorney general of Massachusetts under the Constitution. Mr. James Paine resided, at his death, in the house now occupied by Mr. Gray in Barnstable. It was built for Mr. Paine in 1717. The frame was cut in Scituate. Dr. Samuel Savage bought it in, or about, 1776, of Mr. Paine's heirs.

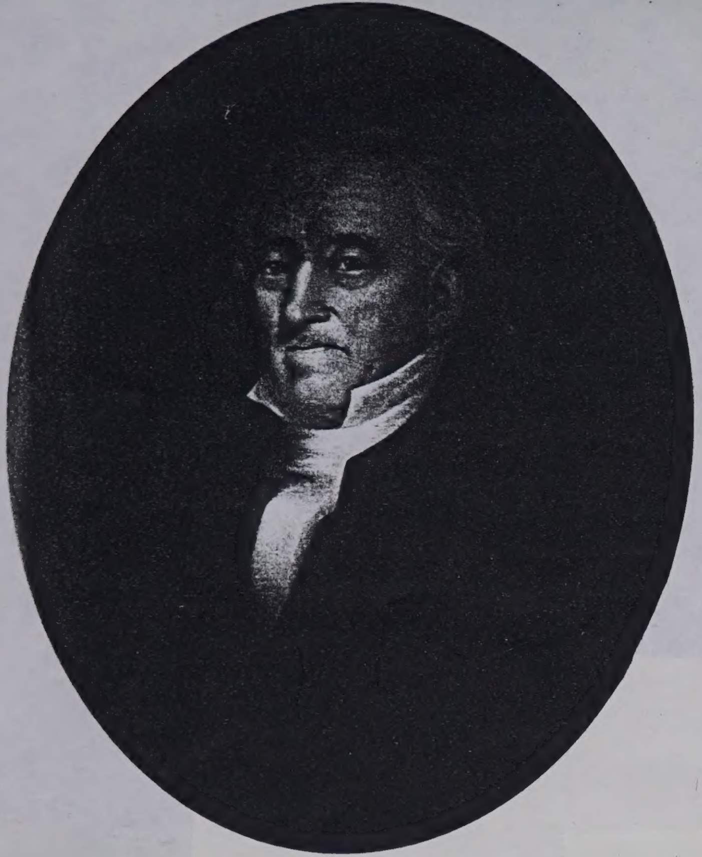
Joseph Paine, the seventh and youngest son, married Patience Sparrow, daughter of Jonathan Sparrow of Eastham, May 27, 1691. He removed from Eastham to Harwich, now Brewster, before 1700. He was one of the founders of the Brewster church, Oct. 17, 1700. He was selectman of the town in 1701, and successive elections until 1711. He was chosen town clerk in 1706, and annually chosen until his death, Oct. 1, 1712. He appears to have enjoyed athletic feats in his youthful days. His nephew in his journal says: "He was very stout, and flung Col. Thacher, the Champion of Bay State, at Commencement." He was an exemplary member of the church. His wife was a granddaughter of Gov. Prence. She married for her second husband, John Jenkins of Barnstable in 1715; she died Oct. 28, 1745. Joseph Paine was the father of eleven children. Prof. John K. Paine of Harvard college is a descendant. Most of his descendants are in Maine.

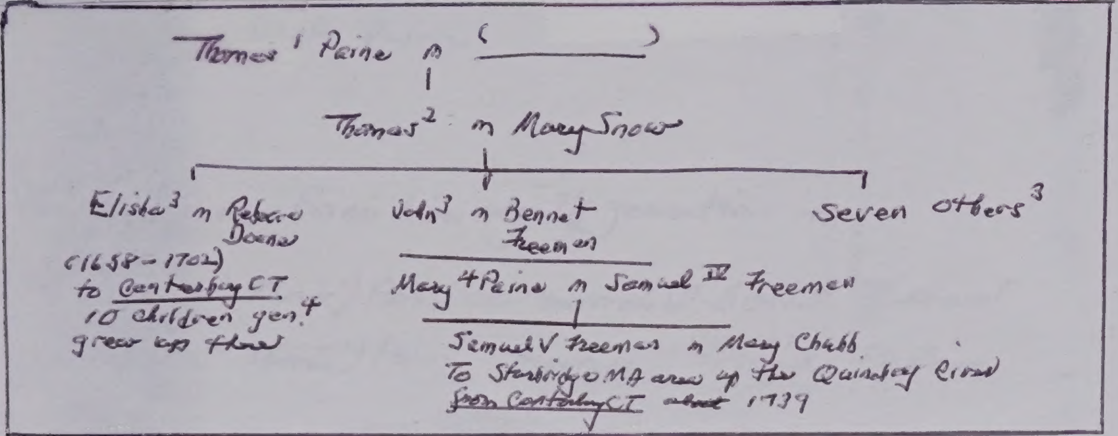
JOSEPH COLLINS.

Joseph Collins was the first of the name in Eastham. Of his ancestry the writer knows nothing of certainty. Some writers have it that he was from Lynn and son of Henry Collins, a starch maker of that place, who came from Ireland, but fail to give authority for their statements. He married Ruth, (not Duty Knowles, as is given by some writers) daughter of Richard Knowles, March 20, 1672. He died at Eastham about 1724. He appears to have been married twice. He mentions Sarah as his wife, in his will in 1723. He was a member of the North church in Eastham, and ordered that his "dragon table-cloth be delivered to the deacons for the use of the church." He had nine children, viz: Sarah, John, Lydia, Joseph, Hannah, Jonathan, Jane, Benjamin and James.

John Collins, his eldest son, born in Eastham Dec. 18, 1674, married Hannah Doane, daughter of John Doane, Jr., Feb. 22, 1701-2, and settled in what is now Wellfleet, having had land laid out to him there in 1698. He removed to Chatham, where he resided till his death, May 24, 1765, in the 92nd year of his age. His grave is marked in the old cemetery at Chatham by a half-sunken slate stone with inscription. He was a man of importance in Chatham. Most of his children were doubtless born in Eastham. They were Solomon, Samuel, Martha, who married Moses Godfrey, John, Hannah, Joseph, David, Jane and Anna. Hannah, wife of

(Judge Elisha Paine)





Thomas^{1} Paine m (________)

Thomas^{2} m Mary Snow

Elisha^{3} m Rebecca Doane
(1658-1702)
to Canterbury CT
10 children gen.^{4}
grew up there

John^{3} m Bennet Freeman

Mary^{4} Paine m Samuel IV Freeman

Samuel V Freeman m Mary Chubb
To Sturbridge MA area up the Quinebaug River
from Canterbury CT about 1739

Seven others^{3}

THE

PAYNES OF HAMILTON
(NEW YORK)

A
GENEALOGICAL
AND
BIOGRAPHICAL
RECORD

BY

AUGUSTA FRANCELIA PAYNE WHITE

ILLUSTRATED

WISCONSIN
HISTORICAL
SOCIETY

MCMXII
TOBIAS A. WRIGHT
PUBLISHER
NEW YORK

(1912)

This book follows the lines of Elisha^{3} Paine + has only a blurb about his brother John.^{3} It is of help to us in telling about Canterbury for others of our Sturbridge kin were from Canterbury (eg. Smith family).

THE PAYNES OF ENGLAND AND NORMANDY

By Mary Lovering Holman.

The name of Payne or Paine is derived from "Paganus," which was from the Latin and doubtless came into England by the way of Normandy. The history of this surname is really remarkable. The original Greek word παγυς meant a fountain and the neighborhood about a fountain gradually came to have the same name applied to it. From this use it was only a step to apply the word to the inhabitants of the neighborhood and call them "Pagans." Thus the word meaning a fountain gradually applied to rural things in general and we see it in one modern form as "peasant."

At a time when so large a proportion of men were soldiers, and the people who were not were largely countrymen, the name "Pagan" was applied rather contemptuously to all those who did not serve their King in a military fashion. After the Christian era began, the followers of Christ were always considered the "soldiers" of Christ and to those not of His religious army the word pagan was applied as it had been used to signify those not in the civil army. From this application there was read into the word, the meaning of "non-Christian" which the word "pagan" bears to-day. In this sense it was applied widely. The early Church called the Mohammedans "Pagans" and so did the Romans call those Norsemen that swept over Rome and her provinces. There is some question whether as a personal appellation it was first applied to one who rejected Christ or to one who was a countryman.

The Norman Paynes are generally believed to be descended from one or several men who at the time that Rollo of Normandy became a Christian refused to be baptised, and were hence distinguished from the rest of the followers of Rollo as "le Pagan," or "le Payen." Wherever the name occurs it was un-

The Norman People

Pg 350 equates Pain, Payne, etc

"Robert Pagen or Paganus
Normandy 1180, 1198 [MRS]
Gilbert + John de Pain England
1272 (RH) Hence the
Bagnell's Payne

doubtedly first applied as a soubriquet like Le Sauvage and Wildman.

The names of Paganel and Paynell are considered by Ellis and others to be diminutives of Pagan; and one famous man having this form of the name, Ralph Pagenel, was a headman of William the Conqueror. Recent research has proven the identity of the various forms of the name as well as its appearance in many countries. France has its Payen, Paen and Payn. Italy has its Pagana and Portugal its Payana. After the Norman Conquest, there were various settlements of men bearing the name in England besides those present there before 1066. During the Norman Dynasty, Paganus or Payne was one of the most usual names in England and on this account is now very widely found in all the counties. A family of Paynes settled in Norfolk in the fifteenth century, who claim descent from the Ancient House of Paynell of Hambie in the arrondissement of Coutances. The change from Paynel to Payne may well have been made to evade the vexatious English laws against aliens. Another branch of the Paynells of Hambie settled in Yorkshire and in this family it appears that the same individual was frequently called both Paynell and Payne.

In studying the Arms of any English family it is frequently found that there is a parent coat and that many of the other coats ascribed to the same name belong to offshoots of the same family with just enough difference to distinguish them. This is not true of the Paynes. Of the thirty-four Coats of Arms ascribed to the name in Burke's Armory almost all are entirely unlike. This points to the probability that the families are not from one parent stock but that each has arisen into prominence separately, and tends to contradict the assertion that all the Paynes are descendants from the Norman followers of Rollo. It seems much more probable that the several families of the name are descended from unrelated progenitors each of whom was called "Pagan" either because he was a countryman or because he was not a Christian.

There are a few coats of arms, however, that tie families of the name together. In Bedford and Middlesex we find families bearing Arms "Gules, a fess between two lions passing, or." In Dorset and Denbigh we find again the same Arms "Per bend

or and azure, six roundels counterchanged, two and two." Ther is also found in Dorset another coat of arms which is borne by a Leicester Payne family, namely, "Paly of six or and azure, a chief Ermine," and closely allied to this is a Hereford coat "Paly of eight or and azure, a chief Ermine."

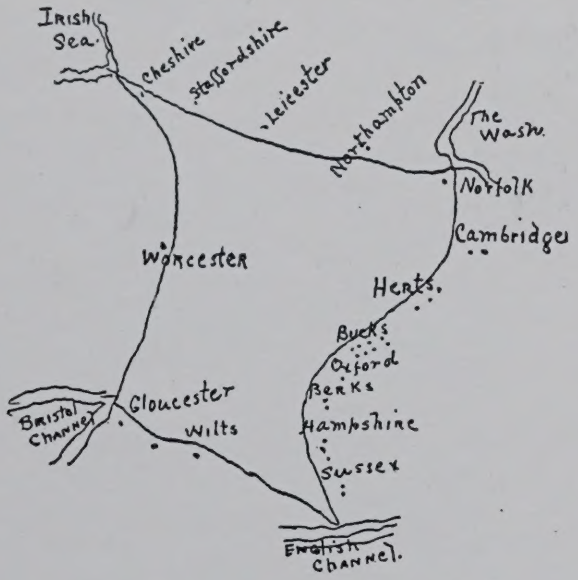
Arms

The Arms of Payne of Market Bosworth, Leicester, and Payne of Suffolk are "Argent, on a fess engrailed gules between three martlets sable, as many mascles or, all within a bordure engrailed of the second bezantée." A variation of this coat is found in Norfolk.

In the list of people holding land in the time of Edward the Confessor and after the Conquest but previous to the Domesday Survey are found Paganes in Norfolk and Pagens in Gloucester. William was assisted in his Conquest by several of the name. One of his chiefs, Ralph Pagenel, previously mentioned, was Sheriff of Yorkshire. He was probably a member of the Norman family which held land at Montiers Hubert in Lieuvin. In 1086 Ralph Paganel held ten Lordships in Devon, five in Somerset, fifteen in Lincoln, fifteen in Yorkshire, and others in Gloucester and Northampton. In 1088 as Sheriff of Yorkshire he seized the lands of the Bishop of Durham at the command of William II, whose cause he defended at the meeting at Salisbury in November, 1088. He left four sons, William, Jordan, Elias and Alan and from them has descended a numerous family.

In the Domesday book among those who held land directly of the King was Pagen of Hampshire; and among landholders of lesser station were men named Paganus in Sussex, Berks, Herts, Bucks, Worcester, Cambridge, Essex, and Suffolk; men called Pagen in Wilts, Dorset, Oxford, Northampton, Leicester and Stafford. In Nottingham land was held by Pagen and Sasfrid, men of William Peverel.

Dr. T. O. Paine searched the records of the family in the Domesday book and quotes them in his article on the Paines in the "Paine Family Records." He states that all those records referred to one man; that he had a son Edmund and a daughter called "daughter of Paine" who also held land. He traces this Paine in fifteen counties which adjoin and gives the following sketch showing the position of this man's holdings in England.

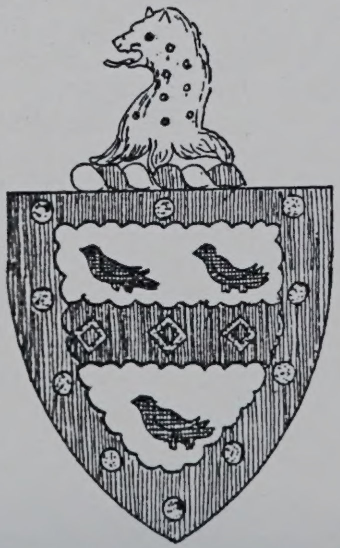


From the time of the Domesday Book to the time of the Visitations of the Heralds there is not much in print of the records that time has left. These Visitations were records made by the Heralds of the King during the 16th and early 17th centuries to show the families entitled to the use of Coat Armor. The Heralds were first organized in 1484 and from 1530 to 1686 these Visitations were made every twenty to thirty years. Many of them are now in print. In order to prove his right to arms, a man had to show that they had been borne by his family for at least three generations, and in support of his claim he filed with the Heralds a pedigree of his family at least three generations in length and oftentimes longer. Doubtless many families failed ever to be recorded and as time went on, and the office of the Heralds became less important the Visitations ceased.

During the time between the date of the Domesday book and the Visitations, however, there was at least one Payne whose name and deeds have come down to us. In the year 1119, the first Crusade being ended, two comrades of Godfrey de Bouillon, Hugues de Payen and Geffroi de Saint-Adhemar, bound themselves with seven French Knights to guard pilgrims to the Holy Sepulchre from the attack of Saracens. They took before the Patriarch of Jerusalem vows of chastity, poverty and obedience. Baldwin II gave them quarters in his palace, built on the sight of the Temple of Solomon, from which they took their name of Knights of the Temple, or Templars. The order consisted first of Knights alone and the discipline was severe. Hugues de Payen was the First Grandmaster. He died in 1136. History tells us little of him. He was probably a younger son of the Norman house of Payen and he was evidently a knight. Whether he was a man of property or not does not appear, as in accordance with the vow of poverty, he would relinquish all he had either to the order or to the Church.

Examination of the Records of Visitations that have been printed reveal the following Payne families:

In the Visitation of Suffolk is found a family beginning with Sir Thomas Payne of Market Bosworth, Leicester, who married Margaret, daughter of Sir Thomas Pultney, Knight. His son Edward, living in 1540, married Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Walton. They had among other sons, William Payne,



ARMS OF PAYNE OF MARKET BOSWORTH.

who had a s[illegible] in Hengrave County, Suffolk, and was in the Service of the Duke of Buckingham. He married Margery Ash, daughter of Thomas Ash, of Thurlow, in Suffolk. The Arms of Payne of Hengrave were "Argent on a fess engrailed Gules between three martlets Sable, as many mascles or, within a bordure engrailed of the second, charged with fourteen bezants. Crest: a Wolf's head erased bezantee." This differs in two slight particulars from the Arms credited by Burke to this family. The Paynes of Nowton and of Worlington are both offshoots from Payne of Hengrave.

The Visitation of Leicester, 1619, gives a William Payne of Metbourne as early as 1500.

The Visitation of Bedfordshire has a family beginning with William Payne of Bedley, in County Worcester, whose son Daniel of Bedford had William, Margaret and Francis. Margaret married William Child of Wrington in Somerset, and their son Richard was living in 1634. Her arms as quartered with her husband's were "Sa. on a chevron between three bezants or as many fleurs de lys of the field."

A Visitation of Gloucester gives a Payne pedigree beginning with William Payne of Rodborough, who married Margaret, daughter of Thomas Spilman. They had a son, William Payne of Rodborough, who used his seal on a deed in the year 40 Edward IV, on which the arms were "Argent, a Chevron azure, between three mullets pierced Gules."

A later Visitation of Gloucester in 1682-3 gives a Payne of Gloucester with arms "3 roundles and on a chief 3 roundles" which is stated to have been "taken from a seal and nothing further to be found." The pedigree begins with Robert Payne of Coldthrop, County Gloucester, who died about 1620. He had sons William, Robert, Richard and Henry. His son Robert by wife Elizabeth had Edward, John, Elizabeth, Joan, Mary and Hannah and their descendants are traced down still farther.

A volume of Visitations of Norfolk, 1563-89-1613, gives the descendants of John Payne of Louth, County Lincoln, whose son was John Payne of Ittringham, County Norfolk. Thomas, the son of this latter John Payne, married Agnes, daughter of John Jermy of Metfield, Suffolk, and had a son Thomas, who by wife Elizabeth had Christopher, Edmund, James, Thomas,

Richard, Edward, Frances, James, Mary and Elizabeth. Th[illegible] arms of this family are quartered, "1 & 4-Ar. a chevron vairé between 3 lions rampant Az. 2 & 3—Ar. a lion rampant guardant gules."

In another volume of Norfolk Visitations, appear some interesting facts as

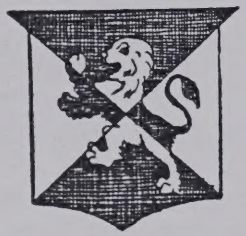
"1553 Edward Lumner Esq. and Thomas Paine, Gent. were appointed Trustees for the Lady Elizabeth (afterwards Queen) by licence from Queen Mary."

"Sybilla d. and h. of Will^{m} Hethersell . . . m 2nd John Pain, Gent." They had a son Robert Payne, living 24 Nov. 1479. This is the date of Sybill Payne's will, in which she speaks of "son Robert."

Anne, daughter of William Reymes of Overstrand, Norfolk, Esq., by Mary, daughter of Thomas Payne of Ittringham, married Thomas Hobart of Thwayte, Esq., whose will was proved in 1626.

The Visitation of Kent in 1619 gives a pedigree from John Payne of Shotenton in Chilham, whose son and heir was John and whose grandson John was one month old at the time of the Visitation. The arms given in this pedigree are quartered, the Payne arms being: "Per Saltire Sa. and Ar. a lion rampant counterchanged."

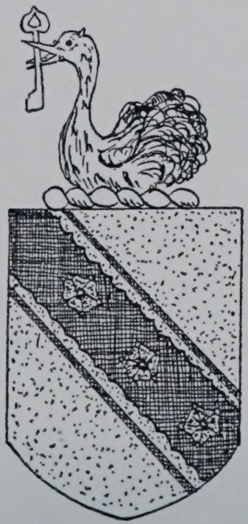
Another Visitation of Kent in 1663 gives the family of Roger Payne of Clepstow, in Monmouth, whose son, John Payne, was of Wittam Priory, in Somerset, and whose grandson, Roger Payne, settled in Kent and had a son Christian, who was an infant at that date.



ARMS OF PAYNE OF CHILHAM, KENT.

The Visitation of Sussex, completed in 1634-5, gives a family beginning with John Payne of Patenswike, Sussex, who had a son William Payne, who died without issue, and a son, Thomas Payne of Petworth, who married Elizabeth, a daughter of Anthony Walker, Clarke of the Wardrop in London. The children of the latter were: first, John Payne of Garton, York, who married Eleanor, daughter of Edward Savage of Bradley and had William and Catharine; second, Thomas Payne of Petworth, who married Margaret, daughter of Robert Wheatley in York and had John, Thomas, Walter and Margaret. Among London Marriage Licenses is the License of Thomas Payn of Lincoln's Inn and Elizabeth Walker of St. Andrew in the Wardrobe, 28 May, 1577.

A Visitation of Berkshire gives the Pedigree of Payne of Wallingford, beginning with John Payne of Hawton in Staffordshire, whose son Nicholas Payne was of Wallingford. Nicholas Payne married Anna Read of Buckingham and had issue. His son and heir, John Payne of Wallingford, married Anne Winchcombe and had a son, Thomas Payne, living in 1623, with son Richard, aged 16 and son Philip aged 2. Nicholas had another son Griffith, whose son Richard was aged 11 in 1623. The arms of this family, confirmed in 1586, were "Or, on a bend engrailed between two cotises Sa., three roses of the first. Crest: a demi ostrich wings endorsed arg., in the beak a key or."



ARMS OF PAYN OF WALLINGFORD.

The Visitation of Surrey in 1662-8 gives the pedigree of Payne of Milford beginning with John Payne, Gent., whose grandson, John Payne, Gent., was living at the time of the Visitation. Arms: "Gu. two crescents in chief or."

This Visitation says also in a Bromfield pedigree that Sir Edward Bromfield of Suffolk Place, Surrey, Knight, Lord Mayor of London in 1637, married Margaret Payne, daughter and coheiress of John Payne of Southwark in Surrey. Her arms appear quartered on a shield of twelve quarterings. They are, "Per bend or and Azure, 6 roundles counterchanged."

This Visitation also mentions the marriage of Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Robert Payne, of Huntingdon, to Dr. John Rogers of Bermondsey, Surrey, and their sons, John Rogers and "Prisonborne" Rogers, both born before 1662.

The Visitation of Herefordshire, 1569, gives no Paine pedigrees but mentions the following marriages among others: John Bromwyche and Anne Payne; Richard Scudamore (son of John who died 25 Sept., 1571), and Joan, daughter of Edmunde Payn of Founehope.

Robert Chabnor of Norfolk married Anne, daughter and coheiress of Thomas Payne. They had Payne Chabnor before 1569. These items prove that there was an early family of Paynes in the County of Norfolk.

The Visitation of Huntingdonshire in 1613 also has its Payne pedigree, beginning with Robert Payne of St. Neots. His wife was Agnes, daughter of William Scott. The pedigree traces the descendants of his sons Edward Payne with wife Dorothy and Robert Payne with wife Mary. Edward had seven children and amongst them a son Thomas living in 1613.

Visitations of Somerset, prepared in 1531, 1573 and 1591, contain the pedigree of Payne of Hulton, near Weston-super-Mare, with Arms: "Gu. three crosses botonné arg. on a chief Az., two escallps or." It begins with John Payne and his wife, Lady Jane Kelloway, and is brought down to his grandson, Thomas Payne, with wife Margaret, living 1573. There is also given the marriage of Mary, daughter of John Payne of Hulton to John Dodington of Dodington; of Catharine, daughter of Robert Payne of Wiltshire to Richard Claveshey; of Joane de Ramsay, daughter of Sir Thomas Ramsay (8 Hen. II) to

Thomas Payne, and of William, son of Sir John Wadham of Catherston, in Dorset, and Merrifield-in-Ilton, Somerset, to Joan, daughter and heiress of William Payne of Catherston.

This research into such of the Visitations as are in print shows plainly that in many counties the families of Payne were among the Gentry in the sixteenth century. Of course, there were many gentle families not important enough to be enrolled by the Heralds and doubtless some that failed to be included although they were as important as those whose pedigrees have survived the hand of time.

An examination of such will indices as are printed reveals a multitudinous collection of Paynes. In Northampton and Rutland between 1537 and 1650 there were thirty-five wills recorded and among them a Thomas Payne in 1622, two Thomas Paynes between 1549-57, both of Rothersthorpe, another Thomas of Rothersthorpe, between 1578-89, a Thomas in 1602-3, and another of Wykeham in 1560-66. There was evidently a large family of Paynes in Rothersthorpe very early who were not of the Gentry.

In Lichfield wills there are fourteen of Paynes, among them a Thomas, in 1615, and another in 1619.

In Berkshire, between 1508-1652, there are forty-six Payne wills, four of them being Thomas Paynes.

In Gloucester, between 1541-1650, there are fifty-one Payne wills.

In Sussex, from 1541-1652, there are one hundred and fifty Payne wills recorded and nineteen of the testators are named Thomas Payne.

In Leicester, from 1495-1649, there are fifty-eight Paine wills, seven being Thomas Paynes. There are similar records in other counties.

In the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, where wills from all over England are recorded, there are one hundred and three Payne wills.

There were also many Paynes in London as shown by such church registers as are available. In St. Dionis Backchurch a Thomas Paine had his children baptised between 1604 and 1620, ✓ the last child being Thomas, baptized March 25, 1620.

The size of the Payne Family shows how almost impossible it is to find the ancestry of any early emigrant of that name to this country. However, during the past year the home of Moses Paine of Braintree has been located in Kent and his direct ancestry traced back to 1463. Another early emigrant, Thomas Paine of Salem and Dedham, is believed to have come from Wrentham, Suffolk, England, from a family record which has come down through the centuries; but so far as I know it has never been verified in England. The descendants of Thomas Paine of Eastham, while they may regret that nothing has as yet been found pertaining to his birthplace or ancestry, can still assure themselves that he was doubtless of good blood in England. His education, and his career in this country all go to show that he must have had advantages superior to most of the men with whom he was associated in the founding of Eastham.

The fact that the name of the emigrant ancestor of the Paynes of Hamilton spelled his name Paine has no significance. In the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries men spelled their surnames as suited their individual taste. Brothers often spelled their surname differently.

THE PAYNES OF HAMILTON

FIRST GENERATION

1. **Thomas^1 Paine**, the first ancestor of the family in the new world, came to its shores from England. This fact, and the fact that his son was Thomas^2 Paine of Eastham, are the only definite facts we possess concerning him. The destruction of the land records of Barnstable County, and the conflict of traditions serve to shroud him in mystery, which no research so far made has been able thoroughly to dispel.

SECOND GENERATION

2. **Thomas^2 Paine** (Thomas^1) was born in England, probably about 1612, and died at Eastham in the Colony of Massachusetts, Aug. 16, 1706. He married Mary Snow, daughter of Colonel Nicholas and Constance (Hopkins) Snow. (See Snow Family. Appendix.) She was born at Plymouth, in the Colony of Massachusetts, and died at Eastham, April 28, 1704.

Children:

i. Mary,^{3} b. and d. at Eastham; m. (1st) at Eastham, Jan. 11, 1670, James Rogers, son of Lieutenant Joseph Rogers of the Mayflower Company. James Rogers d. April 13, 1678. She m. (2d) at Eastham, April 24, 1679, Israel Cole, son of Daniel Cole, of Eastham.

ii. Samuel, b. at Eastham; d. at Eastham, Oct. 13, 1712. He m. at Eastham, Jan. 31, 1682, Patience Freeman, daughter of Major John and Mercy (Prence) Freeman. Major Freeman was "one of the fathers of Eastham" and an assistant to the Governor for many years. His wife was a daughter of Thomas Prence, Governor of Plymouth Colony, and a granddaughter of Elder William Brewster of the Mayflower Company.

Samuel Paine took the freeman's oath at Eastham, where he was a life-long resident, June 6, 1684. He was a selectman of Eastham in 1697, 1700, 1701, 1702 and 1705, a Lieutenant in the militia, and was otherwise prominent.

iii. THOMAS, b. at Eastham, about 1657; d. at Truro, in the Colony of Massachusetts, June 23, 1721. He m. (1st) at Eastham, Aug. 5, 1678, Hannah, daughter of Jonathan Shaw. She d. at Truro, July 24, 1713, aged 52. Judge Paine m. (2d) Mrs. Elizabeth Eairs of Boston, March 8, 1714-15. She d. very aged at Bellingham in the Colony of Massachusetts, in 1754.

Judge Thomas Paine was admitted a freeman at Eastham, June 6, 1684. Having bought from his father the tracts of land at Pamet, later Truro, which the elder Paine bought from Governor Prence and Jabez Howland, he became a proprietor there and established himself as a resident. He was Clerk of the Proprietors and of the Town many years, selectman for six years, and a Representative of the Provincial Legislature at Boston for five years. He was Clerk, Selectman and Representative of Eastham before the incorporation of Truro. Besides being a Captain of the Military Company and a Justice of the Peace, he was a Special Justice of the Court of Common Pleas for Barnstable County and held that office at his death.

3 iv. ELISHA, b. at Eastham, probably, March 10, 1658.

(ours) ✓ v. JOHN, b. at Eastham, March 14, 1660-1; d. at Eastham, October 26, 1731. ✓ He m. (1st) Bennet Freeman, ✓ at Eastham, March 14, 1689. She was b. March 5, 1671, and d. May 30, 1716, the daughter of Major John and Mercy (Prence) Freeman, and a sister of the wife of Samuel Paine (*supra*). Mr. Paine m. (2d) at Eastham, March 3, 1719-20, Alice Mayo, daughter of Nathaniel Mayo, and great-granddaughter of Rev. Samuel Mayo, and Governor Thomas Prence. She was b. in 1686, and d. at Eastham, October 12, 1748.

Deacon John Paine was admitted a freeman at Eastham, June, 1690. He was Selectman for five years, and Clerk from 1703 to 1729. Deacon Paine was Treasurer of Eastham from 1709 to 1730, and a Representative to the General Court at Boston in 1703, 1709, 1714, 1716, 1718, 1724 and 1725. He was often chosen as agent by the Town to transact important business, and was frequently called upon as arbitrator to settle land and other disputes throughout the county. He was a deacon of the church in Eastham.

His famous diary, extending over a period from 1695 to 1717, is still extant.

dau
Mary Paine

John Howard Payne, playwright and poet, and author of "Home, Sweet Home," was a great-grandson of Deacon Paine.

ours
not followed

vi. NICHOLAS, b. in Eastham; d. there in the autumn of 1733. His wife Hannah, daughter of Jonathan and Elizabeth Higgins, died in Eastham, Jan. 24, 1731-2.

Nicholas Paine seems to have been a man of some property, but not to have been in public life.

vii. JAMES, b. in Eastham, July 6, 1665; d. in Barnstable, where he resided most of his life, Nov. 12, 1728. He m. Bethiah Thacher of Yarmouth, April 9, 1691. She was a daughter of Colonel John Thacher, for many years Councillor of the Colony of Massachusetts. She d. at Barnstable, July 7, 1734.

James Paine was admitted a townsman at Barnstable, May 29, 1689. He was in the expedition against Canada in 1691, led by Sir William Phipps, in Capt. John Gorham's Company, and is mentioned as "clerk." For his services on this expedition, his heirs received a grant of lands in Maine in 1736. He was the first clerk of the East Parish of Barnstable, and served many years.

Mr. Paine's eldest son, Rev. Thomas Paine, graduated from Harvard, 1717, and married Eunice, daughter of Rev. Samuel Treat, who was a son of Governor Robert Treat of Connecticut. Rev. Samuel Treat's wife was Abigail, daughter of Rev. Samuel Willard, President of Harvard College. The eldest surviving son of Thomas and Eunice (Treat) Paine was Robert Treat Paine, LL.D., who graduated from Harvard in 1749, became a member of the Continental Congress at Philadelphia in 1776 and a Signer of the Declaration of Independence. He was afterwards Attorney-General of the State of Massachusetts and a Justice of the Supreme Court of that State.

viii. JOSEPH, b. at Eastham; d. there Oct. 1, 1712. He m. Patience Sparrow at Eastham, May 27, 1691. She was a daughter of Jonathan Sparrow, Esq., of Eastham, and his wife Hannah, who was a daughter of Governor Thomas Prence. Mrs. Joseph Paine d. at Barnstable, Oct. 28, 1745.

Joseph Paine settled in that part of Harwich, which is now Brewster, before 1700, and was one of the eight who formed the first church there, October 17, 1700. He was a Selectman of Harwich from 1701 until 1711, and succeeded Thomas Freeman as Town Clerk in 1706 and held that office until his death. Joshua Paine, his nephew, says of Joseph Paine, in his journal:—"He was very stout and fflung Coll. Thacher, the Champion of the Bay State, at Commencement."

ix. DORCAS, b. at Eastham, and d. at Hull, in the Colony of Massachusetts, Oct. 30, 1707. She m. Benjamin Vickery of Hull, and by him had seven children.

Thomas[2] Paine is first identified on the existing records of either town or colony in 1653, when it appears he was acting in the capacity of a constable at Eastham. In 1655 he was one of the nineteen mentioned as among the townsmen of Eastham.

Mr. Paine was propounded at the Colony Court at Plymouth and admitted a freeman June 1, 1658. In 1662 he was appointed, together with Nicholas Snow, Jonathan Sparrow and Giles Hopkins, all leading men of Eastham, to view and lay out the great meadow between Namskaket and Silver Spring, within the limits of Eastham, to those of the inhabitants entitled to the same; and in the same year, with Giles Hopkins, was appointed a surveyor of highways. In 1664, he was appointed one of the Deputies to the Colony Court, and one of the jury. In 1667, he was one of a committee of twelve called to investigate the causes that led to the deaths of Robert Chappell, James Nichols and James Pidell, of Captain John Allen's Company, who were put ashore at Cape Cod.

The same year he was granted leave by the Colony Court to select a tract of land for his own use; and in June, 1669, he and Experience Mitchell, Henry Sampson and Thomas Little were given leave to buy land from the Indians at Namskaket, now Middleborough, Massachusetts. Mr. Paine and the other persons last named thereupon purchased a tract of land for ten pounds sterling from Tuscaquin, the Black Sachem, and his son William. This land adjoins the tract which belonged to John Alden at the famous Assowamsett Pond.

In 1670, with Jonathan Sparrow, he was appointed an Inspector of the Ordinaries in Eastham, and to see that there was no excessive drinking. The same year he became one of the Grand Inquest.

That year, also, he became interested in the purchase of land in what is now Truro. On May 2, 1670, he bought of Governor Thomas Prence of Plymouth his "half share," lying between "Bound Brook" and "Eastern Harbor" or "Lovell's Creek," for which he paid the sum of twenty pounds. This tract he sold to his son Thomas, March 30, 1690, for the same sum. On the first day of June, 1673, he bought of Jabez Howland, for fifteen pounds, all the right of the latter to land purchased and unpurchased in the same vicinity, which he also sold to his son Thomas, March 30, 1690.

For many years prior to 1670, the head of Cape Cod, where Provincetown now stands, had been the resort of fishermen from many parts, and because it was within the geographical limits of Plymouth Colony, the Colony Court, that year listened to complaints that were made of careless persons "casting their ballast near the shore," where seines were drawn, and "leaving the garbidge of ffish or dead ffish to lye there." The result was a decree made in June, 1670, that for every offence a penalty of forty shillings should be imposed; also that whoever within the limits of the Colony should "draw mackerall on shore there" should pay sixpence for every barrell taken; further that all "fforaigners" should pay for every barrell so taken one shilling and sixpence, and give "sufficient cecuritie" unto the bailiff for the fulfillment of every promise made, before "entrance on the voyage." Thomas Paine was appointed "bayley by land and water to demand and receive for the Colonie's use the above mensioned sums." Mr. Paine served the Colony in this office many years.

The following year, 1671, he represented Eastham in the Colony Court. He was also a Deputy to that Court in 1672, 1673, 1676, 1678, 1680, 1681 and in 1690. Mr. Paine was a Selectman of Eastham in 1671 and was re-elected for several terms thereafter. He was Treasurer of Eastham from 1674 to 1694.

In 1676, Mr. Paine was one of a committee appointed to collect a debt due to the Town of Eastham from the Town of Sandwich; and the same year one of the committee chosen to undertake and superintend the building of the new church edifice at Eastham. In 1677, in partnership with Constant Southworth, the Colonial Treasurer, and two other persons, he hired the fishing privileges at the head of Cape Cod for a period of seven years, for the yearly sum of thirty pounds. In 1685 Mr. Paine and the Reverend Samuel Treat, Jonathan Sparrow, John Mayo, Senior, and Jabez Snow were chosen by the Town of Eastham as a commission to hear and "determine the differences between those called Purchasers and the town," respecting certain lands within the limits of Eastham.

About 1694 Mr. Paine changed his residence to Boston, where it appears of record that he bought of Thomas Stableford of Philadelphia, March 14, 1694, the latter's homestead, situated at the South End. For this estate he paid the sum of one hundred and thirty pounds. His residence in Boston appears to have terminated about 1697. On June 7 of that year he sold to Ephraim Little of Plymouth his share of certain land at Showamet in Bristol County, "it being his thirtieth part of that whole tract of land which Constant Southworth, Esquire, the late Treasurer of the Colony of New Plymouth, on the twelfth of November, Ano Dom. 1677, by ye order of the General Court * * * did grant, sell and confirm unto sundry persons whose names are particularly expressed," of whom "the said Thomas Paine" was one. On October 13, 1697, still being a resident of Boston, he sold the house and land he had bought of Stableford to one Eleazer Darby. Soon afterward he was again in Eastham, where he then remained until his death.

Mr. Paine appears to have been a man of more than ordinary education, and was an unusually good penman. From the records it appears that he was skilled in the art of mill building, and under his supervision a number were erected in various parts of Barnstable County. For the great expense he was at "in building two Grist Mills in Eastham for the use of the town," he was granted in 1683, a large tract of land on the northerly side of "Kescayogansett Cove," which is now included within the limits of the town of Orleans.

Mary Snow, the wife of Thomas Paine, was a woman of whom much has been said in praise. She was a "faithful wife," "a careful mother," a good and "quiet neighbor," a "diligent reader of God's Holy Word," and a lover of and an attendant at "God's house of worship." Deacon John Paine, her son, thus speaks of her last hours and death in his diary: "On the 28th day of April, 1704, my honoured mother, Mary Paine, departed this life, being suddenly taken and struck with death, she having been in reasonable health all day, was taken ill about sunset so she never after spoke reasonable; but decaying gradually gave up the Ghost about the dawning of the day."

The will of Thomas Paine is on record at Barnstable. Following is a copy *verbatim:*

In the Name of God, Amen. The twelvth day of May, 1705, I, Thomas Paine of Eastham, in ye County of Barnstable, in ye Province of Massachusetts Bay, being aged and weak in body, but of sufficient mind and memory—thanks be given to

God—therefore calling to mind the mortality of my body, and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die, do make and ordain this my last Will and Testament; that is to say, principally and first of all, I give and recommend my soul into ye hands of God that gave it, and my body I recommend to the earth to be buried in decent Christian burial at ye disposition of my Executors, nothing doubting but at ye general ressurection I shall receive ye same again by the mighty power of God. And as touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this life, I give, demise and dispose of the same in ye following manner and form. Imp. I give and bequeath my son Nicholas Paine, his heirs & assigns forever all my lands, mills, house and housing at Keaskokagansett in the town of Eastham, with all my right title to all town's privileges, and my two shares in ye land purchased of Mr. Samuel Smith, called the ten pound purchase; also all my meadow lying on or by Sampson's Island, and between Sampson's Island and Hog Island in sd Eastham; as also my upland at both ends of Sampson's Island; and my share of meadow which lies to the southward of Porchy Island, which was granted me by ye town in ye year of our Lord, 1703. Imp. I give to my daughter, Mary, the wife of Israel Cole, ten shillings in money; all the rest and residue of my estate, both real and personal, goods & chattels whatsoever, I give and bequeath to be equally divided to and among my children, viz:—Samuel Paine, Thomas Paine, Elisha Paine, John Paine, Nicholas Paine, James Paine, Joseph Paine, Dorcas Vickery, the wife of Benj., and three eldest children of Mary, my daughter, the wife of Israel Cole, viz:—James Rogers, Mary Cole and Abigail Yates; (that is to say) the sd. children of my sd. daughter shall have (with the ten shillings which she is to have) one share or equal portion with ye rest of my sd. children, which shall be equally divided among them. And I do also hereby constitute, make and ordain my two sons Samuel Paine & Thomas Paine, to be ye Executors of this my last Will and Testament, & I do hereby utterly disallow, revoke and disannul all and every other former Testament & Will, land bequest & executors, by me in any way before named willed & bequeathed.

Ratifying & confirming this, and no other, to be my last Will & Testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal, ye day and year above written.

THOMAS PAINE (L. S.)

Signed, sealed, published, pronounced
and declared by the said Thomas Paine
as his last Will and Testament, in ye
presence of us, the subscribers,
his
JOHN x ROGERS,
mark.
JOHN ROGERS, JR.,
ELEAZAR ROGERS.

Mr. Paine's will was presented for probate and proved upon Oct. 2, 1706, and letters testamentary were then granted to the executors named therein.

It is supposed that Mr. Paine conveyed much of his real estate by deeds to his children before his death; but it is now impossible to tell to what extent he made such gifts because all the record books of deeds in Barnstable County were destroyed by fire in 1827. A deed of gift of meadow from him to his son Thomas, written in his own handwriting, and made in 1684, witnessed by his sons James and Nicholas, is still extant.

There is no list of the children of Thomas and Mary Paine in the Eastham book of records. Records of vital statistics were not required by law in those days. The Plymouth Colony records give them one child, named on the books "Eliezar," born March 10, 1658. Nothing further appears of such a child on any record, and it is probable that Elisha was the one intended, and that the Colonial Secretary or the Clerk of Eastham erred in writing out the name.

THIRD GENERATION

3. ELISHA[3] PAINE (Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]), was born at Eastham, in the Colony of Massachusetts, probably, March 10, 1658, and died at Canterbury in the Colony of Connecticut, Feb. 7, 1735-6. He married at Eastham, Jan. 5, 1685, Rebekah Doane, who was born at Eastham, May 12, 1668, and died at Canterbury, Dec. 19, 1758. She was a daughter of John and Hannah (Bangs) Doane of Eastham. (See Doane Family. Appendix.)

Children:

i. ABIGAIL,[4] b. at Eastham, Jan. 5, 1686, and d. at Canterbury, Aug. 26, 1762; m., at Canterbury, Oct. 7, 1710, Josiah Cleveland of Canterbury. He was son of Josiah and Mary (Bates) Cleveland, and was b. at Chelmsford, Mass., Oct. 7, 1690, and d. at Canterbury, Feb. 9, (20, o. s.), 1762. They united with the first church there in 1713, and afterwards became Separatists. When Mr. Cleveland died he left funds to the Separate Church. Among their children was Colonel Aaron Cleveland, who married Thankful, daughter of Rev. Elisha Paine, (*post*), and rendered distinguished service in the Revolution. One of the sons of Colonel Aaron and Thankful (Paine) Cleveland, was Moses Cleveland, founder of Cleveland, Ohio.

4 ii. ABRAHAM, b. and bap. at Barnstable in the Colony of Massachusetts, 1691.

iii. ELISHA, b. at Eastham, Dec. 29, 1693; d. at Bridgehampton, Long Island, Aug. 26, 1775.

Elisha Paine (junior) became a lawyer and rose to distinction, in his time being considered "one of the greatest in Connecticut." He was always interested in religious matters, and when about fifty years of age offered himself for examination to become ordained as a clergyman. The committee to whom he was referred were satisfied with his preparation and directed him to apply for a license to the "Committee of the Association." The latter did not meet at the time appointed, and Paine waited no longer, but began preaching as an itinerant. He was arrested for preaching without a license, refused to give bond and was thrown into prison. After his release from incarceration, which was held unlawful, he entered upon a series of extended tours of Connecticut and Massachusetts, including Eastham and the Cape towns. He founded a Separate Church at Harwich in 1749, which afterwards became a Baptist Church. He and his brother Solomon became leaders of the Separatist movement in New England. Finally he became settled as pastor of the church at Bridgehampton, Long Island, in May, 1752, where he continued in that office until his death.

Mr. Paine married Mary Johnson of Canterbury, Nov. 24, 1720, and had a number of children, among whom was Major-General Elisha Payne, who graduated at Yale in 1750, practiced law in Canterbury, became an original proprietor of Orange, New Hampshire, and went to the first Continental Congress as counsel to the delegates from New Hampshire. He afterwards served as Lieutenant-Governor of New Hampshire, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of that state, trustee of Dartmouth College, 1774 to 1801, and treasurer of the college, 1779 and 1780.

Rev.
dau of Elisha

iv. MARY, b. in Eastham, Feb. 1, 1695-6; m. at Canterbury, April 5, 1722, Robert Freeman, son of Constant and Jane (Treat) Freeman of Truro in the Colony of Massachusetts. (See Freeman Family. Appendix.) Their daughter Rebekah became the wife of her first cousin, Rev. Abraham[5] Paine (Abraham,[4] Elisha,[3] Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]).

v. SOLOMON, b. in Eastham, May 16, 1698, and d. in Canterbury, Oct. 25, 1754. He m. at Canterbury, March 2, 1720, Mary Carver. She d. Aug. 9, 1731, at Canterbury. He m. (2d) at Canterbury, May 31, 1732, Priscilla Fitch. She d. May 6, 1782, at Canterbury.

Mr. Paine joined the First Church in Canterbury in 1721. He became deeply interested in the great religious movement in Windham County which took place about 1741 and took a prominent part therein. Upon the organization of the Separate Church in Canterbury, he accepted the call to become the pastor, and was ordained Sept. 10, 1746. His ministry was very satisfactory, and he was held in high esteem by all the Separate clergy of his time. He was equally as determined and unyielding as his brother Elisha, but not so able a preacher. He published "*A short view of the Constitution of the Church of Christ, and the difference between it and the Church Established in Connecticut.*" There is much concerning the religious leadership of Reverend Solomon Paine and his brother Elisha in Miss Larned's *History of Windham County.*

vi. DORCAS, b. in Eastham, Feb. 20, 1699-1700, and d. at Canterbury, March 3, 1745-6. She m. David Adams at Canterbury, Aug. 27, 1723, and had a number of children.

vii. CONSTANCE, b. at Canterbury, Feb. 17, 1704-5; d. at Amenia, N. Y., May 15, 1787. She m. (1st) William Baker; (2d) her cousin, Joshua Paine, at Canterbury, Jan. 6, 1736-7. Mr. Paine was a son of Thomas^3 and Hannah (Shaw) Paine of Truro in the Colony of Massachusetts, and was b. at that place, Aug. 28, 1697. He d. at Amenia, N. Y., March 10, 1775. Mr. Paine was a man of note, and both he and his wife Constance were zealous Separatists.

viii. REBEKAH, b. in Canterbury, and died there, Feb., 1784. She m. at Kingston, in the Colony of Rhode Island, April 17, 1716, Edward Cleveland. Mr. Cleveland was b. at North Kingston in the Colony of Rhode Island, Feb., 1686, son of Edward and Deliverance (Palmer) Cleveland, and d. at Canterbury, Nov. 3, 1771. He was a cousin of Josiah Cleveland, who m. his wife's sister Abigail.

ix. HANNAH, b. in Canterbury; m. a Watts.

x. JOHN, b. in Canterbury, July, 1707; m. at Canterbury, Feb. 12, 1730, Sarah Church of that place. He united with the Canterbury Church in 1731. When the New Light or Separatist movement came, Mr. Paine sided with the Separatists and finally became pastor of the Separate Church in that part of Rehoboth which is now Seekonk, Rhode Island. He was ordained Aug. 3, 1748. Later he was a member of the Council convened at Harwich in the Colony of Massachusetts to ordain Joshua Nickerson, pastor of the Separate Church there, and gave the "right hand of fellowship." The same year with the Separatists he petitioned the Provincial Legislature of Massachusetts to allow no distinction between any classes of Christians in supporting public worship. He and one Samuel Peck took lead in the matter, but were unsuccessful. He was a rigid disciplinarian, and had trouble with members of his congregation on that ground.

Elisha Paine lived in Eastham until about 1688, when he went to Barnstable. In 1689 he and ten citizens of that town were granted a number of acres of land at Goodspeed's River, and the benefit of the stream forever, on condition of "setting up a fulling mill on that river," and maintaining "the same twenty years, and full and dress the town's cloth on reasonable terms." His residence in Barnstable was not long, for he was back in Eastham in 1693.

About the year 1699 his attention was turned to new lands being settled within the boundaries of the Colony of Connecticut. The "Quinebaug Country" was the name given to the region on both sides of the Quinebaug River in the County of Windham, where the famous Major James Fitch settled in 1697, erecting the first permanent habitation in what is now Canterbury. The Indian name of the place was Peaqscomswek. Major Fitch had bought vast tracts in this region from the Indians, and was famous for his land operations. He named his plantation "Kent." Here came Elisha Paine and his family about the spring of 1700, he having purchased two thousand acres from Major Fitch. The Adamses, Clevelands and Johnsons were other early settlers, all of them families afterwards related in marriage with the Paines. Here Mr. Paine established himself as a planter, becoming a man of affluence and prominence in the Colony.

Agitation immediately began for the creation of a separate town for the inhabitants on the west side of the Quinebaug, where Paine and Fitch were living. An agreement was drawn to that effect with those living on the east side of the river, dated Dec. 24, 1702, and pursuant thereto a committee consisting of Elisha Paine and five others petitioned the General Assembly of Connecticut on May 13, 1703, for the erection of a separate town. In October of the same year, the legislature created the town and bestowed the name Canterbury upon it. Miss Larned, in her history of Windham County, says of Canterbury at this period:

"Canterbury, when endowed with town privileges, October, 1703, had but few inhabitants—only ten west-side residents signing the Articles of Separation—but their character and circumstance made amends for the smallness of their number. Most of them were men of means and position, accustomed to the management of public affairs and well fitted to initiate and carry on the settlement of the new township. Major Fitch, as 'lord-proprietor' of much of the land, had probably the sole sway for a time, but Elisha Paine, the Adamses, Clevelands and Johnsons were men of energy and public spirit and soon assumed the reins of government. Their residences were in the east of the town overlooking the Quinebaug Valley."

From this time until his death, Elisha Paine was constantly in public life. He was the first town clerk, and as such exercised the powers of a justice of the peace. Mr. Paine and Major Fitch appeared before the General Assembly in 1705 on the boundary disputes, which Canterbury had with its neighbors and again in 1706. Elisha Paine was selectman during many terms, and with a colleague represented his town in the General Assembly of the Colony almost continuously from 1711 until 1734.

Upon the establishment of the church in Canterbury on June 13, 1711, the Reverend Samuel Estabrook, Harvard, 1696, who had been preaching there several years, Elisha Paine and five others signed the Covenant and were recognized as the "seven pillars" or constituent members of the church.

Elisha Paine and Samuel Adams, while representatives of Canterbury in the General Assembly in 1711, secured the appointment of a committee to settle division of lands. This was not completed, however, for several years. When it was done, those heading the list to receive one and one-half shares as "first settlers and planters" were Major James Fitch and Mr. Elisha Paine.

There was much border warfare between the neighboring towns of Plainfield and Canterbury. Miss Larned also notes in her *History of Windham County:*

"Nor were her (Canterbury's) settlers always at peace among themselves or obedient to the wholesome laws of the Colony. Even such prominent men and active church members as Elisha Paine and Obadiah Johnson were not exemplary in behavior, the latter complaining 'that Paine had struck him with a club, knocked him down and thrown a hatchet at him.' The complaint was not sustained and Paine recovered cost of prosecution."

An interesting commentary on the life of the times is the record that one Jabez Utter, the first white inhabitant of the neighboring town of Mortlake, was convicted of horse-stealing, and after lying in prison for a time was allowed to work out his fine in service of Elisha Paine at the rate of eight pounds a year.

In the 5th generation Canterbury Paines & Freemans moved to Amenia & Hamilton NY, to Vermont & elsewhere

FOURTH GENERATION

4. **ABRAHAM[4] PAINE** (Elisha,[3] Thomas,[2] Thomas[1]) was born and baptized at Barnstable, in the Colony of Massachusetts in 1691, and died at Amenia, in the Colony of New York, March 20, 1770. He married at Canterbury, in the Colony of Connecticut, Dec. 19, 1718, Ruth Adams, who was born at Medfield, in the Colony of Massachusetts, Dec. 10, 1691, and died at Amenia, in the Colony of New York. She was a daughter of John and Michal (Bloyse) Adams of Canterbury. (See Adams Family. Appendix.)

Children:

i. **BETHIAH**, b. at Canterbury, Aug. 5, 1719; d. there May 25, 1720.
ii. **ABIGAIL**, b. at Canterbury, Dec. 27, 1720.
5 iii. **ABRAHAM**, b. at Canterbury, May 2, 1722.
iv. **THOMAS**, b. at Canterbury in 1724; d. at Cutchogue, Long Island, Oct. 15, 1766; m. Abigail, widow of Daniel Hull, and daughter of Joseph and Abigail (Parker) Wickham, Oct. 25, 1750 (o. s.). She d. March 12, 1791.

The Rev. Thomas Paine graduated at Yale College in 1748, and was licensed to preach by the Suffolk, L. I., Presbytery, Dec. 20, 1748. He at once commenced preaching at Cutchogue, L. I., and so continued until Oct. 15, 1750, when he was ordained and regularly installed pastor of the church. He remained pastor of the church until his death.

v. **BENJAMIN**, b. at Canterbury, March 29, 1726.
vi. **RUTH**, b. at Canterbury, April 4, 1728.
vii. **SAMUEL**, b. at Canterbury, Oct. 4, 1729.
viii. **JAMES**, b. at Canterbury, Nov. 11, 1737.

Abraham Paine went to the Colony of Connecticut with his father, and was therefore among the pioneers who settled Canterbury. He became a planter. At the time when final distribution of the public lands was made, Abraham Paine received one share, as a "proprietor under the patent" given by the General Assembly of Connecticut for the establishment of the Town of Canterbury. This distribution appears to have taken place about 1720. Mr. Paine and his wife became members of the Canterbury church in 1739. They very soon afterwards emigrated to Dutchess County in the Colony of New York, being the earliest settlers from New England in the region afterwards named Amenia, where they were residents about 1741.

One of the oldest deeds on the records of Amenia is one of 230 acres of land conveyed from Joel Gillet to Abraham Paine, "for one Hundred Pounds currant by Abraham Paine of Crum Elbow Precinct in Dutchess County," executed on the "21st day April in the nineteenth year of the Reign of our gracious Sovering George the Second of Great Britain france and Ireland King * * * Anno Domini 1746." This deed was not recorded, however, until May 23, 1769. Crum Elbow Precinct is one of the precincts into which Dutchess County was divided in the early part of the eighteenth century, when the region first began to be settled. It later became part of the town of Amenia.

Mr. Paine's settlement attracted many other people from New England, among them his cousin, Joshua Paine, who had married his sister Constance, his nephews Elisha Cleveland and Ichabod Paine, the latter a son of Mr. Paine's brother, the Rev. Solomon Paine.

The territory afterwards included in the town of Amenia is geographically divided into three valleys; and in the course of time after the settlement in each valley a church was organized. They were all of the same order as the established churches in New England, and were called indifferently Presbyterian or Congregational. There appear to have been preaching and church services conducted in the region by a hired preacher "before any organization was attempted, but the church first begun was started near the center of the town and was at first known as the Church of Christ in Carmel in the Nine Partners. It is now the Presbyterian Church of Amenia. It may be instructive to state that the "Nine Partners" was a name loosely applied to a large area including Amenia which at a previous time had

WC-SHS F851A5 R32

Re: Paine, etc. (New York)

These are descendants of Elisha, the
Canterbury CT pioneer, who probably
"led the way" for our Samuel Freeman
the great nephew who settled
in Sturbridge.

(Our Moses Averill also had some
connection to Amenia/Great Nine
Partners venture in VT—bought
Shares.)

EARLY
History of Amenia,

(New York)

BY

NEWTON REED.

◆

AMENIA, N. Y.:
DE LACEY & WILEY, PRINTERS.
1875.

institutions of religion, and united in that form of christian fellowship, which indicated their love of freedom, and which was the model of the then future free institutions of our country.

The Republican form of ecclesiastical government, adopted by so many of the churches in America, was not patterned after the form of the civil government of this country, which is much more recent. It seems more proper to say that the form of church government was the model of our civil government. It is consistent with the teachings of history to say that the adoption of a republican form of ecclesiastical government by the churches at the time of the Reformation in France, Switzerland, Holland, Scotland, and partly in England, prepared the people for choosing the same form of government for the State.

The germ of American liberty was in the Reformation.

THE RED MEETING HOUSE.

The territory afterwards included in the town of Amenia, being geographically divided into three principal valleys, there were three congregations organized for public worship, and they were all of the same order, Presbyterian,[*] or Congregational. The oldest—so far as recorded—of these churches was organized near the centre of the town, when in May, 1748, Abraham Paine[†] and Gardiner Gillett entered into covenant, "The Lord having thus begun to build his church here." In July, 1749, ''Sixteen souls more were gathered into church fellowship." They called the name of the church "Carmel, in the Nine Partners." In 1750, June 14, Abraham

---

[*] The term "Presbyterian" was then often applied to a Congregational church.

[†] Mr. Paine speaks of himself as "Abraham Paine, son of Elisha Paine, of Canterbury, Conn." There is an account of these families in their alphabetical order.

Paine, Jun., "was set apart to the work of the ministry by solemn ordination by laying on the hands of the Presbytery, and by the power of the Holy Ghost." The ecclesiastical form of the church and the doctrines were agreeable to those in New England at that time, and the council called for the installation of Mr. Paine were from Connecticut. The day of the ordination was observed with solemn fasting.

Mr. Paine does not seem to have been educated in early life for the ministry, but was invested with the office to meet the immediate wants of a newly-organized congregation. One of the council at his ordination was his father's brother, Rev. Solomon Paine,[*] an eminent minister of Canterbury, Conn.

This society was instituted at a time when in New England the churches were agitated by the fiery zeal of the "New Lights," or "Separatists," and Mr. Paine, and a considerable portion of his church, were affected with their notions, which led to some disagreement between them and the more conservative of the congregation.

The Separatists were earnest and conscientious, but sometimes uncharitable and censorious, and their discipline took cognizance of the thoughts of the heart, which were confessed to one another, and were made the subject of censure and rebuke.[†]

The Separatists, or New Lights, differed from other Congregationalists, not in their *doctrines*; but in their claim to have obtained a new spiritual *Light*, and to have reached a higher spiritual *Life*. A spirit of uncharitableness was indulged, and they were accustomed

---

[*] Another brother of his father had been an eminent lawyer, and became a Separatist minister, and subjected himself for his irregularities in preaching to persecution.

[†] The record of a council of the church of the Red Meeting House, at which several members were subjected to discipline for various offences, especially "for the indulgence of an Antinomian and party spirit," says—"This solemn assembly continued from Wednesday morning in solemn fasting, lamentation, prayer and confession, from the rising of the morning tillthe stars appeared on Saturday night."

several years at Amenia Union, where he had married a daughter of Capt. Garret Winegar.

Hon. Egbert Benson, in a Memoir read before the N. Y. Historical Society,[*] in 1816, says "Vermont—*green monntains*—and the town of Amenia—*pleasant*—owe their names to the fancy of Young, the poet. I mean the American, and not the English Young. He had a peculiar facility in making English words from Latin ones."

Dr. Young was the author of a poem,[†] called "The Conquest of Quebec," in which he gives an account of the provincial troops that were sent from the several towns to aid in that campaign under Wolfe, which resulted in the capture of Quebec. He was the friend of Ethan Allen,[‡] who resided in Salisbury,[§] Conn., while the former resided in Amenia, and they were often together, and they were also in sympathy in the violence of their patriotism and in their religious unbelief.

FIRST TOWN MEETING.

The record of the first town meeting is this :—"At the Annual Town Meeting of the Freeholders and Inhabitants of the Precinct of Amenia, on the first Tuesday of April, Anno Domini 1762, at the house[‖] of Ros-

well Hopkins, Esq., Michael Hopkins was chosen Clerk of said Precinct, and Capt. Stephen Hopkins was chosen Supervisor.

Samuel Doty and Jonathan Reynolds were chosen Assessors for the year ensuing.

Benjamin Benedict, Abraham Paine, and Moses Barlow were chosen Overseers of the Poor.

Conrad Winegar was chosen Collector and Constable.

Samuel Shepherd, Rufus Herrick, and Ichabod Rogers were chosen Constables.

Thomas Wolcott and Jonathan Reynolds were chosen Pound Keepers.

Captain Stephen Hopkins and Samuel King were chosen to take Inventories of Intestate Estates for the year ensuing.

Miles Washburn, Benjamin Benedict, and Roswell Hopkins were chosen Fence Viewers for the year ensuing.

Thomas Wolcott, John Beebe, Joseph Pennoyer, Philip Pitts, Samuel Shepherd, William Barker, William Roberts, Edmund Perlee, Moses Harris and Job Milk were chosen Overseers of Highways.

Also voted that a Fence, four feet and four inches high, well-wrought and substantial, shall be deemed lawful."

In 1763, Edmund Perlee was chosen Supervisor.

In 1764, 1765 and 1766, Stephen Hopkins was chosen Supervisor.

In 1767, Edmund Perlee was chosen.

In 1768 and 1769, Ephraim Paine was Supervisor.

In 1770, Abraham Bockee was chosen Moderator of the Town Meeting and Ephraim Paine was chosen Supervisor, and continued to 1776.

In 1776, Silas Marsh was chosen Supervisor, and in

---

[*] P. 126, N. Y. Hist. Collection, Vol. ii.

[†] Only a few lines of the poem are now known.

[‡] "Appendix to Early History of Vermont" says of Young. "He was highly distinguished as a philosopher, philanthropist and patriot, and for his erudition and brilliancy of imagination, Dr. Young is supposed to have died in Philadelphia in 1777, leaving in America two accomplished daughters.

[§] Ethan Allen was one of the three men who built the first blast furnace in Salisbury.

[‖] The place of the first Town Meeting, and of the subsequent Town Meetings for many years, was near where the Old Meeting House stood. The house of Roswell Hopkins stood near the Meeting House. The residence of his father, Capt. Stephen Hopkins, who was the first Supervisor, was further south towards the fair grounds, and was in later years reached by a lane from the highway. Mr. Henry Ingraham resided there several years. The Totten house, where W. P. Perlee lived, was built by one of the sons of Capt. Stephen Hopkins. The Town Meeting was held at Capt. Abiah Palmer's first in 1789. There was no highway east from Amenia. Where the turnpike now runs there was a swamp. There was a road running east and west across the hill north of Hiram Cooper's.

dent of South Amenia, among the earliest settlers. Isaac Osborn was a man of some reading and of unproductive ingenuity. His son, Melancthon, went into the war of 1812, and, it is said, was killed in the battle of Bladensburgh.

Capt. Nathan Osborn came into the south part of the town after the Revolutionary war. He was a Tory, for which his land in North Salem, Westchester county, had been confiscated; and he obstinately refused to take the necessary measures for its recovery, and died in poverty.

The family in the time of the war, like many others in Westchester, were several times robbed of their goods.

The Northrops were an important family in the town of Washington, and some of them were residents of Tower Hill, in the southwest part of Amenia. Enoch Northrop, from New England, was the father of Samuel, who settled on Tower Hill, on lands still held by the family. The sons of Samuel were William, Samuel, Benjamin, Nathan and John S. The burial place of the family is at Lithgow.

Abraham Paine,[*] son of Elisha Paine, of Canterbury, Conn., settled in Amenia 1741 or in 1742.

Joshua Paine, also of Canterbury, the father of Judge Paine and Barnabas Paine, Sen., Esq., came in 1749, and purchased in the east part of the town, on Lot 59 of the Oblong. He was a farmer and blacksmith.

Joshua Paine was nephew of Elisha Paine, of Canterbury, and cousin of Abraham mentioned above. All the Paines of Amenia and Northeast are descendants of Elisha or Joshua mentioned. Ichabod Paine was son of Rev. Solomon Paine, of Canterbury, and grandson of

---

[*] Abraham Paine took the first steps towards the organization of a church,

Elisha. They were all descendants of Thomas Paine,[*] who came to Plymouth from England in 1621. Ichabod Paine and Ichabod Paine Jun., lived many years north of Wassaic, on the farm afterwards owned by Leman Cook.

Hon. Ephraim Paine was apprenticed in his youth to a farmer, whom he served with most exemplary fidelity. After the termination of his apprenticeship he made a voyage for trade to the West Indies and to Cape Sable, which gave him the means of a settlement in life, when he came to Amenia in 1753. The house which Judge Paine built for himself, lately the residence of Milton Hoag, is still standing (1875), by the turnpike, west of the gate. The land he purchased of Timothy Mead in 1772.[†]

Barnabas Paine,[‡] Esq., father of Barnabas, Jun., and of Mrs. Bennet, of Canaan, Conn., lived where his son continued to reside, which is the place now occupied by Stoughton Moore. He had a knowledge of medicine, and was called Dr. Paine.

Elijah Park and Ebenezer Park, brothers, came to Amenia from Rhode Island in 1768. Their ancestors had emigrated from England in 1635, going first to Maryland, and thence to Rhode Island. Their residence in Amenia was near the ore bed at Sharon Station, called the "Park ore bed."

Ebenezer Park removed to Binghamton. Elijah Park, who was a public-spirited citizen, died in 1795, and his son, Elijah B. Park, and his daughters, Louisa

---

[*] Josiah Paine, of Harwich, Mass., has compiled a genealogy of the posterity of Thomas Paine, of Eastham, the immigrant mentioned in the text. Abraham Paine, Rev. Solomon Paine, and Joshua Paine were great-grandsons of Thomas, the immigrant.

[†] Judge Paine sometimes preached in the absence of a minister. There is a reference in the old church record of some disagreemant between Judge Paine and his pastor. It grew out of no censurable conduct, but out of a disagreement in biblical exposition too positively stated.

[‡] Barnabas Paine in a few instances spelled his name, "Payen."

History of Windham County, Connecticut (Town of Canterbury section) by Bayles (1889)

F-846 W4 B35 W1-5HS

tered limits, and so continued until October, 1703, when that township was divided, and the part of it which lay on the west side of the Quinebaug river was incorporated with the name of Canterbury. The distance of this town from Hartford is forty miles; from New Haven, sixty-four miles. The town is well watered by streams running down from north through much of the town to join the Quinebaug on the eastern boundary. But beyond two or three small saw mills and the grist mill of Messrs. J. & P. Williams, the water privileges which these streams afford are not improved in this town. Besides these branches, the business concerns of the town number two or three country stores, and as many blacksmith shops, carriage and wagon manufactories, and one or two cider mills. The importance of Canterbury seems to lie mainly in the past and in the future, not much in the present.

The first inhabitants west of the Quinebaug were probably the tenants of Peagscomsuck. Rowland Jones, who purchased in 1691 four hundred acres of land on what is still Rowland's brook, was one of the first settlers here. Thomas Brooks and Obadiah Johnson also settled west of the Quinebaug, but little progress was made till 1697, when Major Fitch, with his family removed thither, digging the first cellar and erecting the first permanent habitation in what is now the township of Canterbury. With hundreds of farms and many thousand acres at his disposal, he selected for his residence a neck of land partially enclosed by a bend in the Quinebaug river, below the river island Peagscomsuck, which gave its name to the settlement. At the time of his removal hither Major Fitch was a little past middle age, and had been for many years one of the most prominent men in Connecticut. From early manhood he had been actively employed in civil and military affairs—helped to re-establish colonial government after the revolution of 1689; was appointed assistant in 1690; was appointed sergeant major of New London county in 1696; served as boundary commissioner and land reviser; led military expeditions, manned forts, guarded the frontier, and exercised jurisdiction over the Mohegans and all their lands and interests. After the death of his first wife—a daughter of Captain John Mason—he married Al e Bradford, widow of Reverend William Adams, of Dedham and mother of Mrs. Whiting, of Windham. Nine sons and daughters accompanied him to his new home here, and soon the Indian "neck" became an attractive family seat. The social position of Major Fitch, and his wide business relations, drew many people around him, and his plantation at once became a place of no small consequence—a rendezvous for land traders, civil and military officials and hordes of idle Indians. Here courts were held, military expeditions organized, and many thousand acres of land bartered away. It was the first, and long the only, settlement between Norwich and Woodstock, extending its hospitalities and accommodations to many a weary traveler. The expedition that marched to the relief of Woodstock in 1699 passed the night, both in going and returning, "at Major Fitch's farm in Peagscomsuck." A road was soon laid out from Windham to this noted establishment, and connecting with Greenwich path, formed the great thoroughfare to Providence. Kent was the name given by the major to his plantation, but the Indian appellation persistently adhered to it.

Other settlers soon followed Major Fitch. Samuel Adams, ✓ from Chelmsford; Elisha Paine, from Eastham; Obadiah and William Johnson, Samuel and Josiah Cleveland, from Woburn; Thomas Brooks, Rowland Jones and Robert Green, all settled west of the Quinebaug. To encourage these settlers, Owaneco, in 1698, made over to Major James Fitch, Josiah Cleveland and Jabez Utter, the land between the Quinebaug and Appaquage rivers, extending eight and a half miles north of Norwich north line—except those lands formerly granted to Major Fitch, Solomon and Daniel Tracy and Richard Bushnell—"in trust for yᵉ inhabitants now dwelling in the plantation of Quinebauge, they bearing their proportion of charge, to wit: Thomas Brooks, Obadiah Johnson, Samuel Cleveland, Robert Green, Rowland Jones and Major Fitch. The above are on the west side of Quinebaug; the intention is to promote plantation work." This conveyance did not prevent Owaneco's selling the same land to *other* settlers at every opportunity. Indeed, some tracts were sold to three or four purchasers by this "flexible" and unscrupulous chieftain. In 1699 Owaneco sold to Obadiah Johnson and Samuel Adams all the south part of the tract west of the Quinebaug not previously appropriated. Elisha Paine bought two ✓ thousand acres in the south of the tract from Major Fitch. Tixhall Ensworth, of Hartford, also settled on land bought of Fitch. Josiah Cleveland bought land at Wanungatuck, "both sides of Tadneck Hill," of Richard Bushnell; Solomon Tracy, Jr., took possession of the land owned by his father.

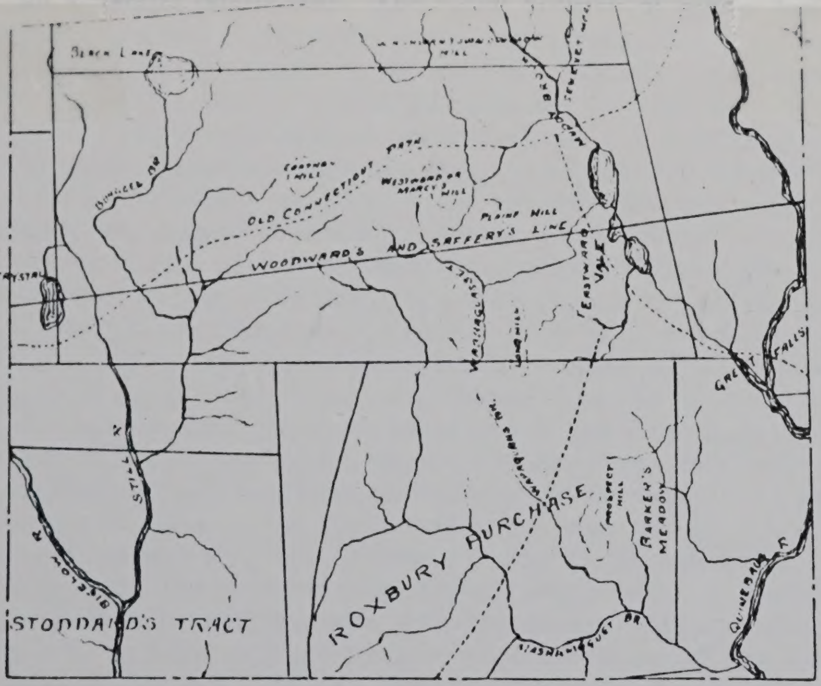
History of Windham County, Connecticut
(Town of Canterbury section)
by Bayles (1889)

F-846 W4 B35 W1-545

tered limits, and so continued until October, 1703, when that township was divided, and the part of it which lay on the west side of the Quinebaug river was incorporated with the name of Canterbury. The distance of this town from Hartford is forty miles; from New Haven, sixty-four miles. The town is well watered by streams running down from north through much of the town to join the Quinebaug on the eastern boundary. But beyond two or three small saw mills and the grist mill of Messrs. J. & P. Williams, the water privileges which these streams afford are not improved in this town. Besides these branches, the business concerns of the town number two or three country stores, and as many blacksmith shops, carriage and wagon manufactories, and one or two cider mills. The importance of Canterbury seems to lie mainly in the past and in the future, not much in the present.

The first inhabitants west of the Quinebaug were probably the tenants of Peagscomsuck. Rowland Jones, who purchased in 1691 four hundred acres of land on what is still Rowland's brook, was one of the first settlers here. Thomas Brooks and Obadiah Johnson also settled west of the Quinebaug, but little progress was made till 1697, when Major Fitch, with his family removed thither, digging the first cellar and erecting the first permanent habitation in what is now the township of Canterbury. With hundreds of farms and many thousand acres at his disposal, he selected for his residence a neck of land partially enclosed by a bend in the Quinebaug river, below the river island Peagscomsuck, which gave its name to the settlement. At the time of his removal hither Major Fitch was a little past middle age, and had been for many years one of the most prominent men in Connecticut. From early manhood he had been actively employed in civil and military affairs—helped to re-establish colonial government after the revolution of 1689; was appointed assistant in 1690; was appointed sergeant major of New London county in 1696; served as boundary commissioner and land reviser; led military expeditions, manned forts, guarded the frontier, and exercised jurisdiction over the Mohegans and all their lands and interests. After the death of his first wife—a daughter of Captain John Mason—he married Alice Bradford, widow of Reverend William Adams, of Dedham and mother of Mrs. Whiting, of Windham. Nine sons and daughters accompanied him to his new home here, and soon the Indian "neck" became an attractive family seat. The social position of Major Fitch, and his wide business relations, drew many people around him, and his plantation at once became a place of no small consequence—a rendezvous for land traders, civil and military officials and hordes of idle Indians. Here courts were held, military expeditions organized, and many thousand acres of land bartered away. It was the first, and long the only, settlement between Norwich and Woodstock, extending its hospitalities and accommodations to many a weary traveler. The expedition that marched to the relief of Woodstock in 1699 passed the night, both in going and returning, "at Major Fitch's farm in Peagscomsuck." A road was soon laid out from Windham to this noted establishment, and connecting with Greenwich path, formed the great thoroughfare to Providence. Kent was the name given by the major to his plantation, but the Indian appellation persistently adhered to it.

Other settlers soon followed Major Fitch. Samuel Adams, from Chelmsford; Elisha Paine, from Eastham; Obadiah and William Johnson, Samuel and Josiah Cleveland, from Woburn; Thomas Brooks, Rowland Jones and Robert Green, all settled west of the Quinebaug. To encourage these settlers, Owaneco, in 1698, made over to Major James Fitch, Josiah Cleveland and Jabez Utter, the land between the Quinebaug and Appaquage rivers, extending eight and a half miles north of Norwich north line—except those lands formerly granted to Major Fitch, Solomon and Daniel Tracy and Richard Bushnell—"in trust for yͤ inhabitants now dwelling in the plantation of Quinebauge, they bearing their proportion of charge, to wit: Thomas Brooks, Obadiah Johnson, Samuel Cleveland, Robert Green, Rowland Jones and Major Fitch. The above are on the west side of Quinebaug; the intention is to promote plantation work." This conveyance did not prevent Owaneco's selling the same land to *other* settlers at every opportunity. Indeed, some tracts were sold to three or four purchasers by this "flexible" and unscrupulous chieftain. In 1699 Owaneco sold to Obadiah Johnson and Samuel Adams all the south part of the tract west of the Quinebaug not previously appropriated. Elisha Paine bought two thousand acres in the south of the tract from Major Fitch. Tixhall Ensworth, of Hartford, also settled on land bought of Fitch. Josiah Cleveland bought land at Wanungatuck, "both sides of Tadneck Hill," of Richard Bushnell; Solomon Tracy, Jr., took possession of the land owned by his father.



WOODSTOCK
From a portion of Map of "Ancient Windham County" [2]

PAINE, REV. ELISHA, b. Eastham,MA
29 Dec 1693, son of Elisha and
Rebecca (Doane) Paine, imprisoned
1743 in CT for preaching without
authority; Bapt. min., said to have
founded the First Bapt. Chr. at
Harwich,MA 1749; sett.Riverhead,L.I.
NY (Separatist Chr.of Southold) 26
May 1758.

p. 358. Pedigrees of Descendents of
The Colonial Clergy (1976) (CS69S57)

over
Samuel Freeman 4 of Stockbridge's distant cousin
through his mother, a Paine

---

debts. Woodstock's defiance was typical of her own attitude, and also typical of the growing spirit of insubordination in the Province. Many times Woodstock was indicted by the Grand Jury of Worcester County for not keeping the Grammar School according to law, and for neglecting the pound. Private citizens were arraigned on numerous offenses, the most common of which were "breaking in upon the Seventh Commandment," having "green deer skins in possession" and "absence from public worship.[1]" Occasional offenses were "foolish talking and jesting" and "concealing stolen goods and horribly lying about them." A charge was brought before the church by Capt. William Chandler against a negress, Mercer, for spreading the story that he had tried to poison her. At the "large hearing" Mercer insisted that a dram of rum given her by Capt. Chandler had sickened her and on the night before she had taken the poisoned rum the voice of God spoke to her: "Gird up your loins; I am with you." As tangible proof was lacking Mercer was suspended.

In February 1738 the Church issued a statement in which it reserved the right to discipline persons baptized. The Great Revival of 1740 left few traces in Woodstock. In the outlying districts, however, the spirit of revival was rampant. John Cleveland [2] of Canterbury, afterwards very prominent in the Revival movement, spent his college vacation at Woodstock with his sister Mrs. Joseph Morse and "had a great contest" with his brother-in-law "concerning the worship of God." Again, he "went to see John Morse [3] at Joshua Chandler's, where they sang a hymn." Elisha Paine, the Separate preacher, conducted a service in John Morse's house, and was arrested on a warrant from Judge Chandler for preaching without a license. Paine was sentenced to three months in the Worcester jail, "in the dirtiest prison he ever saw."

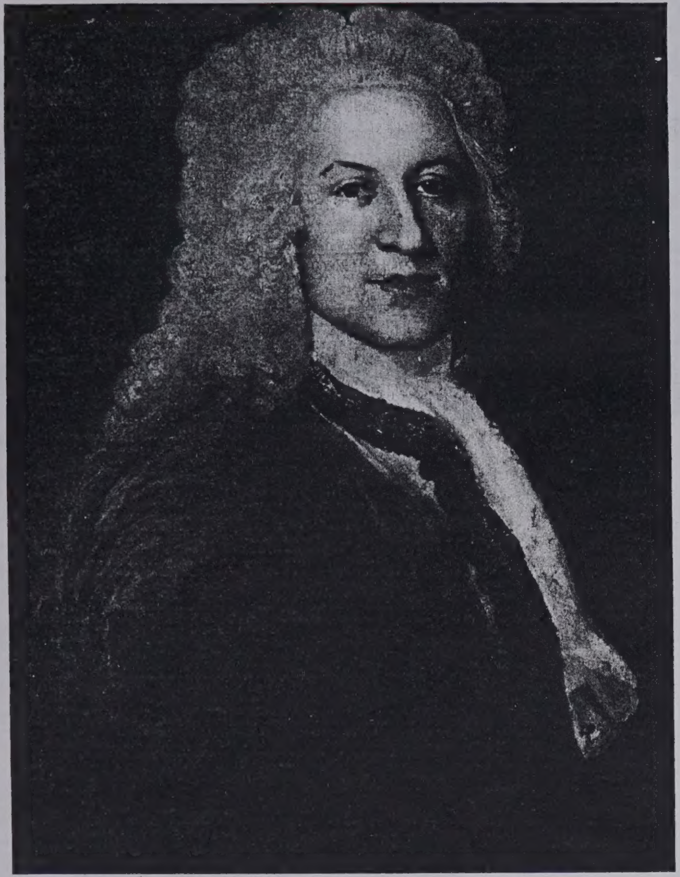
---

[1] "David Sanger of Woodstock, husbandman, appeared in Court to answer to his presentment by ye grand jurors for absenting himself from ye public services of God, etc. To ye presentment he made excuse and was dismissed paying cost." (Court Records, Worcester, Mass., 1737).

[2] M.A. Hon. Dartmouth 1782; born Canterbury April 11, 1722, died Ipswich, Mass., April 22, 1799, was in class of 1745 at Yale with Thomas Bradbury Chandler, D.D., of Woodstock, and his name appears with his class among list of graduates though he did not receive his B.A. degree till 1763, when he also received his M.A. degree. See page 304 (text and footnote).

[3] Father of Deacon Jedidiah and John Morse Jr., and brother of Joseph Morse. See pages 279, 303, 304.

Frizzel, of the First Company; John May, Edward Morris Joseph Lyon, officers of the Second Company; Benjamin l, Isaiah Tiffany and Daniel Paine, officers of the Troop



Jonathan Belcher 1682–1757, Harvard College 1699

Royal Governor Massachusetts and New Hampshire 1730–1741, Governor New Jersey 1746–1757. Gave Library to College of New Jersey (Princeton University).

Painted in London, 1729 by Francis Liopold[2]

Owner: Massachusetts Historical Society Boston

pany.[1] The Land Bank Company was condemned by Act arliament. After a brief career it failed, leaving heavy

debts. Woodstock's defiance was typical of her own attitude, and also typical of the growing spirit of insubordination in the Province. Many times Woodstock was indicted by the Grand Jury of Worcester County for not keeping the Grammar School according to law, and for neglecting the pound. Private citizens were arraigned on numerous offenses, the most common of which were "breaking in upon the Seventh Commandment," having "green deer skins in possession" and "absence from public worship.[1]" Occasional offenses were "foolish talking and jesting" and "concealing stolen goods and horribly lying about them." A charge was brought before the church by Capt. William Chandler against a negress, Mercer, for spreading the story that he had tried to poison her. At the "large hearing" Mercer insisted that a dram of rum given her by Capt. Chandler had sickened her and on the night before she had taken the poisoned rum the voice of God spoke to her: "Gird up your loins; I am with you." As tangible proof was lacking Mercer was suspended.

In February 1738 the Church issued a statement in which it reserved the right to discipline persons baptized. The Great Revival of 1740 left few traces in Woodstock. In the outlying districts, however, the spirit of revival was rampant. John Cleveland [2] of Canterbury, afterwards very prominent in the Revival movement, spent his college vacation at Woodstock with his sister Mrs. Joseph Morse and "had a great contest" with his brother-in-law "concerning the worship of God." Again, he "went to see John Morse [3] at Joshua Chandler's, where they sang a hymn." Elisha Paine, the Separate preacher, conducted a service in John Morse's house, and was arrested on a warrant from Judge Chandler for preaching without a license. Paine was sentenced to three months in the Worcester jail, "in the dirtiest prison he ever saw." ✓

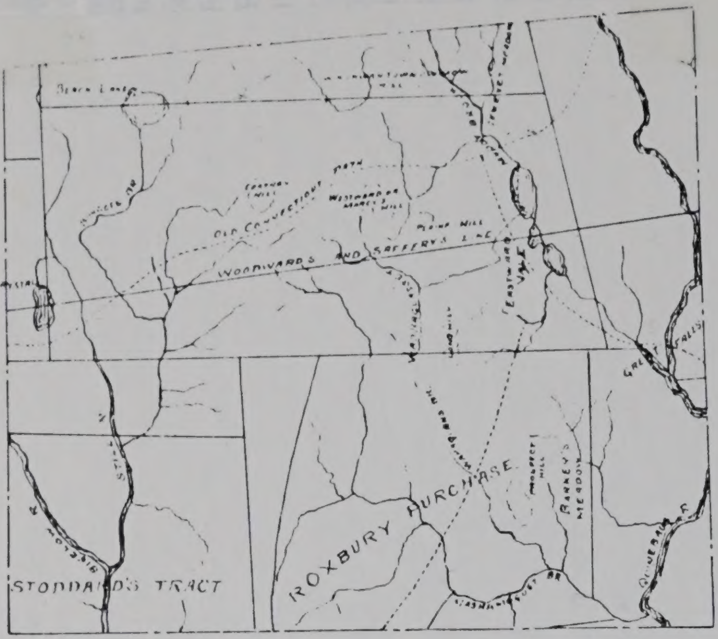
The letter of resignation, published with Comments in the *Boston Gazette* and *New England Journal*, was addressed to Judge Chandler as Colonel of the Regiment, and dated Decem-, 1740. Capt. Samuel was one of Judge Chandler's sons.

"François Liopold, peintre à Nancy vers 1730, École Lorraine" (Dictionnaire des Peintres, ure, etc. by E. Benezit).

[1] "David Sanger of Woodstock, husbandman, appeared in Court to answer to his presentment by ye grand jurors for absenting himself from ye public services of God, etc. To ye presentment he made excuse and was dismissed paying cost." (Court Records, Worcester, Mass., 1737).

[2] M.A. Hon. Dartmouth 1782; born Canterbury April 11, 1722, died Ipswich, Mass., April 22, 1799, was in class of 1745 at Yale with Thomas Bradbury Chandler, D.D., of Woodstock, and his name appears with his class among list of graduates though he did not receive his B.A. degree till 1763, when he also received his M.A. degree. See page 304 (text and footnote).

[3] Father of Deacon Jedidiah and John Morse Jr., and brother of Joseph Morse. See pages 279, 303, 304.


Black Lake
Old Connecticut Path
Woodwards and Saffery's Line
Plaine Hill
L Crystal
Great Falls
Stoddard's Tract
Roxbury Purchase
Prospect Hill
Barney's Meadow
Quinebaug R
Still R

Woodstock
From a portion of Map of "Ancient Windham County"[2]

PAINE, REV. ELISHA, b. Eastham,MA 29 Dec 1693, son of Elisha and Rebecca (Doane) Paine, imprisoned 1743 in CT for preaching without authority; Bapt. min., said to have founded the First Bapt. Chr. at Harwich,MA 1749; sett.Riverhead,L.I. NY (Separatist Chr.of Southold) 26 May 1758.

p. 358.

Clippings

Paine

Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620-1700
pg. clxxix Frank R Holmes

PAINE

The name originated from the Latin word *pagamus*, the intercedent of which was *paugus* or village. Some authorities claim it is from French *paon*, a peacock, also from *payne*, a pagan, unbaptized; a rustic.

ANTHONY, received as inhabitant at Portsmouth, R. I., 1638.

EDWARD, at Lynn, Mass., 1637; Charlestown, Mass., 1638, removed to Exeter or Dover, N. H., 1643, returned to England, 1649.

JAMES, at Newport, R. I., 1660.

JOHN, died at Middletown, Conn., 1681.

MOSES, freeman, Braintree, Mass., 1641.

PHILIP, married, New Haven, Conn., 1679.

ROBERT, treasurer of Essex County, Mass., b. County Suffolk, Eng., 1601, freeman Ipswich, Mass., 1641.

SAMUEL, resident Boston, Mass., 1670.

STEPHEN, came from Great Ellingham, County Norfolk, Eng., to Hingham, Mass., 1638, removed Rehoboth, Mass., 1645.

STEPHEN, married, Dedham, Mass., 1652.

STEPHEN, freeman at Charlestown, or Malden, Mass., 1665.

THOMAS, weaver, b. Eng. 1587, came from Wrentham, County Suffolk, Eng., to Salem, Mass., 1637.

✓ THOMAS, came to Plymouth, Mass., freeman Yarmouth, Mass., 1639, first deputy to the General Court from that town.

THOMAS, married, Boston, Mass., 1659.

THOMAS, swore allegiance York, Maine, 1680.

THOMAS, captain of a privateer, resident of Newport, R. I., 1683.

TOBIAS, came from Jamaica to Boston, Mass., where he married 1665.

WILLIAM, b. Eng. 1598, came from London, Eng., to Watertown, Mass., 1635, removed to Ipswich, Mass., died at Boston, Mass., 1660.

WILLIAM. shoemaker, b. Eng. 1620, came to Salem, Mass., 1635.

The Norman People pg 350

Pain. Robert Payen or Paganus, Normandy 1180, 1198 (MRS); Gilbert, John, &c. Pain, Engl. c. 1272 (RII). Hence the baronets Payne. ✓

Paine. *See* PAIN.

Founders of American Families — Meredith Colket pp 212-3

PAINE, PAYNE *Paine family records* 1880-83 (2 v in LC)

MOSES Cambridge (Mass.) 1638, Braintree, d 21 4 mo 1643. Gentleman. Pope; *Paine-Shepard* 1913; ner 65:290 (anc).

STEPHEN Came with family on "Diligent" 1638, Hingham (Mass.) 1638, Rehoboth 1641, bur 21 Aug 1699. Representative. Owner of sawmill. *Memorial of John Paine* 1914; *Samuel Paine Jr.* 1923; *James Payne* 1932 (pamph); Banks.

✓ THOMAS (Believed to be son of Thomas of Yarmouth), Eastham (Mass.) ca 1650, d there 16 Aug 1706. Deputy. Town treasurer. Clerk. *Robert Treat Paine* 1912; *Paynes of Hamilton* 1912; *Library of Cape Cod* no 70.

THOMAS Came with family on "Maryanne" 1637, Salem (Mass.) 1637, d there by 1644. Weaver on list. *Thomas Payne of Salem and descendants* 1928*.†

WILLIAM (Payne) Came on "Increase" with family 1635, Ipswich (Mass.) 1639, Watertown, d Boston 10 Oct 1660. Husbandman on list. Donor to Harvard College. Owned 3/4 Saugus iron works. *Paine genealogy, Ipswich branch* 1881; *Discovery of a grandmother, Ipswich-Paine* 1920; Wilbour, *Little Compton*; ner 69:251 (clue). Coat of arms enrolled 70.†

WILLIAM (Payne) New Haven (Conn.) 1640, d there 11 Jan 1683/4. Freeman. Constable. *Babcock* 1928 (biog); Smith-Hale; Jacobus, *New Haven*.

PAINE

12. **Snow,** Mary^3 (Constance^2 **Hopkins,** Stephen^1), born 1630 (?), Plymouth, died Eastham Apr. 28, 1704; married Thomas^2 ✓ **Paine** 1650 (?); born England, died Eastham, Aug. 16, 1706; probably son of Thomas^1 **Paine** who appears to have resided quite early in Yarmouth where he was a Deputy in 1639 to the Old Colony Court at Plymouth.

It is thought Thomas^2 was about ten years of age when brought over from England, but we know little about him previous to 1653, when he appears in Eastham, where he became a highly respected citizen, holding many public offices. He removed to Boston in 1695 for business reasons, but soon returned to Eastham. He was a builder of grist mills.

Thomas^2 was well educated, and a splendid penman. He wrote his name "Tho. Paine."

Mary was a good wife and mother. Her son Dea. John^3, states in his diary that she was "a careful mother," a "quiet neighbor" and a "diligent reader of God's Holy Word."

CHILDREN BORN EASTHAM

57. Mary, b. ; d. ; m. 1st James **Rogers;** m. 2nd Israel **Cole.**
58. Samuel, b. ; d. Oct. 13, 1712; m. Patience **Freeman.**
59. Thomas, b. 1656-7; d. June 23, 1721; m. 1st Hannah **Shaw;** m. 2nd Mrs. Elizabeth ( ) **Eairs.**
60. Eliezer, b. Mar. 10, 1658; d. young; m.
61. Elisha, b. ; d. Feb. 7, 1735-6; m. Rebecca **Doane.**
62. ✓ John, b. Mar. 14, 1660; d. Oct. 26, 1731; m. 1st Bennett **Freeman;** m. 2nd Alice **Mayo.**
63. Nicholas, b. ; d. 1733; m. Hannah **Higgins.**
64. James, b. July 6, 1665; d. Nov. 12, 1728; m. Bethia **Thatcher.**
65. Joseph, b. ; d. Oct. 1, 1712; m. Patience **Sparrow.**
66. Dorcas, b. ; d. Oct. 30, 1707; m. Benjamin **Vicherie.**

Ref. 130, 146, 129, 147, 132, 163.

Clippings

Pope's Pioneers of Massachusetts
(only the Thomases) - Paines

Thomas, of Wrentom, co. Suff, Eng., weaver, ae. 50, passed exam. May 10, 1637, to go to Salem in N. E., with wife Elizabeth, ae. 53, and children Thomas, John, Mary, Elizabeth, Dorothy and Sarah. Settled at Salem; propr. 1637. Son Thomas bound to Nich: Poore; suit in Es. Court in 1637.
Will dated 10 (2) 1638; inv. 10 (5) 1644; beq. to wife, son Thomas, dau. Mary, kinsman Henry Blomfield.

Thomas, Dedham, propr. 28 (9) 1640; with wife Rebecca adm. chh. 23 (2) 1641; frm. June 2, 1641. Ch. Rebecca b. 19 (7) 1642, Thomas b. 29 (1) 1644, John b. 27 (2) 1646, Elizabeth b. 6 (1) 1648.
Will dated 26 July, prob. Sept. 23, 1686, beq. to wife Rebecca; sons Thomas and John; son-in-law Thomas Patten on behalf of his wife Rebecca, dec.; gr. ch. Rebecca Patten; dau. Elizabeth Hunting. Inv. shows weaving implements, etc.

✓ Thomas, Yarmouth, inhabitant 1641; land confirmed 1648. Rem. to Eastham; townsman 1655, or earlier. Is perhaps the Thomas, mariner, whose widow Hannah admin. on his est. at Boston 29 July, 1667. [Reg. XVIII, 154.]

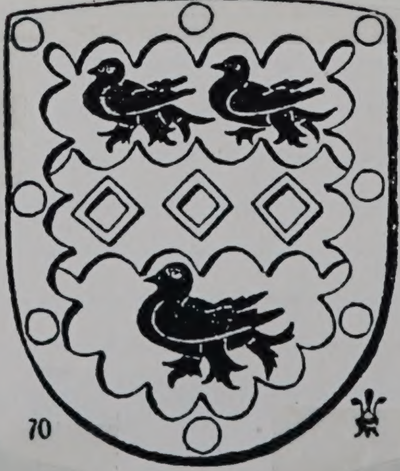
Thomas, son of Thomas Paine, of London, merchant, came to N. E. with his mother Jane, who had m. 2, Mr. Thomas Mahew; he chose them his guardians Oct. 14, 1647, being 15 years old and upwards. [Suff. De. I, 86.]

The arms below were those of
William Payne of Ipswich & Boston MA

Arms: silver on a fesse engrailed gules between two martlets, gold a border engrailed gules bezanty
Crest: A wolf's head erased azure charged with five bezants saltire wise
NEHGR — A Roll of Arms — #70

NOT OURS — Origin of our Paynes in England has not been found, though their status in America is very apparent & well-to-do.

Payne



Not ours →

PAYNE—BARON LAVINGTON,

By Letters Patent, dated 1 October, 1795.

A baronial Payne family — NOT OURS

Lineage.

Mr. Bertrand Payne, in his splendid *Armorial of Jersey*, gives a full pedigree of the ancient and distinguished family of Payne.

"In Jersey," says that accomplished writer, "amongst the primeval Norman settlers are found seigneurs and other high officials, whose names are written indifferently, Payen, Paien, and Payn. Hugh Payen, Valvasor and Jurat, is one of the first officers of the Royal Court of Jersey, on record, and from that period to the last century, the family has never lacked representatives in the church or state of its native island.

In the oldest record possessed of the King's tenants in Jersey, the *extente* of 1331, several entries occur of sundry names of the Payn family, proving it to have then been of consequence and wealth. In the subsequent *extentes*, also, several landowners named Payn, are recorded.

The number of fiefs held at various times by members of this house, is perhaps greater than has ever been possessed by any other family in the island of Jersey. At different periods they have been seigneurs of Oulande, la Godelière, Samarès, le Hommet, la Fosse, Burey, Ponterrin, Gruchy, Montfort, Diélament, les Cras, le Chastelet, Grainville, Quetivel, la Malletière, Sauteur, le Niesmes, the Fief Payn in St. Helier, the Fief Jourdain Payn in St. Laurence, and the Fief Guille Payn in St. Martin, which last alone remains, of all these immense possessions, "attached to its ancient owners."

Abraham Payne, *b.* 1616, son of Abraham Payn, constable of St. Martin, by Susan, his wife, dau. of Michael Sarre, seigneur of the fief of Guille Payn was some time constable of St. Martin., and emigrated with his son to the neighbouring coast of Devonshire, from causes, it is supposed, connected with the political troubles of the period. From him descended a family which rendered itself conspicuous by the zeal with which its members espoused the royalist side at the time of the Rebellion, and to which belonged Colonel Payne, who succoured, and was the host of Charles II., after the battle of Worcester. Its chief representative in the early part of the last century, emigrated to St. Christopher's, and there attaining wealth and influence, was rewarded with a baronetcy, an honour which was repeated in the person of another representative of this branch, while a third eminent member of the same family became a peer of the realm.

Ralph Payne, distinguished for his attachment to Charles I., early joined the royal standard, and was present at the battle of Worcester. He left issue,

Abraham.
Charles, created a baronet, 31 October, 1737.
Nathaniel, who left an only dau., who *m.* William Woodley, Esq., governor of the Leeward Islands.

The eldest son,

Abraham Payne, Esq., *m.* Anne, dau. of Ralph Willett, Esq. and was *s.* by his son,

Ralph Payne, Esq. This gentleman *m.* 1st, Alice, dau. and heir of Francis Carlisle, Esq., of Antigua, and had issue,

Ralph, created 1 October, 1795, Baron Lavington.
John.
Elizabeth.

He *m.* 2ndly, Miss Margaret Gallwey, by whom he had, with other issue,

Stephen, of Tofts Hall, Norfolk, who assumed the name and arms of Gallwey. His only dau. and heir, Charlotte, *m.* in 1797, John Moseley, Esq., of Glemham House, Suffolk, and was mother of an only dau., Charlotte, *m.* to Sir Joshua-R. Rowley, Bart., of Tendring Hall, Suffolk.
John, rear-admiral of the Red, appointed commander-in-chief of the squadron sent to conduct her . . .sty Queen Caroline to England, and *d. unm.*
William, created a baronet, 8 December, 1812, and assumed, by sign-manual, in 1814, the surname and arms of Gallwey, in compliance with the testamentary injunction of Tobias-Wall Gallwey, Esq., of the island of St. Christopher.
Martha. Lucretia.

The eldest son,

Sir Ralph Payne, K.B., was raised to the peerage of Ireland, 1 October, 1795, as Baron Lavington, *of Lavington*; but *d. s. p.* in 1807, when the title became extinct.

Arms—Gu., a fesse, between two lions passant, arg.

Burke's Extinct & Dormant Peerages

Judith, 400, a lib. allow. for s. John, to six ch. of Simon Eyre, dec. viz.: Benjamin, Mary, Rebecca, Christian, Ann, and Dorothy, £5 ea. and to Simon, wh. was older than most of them, £5. (from this I conject. as also from being fellow-passeng. that the w. of Eyre was sis. of this testator); to my sis. Page £3 per an. and to her ch. John, Samuel, Eliz. Mary, and Phebe, £5 ea.; to ch. of my sis. Hammond, John, Eliz. and Hannah, £5. ea.; to my kinswo. Eliz. d. of Samuel Howse, £10, to two ds. of my cous. John Tall, 40*s.* ea.; s.-in-law Samuel Appleton, £10.; William Howard, £15.; Jeremiah Belcher, 40*s.*; Anthony Stoddard, £10.; Christopher Clark, £10.; Joseph Taintor, £10.; Oliver Purchase, £10.; to an Ind. serv. 40*s.* yearly; to the free sch. at Ipswich his ld. at Jeffrys neck; to the coll. at Cambr. £20. as a stock forever, and to friends in the min. Norton, Wilson, Sherman, Brown, Cobbett, Fiske, Phillips, and Mayo, 40*s.* ea. WILLIAM, Salem, shoemaker, may be that passeng. in the Abigail, 1635, aged 15, and at S. to Eliz. perhaps his w. or mo. Felt says gr. of ld. was made 1640, and he was prob. the freem. of 1650, d. a. 1660. WILLIAM, New Haven 1667, perhaps br. of John, was freem. 1669. WILLIAM, Boston, s. of Tobias, by w. Mary had William, bapt. 24 Nov. 1695; Tobiah, 27 June 1697; and Sarah, 16 July 1699, at the 2d ch. that of the Mathers; but as he was next winter one of the found. of the Brattle st. ch. perhaps others were bapt. there. He d. 11 June 1735. Twenty of this name had been in 1827 gr. at Harv. and above half as many more at other N. E. coll. beside not a small number, spelling Payne; but I could not discrimin. the fams. and had it been in my power, there would have no benefit foll. because sev. have used both forms.

PAINE, ANTHONY, Portsmouth, R. I. rec. to be an inhab. 6 Dec. 1638, had w. Rose, who m. a Weeden, and may seem to have had fam. from his release, of 1650, to share of property of P. wh. d. a. 1640. ARTHUR, Portsmouth, R. I. 1655, in the list of freem. BENJAMIN, Bristol, youngest and fifth s. of the sec. Stephen of Rehoboth, d. in the spring of 1698, his will of 18 Apr. pro. 3 May foll. in that yr. giv. his est. to brs. and sis. shows he was unm. and for so young a man his inv. was large, but chief. it was deriv. from his f. and gr.f. EDWARD, Lynn 1637, Charlestown 1638, rem. prob. 1643 to Exeter or Dover, and bef. 1649 went home. ELISHA, Eastham, s. of Thomas of the same, m. ③ 21 Jan. 1687, Rebecca, d. of John Doane, had Abigail, b. 5 Jan. and bapt. 21 Oct. 1688; Elisha, b. 29 Dec. 1693; Mary, 1 Feb. 1696; Solomon, 16 May 1698; and Dorcas, 24 Feb. 1700. Four or five more ch. are assign. to him in the Fam. Geneal. but without dates, and it is said he rem. to Canterbury, Conn. and d. 7 Feb. 1735. JAMES, Newport, by w. Amy had Amy, b. 18 Jan. 1660. JAMES, Barnstable, s. of Thomas of ③ Eastham, m. 9 Apr. 1691, Bethia, d. of John Thacher of Yarmouth, had James, b. 24, bapt. 27 Mar. 1692, d. at 19 yrs.; Thomas, bapt. 8 Apr. 1694; Bethia, 22 Feb. bapt. 8 Mar. 1696, d. next yr.; Bethia, again, 23, bapt. 29 May 1698; Mary, 13, bapt. 18 Aug. 1700; Experience, b. 17

Geneological Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England by James Savage
Vol III

PAINE

Mar. 1703; and Rebecca, 8 Apr. 1705, d. at 21 yrs. JOHN, Southold, L. I. perhaps s. of Thomas of Salem, was freem. of Conn. 1662, and may have been a propr. of New Haven 1685; tho. JOHN, of New Haven 1670, seems to me to be ano. person. JOHN, Ipswich, s. of Robert, ar. co. 1666, went to Nantucket, there d. 13 July 1677, says Farmer; but I feel some distrust of it. JOHN, Middletown, d. 1681, leav. wid. and eldest s. aged 20; Job, aged 4 yrs.; Patience, 3; and Abigail, 1. One of this name, wh. I kn. not how to appropriate, was passeng. at 14 yrs. of age, in the Abigail, 1635, from London. JOHN, Boston, s. of William, m. Mar. 1659, Sarah, d. of Richard Parker; but if the tradit. be good, that he d. at sea, aft. convey. 29 Dec. 1674, some est. to his niece, Hannah, d. of Samuel Appleton, w. of William Downes, he had prob. lost his w. By her he had Sarah, b. 14 Aug. 1660; Hannah, 31 Mar. 1662, both d. young; William, 15 Mar. 1664; Ann, 24 Mar. 1665; and Eliz. 19 Feb. 1666. JOHN, Dedham, s. prob. of Thomas the first of the same, m. 7 Feb. 1677, Mary, d. of Ralph Day, had Rebecca, b. 7 June 1678; Mary, 11 July 1680; Susanna, 17 Aug. 1682; John, 28 Feb. 1685; Thomas, 8 Jan. 1687; and Sarah, 17 Nov. 1689. Prob. his w. d. 25 Oct. 1694. JOHN, Rehoboth, s. of Stephen of the same, had Eliz. b. 12 July 1682. JOHN, Braintree, s. of the sec. Stephen of the same, m. 20 Jan. 1689, Deborah, d. of Henry Neal, had John, b. 13 Aug. 1690, casual. k. at 16 yrs.; Deborah, 28 Sept. 1692, d. young; Stephen, 19 Jan. 1694; Joseph, 26 Oct. 1695; Moses, 7 Nov. 1697, d. soon; Benjamin, 6 Mar. 1700; Seth, 16 Jan. 1702; and James and Deborah, tw. 27 July 1704. JOHN, Eastham, prob. s. of Thomas of the same, by first w. said to have been a Bennett, who d. 20 May 1716, had John, b. 18 Sept. 1690; Mary, 28 Jan. 1693; William, 6 June 1695; Benjamin, 22 Feb. 1697, d. young; Sarah, 14 Apr. 1699; Eliz. 2 June 1702; Theophilus, 7 Feb. 1704; Josiah, 8 Mar. 1706; Nathaniel, 18 Nov. 1707; Rebecca, 30 Oct. 1709; Mercy, 3 Apr. 1712; and Benjamin, 18 May 1714, d. young; and he m. 3 Mar. 1720, Alice Mayo, had Hannah, 11 Jan. 1721, d. young; James, 17 Dec. 1723, d. young; Thomas, 6 Apr. 1725; and Alice, 4 Dec. 1728. He d. 18 Oct. 1731. JOSEPH, Charlestown 1649, was s. of Edward, bef. ment. who had est. at Wapping, near London, wh. this s. sold, and went home, prob. JOSEPH, Eastham, s. of Thomas of the same, m. 27 May 1691, Patience ③ Sparrow, perhaps d. of Jonathan, had Ebenezer, b. 8 Apr. 1692; Hannah, 5 July 1694; Joseph, 27 Mar. 1697; and Richard, 25 Mar. 1699. MOSES, Braintree, freem. 2 June 1641, had est. in Cambridge, Concord, and at Piscataqua, as well as Braintree, and three ch. to wh. by will of 17 June 1643, he div. his prop. half to Moses, made excor. one quarter to d. Eliz. and the other to s. Stephen, who was to be under Moses'

✓ Otis
③+④ Mary
Otis

governm. until 23 yrs. old. These were all b. in Eng. Besides he adds codic. three days later, one day bef. his d. giv. w. Judith twenty shill. to be paid within a cert. time. The will was pro. 30 Oct. 1643, and his inv. ret. the same day, shows rather large est. yet without the sums due to him from Eng. Of the four appraisers, half were Guilford men, wh. appears strange, but the provision for his wid. seems more strange. She had been not long his w. hav. been wid. of the first Edmund Quincy, brot. him no ch. and in few yrs. m. Robert Hull. Eliz. m. 17 Nov. 1643, Henry Adams, and was casual. k. 21 Feb. 1676 in few hours aft. her h. was shot. * ‖ MOSES, Braintree, elder s. of the preced. b. in Eng. by w. Eliz. had nine or ten ch. of wh. Moses, b. 16 July 1646, d. young; Eliz. 5 Aug. 1648; Sarah, 30 Jan. 1651, d. young; Moses, again, 26 June 1652, d. young; Mary, 12 Mar. 1656; William, 1 Apr. 1657; John, 12 Oct. 1659, d. soon; Sarah, again, 2 May 1662; and Margaret, 20 Dec. 1664. He was ar. co. 1644, freem. 1647, lieut. and a rep. 1666 and 8, rem. to Boston, there had Hannah, 20 Apr. 1671, and Lydia, 23 Aug. 1674; was constable 1673, and d. 15 Dec. 1690. MOSES, Braintree, s. of the first Stephen of the same, was deac. and d. 22 June 1746. By w. Mary he had Mary, b. 4 May 1689; Hannah, 2 Apr. 1692; Moses, 21 Oct. 1694, d. within 3 yrs.; Sarah, 3 July 1697; Moses, again, 13 June 1700; and Aaron, 8 Nov. 1703, d. young. * NATHANIEL, Rehoboth, younger s. of the first Stephen, b. in Eng. a merch. partner with his f. was rep. 1670–1, and liv. at Boston; but d. bef. his f. leav. Nathaniel, his only ch. b. 18 Oct. 1661, and wid. Eliz. or Alice. NATHANIEL, Rehoboth, s. of the preced. by w. Dorothy had Dorothy, b. 3 Feb. 1696; Nathaniel, 24 May 1697; Abigail, 28 July 1699; Jonathan, 2 July 1701; perhaps Mary of unkn. date; Rachel, 13 July 1705; and Eliz. 15 Apr. 1712; and he d. 1718. NATHANIEL, Rehoboth, s. of the sec. Stephen of the same, prob. rem. to Bristol, had s. Nathaniel, thot. to be ancest. of the gr. fam. at Worcester, and was, perhaps, f. of Stephen, H. C. 1721; and six ds. Eliz. Sarah, Mary, Hannah, Martha, and Dorothy. NICHOLAS, Eastham, s. of Thomas of the same, by w. Hannah had Thankful, b. 14 Mar. 1700; Priscilla, 16 Oct. 1701; Philip, 18 Nov. 1704, d. under 21 yrs.; Lois, 29 Sept. 1705; Abigail, 3 Aug. 1707; and Hannah, 24 Sept. 1709; and his w. d. 24 Jan. 1732. PHILIP, New Haven, m. 1679, Mary, d. of capt. John Nash, rem. to Northampton, freem. 1690, and liv. some yrs. there, and Seth, wh. d. 12 Aug. 1689, may have been his ch.; had Mary, b. 1690, but rem. again to Conn. and part of his days was of Windham. * ROBERT, Ipswich, b. a. 1601, was prob. from Co. Suffolk, as his w. Ann was d. of John Whiting of Hadleigh in that shire, freem. 2 June 1641, rep. 1647–9, had good est. and was liberal in distrib. of it, was rul. elder, Treasr. of Essex Co. eighteen yrs. had sec. w. Dorcas, wh. d. 23 Feb. 1681; and he d. 1684, leav. s. John, and Robert, H. C. 1656. ROBERT, Ipswich, s. of the preced. freem. 1685, was liv. 1704. SAMUEL, Boston, by w. Eliz. had Samuel, b. 26 Aug. 1670. SAMUEL, Braintree, s. of Stephen first of the same, freem. 1690, m. 4 Apr. 1678, Mary, d. of James Penniman, had Mary, b. 27 Oct. 1680; Lydia, 6 Jan. 1682; Samuel, 26 Nov. 1684; Hannah, 1 Feb. 1687; Joseph, 3 Aug. 1689; Mehitable, 8 Dec. 1693; and Benjamin, 28 Dec. 1696; and d. 10 Dec. 1739. SAMUEL, Eastham, s. of Thomas of the same, m. 31 Jan. 1683, Patience Freeman, had Samuel, b. 30 Oct. 1683; Mercy, 5 Aug. 1686; Nathaniel, 9 July 1689, d. young; Ebenezer, 17 June 1692; Eliz. 11 June 1694; Joshua, 20 May 1696; Isaac, 3 Jan. 1699; Mary, 24 Feb. 1704; and Seth, 5 Oct. 1706, d. young. SAMUEL, Rehoboth, s. of the sec. Stephen of the same, m. it is said, Abigail Frissell, but whose ch. she was, is unkn. had Samuel, b. 13 Sept. 1686; Ann, 15 Sept. 1688; Seth, 20 Aug. 1690; Sarah, 11 Dec. 1692; Judith, 18 Feb. 1695; Noah, 28 May 1696; Stephen, 21 June 1699; Daniel, 22 Feb. 1703; Joshua; and Rebecca; and he rem. to Woodstock 1710, and d. 11 May 1735. His wid. d. 13 Jan. 1752, aged 79, acc. Fam. Geneal. * STEPHEN, Hingham 1638, from Great Ellingham, near Attleburgh, Co. Norfk. miller, came that yr. in the Diligent, with w. Rose, three ch. and four serv. freem. 6 June 1639, rep. 1641, rem. 1645 to Rehoboth, rep. 1647, and 18 yrs. more. His w. d. 20 Jan. 1661, and next yr. he m. Alice, wid. of William Parker, I presume, of Taunton, wh. outliv. him, and he d. 24 June 1678, or as I read Col. Rec. 24 Jan. foll. but neither can be true for him, tho. one may be for his s. of the same name, since the rec. bears "S. P. sen. was bur. 21 Aug. 1679." His will was of 18 July in that yr. and inv. of very large est. was tak. 11 Sept. foll. ‖ STEPHEN, Braintree, younger s. of Moses the first, b. in Eng. ar. co. 1649, freem. 1653, m. 15 Nov. 1651, Hannah, d. of deac. Samuel Bass, had Stephen, b. 8 Mar. 1653; Samuel, 10 June 1654; Hannah, 28 Jan. 1656; Sarah, 1 Nov. 1657; Moses, 26 Mar. 1660; John, 21 Sept. 1666; and Lydia, 20 Sept. 1670. He d. 29 July 1691. Sarah m. 22 Jan. 1678, Roger Billings; and Lydia, his youngest ch. m. 20 Jan. 1689, Benjamin Neale, the same day that her br. m. his sis. STEPHEN, Rehoboth, s. of the first Stephen, b. prob. in Eng. a tanner, had est. at Watertown in 1654, but liv. not long there, and at R. had Stephen, b. 23 Nov. 1654; Rebecca, 20 Dec. 1656; John, 3 Apr. 1658; Mary, 11 July 1660; Samuel, 12 Aug. 1662; Eliz. 27 Oct. 1664; Sarah, 12 Oct. 1666; Nathaniel, 20 Nov. 1667; and Benjamin, 9 Mar. 1675, wh. d. unm. at 23 yrs. The other ch. were all m. and he d. bef. his f. Rebecca m. 24 Dec. 1673, Peter Hunt, and 21 Nov. 1677, Samuel Peck; Mary m. Daniel Aldis, as says the Fam. Geneal. but it may be a mistake, for D. Aldis m. Sarah, and I believe her to have been d. of the sec. Moses of Braintree; Eliz. m. 10 Feb. 1685, Jacob Pepper; and Sarah m. Enoch Hunt, if the Fam. Geneal. be foll. but my research makes E. Hunt m. 29 Oct. 1678, Mary Paine. Into such errors it is much easier to fall than to recover from them. **Stephen**, Dedham, m. 3 Nov. 1652, Ann, d. of Francis Chickering, of wh. aft. hard search I can find no more, unless he be the Rehoboth man, and his wid. m. 2 Dec. 1679, Thomas Metcalf of D. **Stephen**, Charlestown, or Malden, freem. 1665, by w. Eliz. had Mary, b. 15 Nov. 1658, was tythingman 1679, at C. adj. M. **Stephen**, Braintree, eldest s. of Stephen of the same, freem. 1678, m. 20 Feb. 1682, Ellen, d. of William Veazie, had Stephen, b. 7 Nov. foll.; Ellen, bapt. 12 Oct. 1684; Samuel, 13 Feb. 1687, d. at 2 yrs.; Samuel, again, 14 Apr. 1689; and d. 24 May 1690. His wid. m. 5 Oct. 1693, Joseph Crosby. **Stephen**, Rehoboth, eldest s. of the sec. Stephen of the same, by first w. Eliz. had, it is thot. no ch. but by sec. w. m. 12 Aug. 1707, Mary Brintnall, had Stephen, b. 30 Apr. 1708; and Edward, 22 Jan. 1710; and the f. d. 12 Mar. foll. His wid. it is said, rem. to Conn. **Thomas**, Salem, a weaver, from Wrentham, in Co. Suffk. came 1637, aged 50, in the Mary Ann of Yarmouth, with w. Eliz. 53; and six ch. Mary, b. 12 Oct. 1611; Thomas, 18 Jan. 1613; Eliz. 20 Jan. 1615; Dorothy, 6 Dec. 1618; John, 26 Aug. 1620; and Sarah, 7 Mar. 1622; as by a very trustworthy anc. docum. appears, in wh. he (call. s. of Thomas and Catharine of Cooklie, near Halesworth, in Co. Suffk.) is said to be b. 11 Dec. 1586, m. this w. 22 Nov. 1610, and, beside the six ch. brot. over, had Peter, 14 Mar. 1617, wh. prob. d. young; and Nathaniel, 21 July 1626, wh. d. under 10 yrs. He had, says Felt, gr. of ld. 1637, was freem. 2 June 1641, unless it was his s. then adm. wh. seems much more prob.; made his will 10 Apr. 1638, and by the bef. ment. docum. is supposed to have d. 1640. Mary m. Philemon Dickinson. **Thomas**, Dedham, s. of the preced. b. in Eng. prob. the freem. of 2 June 1641, by w. Rebecca had Rebecca, b. 19 Sept. 1642; Thomas, 19, bapt. 24 Mar. 1644; John, b. 27 Apr. 1646; and Eliz. 6, bapt. 12 Mar. 1648, and he d. 3 Aug. 1686. His will was made 26 July preced. in wh. beside w. Rebecca, he provides for s.-in-law Thomas Patten, whose w. Rebecca his d. m. 1 Apr. 1662, had d. leav. Rebecca, and for Eliz. Hunting, w. of John, m. 18 Apr. 1671; and devises ld. to s. Thomas, gives resid. of est. equal. between s. Thomas and John. The wid. made her will 3 Mar. 1688. * **Thomas**, Yarmouth 1643, had been there certainly four yrs. for he was rep. 1639 (tho. no respect is due to report of his com. 1621), rem. to Eastham, of wh. he was rep. 1671 and six yrs. more, had, beside Eleazer, b. 10 Mar. 1659, wh. d. young,

① + ②

Thomas; Joseph; Nicholas; Samuel; Elisha; John ✓; James, 6 July 1665; Mary; and Dorcas. Mary m. 11 Jan. 1670, James Rogers, jr. and next, 24 Apr. 1679, Isaiah Cole; and Dorcas m. Benjamin Vickery. The will of the f. was of 12 May 1705, pro. 2 Oct. 1706, unless there be confus. betw. f. and s. of the same bapt. name, wh. seems very prob. **Thomas**, Boston, m. 25 Aug. 1659, Hannah, d. of Thomas Bray of New Haven, had Thomas, b. 19 Feb. 1665. He was, perhaps, that s. of Thomas of London, b. 8 Feb. 1632, wh. 1647, chose for his guardian, Thomas Mayhew, wh. had m. in London his mo. Jane. **Thomas**, Newtown, L. I. 1656. Riker, 43. **Thomas**, York, sw. alleg. 1680. **Thomas**, Dover 1659, constable 1687, made his will 17 Oct. 1694, pro. 1700, ment. w. Eliz. wh. was nam. extrix. and ch. Thomas, Jane, Eliz. Catharine, and Ann, said to be all minors. **Thomas**, Dedham, s. of Thomas sec. of the same, m. 25 Apr. 1671, Rebecca Peck, had no ch. His w. d. 28 Nov. 1682; and he had sec. w. Margaret, wh. prob. brot. him that Thomas wh. d. 6 Sept. 1686; Margaret, wh. d. ten days aft. her br. 16 Sept. 1686; and Thomas, again, b. 5 Sept. 1687, wh. d. at 10 yrs. his mo. hav. d. some yrs. preced.; and he m. next, 20 Aug. 1689, Mary Lawson, had Mary, b. 16 Aug. 1698, and his third w. d. 5 Apr. 1718. He made his will 24 Jan. 1726, pro. 25 Feb. foll. **Thomas**, Eastham, prob. s. of Thomas of the same, m. 5 Aug. 1678, Hannah Shaw, had Hannah, b. 6 Apr. 1679, d. young; Hugh, 5 July 1680, d. next yr.; Thomas, 28 Feb. 1682; Hannah, again, 12 May 1684; Jonathan, 1 Feb. 1686; Abigail, 4 Mar. 1688, d. next winter; Abigail, again, 10 Nov. 1689; Phebe, 14 Mar. 1691, d. young; Elkanah, 1 Feb. 1693; Moses, 28 Sept. 1695; Joshua, 28 Aug. 1697; Phebe, again, 11 Feb. 1699; Lydia, 4 Dec. 1700; and Barnabas, 13 Nov. 1705. **Thomas**, Newport 1683, very active as capt. of a privateer many yrs. and one of the found. of the Episcop. ch. in that place, of wh. much may be seen in the valua. Hist. of Arnold, I. 471, and aft. **Tobias**, Boston, came from Jamaica, m. 1665, Sarah, wid. of Miles Standish, jr. d. of John Winslow, had William, b. 21 Jan. 1669, H. C. 1689, and he d. 12 Sept. 1669, with so short notice, that his will was nuncup. In it he provides only for this s. and the wid. wh. obtain. 3d h. Richard Middlecot. **William**, Ipswich, came in the Increase from London, 1635, aged 37, with Ann, prob. his w. 40; beside Susan, 11; William, 10; Ann, 5; John, 3; and Daniel, 8 wks.; freem. 13 May 1640, may have been first at Watertown some few yrs. had large est. and used it in a publ. spirit, rem. to Boston, and d. 10 Oct. 1660, leav. only s. John, bef. ment. His will, made 8 days bef. pro. 14 Nov. foll. in our Vol. of rec. I. 345, provides £200 to his w. Hannah, and the dwel.-ho. for life; £1,500 to the 3 ch. of his d. Hannah, w. of Samuel Appleton, viz.: Hannah, 600; Samuel, 500; and

✓ ③ bro

"Cape Cod, Its People + Their History"
by Henry C Kittredge

pose to solve some of these conundrums. 'Does the bare admission of a man to the state of *townsman* give him a share in the Commons?' they asked. 'Has all the Common Land been already divided?' 'Do rights granted in the Commons extend to the grantees' heirs?' The men who attended this famous meeting would have grown old in debate (since they could not send to heaven for Miles Standish) had they not wisely chosen a committee of fifteen to work out answers to these questions. The committee girded up their loins and went valiantly to work, with the result that after another town meeting in 1702, in which it was decided to divide the commons, a new committee was chosen and the grand division was made in 1703 on as fair a basis as could be devised. In this way town after town unsnarled the tangle into which the public ownership of land had involved it and started afresh, each man the richer for the division. In 1713, after three years of hard work deciding who were the proper persons, Yarmouth handed over to the heirs of the Proprietors and other qualified persons most of its common lands except the whaling grounds. The Proprietors of Truro, indignant at the wanton way some men cut more wood than they could use and left it to rot on the commons, put an end to the practice in 1715 by ordering further division of common land. Eastham began to divide its common upland the same year.

So vanished the last substantial traces of the Pilgrims' valiant experiment with Communism.[1] The name 'Common Fields' is still used for a good-sized tract of land bordering Barnstable Harbor, though it has been in private hands for generations, and a few barren regions that the towns have forgotten remain still undivided — a strip of sand hills somewhere in Barnstable and the still unclaimed whaling grounds between Yarmouth and Dennis. In truth we are a young country!

---

[1] See note 2 to Chapter IV.

Re: Paine etc

[illegible] Just general information
Besides being a prominent town & also Colony official of many roles, our Sdept (Thomas 2 Thomas 1) Paine was a whale boat builder

CHAPTER V

HOW THEY LIVED IN THE EARLY SETTLEMENTS

THE first generation or two of settlers on the Cape were no freer to choose their occupation than they were to choose their religion. They had to be farmers or starve, even if they came from London and had never drawn a furrow. It must have been hard for some of them — men who like Robert Linnel came to Barnstable with Lothrop without ever having cut down a tree or hauled a stump. But there were compensations; the land was their own; and there is deep satisfaction in toiling over one's own acres. Furthermore, when once cleared, it yielded a respectable crop; there was no need of cultivating big tracts either, for hay grew wild on the marshes, and a small cornfield and a patch of onions sufficed for a good-sized family. Every man had some cattle and sheep, which were immensely profitable and required no pasturage, for they were turned loose to roam at will, branded as Western cattle are to-day. Some of these brands showed originality, but no one had a saltier device than Jonathan Weekes, Jr., of Falmouth, who marked his 'creatures' with a mackerel-tail in the top of each ear. Pigs also were allowed to root about at large, provided their noses were ringed to prevent their doing damage.

The large numbers of cattle brought tanners and cobblers at a very early date, but even these specialists laid aside the tools of their trade in spring and followed the plough until October. In this way every family was self-supporting. There were at first no local markets for food or clothing. The men sheared their sheep, and the women spun the wool and fashioned it into garments which made up in durability what they lacked in grace. Our ancestors sometimes eked out their wardrobes with deerskin coats, after the Indian fashion. Good food was abundant. If a man grew tired of corn and beans and onions, he had only to dig a 'dreener' of clams or pick up a bushel of lobsters. Herring were so plentiful that they were spread on the ploughed land for manure — another practice which the settlers learned from the natives. Every now and then they killed a pig. There was little time for hunting, but who can doubt that many a haunch of venison found its way to a hook in the back shed, where it hung frozen until its duty was done? It would be strange, too if the old flintlock in the corner was not sometimes put to a livelier use than waiting for the Indian raid that never came, and brought down a backload of ducks or geese in the course of a windy afternoon. Add to this gamey diet an abundance of home-grown beef and mutton, and it will appear that there was no need for the first Cape-Codders to be vegetarians.

Corn was their principal crop. Corn was, indeed, the very backbone of their existence. It was not only food, but money, and remained for years the standard measure of value. No one had any money to speak of — it has been stated that in 1675 there was not five hundred pounds in the whole Plymouth Colony — but every one had corn, which passed current in any sort of transaction, from buying a farm to paying the minister. But the settlers were experimentalists, and tried other crops, too, with varying success. They planted wheat, which did tolerably well for a time, but about 1670 it was attacked by a sort of mildew, and since then has never been raised in any quantity on the Cape. Rye proved to be a better investment, and there has always been more or less of it for local consumption. From the very first, the Cape men set out orchards from seeds imported from the old country; but it took generations of cultivation to make the apples good for much. Pears were as poor as apples until years of toil brought them up from hard and gnarled excrescences to their present mellow excellence. Some cherry trees were planted as well, but though they were hardy, the fruit would pucker any but the most robust palate.

As the years passed, the Cape farmers grew more prosperous and more ambitious. Each season they converted a few more acres of woodland into arable fields, and thus they began to produce more corn than they needed. The days of struggling for existence — incomparably less severe on the Cape than they had been at Plymouth — were over. The settlements had gained momentum, and steady industry took the place of heart-breaking toil. By 1700, half the citizens had farms of thirty acres or more, a pair of oxen for ploughing, a horse or two for occasional

visits to a neighboring town, besides an appropriate number of cattle and sheep. While the sons of the family were growing, a slave or two helped the farmer with the heaviest work. The families were large. One reason that has been suggested for this phenomenon is that, according to the old idea, every son was worth a hundred pounds to the family and every daughter fifty pounds! This explanation need not be taken with undue solemnity.

It was one thing to raise corn, however, and another to grind it. Except for what little was pounded up at home in hand mortars, all the corn had to be ground at a mill, and there were no mills nearer than Plymouth. Even Sandwich had a long haul overland to reach the Old Colony headquarters, for boats were as scarce as mills. The plight of the towns farther down the Cape can be imagined. Half the pleasure of a good crop was spoiled by the difficulty of getting it ground. The remedy was obvious — to construct local mills; but the art of the millwright was second only to that of the shipbuilder in difficulty, and few had mastered it. But the need of mills was so urgent that the inhabitants spared no pains to find the men who could build them. The easiest type to construct was that operated by water-power, and, although there is some truth in the statement that the scarcity of water-power on the Cape forced the settlers to build windmills, which were far more intricate and expensive, yet it must not be supposed that no running water was to be found on the crooked peninsula. Falmouth, Bourne, Sandwich, Barnstable, Yarmouth, Brewster, Eastham, and Truro all had streams which were set to work soon after the towns were settled, and some of these water-mills were still grinding away within the memory of men now living. So, even without the aid of wind, the Cape was not powerless to grind its own corn and full its own homespun.

Useful as these water-mills were, they were not the type that attracted the eye of early Cape travelers or inspired the pencil of such graceful artists as Miss Amelia Watson. For picturesqueness, the long-armed old windmills stand alone; but the difficulty of finding men who could build them was so great that capitalists who wanted a mill found it easier to scour the Cape for an old one, and move it to the desired location, than to hunt up a millwright who could start work on a new one in less than six months or a year. Half the windmills on the Cape ended their days on new sites.

The most celebrated millwright was Thomas Paine, of Eastham. This overworked craftsman was kept traveling from one town to another all the way from Barnstable to Truro. First, in 1683–84, with proper loyalty, he put up two windmills for his fellow citizens in Eastham. Then he was called to Barnstable, where in 1687 he erected the first windmill that town had ever seen. Not to be outdone, Yarmouth ordered one from him immediately afterwards, and Paine complied. He returned to Eastham and appears to have enjoyed a well-earned breather, until the citizens of Truro assured him that they, too, must have a windmill, and held out flattering inducements if he would build it for them. 'A man must go where his trade calls,' thought Paine; and he liked Truro so well that he never left it; subsequently he became one of her leading citizens. The first mill in Truro was not built so easily as the last one, however, which appeared about 1800, long after Paine was in his grave. Every stick of lumber used in it came ashore from wrecks, most of it landing as a single windfall when a lumber schooner piled up on the outer beach; it would not have been surprising if the corn ground at this mill had had a salty flavor — the more so as Freeman Atkins, the miller, was a retired shipmaster.

Another family of millwrights won such distinction that they were celebrated in verse; they were Thomas Baxter and his two sons, of West Yarmouth, who put up two windmills near Parker's River. Their success was crowned by the following ballad:

'The Baxter boys they built a mill;
Sometimes it went; sometimes stood still;
And when it went, it made no noise
Because it was built by the Baxter boys.'

Close behind the builder in prestige, came the miller. His task was no sinecure, and was so essential to the prosperity of the towns that great inducements were held out to any man who would undertake it. Just as the mill itself went untaxed, so was the miller exempt from military duty, and he was a privileged character in other ways besides; he need not hold office, his social position was assured, and he was often given a good-sized piece of land adjacent to the mill. His pay was in kind; from every bushel of corn he ground he was authorized to take a stated quantity, known as the miller's 'pottle'; and it was well earned. At the beginning of each day he had to mount to the top of the mill and scale the long arms to set the sails, which were rigged in nautical fashion with halliards; at night he must climb out again and furl them. If it blew hard, he had to shorten sail by twisting up the lower part of each sail. In a gale the mill scudded under bare poles, the surface of the slats across the arm offering sufficient resistance to the wind. Unlike the master of a ship, however, the miller had no crew of nimble acrobats to carry out his orders aloft. He was his own crew, and was perpetually short-handed. The clumsy rigging and primitive mechanism of his command made the work not only hard but dangerous. But for the fact that many of the millers were retired seamen who had learned agility at the mastheads of fishing schooners, casualties would have been more frequent than they were. If Henry Hall, for example, who at the age of seventy operated a mill in Dennis, had not been a sailor in his early days, he never could have extricated himself from the very ticklish position in which he once found himself. He had stopped his mill to shorten sail, but had neglected to make the arms fast with the huge iron chain which was used for that purpose. When he was halfway out on one of the arms, a free flaw caught the sails, and the arms began to turn. With amazing activity Hall worked his way back along the revolving arm until he reached the shaft, which, of course, was also revolving. Here he perched, three stories above the ground, straddling the shaft and maintaining an upright position by hitching himself clear of his seat as it turned under him. Luckily assistance arrived before the old mariner was exhausted.

Blow high, blow low, millers must turn out each man's corn with as little delay as possible, for the farmers were impatient and, if the truth is to be told, not a little envious of this privileged specialist. Their envy took the form that envy usually takes — criticism. Sometimes they declared that their corn was only half ground; sometimes they accused the miller of stretching his pottle and taking more than the law allowed.

There was right and wrong on both sides, of course. Human nature, alas! is not always proof against temptation, nor were millers more righteous than other men. One at least, Philip Dexter of Falmouth, was thought to be a pottle-stretcher, and the townspeople put up a rival mill. But envy is a commoner sin than avarice, and the citizens were probably jealous oftener than millers were dishonest.

Of the scores of windmills that once spread their sails to the Cape breezes, only a few are standing to-day — sole survivors of a high art and a dead industry. A few channeled millstones are in use as doorsteps; a few more may be seen lying abandoned and half buried beside creeks alongshore. 'Nothing beside remains.'

The early Cape houses varied greatly, according to men's means, and became more elaborate from generation to generation as building improved. The first hasty structures that some of the pioneers erected were never intended to be more than makeshifts to provide temporary shelter until the owner had a chance to draw his breath and contemplate something better. These early buildings, sometimes called 'booths,' were not frame houses at all; the walls consisted of two parallel rows of saplings stuck in the ground, and the space between was filled with clay and stones. Slanting poles covered with the longest marsh-grass formed the roof, and the fireplace, which often backed into the side of a hill for convenience and support, was crowned by a chimney built cob-house fashion of green sticks smeared with clay inside. Oiled paper covered the windows. There was no floor — unless dry thatch spread on the ground can be called a floor. The only virtue of such structures was that they could be thrown together in a very short time and without any expense; but one winter in such quarters was usually enough to persuade the owner that he must have a real house.

Not all the original settlers lived in such flimsy contrivances, of course. Some of them had frame houses from the first. Mr. Hull, for example, was living in one when John Lothrop and his flock arrived in Barnstable, and some of Hull's parishioners had followed his example. These dwellings, though anything but elaborate, were durable and snug. They were nearly square, one story high, with walls and floors made of planks sawed by hand and a thatched roof sharply pitched. The cracks between the boards were daubed with clay.

The 'great room' was usually in the southeast corner. Its bare wooden floor was sanded and thereby scrubbed smooth. One side of the room was chiefly occupied by a stone fireplace eight feet wide and high enough for the goodwife to walk into easily and reach the door of the brick oven, which opened out of one corner of the back. Across the whole breadth of the fireplace ran an iron bar festooned with trammels for the pots. The swinging crane is a comparatively modern contrivance. The whole structure was wide enough to allow for the traditional seats in the chimney corner, favorite places for the youngsters, who perched there happily on dye-tubs or empty beer-kegs until bed time. At one end of the room stood the big dining-table with stools for the children and chairs for the man of the house and his wife. Near it was placed the corner cupboard, a tall semicircular piece of furniture containing shelves for pewter or glassware. A big wooden chest against one wall held the family valuables — the deed for the farm, what money the man happened to have on hand, and in summer some of the extra bed 'furnishings.' If the children were not all grown up, there would certainly be a cradle in the room, and near it a loom where the wife could weave woolen cloth and keep an eye on the baby at the same time. A few chairs, either home-made or else the product of a local artisan, a couple of candles in iron candlesticks on the great mantelpiece, an hourglass, and a brass warming pan hanging beside the chimney completed the furniture of this room. No paint or paper adorned its walls (plaster was rarely used except by the rich until after 1700), but it was homelike and comfortable, and for several generations the Cape farmer of moderate means wisely regarded it as sufficient for his needs. The cost of building such a house complete, 'latched, thatched and daubed,' was twenty-five dollars. The inhabitants of the temporary 'booths' were therefore very soon able to build one and live in comfort.

Snug as they were, these one-story cottages were beneath the dignity of the wealthy, who wanted something more elaborate and were willing to pay as high as one hundred dollars for their

Sandwich, basing its argument on the fact that the beach was common land, decided that the proceeds should be divided equally among the householders of the town. This Utopian solution was too good to last, for Plymouth soon decided that so much liberty was not good for young towns, and demanded one hogshead of oil from each whale. There was a vague idea in the Plymouth brain that this oil was the property of the Crown; but how much of it ever went to lubricate the wheels of government in England does not appear. As a matter of fact, the proceeds from almost every drift whale were disposed of differently. In 1682, for example, a school of blackfish dotted the Sandwich beach, and Jo Holway and some others began immediately to strip them and boil down the blubber. The town then woke up to what was going on and voted to allow Holway and his friends to buy from the town what oil they had already made; the rest was to be sold to others for the benefit of the town. The next year four men were granted a monopoly on all drift whales in Sandwich for ten years, provided they gave half the oil to the town, and deducted from their own half the barrel per whale that must go to Plymouth. Eastham and Truro decided that drift whales were blessings sent by the grace of God, and so dedicated a part of the proceeds to help pay the minister. Each town made up its mind for itself what to do with its share of the proceeds of these valuable carcasses and changed its decision as often as it saw fit — which was about as often as a whale was stranded.

As long as whale oil had any market value, and long after the Cape was sending elaborately equipped whalers to all the seven seas, drift whales continued to be prized and were welcomed ecstatically by the amateur whalemen at home. The cry 'A whale in the Bay!' was enough to empty the hall during a town meeting; every able-bodied man rushed to the beach with the same speed that citizens to-day show in leaving church at the alarm of a forest fire. There is a story of a Truro youngster who abandoned some cows he was driving to pasture and, unaided, captured and killed a porpoise that he saw floundering about on the flats. The boy held him by the tail to prevent his thrashing his way into deep water, and then, after dispatching him with a knife, stripped off the blubber with the skill of a professional.

Paine

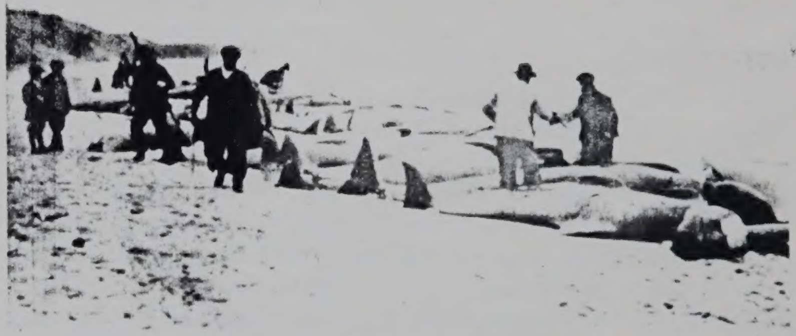
All was fish that came to the townsmen's net provided it contained a gallon of oil, and every chance prize — from the lone porpoise of the Truro boy to the record school of two thousand blackfish taken at Provincetown in 1884 — was drained to the last drop. By 1850 findings were keepings; in that year Captain Daniel Rich cut his mark in the sides of a school of seventy-five blackfish on the beach between Wellfleet and Truro and thereby established an indisputable claim to them. Within twenty-four hours he had sold them as they lay for $1900. That the Standard Oil Company has not altogether changed the Cape-Codder's attitude toward drift whales was illustrated in July, 1928, when eighty blackfish came ashore at Eastham. The lucky man who found them collected twelve dollars apiece from parties in New Bedford, who hurried to Eastham and took the 'melon' from the head of each blackfish. Since the 'melon' contains oil which, when properly tried out, brings upward of sixty dollars a gallon, it is safe to say that New Bedford lost nothing by the transaction. On the other hand, a lone dead finback, sixty-five feet long, which drifted into Barnstable Harbor in the autumn of 1928, had to be towed to sea at the town's expense lest he pollute the water and spoil the clams.

Not every school of blackfish, however, or every lone whale that was sighted offshore, was unlucky enough to be stranded on the flats. More than once the citizens who lined the beach, waiting for the prize to blunder into shoal water, were chagrined to see it turn seaward and vanish. One or two such experiences changed the townspeople from watchful waiters into pursuers. Their tactics at first, at least as regards blackfish, were not very aggressive, for most of them were farmers and more dexterous with a pitchfork than with a harpoon. Their method was to surround the fish in a fleet of small boats and, by beating the water with the flat of their oar blades, to drive them ashore in a panic. This maneuver was an exciting one to execute and it produced good results. It is easy to imagine a fleet of dories half a mile off shore, spread out fanlike beyond a school of blackfish, and slowly closing in with yelling and splashing until the fish struck the sand. Then the fun was over and the work began, the proceeds usually being divided equally among the boats that had taken part in the pursuit.

It must be clearly understood that these men were in no sense of the word whalemen. They were not professionals but amateurs. None of them owned any whaling gear, or would have known how to use it if he had owned it. To them a harpoon was a dangerous weapon — not a tool of their trade. They were no more whalemen than a man who shoots a skunk in his henyard is a hunter. But some of the youngest had the makings of whalemen in them. They had tasted the wine of pursuit, and it was an insidious vintage; it urged them to try a deeper draught by cruising round the Bay and harpooning whales.

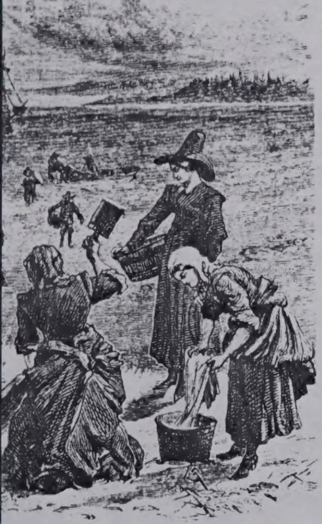
This was called shore-whaling, and though the men who practiced it never went on long voyages, and though the Cape-Horners who came afterwards regarded them much as deep-water shipmasters regarded coasting skippers, they were nevertheless real whalemen, and experienced the same thrills of pursuit and capture as their successors who cruised to Davis Straits or the South Pacific. Furthermore, they had the advantage of being able to operate their farms in spring and summer. The tactics of the shore whalemen were simple. They watched from the shore until they saw a spout or the rounded backs of a school of blackfish. Then they shoved off in clinker-built cedar whaleboats, and the chase began. If they came up with the monster and succeeded in planting an iron, they played him in the regular way, paying out line around a post in the bow of the boat as long as they could, and, as a last resort, heaving overboard a drag — or heavy buoy — with the end of the line made fast to it. When finally they came close enough to the exhausted whale to reach 'the life' with a lance, the excitement was over and the toil began, for the carcass had to be towed ashore — sometimes a distance of a good many miles. When their boat grounded, they dragged the carcass up the beach with heavy tackle rigged to a capstan. There the blubber was boiled in the try-yard near by, and the bone was scraped and cleaned.

As long as the supply of local whales held out, shore-whaling on the Cape was profitable and immensely popular. Barnstable, Yarmouth, and Truro reserved whaling grounds for the use of their citizens. No doubt other towns made similar pro-



BLACKFISH ASHORE AT PROVINCETOWN

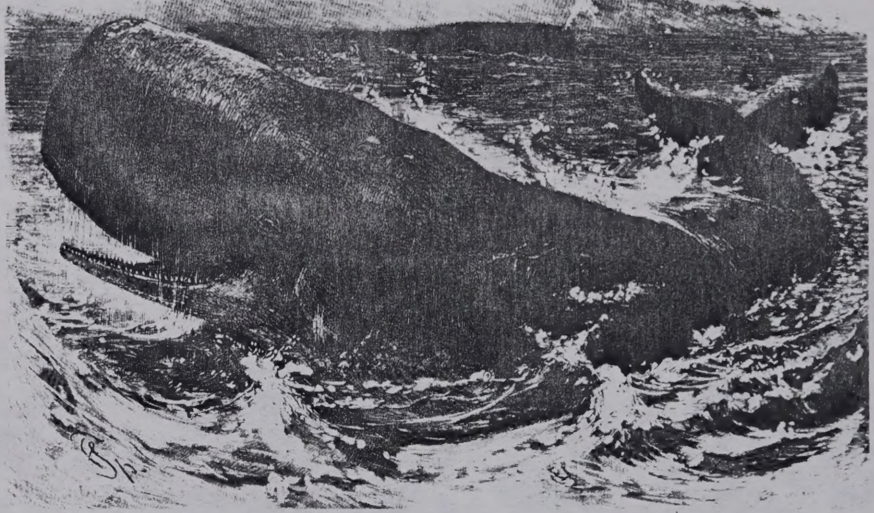
SANDY NECK AND THE HAY-GROUNDS, WEST BARNSTABLE



e Pilgrims, at Cape Cod.

iances, acts, constitutions, Offices, from time to
, as shall be thought most meet and convenient
he general good of the Colony; unto which, we
nise all due submission and obedience.
n witness whereof, we have hereunder subscribed
names. Cape Cod, 11th of November, in the year
he reign of our Sovereign Lord King James, of
and France and Ireland 18; and of Scotland 54.
o Domini 1620."
here followed the signatures of John Carver, John
ner, William Bradford, Francis Eaton, Edward
slow, James Chilton, William Brewster, John
ckston, Isaac Allerton, John Billington, Miles
ndish, Moses Fletcher, John Alden, John
odman, Samuel Fuller, Degory Priest,
istopher Martin, Thomas Williams, William
llins, Gilbert Winslow, William White, Edmund
rgeson, Richard Warren, Peter Browne, John
vland, Richard Britteridge, Stephen Hopkins,
rge Sowle, Edward Tilley, Richard Clarke, John
ey, Richard Gardiner, Francis Cooke, John
erton, Thomas Rogers, Thomas English, Thomas
ker, Edward Dotey, John Rigdale, Edward
ster, and Edward Fuller.
he signatures are chiefly those of the heads of the
ous households, representing themselves, their
s, daughters and wives: women in those days were

Our John Pierce was a whale-boat builder
as well as very prominent town officer
& Representative to the Mass. General Court.
(State Rep.)



"They spotted more than one whale but had no tackle with which to catch them . . ."

presumed incapable of entering into any formal agreements. Of the eleven men who failed to sign the Association and Agreement, two were temporary sailors, Trevore and Ellis; as eight of the other nine died soon afterwards it is probable that they were ill at the time.

It is notable that the agreement expressed no desire or intention on the part of the signatories to withdraw their allegiance from the Crown, nor to sever their association with the Old Country – although they were aware that they were lying off territory for which they held no patent from the London Virginia Company on behalf of the Crown; nor, as it turned out, were they aware that the Plymouth Company had been superseded, on 3rd November 1620, while they were still at sea, by a Council for New England.

Having drawn up the Association and Agreement, the assembled Pilgrim Fathers then elected John Carver to be their first Governor, to hold office for one year.

Immediately afterwards, fifteen or sixteen of the men were sent ashore to procure wood and fresh water, to scout around to see what the prospects were generally and to find out if there were any other human beings in the vicinity.

The party had to wade through icy waters for almost three-quarters of a mile as, being unable to find a channel through the shallow waters of the harbour, the Captain had been compelled to anchor the *Mayflower* well clear of the land. But the party went ashore eagerly – the first to set foot on dry land since the Pilgrim Fathers had left England.

They found the ground sandy, even clear of the beach, but below the surface was good black soil – although at that time of the year it was hardening rapidly under the bitter winter winds. Among the trees they had seen from the ship the shore party now found and identified birch, holly vines, ash and walnut – most of the woods being free from entangling undergrowth. They again saw fowl – but no other animals. They spotted more than one whale but had no tackle with which to catch them; they were surprised and disappointed to see no sign of cod – although this was probably a matter of the season. Finding no trace of human life in the vicinity, the men set about filling the water casks and carrying them out to the *Mayflower*, the need being urgent. They also took aboard a load of juniper to replenish the exhausted stocks of firewood for the galley stoves – the sweet smell of which pervaded the vessel for days.

They made a second excursion ashore that day, intent on finding any sign of habitation that might assure them of help and advice, if needed, or threaten them with danger – but they found nothing to

(Dodge Ancestors)
(Possible Averill Ancestors)

Family Record

Family No.

Brewster
England
Surname

Father – William Brewster II

Event	Day Month Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	Ca 1535?	○		? Nottinghamshire	England	Took over tenancy of Scrooby Manor	○
Death		○	Scrooby,	Nottinghamshire	England	ca 1575 on death of Thomas	○
Buried		○				Wentworth II, became bailiff/	○
Married (her 2)		○	Stainforth Parish of Hatfield next Doncaster, Notts, Eng.			postmaster, hosteler, etc.	○

Occupation Military Church ○

Places Lived ○

Other Wives ① Prudence ? Perkins (or widow Perkins?) ○

He had brother Henry Brewster, grad. Cambridge, (Vicar at Sutton-on-Load in 1594)

His Father's Name William Brewster, taxed 1524 (at Bentley cum Arksey next Doncaster, Yorkshire) ○

His Mother's Maiden Name Maude Man, sister of Christopher Man of Scrooby ○

Mother – Mary (aka Marie)

Event	Day Month Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		○					○
Death	soon after 1566	○	Scrooby	Nottinghamshire,	England	~~John Smythe, Alderman of Hull~~	○
Buried	~~(or perhaps childbirth?)~~	○				~~who mentioned his nephew William~~	○

Occupation Military Church ~~(later Elder Brewster) in his will~~ ○

Places Lived + Francis Smythe, vicar of Cowle Co Lincoln ○

Other Husbands / ○

Her Father's Name ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name ○

(May have been purported but the family of Mrs. Mary Brewster is yet unknown)

Children only one child known

Sex	Full Given Name		Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	2. William Brewster III (of the Mayflower)	○	Birth	ca 1566		Nottinghamshire	England	○
			Death	20 Apr 1644	Plymouth	Plymouth Colony,	America	○
	Spouse - Mary Wentworth	○	Married	ca 1586/7	? Scrooby Manor,	Notts.,	England	○

Child of Mary (Smythe)(Synkinson) Brewster and first Husband, John Synkinson: (TAG 41:2)

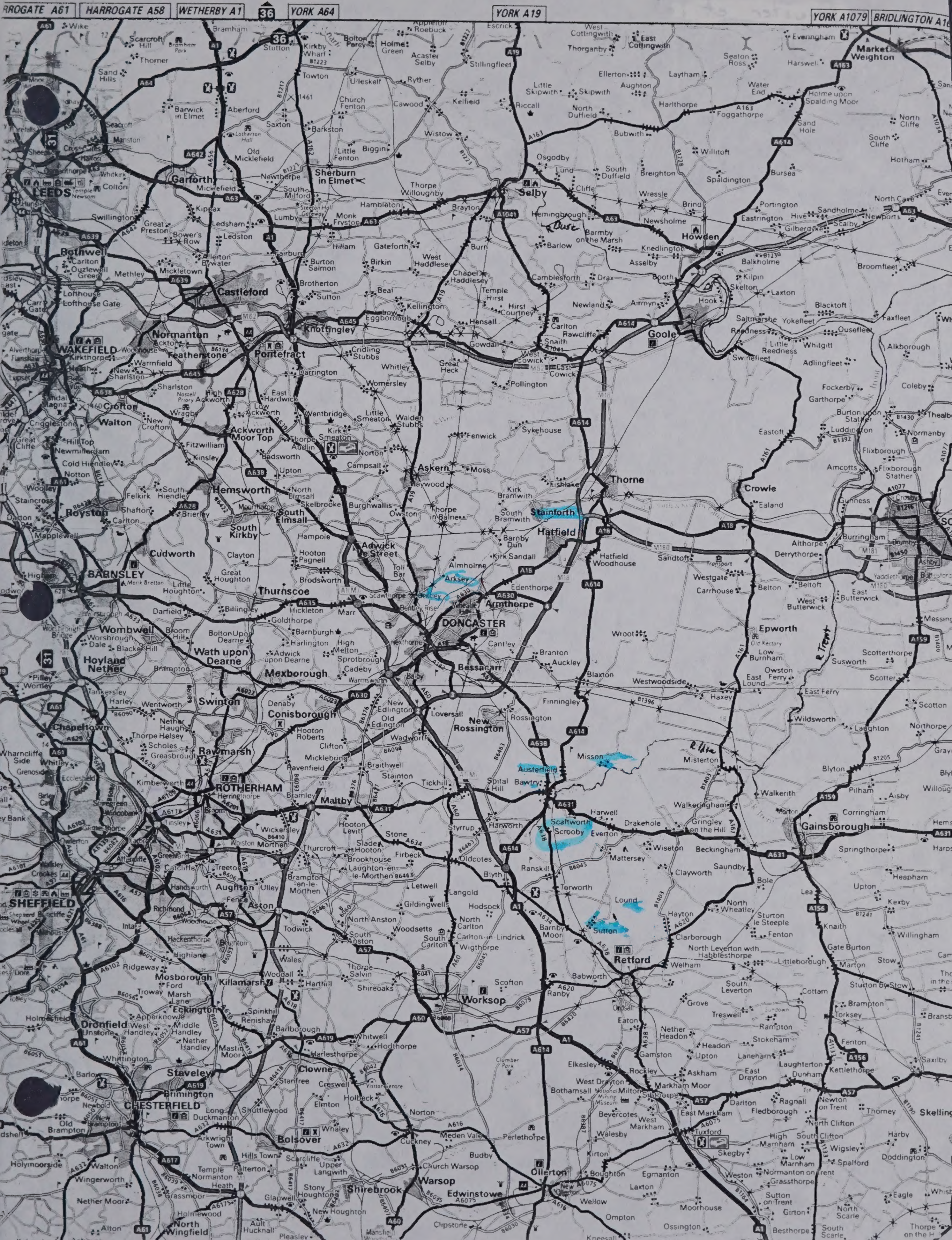
Sex	Full Given Name		Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Thomas Sinkinson	○	Birth	ca 1560				○
			Death	ca 1612	of Hull,		England	○
	Spouse - ?	○	Married	?				○

Children of William II and second wife Prudence (Perkins) Brewster:

Sex	Full Given Name		Event	Day Month Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	3. James Brewster (Succeeded uncle Henry as Vicar)	○	Birth	ca 1568	Scrooby	Notts	England	○
			Death	1613	Sutton on Load		England	○
	Spouse -	○	Married				"	○
	4. Prudence Brewster (had Robert + Anne Peck wards of uncle Wm. at Leyden)	○	Birth	ca 1570?	Scrooby			○
			Death	bef 1608?				○
	Spouse - Robert Peck of Everton, Notts.	○	Married					○
	5. ? John Brewster	○	Birth	ca 1572??				○
			Death		of Myssen,	Notts.	as of 1595 + 1613	○
	Spouse - ?	○	Married					○
		○	Birth					○
			Death					○
	Spouse -	○	Married					○
		○	Birth					○
			Death					○
	Spouse -	○	Married					○

○ In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.


RROGATE A61
HARROGATE A58
WETHERBY A1
36
YORK A64
YORK A19
YORK A1079
BRIDLINGTON A1
LEEDS
Garforth
Castleford
WAKEFIELD
Normanton
Featherstone
Pontefract
Knottingley
Sherburn in Elmet
Selby
Howden
Goole
Thorne
Crowle
Hemsworth
Royston
Cudworth
BARNSLEY
Thurnscoe
Askern
Adwick le Street
Stainforth
Hatfield
Arksey
Bentley
Armthorpe
DONCASTER
Bessacarr
Wombwell
Hoyland Nether
Wath upon Dearne
Mexborough
Swinton
Conisborough
New Rossington
Epworth
Austerfield
Bawtry
Misson
Misterton
Scaftworth
Scrooby
Gainsborough
Tickhill
Maltby
ROTHERHAM
Rawmarsh
Chapeltown
SHEFFIELD
Aughton
Worksop
Retford
Sutton
Lound
Dronfield
Eckington
Killamarsh
Staveley
CHESTERFIELD
Bolsover
Clowne
Shirebrook
Warsop
Ollerton
Edwinstowe
Tuxford
Market Weighton
R Ouse
R Trent
R Idle

Brewster

Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, is just south of the Yorkshire border and twenty-odd miles North of Sherwood Forest.

(Also possible - Averill) Ancestors - see Chart A8 d + e

Dodge Ancestors

PEDIGREE CHART

Name of Compiler Norma (Hansen) Zaniewski
Address 8924 W Plainfield
City, State Greenfield WI 53228
Date 1 July 1992

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same person as No. 3951 on chart No. D16c

Chart No. D16b

b. Date of Birth
p.b. Place of Birth
m. Date of Marriage
d. Date of Death
p.d. Place of Death

(13) (790,2) 1 (Elder) William Brewster 1620 (*) "Mayflower" Plymouth
(Father of No. 1)
b. 1567
p.b. Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, Eng. (near Sherwood Forest)
m. 1590
p.m. Scrooby
d. 10 Apr 1644
p.d. Plymouth MA

(14) (15,804) 2 William Brewster (Postmaster) at Scrooby
(Father of No. 2)
b. ca 1535
p.b. ? Yorkshire ?
m. before 1564
p.m. ? Scrooby
d. 1590
p.d. Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, England

(15) (31,608) 4 William Brewster
(Father of No. 4)
b. ca 1505
p.b. Bentley cum Arksey, Yorkshire Eng. (near Doncaster)
m. before 1535
p.m.
d. 15
p.d. Bentley cum Arksey ?

(16) (63,216) 8 Brewster
b.
m.
d.
(Father of No. 8, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(63,217) 17
b.
d.
(Mother of No. 8, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(31,609) 9 Maude Man
(Mother of No. 4)
b.
p.b.
d. soon after 1566 Eng.
p.d.

(63,218) 18 Man
b.
m.
d.
(Father of No. 9, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(63,219) 19
b.
d.
(Mother of No. 9, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(15,805) 5
(Mother of No. 2)
b. 15
p.b. ...shire, Eng.
d.
p.d. Scrooby, Notts.

(31,610) 10 Smythe
(Father of No. 5)
b.
p.b. of Steinforth, Hatfield Park, Yorkshire (near Doncaster)
m.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

(63,220) 20 Smythe
b.
m.
d.
(Father of No. 10, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(63,221) 21
b.
d.
(Mother of No. 10, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(31,611) 11
(Mother of No. 5)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(63,222) 22
b.
m.
d.
(Father of No. 11, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(63,223) 23
b.
d.
(Mother of No. 11, Cont. on chart No. ______)

Fraternal

(12) (3951) 1 Patience Brewster 1623 (*) "Anne" Plymouth
b. 1595
p.b. Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, Eng.
m. 5 Aug. 1624
p.m. Plymouth
d. around 12 Dec 1634 (epidemic)
p.d. Plymouth

Maternal

(Governor) Thomas Prence "Fortune" Plymouth
(Spouse of No. 1)
b. ca 1600
p.b. "carriage maker of London"
d. 29 Mar 1673
p.d. Plymouth

(15,806) 3 Thomas Wentworth
(Father of No. 3)
b. 15
p.b. Scrooby, Notts, Eng
m. 15
p.m. ? Yorkshire
d. will Mar 1574 proved 2 Feb 1576
p.d. Scrooby

"Golden Thomas" fought in Battle of Spurs (knighted for bravery)
(31,612) 12 (Sir) Thomas Wentworth, Knight
(Father of No. 6)
b. 1478
p.b. Wentworth-Woodhouse
m. before 13 June 1511
p.m.
d. 5 Dec 1545
p.d. Wentworth-Woodhouse

(63,224) 24 William Wentworth, Esq.
b.
m. 39th Henry VI
d.
(Father of No. 12, Cont. on chart No. D16d)

(63,225) 25 Isabel, dau of (Sir) Richard Fitz-William Knight
b.
d.
(Mother of No. 12, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(31,613) 13 Beatrix Woodruff
(Mother of No. 6)
b. 14
p.b. Wooley Eng
d.
p.d.

(63,226) 26 (Sir) Richard Woodruff, Knight
b. 14
m. of Wooley
d.
(Father of No. 13, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(63,227) 27 Beatrice Fitzwilliam
b. 14
d. Wooley
(Mother of No. 13, Cont. on chart No. D16c)

1620 (*) "Mayflower" Plymouth
(7903) 3 Mary Wentworth
(Mother of No. 1)
b. ? 1569
p.b. Scrooby
d. 17 Apr 1627
p.d. Plymouth

(31,614) 14 John Gascoigne, Esq.
(Father of No. 7)
b.
p.b.
m. of Lasingcroft, Yorks.
p.m.
d.
p.d.

(63,228) 28 Gascoigne
b.
m.
d.
(Father of No. 14, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(63,229) 29
b.
d.
(Mother of No. 14, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(15,807) 7 Grace Gascoigne
(Mother of No. 3)
b. 15
p.b. Lasingcroft, Yorkshire
d. 15
p.d. Scrooby, Notts. 1621

(31,615) 15
(Mother of No. 7)
b.
p.b.
d.
p.d.

(63,230) 30
b.
m.
d.
(Father of No. 15, Cont. on chart No. ______)

(63,231) 31
b.
d.
(Mother of No. 15, Cont. on chart No. ______)

The family of Mrs Mary Brewster is yet unknown

She wasn't Wentworth, No.

MILWAUKEE COUNTY GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY Rev. 1985

CHART No. 1

(Dodge Ancestors)
(Partalotal Averill Ancestors)

Family Record

Family No. Brewster ①
Surname

Father – William BREWSTER III (Mayflower 1620)

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1565		Nottinghamshire	England		
Death	20	April	1644	Plymouth		Plymouth Colony America		
Buried								
Married		ca	1586/7	Scrooby?	″	England		

Occupation Secretary to Ambassador; Postmaster/Innkeeper; Printing Press + Language Teacher in Leyden Church Elder of Pilgrims

Places Lived Scrooby, Entered 3 Dec 1580 St Peters (Peterhouse, Cambridge Univ) – attended ca 5yrs – entered employment of Wm Davison, Ambassador

Other Wives + later Sec State for Queen Elizabeth, visited Holland with him. In 1587 Davison made scapegoat for slaying of Mary Queen of Scots.
Ret'd to Scrooby to take father's post. Entertained Separatists.
Escaped to Holland ca 1607/8.

His Father's Name William Brewster (Postmaster)

His Mother's Maiden Name Mary (Smythe) Sinkinson, widow of John

Mother – Mary ( ). (Wentworth or Love?) (Mayflower 1620)

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1567	Scrooby	Nottinghamshire	England		
Death	17	April	1627	Plymouth		Plymouth Colony		
Buried								

Occupation Military Church Pilgrim

Places Lived

Other Husbands

Her Father's Name ?? Thomas Wentworth

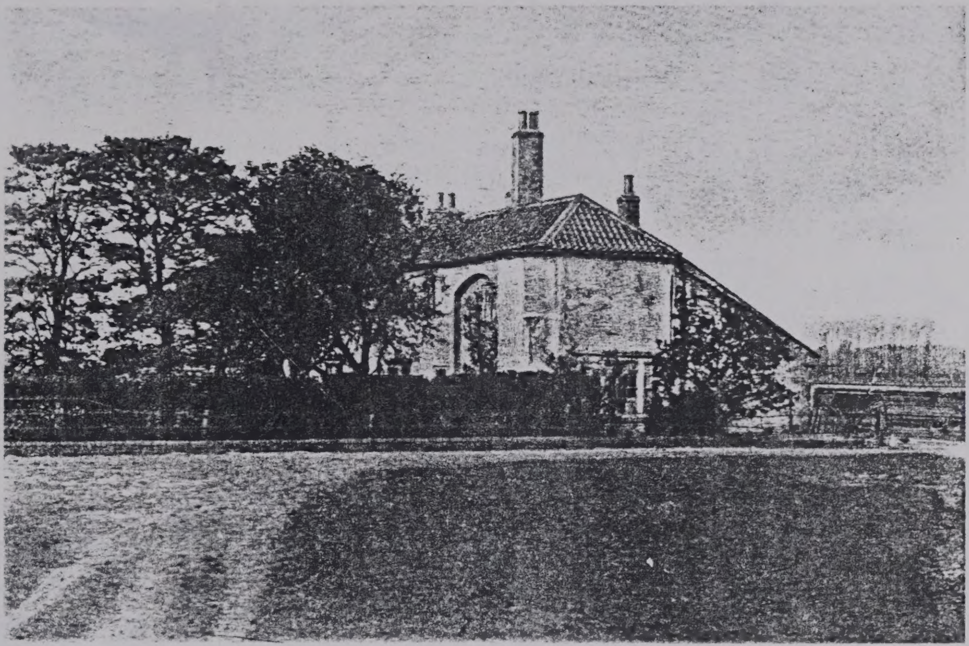
Her Mother's Maiden Name ?? Grace Gascoigne

Children (will of Robert Hartley dated 11 Apr 1606 leaves a small legacy to the daughter Elizabeth)

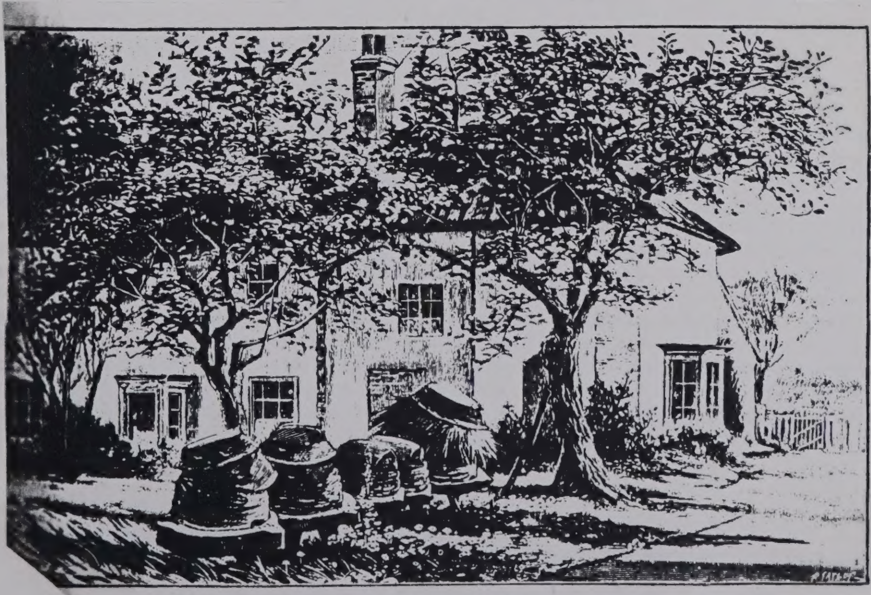
Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. (Possibly) William Brewster IV	Birth		ca	1587	London?		England	
	Spouse – With Virginia Co to VA Colony 1609 "Died of wounds inflicted by the savages"	Death	10	Aug	1608	Jamestown?		VA Colony	
		Married		—					
	2. (Probably) Captain of bodyguards of Lord De La Warre (1610) Edward Brewster	Birth		ca	1589	London?		England	
	Spouse – Retd to London in trouble for criticizing new governor, became conformist – ? bookseller 1635	Death		after	1656?	″		″	
		Married		?					
(?	3. (Possibly) doubtful Elizabeth Brewster (Claimed by Emerson Genealogy)	Birth		ca	1592	London?		England	
	Spouse – Thomas Emerson	Death	after		1666	Ipswich		Mass. Bay Colony	
		Married	1	July	1611	St Michael's Ch., Bishop's Stortford, Herts., Eng			
	4. Jonathan Brewster (Fortune 1621) (1649 to CT)	Birth	15	Aug	1593	Scrooby	Nottinghamshire	England	
	Spouse – ① unk, bur 10 May 1619 Leyden Holland ② Lucretia Oldham of "Darby" Eng.	Death	7	Aug	1659	Preston		Connecticut	
		Married	② 10	Apr	1624	Plymouth		Plymouth Colony	
	5. Love Brewster	Birth		ca	1595	Scrooby			
	Spouse – Sarah Collier (1615–1665) She m/2 Richard Parker	Death			1650	Duxbury		Plymouth Colony	
		Married	15	May	1634 O.S.	Plymouth		″	
+	6. Patience Brewster (Anne 1623)	Birth		ca	1600?				
	Spouse – Thomas Prence (ca 1600 – 29 Mar 1673) he m/2 Sarah Collier	Death	Slightly bef 12	Dec	1634	Plymouth		Plymouth Colony	
		Married	5	Aug	1624	″		″	
	7. Fear Brewster (Anne 1623)	Birth		ca	1607?				
	Spouse – Isaac Allerton (c1568 – Feb 1659) New Haven	Death		Dec	1634	Plymouth		Plymouth Colony	
		Married	bef.	May	1627	″		″	
	8. Wrestling Brewster	Birth			160_				
	Spouse – unmarried	Death	after	May	1627				
		Married		—					
	9. ? Brewster	Birth			16__				
	Spouse –	Death	bur 20	June	1609	St Pancras	Leyden	Holland	
		Married		—					

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

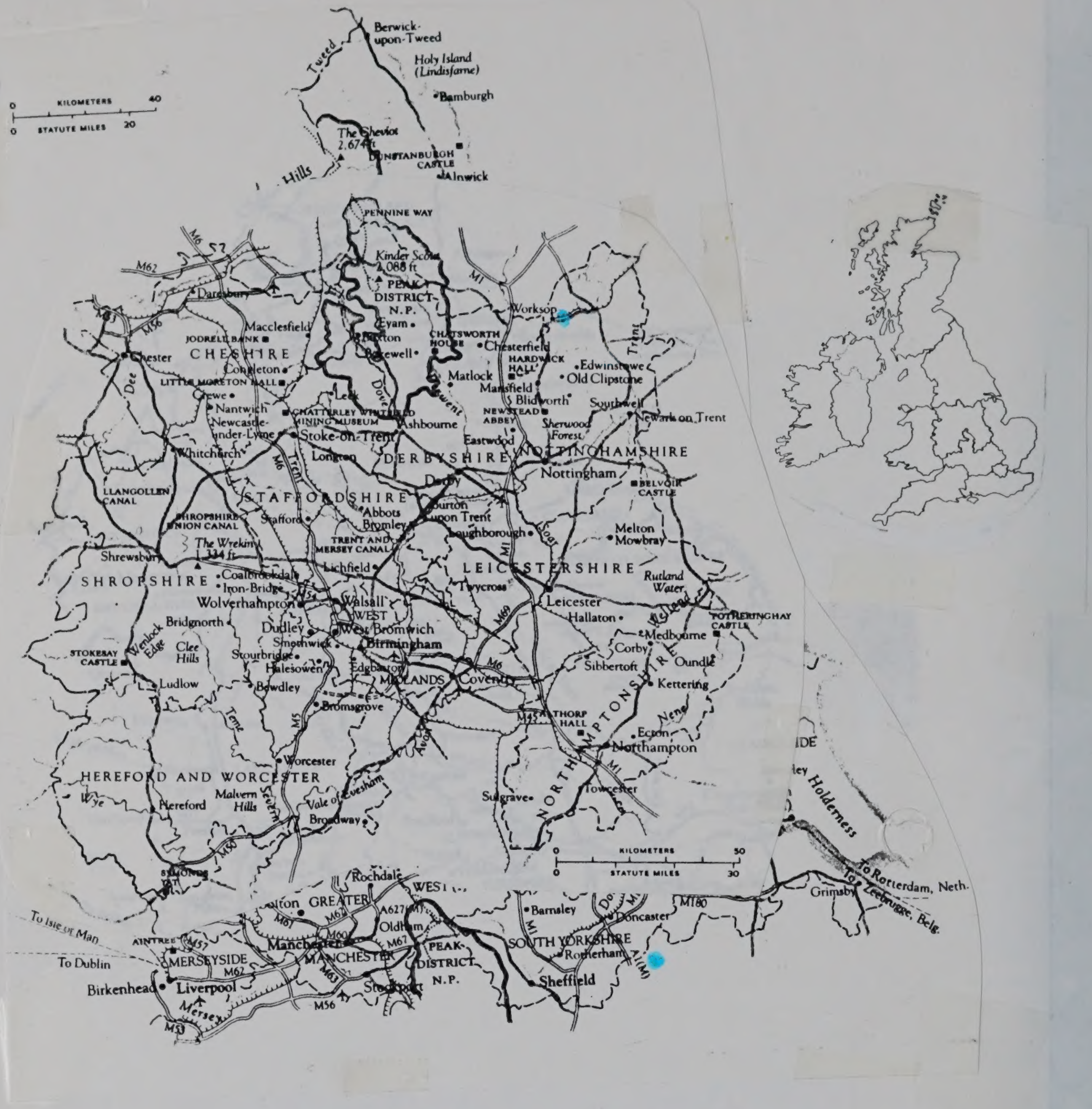
For Proven Children of Thomas and Patience (Brewster) Prence, see Prence File
For (Unproven Brewster Line) Children of Thomas and Elizabeth (Brewster) Emerson see Emerson File



WILLIAM BREWSTER'S MANOR HOUSE AT SCROOBY
(Copyright by A. S. Burbank, Plymouth)



THE OLD MANOR HOUSE, SCROOBY.
(From a sketch by CHARLES WHYMPER.)

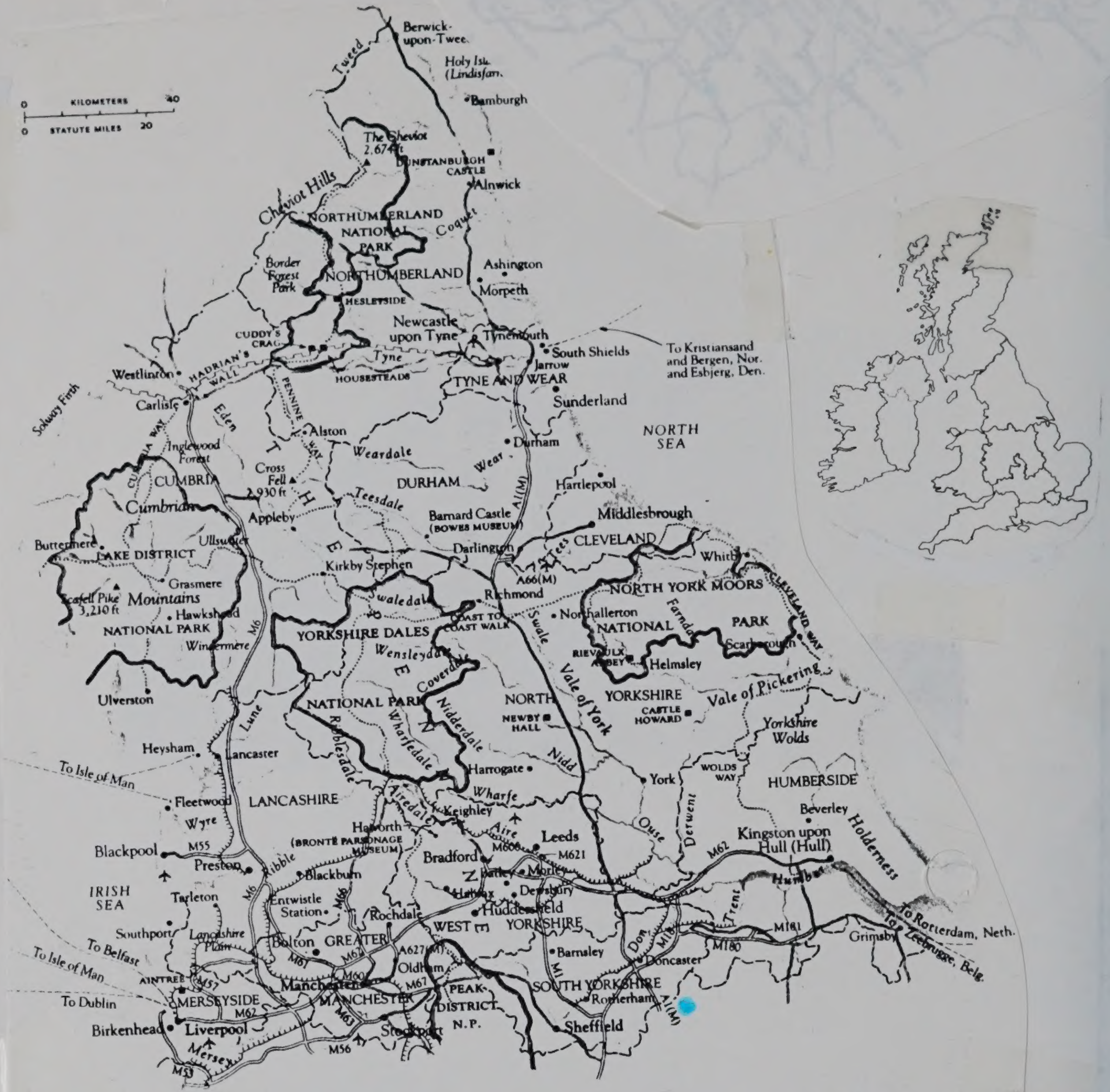

Berwick-upon-Tweed
Holy Island (Lindisfarne)
Tweed
Bamburgh
The Cheviot 2,674 ft
DUNSTANBURGH CASTLE
Alnwick
Hills
KILOMETERS 0 40
STATUTE MILES 0 20
PENNINE WAY
Kinder Scout 2,088 ft
PEAK DISTRICT N.P.
Eyam
Buxton
Bakewell
CHATSWORTH HOUSE
Chesterfield
HARDWICK HALL
Worksop
Edwinstowe
Old Clipstone
Matlock
Mansfield
Blidworth
Southwell
Newark on Trent
NEWSTEAD ABBEY
Sherwood Forest
Eastwood
Trent
Dove
Derwent
M1
M62
M6
M56
M53
Daresbury
Macclesfield
JODRELL BANK
CHESHIRE
Chester
Congleton
LITTLE MORETON HALL
Dee
Crewe
Leek
Nantwich
Newcastle-under-Lyme
CHATTERLEY WHITFIELD MINING MUSEUM
Stoke-on-Trent
Ashbourne
Whitchurch
Longton
DERBYSHIRE
NOTTINGHAMSHIRE
Nottingham
BELVOIR CASTLE
Derby
LLANGOLLEN CANAL
STAFFORDSHIRE
Burton upon Trent
SHROPSHIRE UNION CANAL
Stafford
Abbots Bromley
Loughborough
Soar
Melton Mowbray
The Wrekin 1,334 ft
TRENT AND MERSEY CANAL
Lichfield
Shrewsbury
SHROPSHIRE
Coalbrookdale
Iron-Bridge
LEICESTERSHIRE
Rutland Water
Twycross
Wolverhampton
M54
Walsall
Leicester
Hallaton
Welland
FOTHERINGHAY CASTLE
WEST
Bridgnorth
Dudley
West Bromwich
M69
Medbourne
Corby
Oundle
STOKESAY CASTLE
Wenlock Edge
Clee Hills
Stourbridge
Smethwick
Birmingham
Halesowen
Edgbaston
Sibbertoft
Kettering
Ludlow
Bewdley
MIDLANDS
Coventry
M6
Bromsgrove
Teme
M5
Avon
M45
ALTHORP HALL
Nene
Ecton
Northampton
NORTHAMPTONSHIRE
Worcester
HEREFORD AND WORCESTER
Wye
Hereford
Malvern Hills
Severn
Vale of Evesham
Broadway
Sulgrave
Towcester
M50
SYMONDS YAT
KILOMETERS 0 50
STATUTE MILES 0 30
Rochdale
Bolton
GREATER
WEST
A627(M)
M66
M61
M62
Oldham
M60
M67
To Isle of Man
AINTREE
M57
Manchester
MANCHESTER
PEAK DISTRICT N.P.
To Dublin
MERSEYSIDE
M62
M63
Birkenhead
Liverpool
Stockport
M56
Mersey
M53
Barnsley
Don
M18
Doncaster
M180
SOUTH YORKSHIRE
Rotherham
A1(M)
Sheffield
Grimsby
To Rotterdam, Neth.
To Zeebrugge, Belg.
Holderness
IDE

BREWSTER[*]

WILLIAM^{1} BREWSTER,[†] son[2] of William and Prudence (——) Brewster of Scrooby, England, lived a life of amazing variety, of infinite loyalty to principle, of marvelous endurance, and of great meekness and righteousness. He was born[1,2,4,8,21] about 1566–7, probably at or near Scrooby,[1] where his family certainly lived by the time he was five years old. As a youth, having prepared himself by the study of Latin and Greek, he matriculated[1,2] on December 3, 1580, at St. Peter's, more commonly called Peterhouse, the oldest of the fourteen colleges which at that time formed the University of Cambridge. He did not complete the course [which then required seven years, sometimes twelve, fourteen, or more], and, indeed, he probably left the university by 1583–4, for

[*] In this chapter, more than in most, the frequent use of reference numbers through the text is quite inadequate, and the authorities quoted might fitly be read in full.

[†] William Brewster, senior (–1590), was[1,2,3,4] resident at or near Scrooby when his son, the future "Elder," was only about five years old, as is shown by the fact that he was assessed in the township of Scrooby-cum-Ranskil in 1571. The Archbishop of York, referring to the father, granted in 1575–6 "to our trusty and well-beloved servant William Brewster," the office of Receiver of the Manor of Scrooby "and all of the Liberties of the same in the County of Nottingham." Furthermore, he then commissioned Brewster as Bailiff of the same territory, these offices to endure "to the end of his life." This did not necessitate, but doubtless implied, actual residence in the manor-house and it made him responsible, both legally and financially,[21] for seventeen towns and probably more than five hundred tenants. By or before 1588 he also became postmaster there, under the Crown, and retained that office until his death in 1590. It involved not only the forwarding of mail and despatches but also the keeping of an inn at the Manor and a supply of post-horses. In June of that year, when the Earl of Worcester passed through Scrooby on his way to Scotland, William Brewster, senior, furnished him fresh horses, but on the Earl's return, some weeks later, he found that the old gentleman had died. On July 24, 1590, administration of his estate was granted[2,3,21] to his son William^{1} Brewster with the approval of the widow, Prudence, they being the only named heirs. For a year and a half previously the son had been performing the duties of post in his father's behalf and he at once asked for personal appointment. Through a misunderstanding, compliance was temporarily withheld, and the situation resulted in a series of letters (in part extant) between William Davison, his former patron and Sir John Stanhope, newly appointed postmaster-general. William^{1} was shortly, if not immediately, reinstated in this position in his own behalf; for the earliest existing records, dating back to April 1, 1594, show the payment from that date of his fees, which then amounted to twenty pence per day, being raised on July 1, 1603, to two shillings per diem. He filled this office until September 30, 1607, a total of fully seventeen years.[2,4,11,12] It seems highly probable that his relinquishment of it was compulsory because of his religious views and his sponsoring of, and identification with, the Scrooby Separatists. This theory is strengthened by the fact that in April, 1608, he was fined £20 by the Commissioners of Ecclesiastical Causes for non-appearance to their citation.[4,16,27] It is said that, without William^{1} Brewster to act as leader, it is probable no Separatist Church would have been gathered.[4] His mother, Prudence, died after July, 1590, and probably before 1608, when they removed to Holland.[1,2,3,4,21]


KILOMETERS 0 40
STATUTE MILES 0 20
Berwick-upon-Tweed
Holy Isl. (Lindisfarne)
Bamburgh
Tweed
The Cheviot 2,674 ft
DUNSTANBURGH CASTLE
Alnwick
Cheviot Hills
NORTHUMBERLAND NATIONAL PARK
Coquet
Border Forest Park
NORTHUMBERLAND
Ashington
Morpeth
HESLEYSIDE
Newcastle upon Tyne
Tynemouth
South Shields
Jarrow
CUDDY'S CRAG
HADRIAN'S WALL
Tyne
HOUSESTEADS
TYNE AND WEAR
Sunderland
To Kristiansand and Bergen, Nor. and Esbjerg, Den.
Westlinton
Solway Firth
Carlisle
Eden
PENNINE WAY
Alston
Durham
NORTH SEA
Weardale
Wear
Inglewood Forest
CUMBRIA WAY
CUMBRIA
Cross Fell 2,930 ft
DURHAM
A1(M)
Hartlepool
Cumbrian
Teesdale
Appleby
Barnard Castle (BOWES MUSEUM)
Middlesbrough
Buttermere
Ullswater
Darlington
Tees
CLEVELAND
LAKE DISTRICT
Kirkby Stephen
A66(M)
Whitby
Grasmere
Richmond
NORTH YORK MOORS
CLEVELAND WAY
Scafell Pike 3,210 ft
Mountains
Swaledale
Hawkshead
COAST TO COAST WALK
Northallerton
Farndale
NATIONAL PARK
Swale
NATIONAL
PARK
M6
YORKSHIRE DALES
Windermere
Wensleydale
RIEVAULX ABBEY
Helmsley
Scarborough
Coverdale
Ulverston
Vale of York
YORKSHIRE
Vale of Pickering
NATIONAL PARK
NORTH
Lune
NEWBY HALL
CASTLE HOWARD
Yorkshire Wolds
Nidderdale
Wharfedale
Ribblesdale
Heysham
Lancaster
Harrogate
Nidd
T H E P E N N I N E S
To Isle of Man
York
WOLDS WAY
HUMBERSIDE
Airedale
Wharfe
Fleetwood
LANCASHIRE
Keighley
Beverley
Wyre
Haworth (BRONTË PARSONAGE MUSEUM)
Aire
Leeds
Ouse
Derwent
Kingston upon Hull (Hull)
Holderness
Blackpool
M55
M606
M621
M62
Preston
Ribble
Bradford
Blackburn
Batley
Morley
IRISH SEA
Tarleton
Dewsbury
Halifax
Humber
Entwistle Station
M6
M66
Rochdale
Huddersfield
Trent
Southport
Lancashire Plain
WEST
YORKSHIRE
M181
Grimsby
To Rotterdam, Neth.
To Zeebrugge, Belg.
To Belfast
Bolton
GREATER
A627(M)
Don
M18
M180
To Isle of Man
M61
M62
Barnsley
AINTREE
M57
M60
Oldham
Doncaster
M1
Manchester
M67
SOUTH YORKSHIRE
To Dublin
MERSEYSIDE
MANCHESTER
PEAK DISTRICT N.P.
Rotherham
A1(M)
M62
M63
Birkenhead
Liverpool
Stockport
Sheffield
Mersey
M56
M53

BREWSTER[*]

WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER,[†] son[2] of William and Prudence (——) Brewster of Scrooby, England, lived a life of amazing variety, of infinite loyalty to principle, of marvelous endurance, and of great meekness and righteousness. He was born[1, 2, 4, 8, 21] about 1566–7, probably at or near Scrooby,[1] where his family certainly lived by the time he was five years old. As a youth, having prepared himself by the study of Latin and Greek, he matriculated[1, 2] on December 3, 1580, at St. Peter's, more commonly called Peterhouse, the oldest of the fourteen colleges which at that time formed the University of Cambridge. He did not complete the course [which then required seven years, sometimes twelve, fourteen, or more], and, indeed, he probably left the university by 1583–4, for about that time he entered the employ[1,2,5,6] of William Davison, then an ambassador for, and later Secretary of State to, Queen Elizabeth. In regard to this relation, it is said of WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER that Davison "trusted him above all other that were aboute him, and only imployed him in all matters of greatest trust and secrecie. He esteemed him rather as a sonne then a servante . . ."[1,2,6,21] With Davison, WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER went into Holland in August, 1585, on a diplomatic mission,[4,5] returning soon after January 22, 1585–6. Davison was presently deliberately[6] and wrongfully accused by the Queen with responsibility for the execution of Mary, Queen of Scots, and in consequence was, on February 14, 1586–7, thrown into the Tower.[6] WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER remained near for some time to comfort and, if possible, to aid his friend and patron, but this occurrence definitely closed his career in the political or diplomatic field. "Afterwards he wente and lived in y^e^ country . . .,"[11] which doubtless meant at Scrooby [see note, p. 143].

---

[*] In this chapter, more than in most, the frequent use of reference numbers through the text is quite inadequate, and the authorities quoted might fitly be read in full.

[†] William Brewster, senior (–1590), was[1, 2, 3, 4] resident at or near Scrooby when his son, the future "Elder," was only about five years old, as is shown by the fact that he was assessed in the township of Scrooby-cum-Ranskil in 1571. The Archbishop of York, referring to the father, granted in 1575–6 "to our trusty and well-beloved servant William Brewster," the office of Receiver of the Manor of Scrooby "and all of the Liberties of the same in the County of Nottingham." Furthermore, he then commissioned Brewster as Bailiff of the same territory, these offices to endure "to the end of his life." This did not necessitate, but doubtless implied, actual residence in the manor-house and it made him responsible, both legally and financially,[21] for seventeen towns and probably more than five hundred tenants. By or before 1588 he also became postmaster there, under the Crown, and retained that office until his death in 1590. It involved not only the forwarding of mail and despatches but also the keeping of an inn at the Manor and a supply of post-horses. In June of that year, when the Earl of Worcester passed through Scrooby on his way to Scotland, William Brewster, senior, furnished him fresh horses, but on the Earl's return, some weeks later, he found that the old gentleman had died. On July 24, 1590, administration of his estate was granted[2, 3, 21] to his son William^1 Brewster with the approval of the widow, Prudence, they being the only named heirs. For a year and a half previously the son had been performing the duties of post in his father's behalf and he at once asked for personal appointment. Through a misunderstanding, compliance was temporarily withheld, and the situation resulted in a series of letters (in part extant) between William Davison, his former patron and Sir John Stanhope, newly appointed postmaster-general. William^1 was shortly, if not immediately, reinstated in this position in his own behalf; for the earliest existing records, dating back to April 1, 1594, show the payment from that date of his fees, which then amounted to twenty pence per day, being raised on July 1, 1603, to two shillings per diem. He filled this office until September 30, 1607, a total of fully seventeen years.[2, 4, 11, 12] It seems highly probable that his relinquishment of it was compulsory because of his religious views and his sponsoring of, and identification with, the Scrooby Separatists. This theory is strengthened by the fact that in April, 1608, he was fined £20 by the Commissioners of Ecclesiastical Causes for non-appearance to their citation.[4, 16, 27] It is said that, without William^1 Brewster to act as leader, it is probable no Separatist Church would have been gathered.[4] His mother, Prudence, died after July, 1590, and probably before 1608, when they removed to Holland.[1, 2, 3, 4, 21]

It is recorded of him[5] that "He did much good in y^e^ countrie wher he lived, in promoting and furthering religion, not only by his practiss & example, and provocking and incouraging of others, but by procuring of good preachers to y^e^ places theraboute, and drawing on of others to assiste & help forward in such a worke; he him selfe most comonly deepest in y^e^ charge, & some times above his abillitie. . . . After they were joyned togither in comunion, he was a spetiall stay & help unto them. They ordinarily mett at his house [Scrooby] on y^e^ Lords day, (which was a manor of y^e^ bishops,) and with great love he entertained them when they came, making provission for them to his great charge." It seems, therefore, to have been the income from his interests and services* at Scrooby which enabled WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER to entertain and aid the Separatists as he did.

From 1562 may be dated[8] the attempted "separation" from the State Church of those who ultimately bore the titles[22] of either "Puritan" or the

---

*The following items of statements of payments[10] made to WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER by Sir Timothy Hutton in 1605, on his way to and from London, are significant of their customs:

"Item, to the post of Scrobie ffor 11 myle, and the gyde *6d.*	o	10	o
Item, to hym that kept the post horses, and for drising of bootes	o	o	6
Item, for a cawdall and supper, and breakfast	o	7	10
Item, ffor ffyre	o	o	7
Item, to the chamberlain and the maid that burnt the boothowse (sic)	o	o	6
Item, to the powre	o	o	6"

And on his return he paid:

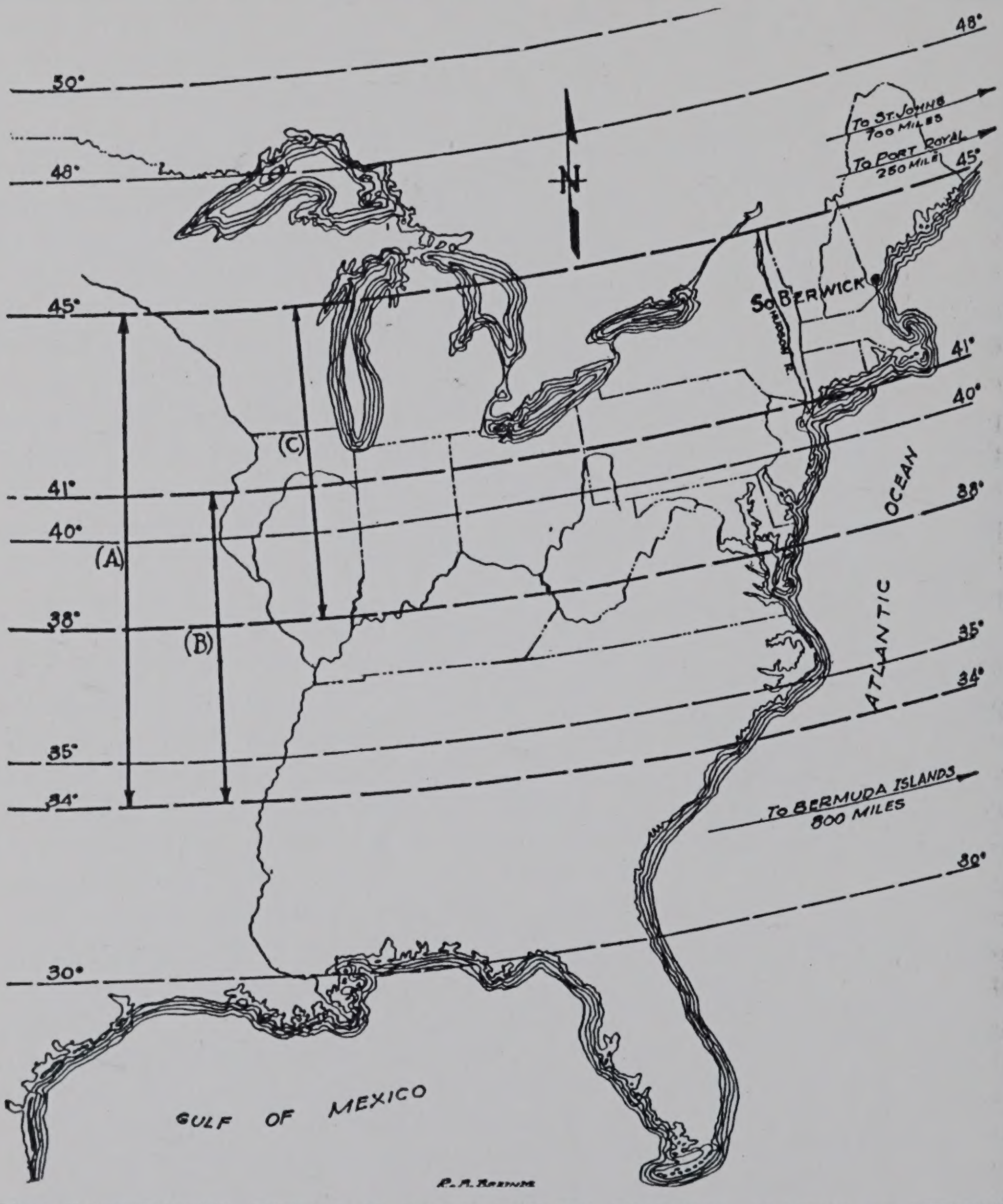
"The post of Scrobie for 7 myle, and for hymselfe	o	8	o
For burnt sack, bread, bear, and suger to wyne that was gyven	o	2	o
The ostler *3d.*; the powr *6d*	o	o	9"

stronger term "Separatist," to which latter class[1, 14] the Pilgrim Fathers belonged.* In the vicinity of Scrooby was a group of Separatists who, above all others in England, were so serious and single-minded in their belief, so cohesive in their common plan, that they eventually emigrated as a compact and united body.[11] But before that came to pass much of suffering was endured. A law was passed making it treason to worship other than in the State Church; the scaffold was the penalty for distributing Separatist literature and, as a consequence, many were jailed and some were executed. Yet they continued to hold their meetings in secret hidden places. As early as 1582 escape from the country had begun to be practised,[8] and by 1592 the idea of exchanging persecution and death in England for exile to some foreign land, preferably "in an unbroken company," was being considered.[8] Emigration then, however, meant expulsion beyond the limits of civilization, with danger and suffering to all and inevitable death to a large proportion of its participants. Indeed, "up to the time of the exile [to New England] of the Pilgrim fathers no American Colony had succeeded though many had been attempted."[18]

In the meanwhile the Separatist group at Scrooby was growing both in numbers and in strength of conviction. John Robinson had become their pastor; their meetings were held at the home of William^1 Brewster (often secretly, in his cellar or stable), and the youth William Bradford, later their historian, had joined them. In 1604, when Bancroft succeeded to the Primacy, persecution increased. Excommunication was the penalty for nonconformity, property was confiscated, and only by means of the Separatists' persecution, recorded by their enemies, do we learn of their lives. Finding themselves menaced by increasing persecution, constantly watched, imprisoned, unable to live peaceably or to worship as their consciences dictated, they decided in 1607 to go as a body to Holland, where certain English had preceded them and where freedom of worship was permitted. The ports were closed[9] to them, however, and no such departure would be legally permitted, so they had to plan to escape secretly and in small groups. To that end they would bribe captains of vessels and would embark at a remote place, often only to be betrayed. One rather large group, which included William^1 Brewster, chartered at great expense a vessel which was to take them aboard at Boston, Lincolnshire. This embarkation was accomplished under

---

* "The Pilgrim was the Puritan in his superlative degree . . . ,"[18] not as to the narrow religious views displayed by the Puritan of New England but as to the separation from the State Church.


50°
48°
48°
N
To St. Johns 700 Miles
To Port Royal 250 Miles
45°
45°
So Berwick
Hudson R.
41°
40°
(C)
41°
40°
(A)
38°
(B)
Ocean
38°
Atlantic
35°
34°
35°
34°
To Bermuda Islands 800 Miles
30°
30°
Gulf of Mexico

MAP ILLUSTRATING EXTENT OF EARLY ENGLISH CHARTERS; PLACING OF BERWICK, MAINE, WHERE EARLY RAYMONDS LIVED AND WHERE BENJAMIN² OBER DIED; THE APPROXIMATE PLACING OF ST. JOHNS AND PORT ROYAL [see DODGE, p. 325], AND OF THE BERMUDA ISLANDS [see HOPKINS, p. 449].

p147 missing

cover of night, but when all were aboard they and their possessions were turned over to the authorities, who not only confiscated the goods, stripped and searched their persons, even the women, for money, but threw them all into the local jail called[14] significantly "Little-Ease-Prison." After a month the greater number were set free, but seven of the principal men, including WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER, were still held and bound over to the assizes.[1,2] The following spring another attempt was made to reach Holland by engaging a vessel belonging to a Dutch captain. They arranged a distant meeting-place on the coast which necessitated a trip of about fifty miles in small boats for the women, children and goods, and a cross-country walk of about forty miles by the men.[7,9] The captain, after loading a few of the men, saw armed constables and soldiers approaching to arrest his passengers, so he hurriedly sailed away, separating these men from their families and even their clothing, and leaving their women and children unprotected. The latter were taken into custody and brought before judge after judge who, finding no case against them, were loath to bear the expense of their support[9] and finally discharged the unhappy, homeless women and children to shift for themselves.

"And in y^e end, notwithstanding all these stormes of opposition, they all gatt over at length, some at one time & some at an other . . ." though it required more than a year (during 1607–8) to accomplish this; and it is estimated that not less than one hundred twenty-five souls removed, among the last ones to leave being Pastor Robinson and WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER.

In Holland they settled first at Amsterdam for about a year, and in the spring of 1609 removed to Leyden.[5,9] Here they had great joy in their religious freedom but found it very hard to earn a livelihood, for their occupation had formerly been agricultural rather than in the trades; moreover, in Holland all lines of skilled labor [through the guilds] were open only to legal citizens of the country.

Here WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER was chosen as first assistant to John Robinson "in y^e place of an Elder" and not later than 1613 he was duly elected Ruling Elder.[11] Scattered personal items show that on June 12, 1609, WILLIAM^1 was guardian to a girl named Ann Peck, who had been born near Scrooby; that on June 20, 1609, a child of his was buried, the family being then resident in Stink-Steeg [Stench Lane]; and that by June 25 of that year he had already removed to the lane called St. Ursulas. There deposition was made on that date, individually, by WILLIAM^1, aged about forty-two, by his wife, MARY, aged about forty, and by their son Jonathan^2, aged about sixteen, as to the receipt at their home of a bale of cloth from Amsterdam.[21] William^1 later moved to Choor-Steeg [Choir Alley], near St. Peter's Church and Pastor Robinson's home, the latter being in the building where the Separatists held their services. During their residence in Holland William^1, his wife, his elder son, Jonathan^2, and daughter Patience^2, were witnesses at the betrothal or marriage of various members of the Separatist group.[24] William^1 occupied himself in part by teaching the English language to foreign students who came to Leyden to attend the university, and in addition was called a master printer.[21] In the latter business he was associated as a partner and manager [from about October, 1616, to the summer of 1619] with Thomas Brewer, an Englishman who financed the project and gave over his own attic in the "Green House" in Klok-Steeg [Bell Lane] in which to carry on the business.[17, 21] This was very near both the Brewster home and the Robinson home and church. Here many books were published, some in English and some in Latin, most of them religious in type and a number of them Separatist in import.[1] As a result, the English government, in July, 1619, demanded the arrest of William^1 Brewster on the charge that he had printed books on forbidden subjects.[7, 11, 17, 21] He quickly went into hiding[9] either in Holland or in England, or both, and appears to have remained hidden until the embarkation of the Pilgrims in August, 1620. Meantime the Dutch authorities in September, 1619, had searched and sealed the attic printing-shop and distrained the type, and stored it at the Leyden University, where it still remained[21] in May, 1620.

This undivided Separatist group lived in Holland for twelve peaceful, though toilsome, years from 1608 to 1620; but before 1617 they had realized that, if they would preserve the integrity of their religion, speech and nationality, they must find a home in a remote place where they could lay the foundation for a liberal Christian colony.[11] Bradford says:[11] "A great hope & inward zeall they had of laying some good foundation, or at least to make some way thereunto, for y^e propagating & advancing y^e gospell of y^e kingdom of Christ . . . ; yea, though they should be but even as stepping-stones unto others for y^e performing of so great a work." In the light of history their residence in Holland appears as a necessary period of probation[28] to fit them for the more arduous life which they must face if they attempted colonization. "They left England simply religious devotees; they finally left Holland trained, disciplined, practical men. They crossed the German Ocean, in 1608, full of religious zeal and trust in God; they crossed the Atlantic, in

1620, equally full of self-reliance and trust in themselves" in addition to their religious faith. In 1617 negotiations were begun in London to ascertain the possibilities for colonization, and for three years there followed a series of conferences [in some of which WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER took a part] which caused their hopes to be in turn raised, deferred, disappointed, and raised again. But through all of this turmoil of uncertainty the courage and determination of the leaders held true. They had had under consideration the possibility of settlement either in the northern part of the Virginia Company's holdings or under the Dutch on the Hudson River. In June, 1619, they acquired a patent under the former plan and, when they finally sailed, it was with the expectation of settling under the Virginia Company,[11, 12] which would have located them somewhere near, and probably south of, the mouth of the Hudson River* [see map on p. 146].

---

*In 1606 there were two companies formed in England[28, 29] for the purpose of colonization, and to them King James granted land in the New World consisting of a strip one hundred miles wide along the Atlantic coast [ignoring, then, the interior] from the thirty-fourth to the forty-fifth degrees of north latitude, which would have extended from Cape Fear to the British provinces and which, as a whole, was then called Virginia. The first, or south Virginia, company, made up of London gentlemen, received a patent from the thirty-fourth to the forty-first degrees, or between Cape Fear and a line running through Port Chester on Long Island Sound and the easterly corner of New Jersey on the Hudson. The second, or northern, company, made up of gentlemen from Bristol, Exeter and Plymouth, was often called the Plymouth Company and ultimately the "Council . . . at Plymouth . . . for . . . planting . . . and governing of New England . . . " Its grant covered lands between the thirty-eighth and forty-fifth degrees, or between the southeast corner of Maryland and the British provinces. That strip of land lying between the thirty-eighth and forty-first degrees, which was tentatively included in both patents, was to be granted to that company which should first occupy it, provided that neither organization should settle on any land within a hundred miles of a location previously occupied by the other. It was within this tentative northern part, but under the southern Virginia Company's claim, that the Pilgrims, while still in Leyden, received a grant and expected to settle [see map on p. 146]. Evidence of the use of the name "Virginia," as applied to territory far north of what that name now signifies, is found in the nuncupative will of William Mullins [father of the noted Priscilla], who died in New Plymouth during the winter of 1620–1. This document referred to a stock of boots and shoes which he had "in Virginia" and offered land to his son William, Jr., then in England, if he would "come to Virginia," meaning Plymouth Colony.[28, 29]

Many overlapping interests are found[30] linking together certain members of the Brewster family, certain members of the Virginia Company of London, and certain passengers in the Mayflower with certain early settlers in Virginia and Plymouth, New England. In connection with this subject may be listed these items:

(1) Sir Edwin Sandys, under whose encouragement and official sanction the Pilgrims, while in Leyden, acquired the above mentioned patent for lands in America, was a son of the Archbishop of York who had appointed WILLIAM BREWSTER, senior (father of Elder WILLIAM^1), as his representative at Scrooby. Thus the sons continued the acquaintance and trust which their fathers had enjoyed. Incidentally, Sir Edwin was instrumental in sending the bride-ships to Virginia as well as the shipload of London orphans in 1618.

(2) In the diplomatic service of William Davison, secretary to Queen Elizabeth, WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER (later our Elder) was associated with George Cranmer, who was also a close friend of Sir Edwin Sandys; and that man's younger brother, William Cranmer, in June, 1619, acquired from Capt. Edward Brewster [see following] one share of Virginia Company stock and in 1621 removed to Virginia to become auditor for this company which Sir Edwin Sandys served officially, in England, from 1607 to 1620. George Sandys, younger brother of Sir Edwin, owned stock in the company and in 1621 became its colonial treasurer, emigrating in that year with Sir Francis Wyat, governor-elect, who had purchased in November, 1620, four shares of its stock from Capt. Edward Brewster [see following]. Moreover, in 1621, Christopher Davison (son of the Queen's secretary, above) became the company's secretary in Virginia.

After endless difficulty in preparing acceptable "Articles of Agreement"; in raising funds [by the sale of their own property to swell the common purse and by subscriptions from friends* called "adventurers" or stockholders]; in the purchase of needed supplies; and in engaging vessels, the departure was planned for the summer of 1620. It was decided that participation in the

---

(3) Stephen Hopkins sailed for Virginia in June, 1609, in the "Sea Venture," one of a fleet of nine vessels under Sir Thomas Gates, governor-elect. This bark, which was wrecked on the Bermudas, was eventually reported to England as lost and as a consequence Lord De La Warr (and with him Capt. Edward Brewster [see following] sailed for Virginia in March, 1610, and arrived in June to take over the government. Sir Thomas Gates with his party, including Stephen Hopkins, by means of vessels built on the island, reached Virginia May 24, 1610, only a few days prior to De La Warr, who had supposed them dead. This Stephen Hopkins is believed by most, if not all, students of both Virginia and New England history to have been identical with our STEPHEN^{I} HOPKINS who sailed for Virginia, but landed at Plymouth, in the "Mayflower" in 1620 [see Hopkins, p. 450]. Christopher Martin, the "governor in the Mayflower," was another member of the Virginia Company and owned land on the James River.

(4) Though it is frequently overlooked, sufficient evidence is found to justify the belief that the family of Elder WILLIAM^{I} BREWSTER was also represented among the subscribers to, and settlers in, Virginia. Known facts are that (a) one "William Bruster, gentleman," unidentified, went to Virginia in 1607, but died there on August 10th of that year, thus eliminating himself; (b) in June, 1609, following the second charter to the Virginia Company (dated May 23rd, just past), Sir Thomas Gates [under whom Stephen Hopkins sailed on June second in the "Sea Venture" for Virginia (see Hopkins, p. 449)], and other gentlemen sent a carefully worded invitation to "His Majesties subjects in the Free States of the United Provinces" (which would include the Pilgrim group), offering them, in an English colony in America, the place of refuge they were seeking in the Netherlands; (c) a William Brewster (who is justly believed to have been Elder WILLIAM^{I} himself), as a result of the above invitation, presently subscribed £20 and received shares to that amount under this charter. Moreover, Elder WILLIAM^{I} was one of the agents who, ten years later, acquired for the Pilgrims a patent consonant with that invitation; (d) a Capt. Edward Brewster, who was recorded as "son of William" (undoubtedly our "Elder"), was also a subscriber to that second charter, paying £30, and this Edward Brewster left England in March and arrived at Virginia in June, 1610, with Lord De La Warr, as captain of that man's own company or bodyguard. After spending about eight years in the colony Capt. Edward had trouble in October, 1618, with Capt. Argall because of his criticism of Argall's handling of the estate of Lord De La Warr after the death of the latter. Argall, then acting-governor, as well as virtual plaintiff in the case, tried Edward Brewster by court-martial and sentenced him to death, but, on petition of the ministers and others in the colony, commuted his sentence to banishment, under oath not to return. Edward Brewster sailed for England "near the beginning of November," 1618, and there appealed the case, which was tried and retried in various courts from 1618 to 1623, with Sir Edwin Sandys (above) actively engaged as referee, counsel, or peacemaker. Ultimately Capt. Edward Brewster [see p. 154] was exonerated and Argall and his associates were whitewashed. Incidentally, Capt. Edward Brewster, on June 17, 1619, transferred one share of his stock in the Virginia Company to William Cranmer [see above] and on November 23, 1620, transferred four shares to Sir Francis Wyat [see above], after which there remained £30 to his credit on the books of the company.

Thus we see members of the Davison, Sandys and Cranmer families (all of whom were intimate with, and associated with, Elder WILLIAM^{I} BREWSTER), appearing as officials of, investors in, and emigrants to the colony of, the Virginia Company; and it seems as logical that Elder WILLIAM^{I} should have invested £20 in its stock in 1609 as that he should have arranged with it, as he did, for a patent and the removal of the Pilgrims in 1619–20. One is led to believe, therefore, that Capt. Edward Brewster was definitely the son of Elder WILLIAM^{I} and, since he sailed for England in November, 1618, undoubtedly that son of whom it was written in August, 1619, "BREWSTER's sonne, of his ffather's sect within this halfe yeare, now comes to Churche" [i.e., the English state church]; and "BREWSTER frightened back into the low countries, his son has conformed and comes to church." And again, " . . . Capt. Edward Brewster his [the Elder's] son also returned this year from Virginia and conformed to the church."[30]

*These included,[11, 12, 19] in addition to WILLIAM^{I} BREWSTER and the other participants, John Beauchamp, brother-in-law of EDMOND^{I} FREEMAN [see Freeman, p. 349], and Timothy Hatherly, who later came to New England and settled in Scituate, Massachusetts, where his sister EGLIN, our ancestress, lived [see DAWES–GATES ANCESTRAL LINES, VOL. I, Foster chapter].

great adventure should be voluntary; that Pastor Robinson* should continue with the major part of the congregation, whether it went or stayed; and that Elder BREWSTER should lead the other group, which proved to be the emigrants. At the time of departure from Leyden the name "Pilgrim" was first applied to them, and by themselves.[25]

The detailed story[11, 12, 20] of all their trials before and during the voyage, and following their arrival at Massachusetts Bay, portrays a tragic picture and one of unrivaled endurance and courage. A summary of a few points shows that, because of the failure at the last moment by some of those who had promised to subscribe, it became necessary, in order to pay the port bill and get clearance papers,[7] to place upon forced sale many of their life-saving supplies such as butter, oil, sole leather and weapons.[9] One grasping stockholder attempted, almost at the hour of sailing, to force upon them, by the retention of a promised subscription, a new and disadvantageous contract. This they refused to sign, yet they generously tempered their refusal by offered concessions which were distinctly to their own detriment. After sailing in the two vessels "Mayflower" and "Speedwell" from Southampton on or about August 5, 1620, they were forced the next day to put into Dartmouth for repairs, thus losing many precious days of perfect weather. After sailing again on August 23, they were obliged a second time, on the following day, to enter port, in this instance at Plymouth, and again ostensibly for repairs. Here it was decided to dismiss the Speedwell (which was either unseaworthy, or whose crew was unwilling to sail) and to take only such passengers and cargo as the Mayflower could carry. Accordingly they reloaded once more and finally set sail[12, 19] from Plymouth on September 6, with one hundred two passengers and the crew and with the menace of fall storms a month nearer than they had anticipated. On board were WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER, their leader, his wife, MARY, and their sons Love^2 and Wrestling^2, as well as STEPHEN^1 and ELIZABETH (FISHER) HOPKINS and FRANCIS^1 COOKE. The fair winds with which they started soon gave way to such fierce equinoctial storms that the survival of the vessel seems a miracle. After a voyage of sixty-five days they reached land on November 10, 1620.

---

*Of the pastor of the Separatists we read that "John Robinson wrote 'A man hath in truth so much of religion as he hath between the Lord and himself in secret, and no more,' and thus boxed the compass of religious life for all time." Another thought of his which commands respect for his liberal views in that age of bigotry was incorporated in his farewell address to the Pilgrims before they embarked, in which he charged them to follow him no farther than they found him to follow Christ and to hold themselves as ready to receive new truth from any other messenger as they had hitherto been to accept it from himself.[25]

The farseeing wisdom of WILLIAM^1 and his associates caused them before landing to prepare a notable document[20, 21] called "The Compact," which was designed to be the basis for their self-government. This was signed on the Mayflower on November 11, 1620, by forty-one men, mostly heads of families.*

The tale is well known[11, 12, 20] of the disappointment of the Pilgrims at being forcibly landed on the bleak coast of Massachusetts Bay when their patent was for the Virginia Company's land far to the southward; of their search for a fitting place to build their cabins; of their physical unfitness for the exceeding toil and cold; of the increasing shortage of food; of their fear of the Indians; and of the "great sickness" which caused the deaths during the first winter of half† their number, and which so shockingly depleted also the strength of the survivors; yet the courage of the leaders held firm.

Bradford wrote thus of WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER during the early days of the colony: "But now removeing into this countrie, . . . a new course of living must be framed unto; in which he was no way unwilling to take his parte, and to bear his burthen with the rest, living many times without bread, or corne, many months together, having many times nothing but fish, and often wanting that also; and drunke nothing but water for many years togeather, yea, till within .5. or .6. years of his death. And yet he lived (by the blessing of God) in health till very old age. And besides that, he would labour with his hands in the feilds as long as he was able; yet when the church had no other minister, he taught twise every Saboth, and that both powerfully and profitably, to the great contentment of the hearers, and their comfortable edification; yea, many were brought to God by his ministrie."

Their sojourn in Holland, where the greatest privilege they had enjoyed was freedom, had broadened their views. This is proved by the fact that those who had themselves been persecuted in England are recorded as having been much more tolerant of Quakers and others of differing beliefs in New Plymouth than were the people of the Puritan Colony at Boston, or members of the Plymouth group [see Prence, p. 690] who had not endured such discipline. Students assert also that the Pilgrims brought from Leyden the institutions of Common Schools and The Registration of Deeds.[17]

"The first Plymouth town meeting of equal citizens with equal rights . . .

---

*It remained their law until 1636, when a committee[26] including WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER and JOHN^1 DOANE [see Doane, p. 300] was appointed to rewrite it. It has been called[16] the "Germ of the American Constitution."

†Of eighteen mothers who came over, fourteen died that first winter.[12]

was the first clear prophecy of the Republic which was to extend from ocean to ocean."

Jonathan^2 Brewster, son of Elder William^1, followed his parents into the New World in the second boat to make that trip, "The Fortune," which arrived at Plymouth in November, 1621. On this boat came also[12] Thomas^1 Prence, who married, in 1624, Patience^2 Brewster, who, with her sister Fear^2, came[12] in "The Anne" in the fall of 1623. Mary, the wife, and mother of this family, whom Elder William^1 had married probably at Scrooby about 1588, died[1] at Plymouth on April 17, 1627. Soon after settlement at near-by Duxbury began, William^1 Brewster removed there, where his son Jonathan^2 preceded him.[23] Sixteen years after his wife's demise, and after only a short illness, the beloved Elder William^1 died on April 10, 1644, and was buried at Plymouth.[8, 15] He left no will and his estate was divided between his two surviving sons, Jonathan^2 and Love^2, by four of his closest friends, including Thomas^1 Prence, his son-in-law. The inventory of his estate[13, 18] showed the possession of a library of at least four hundred volumes, of which more than sixty were in Latin and ninety-eight were commentaries on, or translations of, the Bible. These volumes covered a broad scope of subject but were mainly of a religious character. This collection is declared by Dr. H. M. Dexter, who carefully analyzed it,[18] to have been undoubtedly "the richest accumulation of exegetical literature in New England during its first quarter-century." Only one man in the colony before 1630, besides the Elder, had the advantage of university training.[9] It has been said of him that he was

> "A preacher who had never been a priest, a pastor who had never been an ordained clergyman, he was the fitting leader of a band . . . who were to found a Church without a Bishop as well as a State without a King."

The death of Elder William^1 "was the sorest loss that had hitherto befallen them. . . ." "He bore his part in well [weal] and woe with this poor persecuted church above 36 years in England, Holand, and in this wildernes, and done the Lord and them faithful service in his place and calling."

The known children of William^1 and Mary (——) Brewster, all born probably in England, but in uncertain order, were[1, 2, 5, 8, 15, 23]

i. probably Edward^2, b. as early as 1589, since the man of this name was a captain in Virginia[30] in 1610 [see p. 151].

ii. Jonathan^2 [called* the first born],[26] b. at Scrooby, August 12, 1593; d. at New London,

---

*Though the words[26] "the first borne of his father" are definitely applied[26] to Jonathan^2 (ignoring the probability of an Edward^2) they were used in connection with the division of the Elder's estate between Jonathan^2 and Love^2 and must have meant that of these two, Jonathan^2 was the "first born."

Connecticut, August 7, 1659; evidently m. 1st at Leyden an unknown wife[10] who was buried there May 10, 1619, and who may have buried a child there November 27, 1610; m. 2nd, at Plymouth, April 10, 1624, Lucretia Oldham "of Darby," who was prob. the sister of John Oldham. She d. March 4, 1678–9. They removed about 1630 from Plymouth to Duxbury, and about 1649 to Connecticut.

✓ III. PATIENCE^{2}, whose name doubtless refers to the persecution of the Separatists at Scrooby, must have been b. there by and prob. before 1600, since she witnessed[24] on December 7, 1618, at Leyden, a betrothal between Thomas Smith and Anna Crackstone. She came with her sister Fear^{2} in the "Anne," experiencing, in common with EDWARD^{1} BANGS, a most dangerous voyage [see Bangs, p. 62]. They arrived at Plymouth the middle of July or the first of August, 1623, and on August 5, 1624, she m. there, as his first wife, THOMAS^{1} PRENCE [see Prence, p. 692]. She d. in 1634 at Plymouth.[1, 2, 8, 12, 23]

IV. Fear^{2}, b. doubtless at Scrooby and probably shortly before the family's flight into Holland, of which her name would be significant; she d. at Plymouth December 1, 1634; m. there between[8] July, 1623, and May 22, 1627, and prob.[2] in 1626, as his second wife, Isaac^{1} Allerton.

V. child^{2}, buried at Leyden, June 20, 1609.

VI. Love^{2}, d. at Duxbury soon after October 1, 1650, and before January 31, 1650–1; m. May 15, 1634, Sarah^{2} Collier (William^{1} of Duxbury), who m. 2nd, September 1, 1656, Richard Parke or Parks.

VII. Wrestling^{2}, "dyed a yonge man vnmaried" after May 22, 1627, but before his father's death.

REFERENCES

1. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, pub. by Massachusetts Historical Society, 1912, I, 316, 370; II, 342–52, 402–3, 405.
2. The England and Holland of the Pilgrims, H. M. Dexter, 1906, pp. 231–3, 236–7, 253–7, 320–9, 504–6, 514–5, 533–4, 557, 559.
3. Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings, 1871–3, XII, 98–103, 128–30.
4. The Founders of New-Plymouth, Rev. J. Hunter, 1854, pp. 18–23, 53–8, 63–86; Three Unknown Documents Concerning the Pilgrim Fathers in Holland, A. Eekhof, 1920, p. 6.
5. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, II, 342–52; Ibid., 1856, pp. 410, 412.
6. Dictionary of National Biography, II, 1212–3; V, 629–32; XVII, 18–22.
7. Chronicles of the Pilgrim Fathers, A. Young, 1841, pp. 461–70.
8. Register of the Society of Mayflower Descendants in Illinois, 1925, pp. 127, 140, 144, 200; Brewster Genealogy, E. C. B. Jones, 1908, pp. lxxvii-lxxviii, 3–27.
9. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, I, 27–37, 39–46, 98, 134, 136, 145, 148.
10. The Correspondence of Dr. Matthew Hutton, Surtees Society Publication, 1843, pp. 197–204.
11. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, I, 22, 24–5, 28, 30, 44–6, 48, 52–9, 65–162.
12. The Story of the Pilgrim Fathers, E. Arber, 1897, pp. 53, 71–86, 358–61, 378–80, 385–7, and, indeed, the whole volume.
13. Mayflower Descendant, III, 15–30; Brewster Genealogy, E. C. B. Jones. 1908, I, xlix-lxxv, 3–11, 21–9.
14. History of the Pilgrims and Puritans, J. D. Sawyer, 1925, I, 138–49.
15. Mayflower Descendant, I, 7–8, 72, 168.
16. The Life and Times of WILLIAM^{1} BREWSTER, Rev. A. Steele, 1857, pp. 39–42, 91–103, 114–8, 134–50, 155–9, 171–389, 401.
17. Historical Magazine, 1853, III, 261–3, 330–5; Ibid., 1860, IV, 4–6.
18. Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings, Ser. 2, V, 37–85.
19. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, II, 6–7, 134, 296–300.
20. Mourt's Relation, with notes by H. M. Dexter, 1865, p. 1 et seq.

This should be saved in case it really does pertain to Brewster's father & grandfather.
It is generally agreed that Hunt was incorrect when he announced Wm. Brewster's wife was a Wentworth but he kept trying new supporting Smythe, probably incorrect as well.

Brewster-Oldham:—*The Mayflower Descendant*, vol. 1, p. 8, reveals the marriage in Plymouth, New England, 10 April 1624, of Jonathan Brewster and Lucretia Oldham of Darby.

The provost of Derby Cathedral, Mr. R. A. Beddoes, has just furnished a baptismal certificate as follows:

"Baptism solemnized in the Parish of All Saints in the Diocese of Derby and County of Derby in the year 1600. Lucretia, daughter of William Ouldham, baptised fourteenth January 1600 by Edward Bennett (Minister)."

From the published registers of All Saints:
"Married 17th November 1588, William Ouldham and Philippa Sowter.
"Married 19 May 1560, Thomas Sowter and Alice Turnar."

Arlington, Va. John G. Hunt.

NEa 111:249
also 319-326
TAG 41:1-2

William Brewster and the Thropes of Scrooby, Notts.—In The Register, vol. 111, p. 249, is noted a suit by William Brewster against William Thrope of Scrooby, Notts. This Brewster settled in the Plymouth Plantation, New England, in 1620.

An undated suit, during the reign of Elizabeth Tudor, was commenced by Elizabeth Thrope, widow, mother, and guardian of Jervis Thrope, against William Brewster, to compel him to render an accounting as trustee under a deed of feoffment (no location) (Proceedings in Chancery, T-t-8, reign of Elizabeth, folio, vol. 3, p. 166).

Thomas Thrope sued in Chancery *re* land in Scrooby (*ibid.*, p. 172).

About 1534 Thomas, son and heir of Thomas Thrope of Scrooby, is named in Early Chancery Suits (vol. 50, p. 182, Great Britain, Record Office, Lists and Indexes).

Margaret Jackson, late of Thorpe, daughter and heir of Edmund Hansone, and sometime wife of John Merchant of Thorpe, sued Thomas, son and heir of Thomas Thrope *re* land in Scrooby about 1534 (*ibid.*, p. 115).

About 1552 Thomas Thrope, gent., sued *re* a meadow in Scrooby (*ibid.*, vol. 54. p. 364).

Often trustees under deeds of feoffment were relatives or "in-laws" of landowner who had died intestate. Therefore, it is quite possible that the suit by Elizabeth Thrope, above, against William Brewster may indicate that Brewster's wife or mother was a relative of the Thropes, who were clearly of a status in Scrooby that could have led to intermarriage with the Brewsters.

An additional link between the Brewster family and the Thropes appears in the following way: Chancery Proceedings between 1504 and 1515 show that John Thursby or Thoresby had died by 1515, leaving feoffees Thomas Thrope, Thomas Clifton, Richard Lasells, and William Fenton. Thoresby held lands in Fenton and Stirton (i.e., Sturton-le-Steeple) in Nottinghamshire, some eight miles southeast of Scrooby. This John Thoresby left a daughter Alice, married to Robert Brewster. See the above cited Lists and Indexes, vol. 29, pp. 304, 306. It will be noted in Willison's "Saints and Strangers" that Sturton le Steeple was the home of several of the Mayflower passengers of 1620.

Arlington, Va. John G. Hunt.

get the references M-F-Desc?

THE MOTHER OF ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER OF THE MAYFLOWER

By John G. Hunt, of Arlington, Virginia

Discovery of Elder Brewster's maternal ancestry came about after noting, on the one hand, that, in 1609, while at Leyden, he gave to Thomas Simkinson of Hull, Yorkshire, power to receive money that Anne Peck (Brewster's ward) had left in England[1]; and, on the other hand, finding the record of a chancery proceeding several decades earlier than 1609, linking the surnames of Brewster and Simkinson at Doncaster, Yorkshire (seven miles north of Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, boyhood home of Elder William Brewster).[2]

Led on by this coincidence, a study was made of the will of Thomas Simkinson, alderman of Doncaster, dated 29 Jan. 1558/9, proved 2 May 1560 (York P & E court, vol. 16, f. 46). Therein he left his estate to his daughter Jenet Fenton; should she die without issue, it was to pass to young Thomas Simkinson, who in any event was to get a silver cup, while the lad's sister Dorothy was to have twenty shillings; these two were children of John Simkinson to whom the testator left "my best gown". He also left money to Thomas Smythe, Edward Stere, John Wormeley, John Grene of Barnby, John Parke of Stainforth, John Smythe of Hull, William Trymingham, Alice (widow of Christopher Man), and William Smythe (who was a witness to the will).

In the light of this testament, and the power of attorney cited above, it seemed appropriate to study the wills of persons named John Smythe of Hull; that of John Smythe, alderman of Hull, dated 8 Aug. 1592, proved in October following, was most illuminating.[3] From it and wills of kinfolk, it became plain that Thomas Simkinson and Elder William Brewster were uterine brothers. The wills of other legatees named in the will of Thomas Simkinson, above, proved enlightening.[4] The will of Christopher Man of Scrooby added other data of value.[5]

On the basis of these documents and other facts about the family already known, the pedigree of Brewster of Scrooby shapes up thus:

1. **William Brewster**, taxed in 1524 at Bently cum Arksey[6] (next Doncaster), Yorkshire, seems to have married long before 1558 Maude, sister of Christopher Man of Scrooby.[5] Their sons seemingly were:

   2. i. William [II], b. ?1535.
   ii. Henry, b. ?1537, d. ?1600, vicar at Sutton on Lound, co. Notts., 1565-1594; his wife Agnes was buried there 15 March 1597/8. No children are known.[7]

2. **William Brewster** [II], b. ?1535, d. 1590, is likely that William Bruister [!] who in 1558 witnessed the will of his supposed uncle, Christopher Man, at Scrooby, the other witnesses being Mr. Thomas Simkinson and John Simkinson, both of whom were of Doncaster.

He was probably that William Brewster who in 1564 was "dwelling in Scrooby" when he was mentioned in the will of Bartholomew Bryan of Scrooby, dated May 6, 1564 (York P & E, 17:389). It is clear that he had at least two wives: the earlier was Mary, daughter of ✓ William Smythe of Stainforth, parish of Hatfield, next Doncaster[4], and sister of John Smythe, alderman of Hull.[8] She was the widow of John Simkinson of Doncaster.[9] wid S.

William II Brewster by his first wife, Mary, had issue: *

3. i. William [III], b. about 1565, d. 20 April 1644, named with Thomas Simkinson as an executor in the lengthy will of their uncle, John Smythe of Hull, 1592,[3] in which he mentions practically every one of his nieces and nephews. The fact that no Brewsters figure therein leads one to suppose that Mary had no other children by Brewster; if this is true, she must have died soon after 1566.

? ✓ Apparently William Brewster [II] had a second or later wife, Prudence (perhaps born Perkins or a widow of that name) who survived him.[10] By her he may have had further issue:

ii. James, b. ?1568, d. 1613, who matriculated at Cambridge in 1582[11], succeeded Henry Brewster (?his uncle) as vicar at Sutton on Lound in 1594[7]; he is known to have been brother to William Brewster [III][12]. Details of James' marriage and issue are known.[13]

iii. Prudence [? married Robert Peck of Everton, Notts.; they had Robert and Anne, both wards of their supposed uncle William Brewster at Leyden[14]].

? iv. John, who in 1595 and 1613 was identified with Myssen, Notts[15].

3. William Brewster III, b. about 1565, died in Plymouth, Mass., 20 April 1644, was to become the ruling elder on the Mayflower and at Plymouth in New England. In 1580 he matriculated at Peterhouse College in Cambridge, at which University, in St. John's College, his uncle Francis Smythe, ?1540-?1604, vicar of Crowle, co. Lincoln, had been schooled, and two of his first cousins, Edward Smythe ?1553-1585,[16] Bachelor of Divinity, and John Grene "of Barnby upon Don", ?1555- after 1591, were likewise students.[11] Is it not likely that one or more of these kinfolk had influence in aiding Brewster to get employment in the service of William Davison? The latter was friend of Thomas Cartwright,[17] eminent puritan, also identified prominently with St. John's College, and author of the book Brewster printed at Leyden, a copy of which is now in the headquarters building in Plymouth, Mass.

As to the identity of the wife (or wives) of Elder William Brewster, proof has been wanting; if he had a daughter Elizabeth (perhaps the child buried in Leyden 20 June 1609), the will of Robert Hartley of Austerfield, dated 11 April 1606[18], leaving a small legacy to Elizabeth Brewster, may prove to be clue to her mother's maiden name. ? Elizabeth

On the other hand, William Dean Howells asserted in 1905 that William Brewster's wife was born and bred in Duke Street, London, although he gave no proof.[19] Duke Street, then styled "the Duke's place", was in the locale where several Mayflower passengers had ties,[20] hence this may be a clue worth investigating.

1. Walter H. Burgess, *John Robinson, the Pastor of the Pilgrims*, London, 1920, p. 102; cf. The Register, vol. 111, p. 319-320, Oct. 1957; The American Genealogist, 41: 1-2, Jan. 1965.

2. Gt. Brit. Public Record Office, ref. C 2 Eliz. B 31/1, an undated proceeding addressed to Sir Nicholas Bacon, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal (1558-1579): "Bill of Complaint by William Bruester [!] and Mary his wife, the late wife of John Symkinson late of Doncaster, Yorks. The said John was seized of lands in Doncaster and in his lifetime did convey them to the said Mary then his wife for the term of her life and afterwards he died at Doncaster."

3. York P & E court, 25:1051-1052. John Smythe, alderman of Hull, directed that he be buried in Trinity Church "next where Jane my late wife was buried." The principal legacy was a bond for £300 made by the testator's deceased son Mr. Edward Smythe, at the time the latter was assigned the testator's lands, which were to be delivered to said Edward's daughter, Frances, when she should marry or arrive at the age of 18 years (cf. note 16, below). The testator left his wife Anne £120, and other legacies to his son John Trimingham, naming also "the four children of my late nephew, William Smythe of Stanforth, deceased; the goods late belonging to my brother Thomas Smythe . . . John Parke, late of Stanforth deceased, and Agnes his wife, my sister . . . my cozen Thomas Drax of Stanforth ... my cozen Master Francis Cresay of Hewell ... my neece Jennet Drax and her children ... my neece Alice Bladworth of Thorne ... my neece Mary Brodryke ... to Thomas Levens of Stanforth and Dorothy his sister ... my sister Saile of Smeaton ... to Dorothy of Scrobie my neece ... to my brother Sr. Francis Smythe who saith he hath an obligation of myne ... let him render into the hands of the executors of this my will the said bond and desiring of God he maie become obedyant to the lorde's words ... and to obey her Majesty's views, then I will that my said brother have five marks toward the releving of him ... to my cozen Francis Steare x s. ... to Xopher Durembroke, who now dwells in Holland five pounds to be allowed to him upon the clearing of his accompte and debts which he is owing unto me ... the balance [uncollected debts] I leave to John Grene, John Smythe, William Brewster and Thomas Simkinson, my nephews, whom I doe make, constitute and ordeyn my full executors."

In a codicil, the testator named Richard Knowls (whose daughter his son, Edward Smythe, had married).

4. Will of William Smythe, elder, of Stanforth in parish of Hatfield, dated 25 Jan. 1558/9 and proved 2 May 1560 (York P & E court, 16:46): He requested burial in the church of our Lady of Hatfield, and left legacies for the poor of Hatfield, Woodhouse, Stainforth, Thorne, Fishlake, Sykehouse, Barnby, Bramwith, Armthorp, Kirk Sandal and Stristhorp. Naming two servants, he provided that "Cecilie Hunsworth have x s. and the use of the house she lives in so long as she lives, and to have of my son Thomas when he shall forten to come thither every bakyn & brewinge as she hath had affore ... to my son Francis Smythe vicar of Crowle [various furniture and] 17 pounds, a cowe, a calfe and a meare ... to my sons Thomas and Richard [various property and some money] ... to my son John Smythe of Hull ... my brother in lawe Symkinson ... to every one of the children of my sons and daughters a yew and a lamb ... the rest of my goods not bequest, I geve to John Grene and Jenet his wife; John Parke and Agnes his wife; John Symkinson and Marie his wife; and Thomas Saile and Margaret his wife whom I make executors." Note: in addition to the four sons and four daughters before listed, there seems to have been a son, Cuthbert Smythe of Fishlake. whose will was proved 2 Oct. 1551 (York P & E court, 13:767): because he named only two brothers, Francis and Richard, two sisters Marie and Margaret, and left lands at Hatfield and Stanforth, it is believed that Cuthbert may have been a brother of the full blood of the said brothers and sisters, which could indicate that Thomas, John, Janet and Agnes were older children, and indicated that their father, William, the testator of 1559, had two wives, and issue by each.[21] John Grene made his will in 1559 (proved 1562, York P & E, 17:138); his widow Jenet took for her final spouse Nicolas Cressy; her will (York P & E, 19:840), dated 27

Long believed to have been Mary Brewster's parents — now considered questionable

Family Record

NO

Family No.

Surname

Father — Thomas WENTWORTH II

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1530? ○	Scrooby	Nottinghamshire		Upon his death, Wm. Brewster II	○
Death	will 27	Mar	1574 ○	Scrooby Manor			(father of Elder ") took over	○
Buried	Proved 2	Feb	1576 ○				Scrooby Manor	○
Married		ca	1560? ○					○

Occupation　Military　Church ○

Places Lived ○

Other Wives ○

For Earlier Barons Wentworth-Woodhouse Lineage see Xeroxed Sheet

His Father's Name "Golden Thomas" Sir Thomas Wentworth; 19th from Reginald (Wentworth) (c 1066 AD) ○

His Mother's Maiden Name Beatrix (Woodruff) Drax, widow of John & dau of Sir Richard Woodruff of Wooley, Yorkshire ○

Mother — Grace GASCOIGNE

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1540? ○	Lesingcroft	Yorkshire	England		○
Death			15_ _ ○					○
Buried			○					○

Occupation　Military　Church ○

Places Lived ○

Other Husbands ○

Her Father's Name John Gascoigne, Esq. ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name ○

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Thomas Wentworth III ○	Birth		ca	1565?	Scrooby?			○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	2. Mary Wentworth ○	Birth		ca	1568	Scrooby Manor	Nottinghamshire	England	○
		Death	17	Apr.	1627	Plymouth	Plymouth Colony - America		○
	Spouse - (Elder) William Brewster (ca 1566-1644) ○	Married							○
	3. Grace Wentworth ○	Birth		ca	1570?	Scrooby?			○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	4. Elizabeth Wentworth ○	Birth		ca	1572?	Scrooby?			○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	5. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	6. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	7. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	8. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	9. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○
	10. ○	Birth							○
		Death							○
	Spouse - ○	Married							○

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

○ In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

WENTWORTH — BARONS WENTWORTH, OF WENTWORTH-WOODHOUSE, VISCOUNT WENTWORTH, BARONS RABY, EARLS OF STRAFFORD.

Barony, by Letters Patent, dated 22 July, 1628.
Viscounty, by Letters Patent, dated 10 December, 1628.
Earldom and Barony of Raby, by Letters Patent, dated 12 January, 1640.
Earldom, by Letters Patent, 4 September, 1711.

Lineage.

The ancient stock of Wentworth-Woodhouse, co. York, has been rooted in that shire from the earliest period to which the genealogist can usually ascend in his investigations. Of the orthography of the lands, whence originated the name, Domesday Book, and all the old charters have it *Winteworth*, and such is still the pronunciation of the common people, who do not easily fall into new modes of speech. As to its derivation, Mr. Hunter, in his *History of Doncaster*, makes the following remarks: "The latter half of the name (*worth*) is one of the most frequent local terminals, and appears to denote some degree of cultivation. The former half affords room for conjecture. It has been suggested that it may be the word *givint*, preserved in the Breton language, which is a dialect of the Celtic, where it denotes *elevation*. This sense would undoubtedly apply well to Wentworth, which stands high, as does also another place of the same name, in the Isle of Ely, relatively to the fens around it. Celtic etymologies are, however, to be admitted with great caution in investigating the names of places cultivated or populated; and perhaps the scribe of Domesday, who, in one of the five instances in which the word occurs, has written it thus, *Wintrerworde*, may have presented us with an ancient and expiring orthography, from whence we may conclude that the name of Wentworth is to be classed with Wintrerton, Winterburn, Winteredge, and other places, which have obtained those names from their high, exposed, or cold situations." While the lands of Wentworth-Woodhouse continued to be the seat of the chiefs, and descended from sire to son, in an unbroken series, till the succession of male heirs failed with William, the 2nd Earl of Strafford, the junior scions of the family founded, in several instances, houses of rank and influence, the Wentworths of Woolle[illegible] North and South Elmsal,* of Bretton, of Nettlested, &c.

William de Wyntword, of Wyntword, *m.* in the time of **Henry III.**, Emma, dau. and heir of William Wodehous, of Wodehous, by whom he acquired that estate, and taking up his abode there, the family were subsequenty designated the "Wentworths of Wentworth-Woodhouse." He was *s.* by his son,

William de Wentworth, of Wentworth-Woodhouse, who *m.* Beatrix, dau. of Gilbert Thakel, and had two sons,

- **William**, his successor.
- Richard, bishop of London, and chancellor of England in 1338.

The elder son,

William de Wentworth, *m.* 1st, Dyonisia, dau. of Peter de Rotherfield, and 2ndly, Lucy, dau. of Sir Adam Newmarch, and by the former had two sons,

- **William**, his successor.
- John, *m.* the dau. and heir of Elmsall, of Elmsall, in York shire, by whom he acquired that estate, and dying *s. p.*, left it to his nephew, **John**.

The elder son,

William de Wentworth, *s.* his father in 1295, and *m.* Isabel, dau. and co-heir of William Pollington, of Pollington, co. York, and had issue,

- **William** (Sir), his heir.
- John, who inherited Emsall from his uncle, and marrying Joan, dau. of Richard le Tyas, of Burgh-Walleys, co. York, was ancestor of the **Wentworths** of Elmsall, of the **Wentworths** of Bretton, of the **Wentworths**, Barons and Viscounts Wentworth; and of divers other branches.

William de Wentworth was *s.* by his elder son,

Sir William Wentworth, who *m.* Isabel, dau. and co-heir of Walter, son and heir of Henry de Tynsley, of Tynsley, also in Yorkshire, and was *s.* by his son,

William Wentworth, who *m.* Joan, dau. of Sir William Fleming, Knt., of Waith, and was father of

William de Wentworth, who *m.* Lucy, dau. of Isabel, wife of William Sheffield, of Bolderstoun, and left a son,

William Wentworth, who *m.* 1st, Isabella, dau. of Thomas Durrant; and 2ndly, Isabel, dau. of Sir Thomas Reresby, of Thryberg, co. York, and was father of when he was made prisoner with the Duke of Somerset and others. He *m.* Joan, dau. of Sir Richard Redman, Knt., of Harwood Tower, and was *s.* by his elder son,

William Wentworth, Esq., of Wentworth-Woodhouse, who *m.* in the 39th **Henry VI.**, Isabel, dau. of Sir Richard Fitz-William, of Aldwark, York, by whom he had four sons, **Thomas**, his successor, Ralph, George, William, and a dau., Elizabeth, who *m.* 1st, Thomas Lea, Esq., of Middleton, and 2ndly, Henry, Arthington, Esq. Mr. Wentworth *d.* in 1477, and was *s.* by his eldest son,

Sir Thomas Wentworth, of Wentworth Woodhouse, who received the honour of knighthood for his bravery in the battle of Spurs. This gentleman, being a person of great opulence, went by the name of Golden Thomas. He paid a fine to be excused from being created a knight of the Bath; and in 1528, he obtained a license from **Henry VIII.** to wear his bonnet and be covered in the royal presence, because he was infirm. He *m.* Beatrix, dau. of Sir Richard Woodruffe, of Woolley, Knt., and [illegible]w of John Drax, Esq., of Woodhall, and had issue,

- **William**, his successor.
- Gervase.
- Michael, of Mendham Priory, co. Suffolk, cofferer to King **Henry VIII.**, and comptroller to the queen, *m.* Isabel, dau. and heir of Percival Whitley, Esq., of Whitley, co. York, and was father of Thomas Wentworth, Esq., of Mendham Priory, co. Suffolk, and of Whitley, co. York, who *m.* Susan, dau. of Christopher Hopton, Esq., of Armley Hall, co. York, and had a son and successor, **Michael Wentworth**, Esq., who purchased, from Francis Woodruffe, Esq., Wooley, and other lands in Yorkshire, and was ancestor of the **Wentworths** of Woolley (*see* **Burke**'s *Landed Gentry*).
- Thomas, of Scorby, *m.* Grace, dau. of John Gascoigne, Esq., of Lasingcroft, co. York, and had issue.
- Bryan.
- Elizabeth, *m.* to Ralph Denham, Esq.
- Isabel, *m.* to Nicholas Wombwell, Esq., of Thunnercliffe, co. York.
- Beatrice, *m.* to Thomas Worrall, Esq., of Loversall, co. York.

Sir Thomas *d.* 5 December, 1548, and was *s.* by his eldest son,

William Wentworth, Esq., of Wentworth-Woodhouse, who *m.* Catherine, dau. of Ralph Beeston, Esq., of Beeston, and dying 4 July, 1549, was *s.* by his eldest son,

Thomas Wentworth, Esq., of Wentworth-Woodhouse, high sheriff of co. York in the 25th **Elizabeth**; *m.* Margaret, dau. and heir of Sir William Gascoigne, Knt., of Gawthorpe, by which alliance he acquired the manor and seat of Gawthorpe, Cusworth, &c., and his descendants became co-heirs to the Baronies of Ferrers of Wemme, and Boteler, of Wemme, then (and still) in **abeyance**. By her he had issue,

- **William** (Sir), his successor.
- Elizabeth, *m.* to Thomas Danby, Esq., of Farnley.
- Barbara, *d. unm.*
- Margaret, *m.* 1st, to Michael, son and heir of John, Lord Darcy; and 2ndly, to Jasper Blythman, Esq., of New Lathes.
- Catherine, *m.* to Thomas Gargrave, Esq., of Nostel Priory, in Yorkshire.

Mr. Wentworth *d.* 14 February, 1586-7, possessed of a great landed estate in co. York, and was *s.* by his son,

Sir William Wentworth, of Wentworth-Woodhouse, Gawthorpe, &c. This gentleman was high sheriff of Yorkshire in the last year of Queen **Elizabeth**, and was created a Baronet, 29 June, 1611. He *m.* Anne, dau. and heir of Robert Atkinson, Esq., of Stowell, co. Gloucester, by whom he had three surviving sons and three daus, viz., - cont'd -

---

* The Wentworths of North Elmsal acquired that estate *temp.* **Edward III.**, in marriage with Alice, dau. and heiress of John Bissett, and continued there for several centuries, until the year 1741, when their male line expired with Sir Butler-Cavendish Wentworth, Bart., the estates devolving on that gentleman's half-sister, **Catherine Wentworth**, who *m.* Hugh Cholmley, Esq., of Whitby, co. York, M.P. for Hedon, and high sheriff of that shire in 1724. The Wentworths of South Elmsal, sprung from a younger son of Thomas Wentworth, of North Elmsal, are also now extinct.

The Wentworths of Bretton, deriving from Richard Wentworth, of Everton, in the co. Nottingham, 3rd son of John Wentworth, of Elmsal, by Agnes, his wife, sister and co-heir of Sir William Dronsfield of Bretton, became extinct in the male line upon the demise of Sir Thomas Wentworth Blackett, Bart., 9 July, 1792. The estates of Bretton, &c., are now enjoyed by the Beaumont family.

The Wentworths of Wentworth Castle were founded by Sir William Wentworth, of Ashby, in Lincolnshire, slain at Marston Moor, who was a younger son of Sir William Wentworth, Bart., of Wentworth-Woodhouse, and brother to Thomas, 1st Earl of Strafford. They became extinct in the male line in 1799. The estates are now possessed by Frederick-William-Thomas Vernon-Wentworth, Esq., of Wentworth Castle.

The Wentworths of Nettlested became Earls of Cleveland, and Barons Wentworth. (*See post.*)

This was a model that had been pioneered in Ireland, which the English were colonizing, and where they built fortified towns for protection against rebels.

On June 22, Captain Newport sailed back to England, promising to return with supplies within twenty weeks. Now the settlers' diet was reduced to small quantities of wheat and barley boiled with water. The grain had already lain twenty-six weeks in ships' holds and was filled with worms. Their drink was brackish water, consumed after hard labor in extreme heat.

To strengthen and restore their souls, they had religion—common prayer morning and evening, two sermons every Sunday, and holy communion every three months. Yet God was not in strict attendance, for, as John Smith later recalled, "the continual inundations of mistaking directions, factions, and numbers of unprovided libertines near consumed us all. . . ."

In his *Discovery of the Plantations of the Southern Colony in Virginia by the English*, George Percy gave a chilling recital of the almost daily deaths that began to diminish the small colony in August: "The sixth of August there died John Asbie of the bloody flux" (dysentery). "The ninth died George Flower of the swelling. The ✓ tenth died William Bruster, Gentleman, of a wound given by the savages. . . . The 14th, Jerome Alicock . . . died of a wound. The same day Francis Midwinter and Edward Morris (Corporal) died suddenly. The 15th there died Edward Browne and Stephen Galthorpe. The 16th there died Thomas Gower, Gentleman. The 17th, Thomas Mounslie, the 18th, Robert Pennington and John Martin, Gentlemen, the 19th Drue Piggase, Gentleman, the 22d there died Captain Bartholomew Gosnold, of our council. . . . They shot off all the ordnance in the fort in his honor. . . ." (Gosnold had captained a 1602 expedition to Newfoundland, where he discovered and named Martha's Vineyard). "The 24th died Edward Harington and George Walker. . . . The 28th died Thomas Stoodie" (Thomas Studley, keeper of the stores). In that one month of August 1607, there were nineteen deaths.

It was not what the colonists had been led to expect. Virginia had been described in the London Company's promotional literature as an earthly paradise, where gold mines and the spice route awaited. One such pamphlet was entitled *Joyful News Out of the New-Found World.* Morale at Jamestown in September 1607 was understandably low, and resentment focused on the nominal leader, who had in May been elected president of the seven-

✓ Believed to have been son of Mayflower Pilgrim Wm. Brewster.

member Council described in the instructions. He was Edward Maria Wingfield, one of the original London investors to whom the 1606 charter had been granted, and the only one of that group to sail with the settlers.

He seems to have been a little too conscious of his own importance, and there was considerable grumbling, mainly concerning his role as distributor of the food stores. Council members drafted written charges against Wingfield, who was accused of having plenty while others starved, and of playing favorites.

To Wingfield, it was a mutiny. He accused his accusers of stealing from the common store. "It is said I did much banquet, and riot," he said, "I never had but one squirrel roasted." The Wingfield case raised the issue of equality for the first time among white men in America. In England, class distinctions were deeply ingrained, spelled out in such texts as this 1562 *Book of Homilies:* "Every class of people . . . hath appointed to them their duty and order. Some are in high degree, some are in low. Some kings and princes, some inferiors and subjects. . . ."

As a gentleman and a founding member of the London Company, Wingfield was hoping to maintain class distinctions in the New World. His defense was that lower-class citizens had no authority to make accusations about stores. John Smith, Wingfield argued, was little better than a servant, being the son of a yeoman (small farmer).

But at Jamestown class distinctions evaporated in the face of hardship; Wingfield was found guilty of stealing stores, imprisoned, and deported. Another member of the Council, George Kendall, was put to death for attempted mutiny in December 1607. These were early examples of frontier justice, far from the social stratification of London and Hampton Court.

Captain John Ratcliffe, the new president of the Council, ruled during a period of anarchy and disease. By September, wrote George Percy, the settlers were still living in tents "and in holes in the ground." They were "in miserable distress," Percy went on, "groaning in every corner of the fort, most pitiful to hear . . . some departing out of the world, many times three or four in a night. In the morning their bodies trailed out of their cabins like dogs to be buried."

When Captain Newport returned in January 1608, about a month later than his promised twenty weeks, there were thirty-eight settlers left alive of the original 104. Newport brought 120

"The Great Migration Begins" Vol 1 (1995) 227
by Robert Charles Anderson

na ~~142~~,

WILLIAM BREWSTER

ORIGIN: Leiden, Holland
MIGRATION: 1620 on *Mayflower*
FIRST RESIDENCE: Plymouth
REMOVES: Duxbury

OCCUPATION: Printer (in Leiden). (George Ernest Bowman summarized what was known in 1921 about the books printed by Brewster at Leiden [MD 23:97-105]. See also R. Breugelmans, "The Pilgrim Press and How Its Books Were Sold," in *The Pilgrims in The Netherlands: Recent Research*, ed. Jeremy D. Bangs [Leiden 1984], pp. 25-28.)
CHURCH MEMBERSHIP: Morison summarized Brewster's church activities prior to 1620: "One of the original members of the separatist congregation at Scrooby which became the nucleus of the Pilgrim church, he emigrated with them to Holland in 1608, and became elder and teacher of their church at Leyden" [Morison 368]. With no minister at the Plymouth church for most of the years before Brewster's death, he was the lay leader and preached to the congregation regularly, and continued in this manner after his move to Duxbury. In the course of relating the controversy surrounding John Lyford, Bradford recounts how "our reverend Elder hath labored diligently in dispensing the Word of God to us, before he came: and since, hath taken equal pains with himself, in preaching the same" [Bradford 162]. Included in the inventory of his library were "7 sermons by W B," which may have been his notes for some of his own sermons.
FREEMAN: In "1633" Plymouth list of freemen, prior to those admitted on 1 January 1632/3 [PCR 1:3].
EDUCATION: Entered Peterhouse, Cambridge, 3 December 1580, but did not graduate [Venn 1:213; Morison 368]. Within the inventory of William Brewster separate listings were made of his Latin and English books, with nearly four hundred titles included; "the total of both Latin & English books amounts to the sum of £42 19s. 11d." [MD 3:27].
ESTATE: In the list of Plymouth "meersteads & garden plots of [those] which came first laid out 1620" Mr. W[illia]m Brewster is on the south side of the street, at the corner of the highway, and next to John Goodman [PCR 12:3].

In the 1623 Plymouth land division Mr. William Brewster received six acres as a passenger on the *Mayflower*, and "Pacience & Fear Brewster" received two acres as passengers on the *Anne* [PCR 12:4, 6]. In the 1627

Plymouth cattle division "Mr. Will[ia]m Brewster," Love Brewster and Wrestling Brewster were the first three names in the fifth company [PCR 12:10].

Assessed £1 7s. in the Plymouth tax lists of 25 March 1633 and 27 March 1634 [PCR 1:9, 27].

Administration on the estate of William Brewster was granted on 5 June 1644 to Jonathan Brewster and Love Brewster [MD 3:15, citing PCR 2:101]. The inventory of the estate of William Brewster, taken 18 May 1644, totalled £150 7d., with no real estate included [MD 3:15-27, citing PCPR 1:53-59].

"Whereas William Brewster late of Plymouth, gent., deceased left only two sons surviving vizt. Jonathan the eldest and Love the younger and whereas the said William died intestate for ought can to this day appear," the two sons requested William Bradford, Edward Winslow, Thomas Prence and Myles Standish to assist them in coming to an agreement, and on 20 August 1645 a division was made. Jonathan Brewster was excused the debt he had owed to his father, except £4 "in consideration of the wintering of some cattle which the said Jonathan had the summering upon the division and for the diet of Isaack Allerton a grandchild of the said Will[ia]m which he had placed with his son Love to table and because he was the first born of his father we gave him his father's arms and also a two year old heifer over and above his part of the dividables of the said estate," and Love received his father's dwelling house. The lands were divided equally, except for a dispute over the lands at Duxbury, of which sixty-eight acres went to Jonathan (along with a "dwelling house which the said Jonathan had built on the said land by leave of his said father") and forty-three acres went to Love "and the reason wherefore we gave Love the less quantity was and is because the quality of Love's land in goodness is equal to the quantity of Jonathan's as we judge" [MD 3:27-30, citing PCLR 1:198-99; PCR 12:115-17].

BIRTH: About 1566, probably at Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, son of William Brewster.
DEATH: Duxbury 10 April 1644 [MD 1:7].
MARRIAGE: By 1593 Mary _____; she died at Plymouth 17 April 1627 [MD 1:7]. (See *COMMENTS* below for discussion of her identity.)
CHILDREN:

- i JONATHAN, b. Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, 12 August 1593 [MD 1:7]; m. Plymouth 10 April 1624 "Lucretia Oldam of Darby" [MD 1:8]; she was bp. All Saints, Derby, Derbyshire, 14 January 1600/1, and was sister of JOHN OLDHAM.
- ii PATIENCE, b. say 1603; m. Plymouth 5 August 1624 THOMAS PRENCE, "the ninth marriage at New Plymouth" [Prince 229], as his first of four wives.

- iii FEAR, b. say 1605; m. Plymouth by 1627 ISAAC ALLERTON [Bradford 218, 242].
- iv LOVE, b. say 1607; m. Plymouth 15 May 1634 Sarah Collier [PCR 1:30], daughter of WILLIAM COLLIER.
- v Child, bur. St. Pancras, Leiden, 20 June 1609 [NS] [Dexter 605].
- vi WRESTLING, b. say 1611; d. unm. after 1627 and by 1651 [Bradford 444; see GDMNH 109, MD 43:13, Waterhouse Anc 67].

COMMENTS: In his list of passengers on the *Mayflower* Bradford included "Mr. William Brewster, Mary, his wife, with two sons, whose names were Love and Wrestling" [Bradford 441]. In the accounting of 1651 we find that "Mr. Brewster lived to very old age; about 80 years he was when he died, having lived some 23 or 24 years here in the country. And though his wife died long before, yet she died aged. His son Wrestling died a young man unmarried. His son Love lived till this year 1650 and died and left four children, now living. His daughters which came over after him are dead but have left sundry children alive. His eldest son is still living and hath nine or ten children; one married who hath a child or two" [Bradford 444].

The quest for the identity of Mary, the wife of William Brewster, has attracted the attention of many genealogists, but as yet without a definitive result. For some time she had been thought to be Mary Wentworth, daughter of Thomas Wentworth of Scrooby, and in 1965 John G. Hunt presented his case in favor of this identity [TAG 41:1-5, 63], but this claim was rejected by Rubincam and others, and Hunt himself has now given up this position. He has, however, published a pamphlet claiming that she was a certain Mary Wyrrall, based on the appearance in a will of a bequest to "Mary Butho," which Hunt took be a variant of Brewster resulting from a speech defect in the person dictating the will [John G. Hunt, *Of Mary Brewster: The Identity of Mary, Wife of Elder William BREWSTER of the Mayflower Voyage of 1620 from Plymouth, England, to New Plymouth, New England* (Bowling Green, Virginia, 1984)]. Eugene A. Stratton reviewed this volume negatively in 1985 [*Detroit Society for Genealogical Research Magazine* 48:135-36], to which Hunt responded with a supplement to his pamphlet [*Of Mary Brewster, part two* (Bowling Green, Virginia, August 1985]. The maiden surname of Mary, wife of Elder Brewster, remains unknown. (Hunt has published other articles on various aspects of William Brewster's life which, as with all of Hunt's work, need to be used with caution: "'Master Williamson' of the *Mayflower* [NGSQ 62:88-90]; "The Mother of Elder William Brewster of the Mayflower" [NEHGR 124:250-56]; "Mary Stubbe - A Connection of Elder William Brewster?" [NEHGR 128:288-90].)

A number of other children have been proposed for William Brewster. Jacobus in 1936 disposed of the claimed connections between William Brewster of Plymouth and Francis Brewster of New Haven and his son Nathaniel [TAG 12:199-210, 13:8-21, 113-116]. Mary Walton Ferris proposes a son Edward [Dawes-Gates 2:151].

BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTE: Emma C. Brewster Jones published early in this century a serviceable genealogy of the family [*The Brewster Genealogy, 1566-1907* ..., 2 volumes (New York 1908)]. Among the many versions of the family published in all-my-ancestor volumes the most complete is that of Mary Walton Ferris [Dawes-Gates 2:142-56].

The General Society of Mayflower Descendants published in 1995 the Brewster volume of its "in progress" series, prepared by Barbara Merrick.

Many biographies of William Brewster have appeared, but mostly of the filiopietistic school; an example from the nineteenth century is that written by Ashbel Steele: *Chief of the Pilgrims: or The Life and Time of William Brewster* ... (Philadelphia 1857). An exception is Dorothy Brewster, *William Brewster of the Mayflower: Portrait of a Pilgrim* (New York 1970).

ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER

William Brewster was regarded as leader of the Pilgrims at Scrooby, England, (near Sherwood Forest), where his father became bailiff of the Manor of Scrooby in 1575, and in 1588 was appointed postmaster by Queen Elizabeth.

In 1580, William entered Peterhouse, in Cambridge, where it is believed he acquired his earliest Separatist ideas. He visited the Netherlands in 1584 and 1585-6, returning to Scrooby in 1589. On his father's death in 1590, he was appointed to both the bailiff and postmaster positions, and served in these capacities until the departure for Holland in 1609. In 1591, he married Mary —— (maiden name unknown), and they had six children before 1620.

In 1609, at Leyden, Brewster was elder and teacher of the new church, also a printer of Puritan books, for sale in England. (Morton Dexter, in *The England and Holland of the Pilgrims,* states that William Brewster was a ribbon maker while at Leyden. Presumably there was a local market for ribbons.)

On June 25, 1609, Elder Brewster signed an affidavit giving his age as forty-two, his wife's age as forty, and their son Jonathan's age as sixteen.

He embarked on the *Mayflower* at London with his wife, his sons, Love and Wrestling, and two boys "bound out" to him.

Although never a minister in the Pilgrim sense, he was the true leader of the church at Plymouth. As an administrator he was second only to Governor William Bradford. In 1627, he became one of the eight who assumed the Colony's debt.

According to the inventory of his property *(The Mayflower Descendant* 3:15-27) he wore a violet-colored coat, black silk stockings, and a ruff, etc.

His library *Massachusetts Historical Society Proceedings,* 2nd ser. 3:261-74; 5:37-85) shows his scholarship in

history, philosophy and religious writings. It contained more than four hundred volumes. A list of his books printed at Leyden is shown in *The Mayflower Descendant* 23:97-105.

"The Brewster Book," a very old manuscript containing records relating to Elder Brewster, his wife, Mary, son, Jonathan, and his wife, Lucretia, the latter's children, and many of Jonathan's descendants of the early generations, has been copied and printed in *The Mayflower Descendant,* volumes 1, 2 and 3.

William Bradford characterizes Elder Brewster: "He was the cheefe of those that were taken at Boston, and suffered the greatest loss; and of the seven that were kept longest in prison, and after bound over to the assises. Affter he came into Holland he suffered much hardship, after he had spente the most of his means, haveing a great charge, and many children; and, in regard of his former breeding and course of life, not so fitt for many imployments as others were, espetially shuch as were toylesume and laborious. But yet he ever bore his condition with much cherfullnes and contentation. Towards the later parte of those 12 years spente in Holland, his outward condition was mended, and he lived well and plentifully; for he fell into a way (by reason he had the Latine tongue) to teach many students, who had a disire to lerne the English tongue, to teach them English; and by his method they quickly attained it with great facilitie; for he drew rules to lerne it by, after the Latine manner; and many gentlemen, both Danes and Germans, resorted to him, as they had time from other studies, some of them being great mens sonnes. He also had means to set up printing, (by help of some freinds,) and so had imploymente inoughg, and by reason of many books which would not be alowed to be printed in England, they might have had more then they could doe. But now removeing into this countrie, all these things were laid aside againe, and a new course of living must be framed unto; in which he was no way unwilling to take his parte, and to bear his burthen with the rest, living many times without bread, or corne, many months together, having many times nothing but fish, and often wanting that also; and drunke nothing but water for many years togeather, yea, till within 5 or 6 years of his death. And yet he lived (by the blessing of God) in health till very old age. And besides that, he would labour with his hands in the feilds as long as he was able; yet when the church had no other minister, he taught twise every Saboth, and that both powerfully and profitably, to the great contentment of the hearers, and their comfortable edification; yea, many were brought to God by his ministrie. He did more in this behalfe in a year, then many that have their hundreds a year doe in all their lives. For his personall abilities, he was qualified above many; he was wise and discreete and well spoken, having a grave and deliberate utterance, of a very cherfull spirite, very sociable and pleasante amongst his freinds, of an humble and modest mind, of a peaceable disposition, under vallewing him self and his owne abilities, and some time over valewing others; inoffencive and innocente in his life and conversation, which gained him the love of those without, as well as those within; yet he would tell them plainely of their faults and evills, both publickly and privatly, but in shuch a maner as usually was well taken from him. He was tender harted, and compassionate of shuch as were in miserie, but espetially of shuch as had been of good estate and ranke, and were fallen unto want and proverty, either for goodnes and religions sake, or by the injury and oppression of others; he would say, of all men these deserved to be pitied most. And none did more offend and displease him then shuch as would hautily and proudly carry and lift up themselves, being rise from nothing, and haveing litle els in them to comend them but a few fine cloaths, or a litle riches more then others. In teaching, he was very moving and stirring of affections, also very plaine and distincte in what he taught; by which means he became the more profitable to the hearers. He had a singular good gift in prayer, both publick and private, in ripping up the hart and conscience before God, in the humble confession of sinne, and begging

the mercies of God in Christ for the pardon of the same. He always thought it were better for ministers to pray oftener, and devide their preyars, then be longe and tedious in the same (excepte upon sollemne and spetiall occations, as in days of humiliation and the like). His reason was, that the harte and spirits of all, espetialy the weake, could hardly continue and stand bente (as it were) so long towards God, as they ought to doe in that duty, without flagging and falling of. For the governmente of the church, (which was most proper to his office,) he was carfull to preserve good order in the same, and to preserve puritie, both in the doctrine and comunion of the same; and to supress any errour or contention that might begine to rise up amongst them; and accordingly God gave good success to his indeavors herein all his days, and he saw the fruite of his labours in that behalfe." (Bradford, *History of Plymouth Plantation,* Mass. Historical Society, 1912, 2:347, et seq.)

* * * * *

William^1 Brewster, b. 1567, in England; d. 10 Apr. 1644, in Plymouth; m. 1591, Mary ——; b. c. 1569; d. 17 Apr. 1627, at Plymouth. ①

* * * * *

Children of William^1 BREWSTER and Mary ——:

*1. Jonathan^2 b. 12 Aug. 1593, at Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, Eng.; d. 7 Aug. 1659; m. 10 Apr. 1624, at Plymouth, Lucretia Oldham, b. ——; d. 4 Mar. 1678/9.

*2. Love^2 b. ——; d. 1650, at Duxbury; m. 15 May 1634 (o. s.) at Plymouth, Sarah Collier, b. ——; d. 26 Apr. 1691, at Plymouth. She m. (2) aft. 1 Sep. 1656, Richard Parke, b. ——; d. 1665, at Cambridge.

✓ *3. Patience^2 b. ——; d. not long bef. 12 Dec. 1634, at Plymouth; m. 5 Aug. 1624, at Plymouth, Thomas PRENCE, b. c. 1600; d. 29 Mar. 1673, at Plymouth.

He m. (2) 1 Apr. 1635, at Plymouth, Mary Collier, b. ——; d. ——; he is known to have had two other wives later, names unknown.

*4. Fear^{3} b. ——; d. in Dec. 1634, at Plymouth; m. bef. 22 May 1627, Isaac^{1} ALLERTON, b. c. 1586; d. in Feb. 1658/9, at New Haven.

5. Wrestling^{3} b. ——; d. aft. 22 May 1627; unm.

6. ——^{3} b. ——; d. at Leyden, and buried in St. Pancras, 20 June, 1609.

* * * * *

Children of Jonathan^{2} BREWSTER and Lucretia Oldham:

1. William^{3} b. 9 Mar. 1625, at Plymouth; d. ——; m. 15 Oct. 1651, Mary Peame "of London", b. ——; d. ——.

*2. Mary^{3} b. 16 Apr. 1627, at Plymouth; d. aft. 23 Mar. 1697/8; m. 10 or 12 Nov. 1645, at Plymouth, John TURNER, Sr., b. ——; d. 1697, at Scituate.

3. Jonathan^{3} b. 17 July 1629, at Plymouth; d. ——.

*4. Ruth^{3} b. 3 Oct. 1631, at Jones River (Plymouth); d. 1 May or 30 Apr. 1677, at New London; m. (1) 14 Mar. 1651, John PICKETT, b. ——; d. 16 Aug. 1667, at sea; m. (2) 2 July 1668, at New London, Charles HILL, b. ——; d. ——.

*5. Benjamin^{3} b. 17 Nov. 1633, at Duxbury; d. 14 Sep. 1710, at Norwich, Conn.; m. last day Feb. 1659/60, Ann Darte, b. ——; d. 9 May 1708 or 1709.

*6. Elizabeth^{3} b. 1 May 1637, at Duxbury; d. in Feb. 1708, at New London; m. (1) 7 Sep. 1653, Peter BRADLEY, b. ——; d. 3 Apr. 1662, at New London; m. (2) aft. 13 July 1676, at New London, Christopher CHRISTOPHERS, b. c. 1631; d. 23 July 1687, at New London.

*7. Grace^{3} b. 1 Nov. 1639, at Duxbury; d. 22 Apr. 1684; m. 4 Aug. 1659, Daniel WETHERELL, b. 29 Nov. 1630, at Maidstone, Kent, Eng.; d. 14 Apr. 1719.

*8. Hannah^{3} b. 3 Nov. 1641, at Duxbury; d. aft. 24 Nov. 1691; m. 23 Dec. 1664, at New London, Samuel STARR, b. ——; d. ——.

* * * * *

Children of Love^{2} BREWSTER and Sarah Collier:

*1. Sarah^{3} b. ——; d. bef. 21 Jan. 1678/9; m. aft. 4 Apr. 1654, Benjamin BARTLETT^{3} (Mary^{2} Warren, Richard^{1}) b. ——, at Plymouth; d. bet. 21 and 28 Aug. 1691, at Duxbury.

*2. Nathaniel^{3} b. ——; d. 1676; m. ——, Sarah ——; b. ——; d. ——.

*3. William^{3} b. c. 1645; d. 3 Nov. 1723, at Duxbury; m. 2 Jan. 1672, at Duxbury, Lydia Partridge, b. ——; d. 2 Feb. 1742/3, at Duxbury.

*4. Wrestling^{3} b. ——; d. 1 Jan. 1696/7, at Duxbury; m. ——, Mary ——; b. Nov. 1661; d. 12 Nov. 1742, at Kingston. She m. (2) 23 May 1700, at Duxbury, John Partridge, b. c. 1658; d. 5 Apr. 1731, at Duxbury.

* * * * *

Children of Patience^{2} Brewster and Thomas PRENCE:

*1. Rebecca^{3} b. bef. 22 May 1627; d. bef. 18 July 1651; m. 22 Apr. 1646, at Plymouth, Edmund FREEMAN, (1) b. ——; d. bef. 5 Jan. 1703/4. He m. (2) 18 July 1651, at Sandwich, Margaret Perry, b. ——; d. aft. 2 Mar. 1684/5.

*2. Thomas^{3} b. bef. 22 May 1627; d. bef. 13 Mar. 1672, in England; m. ——, Susanna ——, b. ——; d. ——.

✓ *3. Mercy^{3} b. c. 1631, at Plymouth; d. 28 Sep. 1711, at Eastham; m. 13 or 14 Feb. 1649, at Eastham, John FREEMAN, b. c. 1621; d. 28 Oct. 1719, at Eastham.

*4. Hannah^3 b. bef. 1635; d. bef. 23 Nov. 1698; m. (1) 13 Feb. 1649, at Eastham, Nathaniel MAYO, b. ——; d. aft. 19 Dec. 1661, and bef. 4 Mar. 1661/2; m. (2) bet. 5 June 1667, and 11 Sep. 1671, Jonathan SPARROW, b. c. 1634; d. 21 Mar. 1706/7, at Eastham. He m. (1) Rebecca Bangs; (2) Hannah (Prence) Mayo; (3) Sarah (Lewis) Cobb. (For children of these marriages, see "Mayflower Descendant" 14:193, et seq.)

* * * * *

Child of Fear^2 Brewster and Isaac^1 ALLERTON:

*1. Isaac^3 b. 1630, at Plymouth; d. 1702, at Westmoreland Co., Va.; graduated Harvard 1650; accompanied his father on his voyages between Plymouth, New Haven, New Amsterdam and Virginia; m. (1) c. 1652, Elizabeth ——, b. ——; d. c. 1660; m. (2) c. 1663, in Virginia, Elizabeth (Willoughby) (Overzee) Colclough, b. ——; d. ——.

ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER

Fourth Signer of the Mayflower Compact

(1567 - April 10, 1644)

"Elder Brewster's Prophecy":

"In our heaviest trials has not the Divine Presence ever been with us? . . . Generations to come shall look back to this hour, and these scenes of agonizing trial . . . and say:

> Here was our beginning as a people.
>
> These were our fathers.
>
> Through their trials we inherit our blessings."

(From Rufus Choate's Address of 1843 in New York)

* * * * *

BREWSTER FAMILY SURNAMES

THREE GENERATIONS

ALLERTON
BARTLETT
BRADLEY
BREWSTER
CHRISTOPHERS
FREEMAN
HILL
MAYO
PICKETT
PRENCE (PRINCE)
SPARROW
STARR
TURNER
WETHERELL

"Plymouth Colony - Its History + Its People 1620-1691" by Eugene A. Stratton (1986)

Pages 250-2

BREWSTER, LOVE – A 1620 *Mayflower* passenger, he arrived with his parents William and Mary Brewster. He married Sarah Collier (*PCR* 1:30), daughter of William Collier, q.v., 15 May 1634. His children were Sarah Brewster, who married Benjamin^2 Bartlett; Nathaniel, who married, but whose wife's name is not known; William, who married Lydia Partridge, daughter of George; and Wrestling, who married a Mary, whose maiden name is not known (*NEHGR* 53:113-14, 285). He named his wife and four children in his will dated 6 October 1650, inventory 31 January 1650/51 (*MD* 2:203).

BREWSTER, MARY – The wife of Elder William Brewster, Mary arrived on the 1620 *Mayflower*. Walter Burgess, *John Robinson, the Pastor of the Pilgrims* (1920), p. 80, advanced the view that she was the daughter of Thomas Wentworth. This was supported by John G. Hunt, "New Light on the Brewsters of Scrooby and New England," *TAG* 41:1, and has been tenaciously clung to by numerous Brewster descendants, who would like to claim a Wentworth royal line. However, the evidence for such an identification is too scant to serve for a judgment, and Hunt himself abandoned the Wentworth claim when he wrote more recently in *Of Mary Brewster*, three parts (privately published, 1984, 1985) that Elder Brewster's wife was a Mary Wyrral; but again the evidence is not adequate. A review by E. A. Stratton published in the Spring 1985 issue of the *Detroit Society for Genealogical Research Magazine* argues that the parentage of Mary Brewster is still unproven (see also Dr. Bangs in *MQ* 51:165-66, fn 1). Mary died at Plymouth 17 April 1627 (*Brewster Book* – see under Jonathan Brewster, above).

BREWSTER, WILLIAM – For all that we know about him, there is much more that we do not know; for example, we do not know the dates of his birth and death. Various accounts differ showing birthdates in 1559, 1560, 1563, 1564 or 1566-67, and death dates ca. 18 April 1643, or ca. 16 April 1644. Dexter, "The True Date of the Birth and Death of Elder Brewster," *NEHGR* 18:18, gives good reasons for believing that he was born in 1566 or 1567, and that he died in April 1644. John G. Hunt, "The Mother of Elder William Brewster of the Mayflower," *NEHGR* 124:250, makes a good case that his parents were William and Mary (Smythe) (Simkinson) Brewster of Scrooby, Nottinghamshire. He entered Peterhouse, Cambridge University, on 3 December 1580, but apparently did not graduate. He became an assistant to William Davison, one of Queen Elizabeth's Secretaries of State, and he went to Holland with Davison in 1585 on a diplomatic mission. When Davison was imprisoned by Queen Elizabeth as a scapegoat for the execution of Mary Queen of Scots, Brewster returned to Scrooby and subsequently was appointed to his father's old post there as postmaster, holding that position until 1607. He was imprisoned as the result of the betrayal of a ship's master when he was leading a group of Separatists fleeing England for Holland. On being released, he went to Holland, where he became ruling elder of the separatist church, supporting himself and his family by running a printing business (Lucy Hall Greenlaw, "Early Generations of the Brewster Family," *NEHGR* 53:109; *Bradford [Ford]* 2:342-50).

William Brewster arrived at Plymouth on the 1620 *Mayflower* accompanied by his wife Mary and their sons Love and Wrestling. He continued as ruling elder of the Plymouth Church until he died. Bradford summed up his work: "He would labour with his hands in the feilds as long as he was able; yet when the church had no other minister, he taught twise every Saboth, and both powerfully and profitably, to the great contentment of the hearers, and their comfortable edification. He did more in this behalfe in a year, then many that have their hundreds a year doe in all their lives. . . . He had a singuler good gift in prayer, both publick and private, in ripping up the hart and conscience before God, in the humble confession of sinne, and begging the mercies of God in Christ for the pardon of same" (*Bradford [Ford]* 2:348-50). His inventory (*MD* 3:15) shows a private library of hundreds of books, mostly religious, but displaying a considerable breadth of interest for a man of his times.

His children were Jonathan, Patience (who married Thomas Prence), Fear (who married Isaac Allerton), Love, Wrestling, and a child that died in Leiden. Wrestling, Patience, and Fear predeceased him, the two daughters having had children, and Wrestling dying without issue. An excellent short account of Brewster's life is given in *Dawes-Gates* 2:143-56, and, in a footnote on p. 151, documented information is included to support the good possibility that Brewster had had some interest in the Virginia settlement, and that he might have been the father of the Capt. Edward Brewster who was a resident of that settlement and who returned to England in 1618. A contemporary, Nathaniel Brewster of Brookhaven, Long Island, in spite of claims to the contrary, has been shown most likely not to have been related to Elder Brewster's family (Donald Lines Jacobus, "The Family of Rev. Nathaniel Brewster," *TAG* 12:199). The most comprehensive family history to date is Emma C. Jones, *The Brewster Genealogy*, 2 vols. (1908), which is good, but with some errors. A fully documented account of Brewster's first five generations is being prepared for the General Society of Mayflower Descendants by its Historian General, Barbara Lambert Merrick. A recent biography by Mary B. Sherwood, *Pilgrim: A Biography of William Brewster* can be obtained from the author at P.O. Box 6541, Falls Church, VA 22046.

BREWSTER, WRESTLING – A 1620 *Mayflower* passenger, he arrived with his father Elder William Brewster, q.v. *Bradford (Ford)* 2:402, wrote that Wrestling Brewster died as a young man, unmarried.

– cont'd over –

BREWSTER, JONATHAN – The oldest son of Elder William and Mary Brewster, Jonathan arrived at Plymouth in 1621 on the *Fortune*. The *Brewster Book*, a part of which contains family birth, marriage, and death records, was begun by Jonathan Brewster and continued by members of his family, and it is transcribed in *MD* 1:1 and continuing issues. The first family entry is "Johnnathan Brewster was borne at Scroby in Nottinghamshyre the 12th of August 1593 yeaes." He lived in Leiden with his parents, and considerable information on his life there can be found in Jeremy D. Bangs, "Jonathan Brewster in Leiden Documents," *MQ* 51:161, 52:6, 57. He was a ribbon maker and exporter in Holland, and in 1617 he formed a partnership with Thomas Brewer, who later became one of the Adventurers. In this series of articles, Dr. Bangs effectively counters the claim of the Dexters that Jonathan Brewster had a wife and child who died in Holland. In Plymouth, Jonathan engaged in various activities, acting at times as an attorney, starting a ferry service, and engaging in coastal shipping to Virginia. In 1635 he was in charge of a trading post in Connecticut on behalf of Plymouth Colony, later returning to Plymouth. In 1652 he started his own trading post in Connecticut, and was censured by the local government for doing it without permission, but was allowed to keep his post. He was a close friend of Connecticut Gov. John Winthrop, Jr. and a fellow experimenter and scientist with his own laboratory at his trading post (Morison, *Builders*, p. 283). He married Lucretia Oldham, q.v., at Plymouth 10 April 1624 and they had William, Mary, Jonathan, Ruth, Benjamin, Elizabeth, Grace, and Hannah. (See also Barbara Lambert Merrick, "Jonathan Brewster and His Family," *MQ* 52:72-83.)

Page 334

OLDHAM, LUCRETIA – She was the sister of John Oldham, q.v., and wife of Jonathan Brewster, q.v. *The Brewster Book* (*MD* 1:8) records that Jonathan Brewster married "Lucretia Oldam of Darby the 10th Aprill 1624." A note by John G. Hunt (*NEHGR* 111:242) shows a baptized Lucretia, daughter of William Ouldham, in the Parish of All Saints, Derby, Derbyshire, on 14 January 1600/01. William Ouldham had married Philippa Sowter there on 17 November 1588.

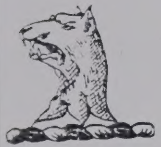
OLDHAM, JOHN – He arrived at Plymouth in 1623 on the *Anne* with his family, including his sister Lucretia Oldham, q.v. Though the relationship between John Oldham and Lucretia (Oldham) Brewster has been questioned, there is a letter from Jonathan Brewster dated 30 April 1636 to John Winthrop, Jr. in Connecticut in which Brewster writes "and if my brother Oldam be at the rivers mouth" (*Winthrop Papers*, p. 67). It is interesting that there was a Margaret Oldham at Leiden, who was betrothed on 29 July 1611 to William Bassett (Dexter, p. 603). While this in itself proves nothing, it is surprising to note how many of the surnames of people in early Plymouth show up in Leiden. In the 1623 land division, John Oldham and "those joyned with him" received ten shares, an unusually large grouping. Those joined with him presumably included his wife and children, his sister, and other individuals "on their particular" (see text). John Oldham was a coconspirator with Rev. John Lyford in 1624 and as a consequence was exiled from Plymouth Colony. He first went to Nantasket (Hull), but in 1625 returned to Plymouth in spite of his banishment. There, Bradford writes (*Ford*, 1:411-14) they "apointed a gard of musketers which he was to pass throw, and ever one was ordered to give him a thump on the brich, with the but end of his musket." The Dorset group employed him to help colonize Cape Ann in 1625, but he became dissatisfied and later went to Virginia. He returned to Hull and showed himself repentant to the Plymouth leaders, so much so that they put him in charge of Thomas Morton of Merrymount when they sent the latter back to England in 1630. Oldham returned from England with the Bay Colony settlers and became a deputy at Watertown. He was killed by Indians while on a trading voyage to Block Island in 1636. As related in the text, Oldham's murder was one of the immediate causes of the Pequot War.

Bradford (*Ford* 1:412) noted that among those with him then, "2 litle boys that were his kinsmen were saved." Pope states that John and Thomas Oldham, ages twelve and ten in 1635, came to New England on the *Elizabeth and Ann*, and settled in Plymouth Colony, and they may have been related to John Oldham. John Oldham's baptism has not been found in All Saints parish, Derby, Derbyshire (though a baptism probably pertaining to his sister Lucretia was – see below), but the records of All Saints do show that among the children of Thomas and Elizabeth Oldham were John, baptized 9 April 1622, and Thomas, baptized 23 August 1624. These would be possibilities for John Oldham's young "kinsmen."

Page 30

Brewster

The genealogists do not agree upon the origin of this noted New England family. Steele names *William* Brewster, an inn-keeper of Scrooby, county Suffolk, England (1620), as the first emigrant, whilst Savage insists on *John* Brewster, of Portsmouth (1665), as being the head of the family. In doubt, the New England Brewsters have adopted English arms, duly recorded in Burke.



Crest: A bear's head, erased, azure.

Motto: *Verité soyet ma garde.* [Truth be my guard.]

T. Gwilt–Mapleson: *Hand Book of Heraldry, 1852.*
W. H. Whitmore: *The American Genealogist, 1875.*
Sir Bernard Burke: *The General Armory of England, etc., 1883.*
Rev. Ashbel Steele: *The Chief of the Pilgrims, or the Life and Time of William Brewster.*
The Book of Family Crests, II., 62.

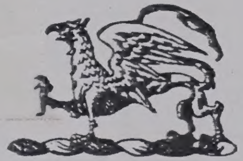
Page 73

Wentworth

Elder William Wentworth, the emigrant, who came to Boston in 1628, is acknowledged to have descended from a younger branch of that great house of Wentworth, who received the grant of so many noble titles: *Earls of Strafford, Marquesses of Rockingham,* etc., etc.

The direct, early ancestor of the emigrant was *Thomas* Wentworth, *of North Elmsall,* county York, who died in 1522. His greatgreatgrandson was *William* Wentworth *of Ravendale,* father of the emigrant.

Historically, the family descends from *William* de Wentworth *of Wentworth* (tempo. Henry III.).



Crest: A griffin, passant, wings elevated, argent.

Motto: *En Dieu est tout.* [In God is all.]

Heraldic Journal, III., 170.
A General Memoir and Biographical Account of William Wentworth, etc., 1850.
John Wentworth, LL.D.: *The Wentworth Genealogy 1878.*
New England Historical and Genealogical Register, IV., VI., VII., VIII., XVIII., XIX., XXII., XXVI.
New Hampshire Historical Society Collections, V., 238–42.
W. H. Whitmore: *The American Genealogist, 1875.*
Sir Bernard Burke: *The General Armory of England, etc., 1884.*
Sir Bernard Burke: *Gen. Hist. of the Dormant, Abeyant, Forfeited, and Extinct Peerages of the British Empire, 1883.*
The Book of Family Crests, II., 491.

"Mayflower Planters" Leon C. Hills 1936, 41, 1975 reprint GPC

Here Cardinal Woolsey passed weeks ministering deeds of charity, and planted a mulberry tree.

Henry VIII, 1509-47, with a company of gay companions lodged here on his way north in 1541.

About 1606 the congregation of Separatists at Gainsborough divided into two "distinct" bodies. One under John Smyth fled to Amsterdam and organized an independent Church there.

The Rev. Richard Clifton became pastor of the other body which met at Scrooby. To this congregation belonged Rev. John Robinson, Elder William Brewster, and young William Bradford, a lad of about eighteen years, but showing marked promise of leadership even at that time.

Bradford, in his youth, was an apt pupil of Elder William Brewster, and held him in high regard.

Almost fifty years later, in 1650, when Bradford's part in the great drama was about finished, and he was to leave the stage forever, he wrote of Brewster,

> "They ordinarily mett at his house on ye Lords day (which was a manor of ye bishop) and with great love he entertained them when they came, making provision for them to his great charge."

Rev. John Robinson, Brewster and Bradford worked diligently among the families of the Parish to make converts to the Separatist Church.

The Scrooby congregation grew, and the authorities were forced to take action. Brewster found it necessary to give up the Post.

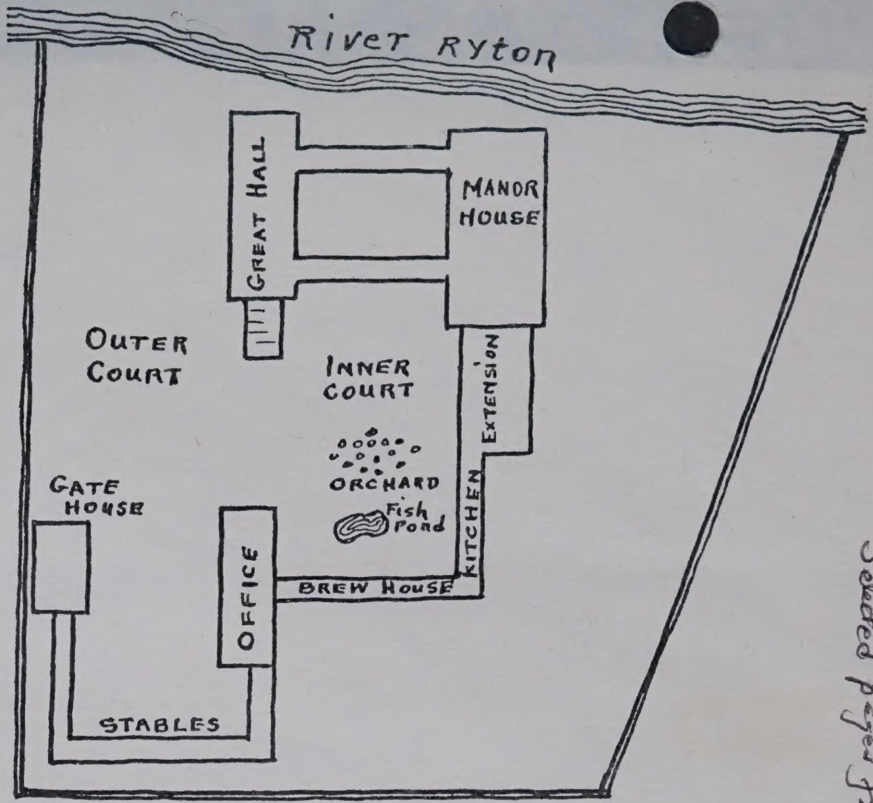
About one hundred in the Parish were finally prevailed upon by Rev. John Robinson to remove to Holland. Under the circumstances they found some difficulty in leaving England, but after several attempts they established themselves in Leyden in 1609.

This step was taken only after the most careful consideration. There seemed no other way, at the time, to accomplish the establishment of an independent Church, and, in this decision Robinson, Brewster and Bradford were backed up by friends of the cause, such as John Carver, Robert Cushman, Isaac Allerton and other men of means and influence, some of whom joined the congregation later in Leyden.

From the first, the leaders were doubtful about being able to establish homes in Holland satisfactorily. Others had attempted it and failed, and their fears were fully justified as events proved.

A number of unhappy years were passed in Leyden. There were many reasons for this condition of affairs, among them may be stated the following:

1. Foreign language and customs.
2. Feared absorption by Dutch in time.
3. Impending war between Holland and Spain.



SCROOBY MANOR

NOTTINGHAMSHIRE ENGLAND
Mecca of Pilgrim Descendants
ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER
"his house"
1603 - 1609

WRITING ABOUT ELDER BREWSTER IN 1650
BRADFORD STATES,

"They ordinarily mett at his house on ye Lords day (which was a manor of ye bishops) and with great love he entertained them when they came making provision for them to his great charge."

L.C.H.
1935.

Selected pages from Mayflower Planters - Leon C Hills

"Mayflower Planters" - Leon C Hills

midst or friends, books, and wonderful Cape Cod surroundings the years slipped by with moccasined feet.

In 1622, an old Cambridge friend, John Pory, dropped in at Plymouth, on one of his trips along the coast. He was an agent of King James, but also a good friend to Brewster, and before the visit was over the King's business seems to have been lost in the fascinating recesses of that library of books.

Pory spent much more time that summer in 1622 digging into Brewster's books than he intended. He dipped into some of the books that had come from the press in "Choir Alley." Whether or not he had time to read "Seyrge of Drunkerds," "Politike Diseases," or more weighty volumes, is not known, but he did write a letter of appreciation when he returned to London, dated Aug. 28, 1622, addressed to Gov. Bradford, stating in part:

> "To yourself and Mr. Brewster I must humbly acknowledge myself many ways indebted. Whose books I would have you think very well bestowed x x x x my haste would not suffer me to remember, much less to beg Mr. Ainsworth's elaborate work on the five books of Moses x x x x.
>
> Your unfeigned and firm friend,
>
> John Pory."

In 1630 Brewster and Bradford seem to have begun collaborating on the "History of Plymouth Plantation." It is possible that during the writing of this comprehensive work, the original notes and letters of Brewster's were destroyed, as the substance was made a part of the final draft of the history. However, in 1644, the work was quite complete, and Brewster's death failed in any way to affect the situation. The wonderful manuscript was an accomplished fact.

Master William Brewster, teacher, printer, pioneer planter of a great state, soldier, diplomat and statesman, "dyed at Plymouth in New England the 10th of Aprill, 1644."

Refs. 193, 267, 271, 273, 284, 285, 286, 339, 475, 476, 478, 489, 290, 291; 564, 128, 230, 334, 335, 33, 508, 362, 383, 4.

I. **Brewster,** William^2 (William^1), born England, perhaps, in Nottinghamshire, about 1564?; died Plymouth, Mass., April 20, 1644; age about 80 years according to Bradford, married 1st or 2nd before 1593 Mary (   ); some writers have suggested Mary Wentworth. She died at Plymouth, Apr. 27, 1627.

He failed to make a will, and on June 5, 1644, his "onely two sonnes surviveing," Jonathan and Love, were appointed administrators of the estate, which was quite interesting.

Jonathan, the eldest son, was given the arms consisting of two swords, pistol, dagger and armor, head piece and "costlett" (corselet). One sword was presented to the Mass. Hist. Soc. in 1798. These items are probably more definitive o illiam Brewster's real character than that of "Elder" in a church.

CHILDREN—NO DEFINITE LIST AVAILABLE

IIa. William, b. England 1585-6 (?); killed by Indians Jamestown, Va., 1608.
IIIb. Cept. Edward, b. England 1587 (?); d. England.
IVc. Jonathan, b. England Aug. 12, 1593; d. Preston, Conn., Aug. 7, 1659; m. 1st (   ); m. 2nd Lucretia **Oldham.**
d. Child, b. England   ; d. Leyden, buried June 20, 1609.
Vc. Love. b. England 1595 (?); d. Duxbury, Mass., 1651; m. Sarah **Collier.**
f. Wrestling, b. England   ; d. after 1627; unmarried.
VIg. Fear, b. England   ; d. Dec. 1, 1634; m. Isaac **Allerton** (2nd wife).
✓ VIIh. Patience, b. England   ; d.   ; m. Gov. Thomas **Prence.**

Refs. 171, 290, 291, 472, 473, 478, 479, 480.

IIa. **Brewster,** William^3 (William^2, William^1), born, probably, in or near London about 1586, died Virginia "Aug. 10, 1608, the tenth day died William Bruster gentleman, of a wound given by the savages, and was buried the 11th day." (See letter from this William to Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, in this volume under the article on the Virginia Company). Although Robert Cecil was a friend of Elder William Brewster, the young William who died 1608 may be of another family. It is an interesting problem. He may have been of Suffolk County.

IIIb. **Brewster,** Capt. Edward^3 (William^2, William^1), born England about 1587, died, probably in London after 1635. His family record, if any, may be in London, or vicinity.

Probably, through the influence of his father, Edward subscribed to the Virginia Company in the amount of 30 pounds, and sailed from England during March with the expedition, which, apparently, included Stephen Hopkins and Christopher Martin, later of the Mayflower, arriving in Jamestown, Va., June, 1610, although some of the fleet had been delayed by shipwreck in the Bermudas (see the story of Stephen Hopkins in Volume I of this series).

Edward arrived at Jamestown in the service of Lord De La Warr, being Captain of the Lord's own company or body guard.

After spending eight years in the Colony, Lord De La Warr died, and Captain Edward Brewster, forthwith, severely criticized Governor Argall's handling of his friend's estate.

Argall, being Acting-Governor, judge and plaintiff in the case, tried Edward by court martial and sentenced him to death, but, on petition of the local ministry and other friends in the Colony, commuted his sentence to banishment, under oath never to return.

Captain Brewster sailed for England Nov., 1618, just about the time his father was busy trying to make arrangements to come to Virginia himself, and getting into trouble with King James over printing and selling certain books.

Arriving in London, Sir Edwin Sandys and other good friends of the Brewsters, immediately appealed the case for Captain Edward. It was tried and retried in London Courts from 1618-23, with Sir Edwin acting as counsel and peace maker. At last he was exonerated, but, at the same time, Argall and his associates, none too honest, were whitewashed.

Evidently Edward was not a fighting "Puritan" or a "Separatist," for it was stated in London in Aug., 1619: "Brewster's sonne of his ffather' sect within this halfe yeare, now comes to church," and in commenting on William Brewster, who was then probably living among his friends in Duke's Place, safe from the wrath of James, it was stated "Captain Edward Brewster, his sonne also returned this year from Virginia and conformed to the church." Then again another comment, "Brewster frightened back into the low countries, his son has conformed and comes to church."

Of course, during this period, Captain Edward was under the strain of trying to clear himself in the London Courts from Argall's Jamestown conviction, and attending the established church probably strengthened his case.

He seems to have remained in London, and may possibly be the Edward Brewster, bookseller, in 1635 near the north door of St. Paul's, and at a later period treasurer of the Stationer's Company.

It is possible that Edward was still living in 1656, for Jonathan Brewster on this date seemed about ready to return to England, perhaps to join his brother.

There may have been two contemporary Edward Brewsters in London, one a descendant of Humphrey Brewster of Wrentham Hall.

This matter will be more thoroughly discussed in future volumes. There were Brewsters in the Company of Drapers before 1620.

IVc. **Brewster,** Jonathan³ (William², William¹), born Scrooby, England, Aug. 12, 1593; died Preston, Conn., Aug. 7, 1659; married 1st Leyden (?); married 2nd Plymouth, Apr. 10, 1624, Lucretia **Oldham,** died Mar. 4, 1678/9, she was a sister of John **Oldham** who came to Plymouth, 1623, from "Darby" England. The 1st wife of Jonathan, name unknown, seems to have been buried in Leyden, May 10, 1619. A child may have been buried there Nov. 27, 1610. He came to Plymouth in the "Fortune," Nov., 1621.

Jonathan, in the Leyden records, is mentioned seve times in connection with his father. On June 25, 1609, "William Brewster, Englishman, Mary Brewster, wife of the same, and Jonathan Brewster, their son."

They seem to have lived in Leyden on the "Pieterskerkhof," in the little colony of houses on the Robinson estate.

At the betrothal of one John Reynolds on July 28, 1617, an employe of his father William, Jonathan acted as a witness.

He was admitted into full citizenship at Leyden, June 30, 1617. On Aug. 27, 1618, he witnessed the betrothal of Edward Winslow.

About 1630 Jonathan removed his family to Duxbury, from which place he was a deputy to the General Court 1639, '41-'44. In 1649 he removed to New London, where he was admitted as an inhabitant Feb. 25, 1649-50. Here he soon became deputy to the General Court of the Colony of Connecticut, 1650-'55-'58.

It is probable that Jonathan was not entirely pleased with his life in New England, and that he may have been in correspondence with his brother Edward, or other relatives in England, for under date of Sept. 1, 1656, he wrote a letter to his sister-in-law, Sarah, widow of Love Brewster, stating that he and his whole family "resolved for old England" the following year, and two of his sons, William and Jonahan, did go. The facts leading up to this decision would be highly illuminating. The Allertons and Brewsters, at times, appear to have been in disagreement with their friends at Plymouth Plantation, probably due to economic causes, rather than religious differences.

CHILDREN

a. William, b. Mar. 9, 1625; d. England (?); m. Mary **Peime** of London.
b. Mary, b. Apr. 16, 1627; d. ; m. John **Turner.**
c. Jonathan, b. July 17, 1629; d. England (?); m.
d. Ruth, b. Oct. 3, 1631; d. New London, Ct., May 1, 1677; m. 1st John **Pickett**; died at sea; m. 2nd Charles **Hill** of London.
e. Benjamin, b. Nov. 17, 1633; d. Norwich, Ct., Sept. 14, 1710; m. Ann (**Addis**) **Darte.**
f. Elizabeth, b. May 1, 1637; d. New London, Ct., 1708; m. 1st Peter **Bradley**; m. 2nd Christopher **Christophers.**
g. Grace, b. Nov. 1, 1639; d. New London, Ct., Apr. 22, 1684; m. Daniel **Wetherell.**
h. Hannah, b. Nov. 3, 1641; d. New London, Ct., after 1691; m. Samuel **Starr.**

Refs. 309, 310, 311, 293, 290.

Ve. **Brewster,** Love³ (William², William¹), born England about 1595, perhaps in Scrooby, because his father appears to have returned to the "country" (Scrooby) in 1593; died Duxbury

THE SANDYS AND BREWSTERS OF SCROOBY MANOR

Sherwood Forest and the shades of Robin Hood are in constant communion with the little parish of Scrooby Notts, which came very early into the possession of the See of York. At the time of William the Conqueror, 1086, a survey, commonly called the Domesday Book, clearly describes it as one of the properties of the northern archbishops. No palace then existed on the land. A century later there appears to have been a residence there of no mean proportions. In 1207 King John ordered "three tuns of Vascon wine and one of Massac to be conveyed thither." At that time his half brother was the archbishop, and the King was making provision for a protracted visit. He spent some time there, signing orders which went to distant parts of England. From the size of the wine order it would seem that the palace must have been very commodious, and that the parties held there were far from small.

Although it was truly in a remote and lonely section of the wild "North Country," yet as early as 1301 the palace had a chapel of its own, where homage could be extended "to the Archbishop in the Chapel of Scrooby for the Manor of Muskham."

On Dec. 19, 1486, six years before the so-called discovery of America, the archbishop conferred a benediction upon Thomas Thurne, abbot-elect.

Then, on June 12, 1503, the beautiful Margaret, eldest daughter of Henry VII, on her way to Scotland to become the second wife of King James IV of Scotland, made a stay at Scrooby. In her cavalcade on this occasion were the great and near-great of England. There was the Earl of Surrey, Lord Treasurer of England, "varey nobleley arayed and all his Trayne," "my Lady his Wyffe, accompaned of many Ladys and Gentlyllwomen varey nobleley arayed." Then came "Ladyes mounted upon fayre Pallefrays, many Squyers before them."

In its prime Scrooby manor house was a noble building, standing on ground given by John, Earl of Chester, in 1170, to the Archbishop of York of his day and was intended as a place of enjoyment to his successors forever. It was used by them as a resting place when they traveled between York and London, or when they desired a change.

During the sixteenth century it was a very popular manor house consisting of two courts, built of timber, having thirty-nine chambers, with a banqueting hall, ceiled and dressed with "waynscot," a chapel with "one lectionary and superellers, a payer of organs, a clock without plometts and ropes."

The great north road to Scotland wound through the little village by the quaint and peaceful stone church of St. Wilfrid with crenelated tower and lofty spire. It was here that William Brewster used to worship, before King James ascended the throne in 1603, and Rev. John Robinson, an old friend and neighbor, came back to his home in Sturton a few miles distant, without a "living" and no place to hold a meeting.

It is doubtful if Brewster was a very enthusiastic "Puritan" or "Separatist" before 1603-4. In fact, he may have stumbled into a series of events which, rather unintentionally, changed the even and peaceful course of a country gentleman, and reshaped the destiny of his life.

Within the little stone church, beautifully covered with spreading ivy, may still be seen the Brewster pew having a richly carved seat and back of dark oak, a very fitting seat, indeed, for Master William Brewster, sometime assistant Secretary at the Court of Elizabeth.

In Sept., 1529, Cardinal Wolsey removed from Southwell to Scrooby, evading various attentions that would have been paid him on the journey by the Earl of Shrewsbury and the country gentlemen, lest it should be said that he was courting favor. He remained at Scrooby some time, doing many deeds of charity in the neighborhood.

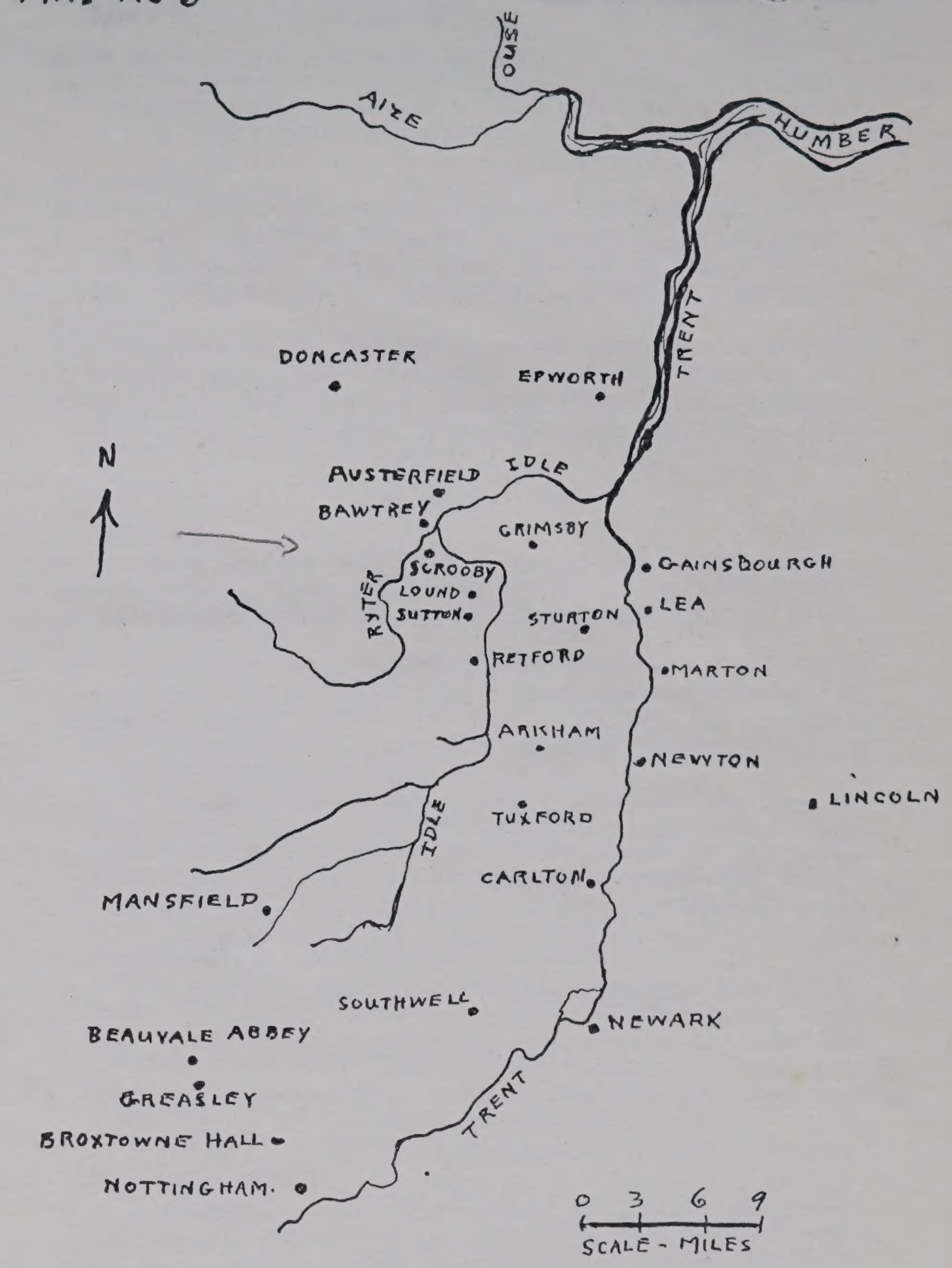
Strange as it may appear Scrooby was not lost to the archbishops because of the Reformation, but that fate befell the Manor at the hands of Archbishop Sandys, who had a large family and considered it his duty to provide for them out of the estates of the church. The rather elastic customs of the times seemed to tolerate this sort of practice. Therefore, he devised a lease of four livings—including Scrooby Manor—to his eldest son Sir Samuel Sandys, and the ancient house remained in the lay hands of the Sandys family until 1676, and lost, forever, all connection with the See of York.

With the Sandys, came the Brewsters, one brother Henry Brewster was Vicar of Sutton-cum-Scrooby or Loud in 1565, while another brother, William Brewster, became a bailiff to Sir Samuel Sandys and was appointed "Post." His official duty was to keep two horses ready to take the road between Doncaster and Tuxford and convey the "two bags of leather," which served the purpose of the mail.

The family of Archbishop Sandys had much to do with the Virginia Company and the planting of the first English colonies in America. In fact if it had not been for the stubborn perseverance of Sir Edwin Sandys the whole project would have fallen through, and America would have been overrun with the Spanish, Dutch and French.

Scrooby Manor has several claims to distinction. Among the least known and appreciated, but of the highest importance, is its close connection with the Sandys family, certain members of whom nursed the dying Virginia Company along until an English plantation was an assured success on American soil, both in North and South Virginia (Plymouth and Jamestown).

MAP No 3



SCROOBY MANOR AND VICINITY

LCH
1941

SANDYS

I. **Sandys,** Edwin, D. D. Archbishop, born England; married 1st Mary **Sandes,** daughter of John **Sandes;** married 2nd Cicely **Wilford;** died 1588, daughter of Thomas **Wilford.**

He was one of the first reformers, and was committed to the Tower by Queen Mary, but released and fled to Germany where he lived at Strasburgh until accession of Elizabeth in 1558, when he returned to England and became Bishop of Worcester, then of London and finally Archbishop of York.

CHILDREN

IIa. Sir Samuel, b. ; d. ; m. Mercy **Culpeper.**
IIIb. Sir Edwin, b. ; d. ; m. Katherine **Bulkley.**
c. Sir Myles, b. ; d. ; m. Elizabeth **Cooke.**
d. William, b. Sept. 13, 1565; d. ; m. .
e. Thomas, b. ; d. ; m. Margaret **Tyas.**
f. Henry, b. Sept. 30, 1572; d. ; m. .
g. Margaret, b. ; d. ; m. Sir Anthony **Aucher.**
h. Anne, b. ; d. ; m. Sir William **Barne.**
i. George, b. ; d. 1643; m. unmarried.

IIa. **Sandys,** Sir Samuel^2 (Edwin^1), born England, married Mercy Culpeper, daughter of Martin **Culpeper.** He died Aug. 18, 1623, and probably resided at Scrooby Manor much of the time. Member of His Majesty's Council for Virginia 1612, and of Somers Island Company 1615.

CHILDREN BORN (SCROOBY ?)

a. Sir Edwin, b. 1590; d. ; m. Penelope **Bulkley.**
b. Sir Martin, b. 1597; d. at Scrooby; m. Frances **Egiot.**
c. John, b. 1604; d. ; m. Winifred **Chambers.**
d. William, b. ; d. ; m. .
e. Cecily, b. ; d. ; m. John **Brace.**
*f. Margaret, b. ;d. ; m. Sir Francis **Wyatt.**
g. Anne, b. ; d. ; m. Sir Francis **Wenman.**
h. Mary, b. ; d. ; m. Richard **Humphreys.**
i. Mercy, b. ; d. ; m. ( ) **Ewbank.** ←
j. Joyce, b. ; d. ; m. Edward **Dingley.**
k. Elizabeth, b. ; d. ; m. Edward **Pytt.**

IIIb. **Sandys,** Sir Edwin^2 (Edwin^1), born Dec. 9, 1561, died Oct., 1629; married 1st Margaret **Eveleigh;** married 2nd Anna **Southcott;** married 3rd Elizabeth **Nevinson;** married 4th Katherine **Bulkley,** daughter of Sir Richard **Bulkley.**

Sir Edwin was about three years older than William Brewster. They must have known each other well since boyhood. He became renowned as an author, member of Parliament, leader of the "Patriot" or "Liberal" party, a fighter for a repr[illegible]ative assembly. Although a bitter enemy, James knighted him in 1603. From 1617-24 he was the moving spirit in the Virginia Company. Without his encouraging actions English colonies on the Atlantic seaboard of America would have been failures. The whole country would have been left to Spanish, Dutch and French planters.

CHILD BY 1ST WIFE

a. Elizabeth, b. ; d. ; m. Sir Thomas **Wilford.**

CHILD BY 3RD WIFE

b. Anne, b. ; d. ; m. Thomas **Engeham.**

CHILDREN BY 4TH WIFE

c. Henry, b. ; d. ; m. Margaret **Hammond.**
d. Edwin, b. ; d. ; m. Catherine **Champneys.**
e. Richard, b. ; d. ; m. Hester **Aucher.**
f. William, b. ; d. before 1629; m. .
g. Sir Thomas, b. ; d. ; m. .
h. Francis, b. ; d. before 1629; m. .
i. Penelope, b. ; d. ; m. Nicholas **Lechmore.**
j. Frances, b. ; d. ; m. .
k. Catherine, b. ; d. ; m. Gerard **Serimshire.**
l. Mary, b. ; d. ; m. Richard **Spencer.**

Several members of the Sandys family were early in New England, among them Captain James Sandys of Portsmouth, R. I., where he had a land grant in 1643-44, and in 1661 settled on Block Island.

Refs. 339, 591.

The ecclesiastical affairs of Scrooby were really under the guidance of members of the Brewster family for many years.

Among the Bishop's Certificates of persons presented to Benefices within their dioceses by the Archbishop of York for 1565 was:

Brewster, Rev. Henry, "Sutton-super-Loude." He held the "living" till his death in Feb. 1597-8. He was married to Agnes ( ), who was buried at Sutton on Mar. 15, 1597-8, a month after her husband. No records of any children have been found, unfortunately.

I. Rev. James **Brewster** succeeded him as Vicar of Sutton, and held the living until his death Jan. 1613-4; buried at Sutton 14th of that month; married Mary **Welbeck;** buried Apr. 7, 1637. From the register at Sutton is obtained:

CHILDREN BAPTIZED SUTTON

a. Grace, bp. 1600; m. William **Glaive,** Oct. 22, 1620.
b. Eliabeth, bp. 1603; m. .
c. Sussana, bp. 1606; m. unmarried.
d. Judith, bp. 1609; m. Edward **Oldfield,** Nov. 5, 1633.

The Rev. James Brewster, either a cousin or brother of William, performed a good service for the parish of Sutton (about three miles from Scrooby). He transcribed all baptisms, marriages and burials from the oldest book of 1538 to his own time. In 1604, about the time that William Brewster loaned the Manor to his friend Rev. John Robinson for independent meetings, the Rev. James was "instituted" to the Vicarage of "Gringley-on-the-Hill," on the highroad between Bawtry and Gainsboro, but this did not draw him from his beloved Sutton.

There is reason to consider, also, Humphrey Brewster of Wrentham Hall or Manor, Suffolk Co., England, as a possible uncle of William Brewster. This Manor in the Great Survey was held by William de Warrene, and before that time by Edric the Saxon. The manor eventually came into the Dacre family, well known in Nottinghamshire. In 1570 Lord Dacre, by various proceedings as trustee, "vested" the Manor in Lord Norris of Rycot. They held court there in 1572, but in 1575 it was "alienated" to Humphrey Brewster, which alienation was effected by fine levied in 1576.

At this time Rev. Henry Brewster was Vicar of Sutton in Notts, and William Brewster, Sr., was just taking over Scrooby Manor from Sir Thomas[20] Wentworth (see Wentworth family, 20th generation from Reginald[1] 1066).

Some writers suggest that the wife of William Brewster of the "Mayflower" may have been Mary Wentworth. This is quite possible.

The Wentworths were of an ancient Yorkshire family. Thomas Wentworth, 1st Baron of Nettlestead, Suffolk, was of this family, and St. John's Cambridge was the favorite place of schooling for the clan, so that they had as a matter of course, accumulated some more or less "Puritanical ideas."

The Scrooby Manor Wentworths descend from

Refs. 339, 591.

WENTWORTH

I. **Wentworth,** Sir Thomas[19] (from Reginald[1] of 1066), died Dec. 5, 1548; married Beatrix **Woodruff,** widow of John **Drax,** daughter of Sir Richard **Woodruff** of Woolley, Yorkshire.

This Sir Thomas was enormously wealthy for the times, being called "Golden Thomas." He paid Henry VIII a large fine to be excused from accepting the "Order of the Bath," and in 1528 obtained a license from the King to remain covered i[illegible] royal presence. This cost him a small fortune, but it must h[illegible]e given him a lot of personal satisfaction.

CHILDREN

a. William, b. ; d. ; m. .
b. Gervase, b. ; d. ; m. .
c. Michael, b. ; d. ; m. Isabel **Whitley.**
IId. Thomas, b. ; d. Scrooby 1574; m. Grace **Gascoigne.**
e. Bryan, b. ; d. ; m. .
f. Elizabeth, b. ; d. ; m. Ralph **Denham,** Esq.
g. Isabel, b. ; d. ; m. Nicholas **Womwell.**
h. Beatrice, b. ; d. ; m. Thomas **Warrell,** Esq.

IId. **Wentworth,** Thomas[20] (Sir Thomas[19]—Reginald[1]), died Scrooby 1574; married Grace **Gascoigan.**

Thomas Wentworth of "Scrowbie Manor" died (will dated Mar. 27, 1574) and then William Brewster, Sr., took over the tenancy of the historic Manor.

CHILDREN BORN SCROOBY

a. Thomas, b. ; d. ; m. .
*b. Mary, b. ; d. ; m. .
c. Grace, b. ; d. ; m. .
d. Elizabeth, b. ; d. ; m. .

* Did Mary marry William Brewster? Some historians think so. Without marriage and birth dates, however, it cannot be proved. It may have been one later generation. We only know that the widow of William, Sr., was called Prudence, and the widow of William, Jr., Mary.

When Sir Edwin Sandys decided to take over control of the Virginia Company affairs and attempted to organize a representative assembly in the Colonies, he had a very able and sincere friend as an assistant to report on the matter, Mr. John Pory, a Cambridge man, well acquainted with Brewster. Sandys was a leader of the "Liberals" or "Patriot" party in the Commons, and a representative government was his hobby.

The assembly was organized in Jamestown, July 30, 31, August 2, 3, 4, 1619, much to the disgust of King James. John Pory "covered" this epoch-making proceeding in a manner that would do credit to any modern correspondent, in "A Reporte of the Manner of Proceeding in the General Assembly Convened at James City," to the Virginia Company in London.

Pory's letters to Sir Edwin Sandys are extremely interesting, but too numerous to mention here.

In July, 1621, Sir Francis Wyatt was sent by Sandys to Virginia as Governor, and young Christopher Davison, as his secretary. It will be noticed that Wyatt was a son-in-law of Sir

Brewster

1650 (?); married Sarah **Collier,** May 15, 1634, daughter of William **Collier.** She married 2nd Richard **Parke** of Cambridge, Mass., who died there in 1665. She returned to Plymouth and died Apr. 26, 1691.

He came to Plymouth on the Mayflower with his parents and brother Wrestling, and became a member of the Duxbury Company in 1643.

CHILDREN

a. Sarah, b. ; d. ; m. Benjamin **Bartlett.**
b. Nathaniel, b. ; d. 1676; m. Sarah **North.**
c. Dea William, b. ; 1645; d. Nov. 3, 1723; m. Lydia **Partridge.**
d. Wrestling, b. ; d. Jan. 1, 1696/7; m. Mary ( ).

VIg. **Brewster,** Fear³ (William², William¹), born England died Plymouth, Dec. 12, 1634, married Isaac **Allerton,** his 2nd wife before May 22, 1627. He died New Haven, Conn., between Feb. 1st and 12th, 1658-9.

(See Allerton Family)

VIIh. **Brewster,** Patience³ (William², William¹), born England, died 1634 Plymouth, married Gov. Thomas **Prence,** Aug. 5, 1624, his 1st wife, born England 1600/1, died Mar. 29, 1673.

(See Prence Family)

San Sandys of Scrooby, England, brother of Sir Edwin, and that Christopher Davison was a son of William Davison, close friends of Brewster.

Under these circumstances, it is not strange to learn that Pory made a visit on his old friend, Master William Brewster, and others at Plymouth in 1622, and found everybody, more or less, contented. It was on this visit that Pory became so interested in Brewster's library.

Refs. 493, 495, 487, 491, 339, 508, 4, 273, 281, 362, 383, 591, 489, 592.

den[illegible]ver to Capt. John Smith in Sept., 1608. Ratcliffe returned to England in July, 1609, but came right back with Sir Thomas Gates, and was slain by the Indians in 1610.

Capt. Gosnold was an able man, and really an important driving force of the expedition. However, he died in 1607.

John Martin was an influential Merchant Adventurer, and prominent member of the Virginia Company until its dissolution. He was an efficient member of the first Council. Other members of the Martin family either came with the first expedition or soon thereafter, including Richard, Thomas and Christopher Martin, later of the Mayflower.

Capt. George Kendall suffered a dramatic finish almost immediately. He was accused of conspiracy, tried and forthwith hung. Whether guilty is a question, but such were the manners of the times.

Capt. John Smith is familiar to everybody as an adventurer. He was really something of a historian and geographer, as his works clearly show. However, he was excessively subserviant and through necessity had to flatter the King continually in order to maintain himself. Between subserviancy and financial need, he developed into a most fascinating liar, and a problem to historians in general. He replaced Ratcliffe as President of the Council on Sept., 1608, but the next year was recalled to England to answer for certain misdemeanors. Through aid of friends he continued to write history.

Perhaps the main reason why the first colony was such a dismal failure under the Crown charter, 1605 to 1609, is substantially disclosed in the following extract of a report forwarded to the Treasurer of the Company in London by Capt. John Smith in 1608. (History by J. Smith, 1624, p. 70-72).

> "When you send again I intreat you rather send but thirty carpenters, husbandmen, gardiners, fishermen, blacksmiths, masons, and diggers up of trees, roots well provided, then a thousand of such as we have, for except we be able both to lodge them and feed them the most will consume with want of necessaries before they can be good for anything."

Apparently, Smith did not feel very confident about England being able or willing to supply the men for in the same report he suggests:

> "Send into Germany for glasse-men and the rest."

During this period the King was having his troubles. Spain was objecting to some of this colonization on her supposed territory. She had captured an English ship, "Richard," on the way to North Virginia. This question was before Parliament, and the King's old stumbling block, Sir Edwin Sandys, was "the chairman of the committee on Spanish wrongs." T[illegible] that Hampton Court Conference tended to stir religious hatreds again.

Sandys was the head of the "Patriot" party and considered by James as his "greatest enemy," although Sir Francis Bacon was quite liberal and aided in framing the remonstrance of the Commons to the conduct of James I toward his first Parliament.

The Court party extolled "kingly power," claiming it descended from God. James headed this party and had sent to North and South Virginia the publication called "His Majestie's most prudent and Princelye form of government."

Among the members of the first expedition were a number of "gentlemen," mostly young, and with few opportunities for advancement left in England. They were encouraged to join the colony by relatives and friends.

Among these was William Bruster, Gentleman. It seems quite reasonable to assume this person to have been the young son of William Brewster of the Mayflower, about 20 years of age. At this time his father was having difficulties, of a usual nature, at Scrooby, England, where a "process" had been attempted with the following results:

> "Dec 15th 1607 Office V. Richard Jackson & Wm. Bruester of Scrowbie. For Brownisme. An attachment was awarded to W. Blanchard to apprehend them, but he certifieth that he can not finde them, nor understand where they are." (Collections Founders New Plymouth—Hunter).

It is not strange, of course, that the father should have, under the circumstances, used his influence with friends Sir Edwin Sandys, William Davison, Lord John Stanhope, Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury and others to send his son to America with the first expedition. As a matter of fact, he was a member of the Virginia Company himself, and his friends were sending their sons also.

When Capt. Newport returned to England late in 1607, to report on "His Majestie's Council for the first Colony to Virginia to His Majestie's Counsel for Virginia in England," he carried with him among many other papers the following letter from William Brewster, gentleman, to the Earl of Salisbury, as follows:

William Brewster to the Earl of Salisbury

> Sir: it had byne my duty to have wroot the whoole jornye unto yoo, & so I would have done had not this our evar renowned Captayne, Captayne Newport, have come himselfe unto you, whoe will so justly and truly declare, better than I cane, all this his discoverye. This is all I will saye to you, that suche a Baye, a Ryvar, and a land, did

> ar the eye of man behould, and at the head of the Ryvar, which is 160 myles longe ar Rokes & mountaynes, that prommyseth Infynyt Treasure, but our Forces be yet too weake to make further discovery. Now is the King's Majesty offered the most Statlye, Riche Kingom in the wourld, nevar posseste by any christian prynce, be you one meanes amonge manye to further our secondinge, to conquer this land, as well as you were a meanes, to further the discovery of it, and you, yet may lyve to see Ingland moore Riche & Renowned then anye Kingdom, in all Euroopa x x x x x x
>
> (Copy of letter in "Genesis" of U. S. by A. Brown)

(The rest is torn off, perhaps by Robert Cecil, the Earl of Salisbury himself, son of Sir William Cecil, Lord Burleigh, chief minister to Elizabeth, and well acquainted with William Davison and William Brewster, Sr. Robert Cecil held a high position under King James, but was a powerful backer of the Virginia Company and Sir Edwin Sandy, who was the real driving power behind the company. Certain members of the families of Cecil, Davison, Sandys and Brewster went to Virginia before 1620. Likewise Lord Stanhope, whose father, Sir Michael Stanhope, was beheaded on Tower Hill in Feb. 25, 1553, was the master of posts who had placed William Brewster Jr. in the Post at Scrooby sometime after 1590, and was now deeply interested in the Virginia Company).

The letter is from the "Cecil papers" and indorsed as "a part of a letter of William Brewster, gent, from Virginia."

The career of William Brewster, gent, ended with tragic suddenness in Virginia, according to a report written by the Honorable Gentleman, Master George Percy of the Southern Colony; stating in part:

> "Aug 10, 1608 the tenth day died William Bruster, gentleman, of a wound given by the savages, and was buried the 11th day."

The reports of Newport, Wingfield, Smith and Percy were quite discouraging to the Adventurers in England. Finally, Gabriel Archer brought some information from Virginia that even caused James to give up some of his royal prerogatives, and consider a parliament for the colony. Three expeditions had been sent out on Dec. 1606, Oct. 1607 and Aug. 1608, including about 300 settlers, but there was nothing to show for the expense except a few scattered tobacco farms in Southern Virginia.

The attempt to plant a colony in Northern Virginia at the mouth of the Kennebec River had failed. The death of the leaders in England, George Popham and John Popham in 1608, discouraged the colonists and they had returned home. This expedition of about 120 persons had sailed from England in June 1607 in two ships, the Mary & John, and the Gif God, sent out by the Plymouth Company. No further attempts by the English to settle in this section were made for sometime. The French, however, were more enterprising.

In connection with the first colonies it may be appropriate to mention something of the surroundings the settlers were trying to leave behind in England, especially London. In 1606 most of the citizens of London lived within the old walls on the north side of the Thames. The population was very roughly 300,000. From 1603 to 1611 there was one epidemic or "plague" after another. More than 37,000 died between March and December 1603, and from Thursday December 29, 1605, to Jan. 4, 1607, five days after the sailing of the Newport, 7,920 persons were buried in London. It was thought all this was caused by a large surplus population, and one object of this colonization project was a redistribution of the surplus inhabitants.

James was greatly concerned over the failure of his royal charter to accomplish anything worthwhile. About the best that can be claimed for it is the establishment of England's alleged right to America between 34° and 45° north latitude, although the section was inhabited by Indians, and, in addition, claimed entirely by the Crown of Spain.

The situation was delicate. The Merchant Adventurers held many conferences. Richard Hakluyt mentions some very "Solemne meetings at the home of x x x x the Earle of Exeter" about the failures. John Rolfe states "the beginning of this plantation was governed by a president and councell aristocratically x x x and in this government happened all the miserie." Hamor remarks that the years 1606-1610 "were meerely mispent."

Finally, James had to consider a new charter. If he had not done this South Virginia would have been left in the hands of the Spanish and French along with the rest of America.

The crown charter was abandoned and a charter under the company framed. The new charter was drafted by Sir Edwin Sandys, close friend of William Brewster, and many other "Mayflower Planters." Against continual opposition of James, and, possibly aided by Sir Francis Bacon, a charter to a real colonial "body politic" was evolved and signed by the King on June 2, 1609. Of course, this "body politic" had to acquire the land from present owners (Indians, Spanish, French, etc.) by purchase, by diplomacy or by force, and settle it "at the expense of their own blood and treasure, unassisted by the crown." The settlers could "erect a free popular state" and were to have "no government putt upon them but by their own consente."

Naturally, Sandys and his friends were much encouraged, even elated, over this victory. Here was a large portion of real freedom at last. However, they could not foresee the bitter struggle of the powerful court party to overthrow their charter. James controlled vicious political, economic and social forces, all hiding behind the smoke screen of the church, and, for one reason or another, the company charters were changed in 1612, and 1618, until they reverted again to crown charters in 1624.

Meanwhile, in the exhileration of victory, on Feb. 27, 1609, a few months before James signed the new charter, letters were written to certain friends in Plymouth, England, all liberty minded, to join the "body politic," before the signing. Many of them did so. More important still was a nicely worded invitation, sent out on June 9, 1609, only seven days after the charter was signed, by the Earl of Southampton, the Earl of Pembroke, Robert Sidney, Thomas West, Lord de La Warr, Sir Thomas Smythe, Sir Robert Mansfield, Sir Thomas Gates, to

> "His majestie's subjects in the Free States the United Provinces,"

offering them in an English colony in America the place of refuge they were seeking in the Netherlands. Now, these people were none other than some of our "Mayflower Planters" in Leyden and elsewhere. The above men sending the invitation were, for the most part, supporters of Sandys in Parliament, and old friends of Philip Sidney and Essex, with whom William Brewster and Davison had served in the Netherlands and other places. They were, to a great extent, the instigators of the "Popular" movement. The execution of Essex in 1601 was probably brought about by the Court party due to his affiliation with the Patriot or Liberal party. Essex was a real friend to Davison and Brewster (see Brewster Family).

Just as soon as James heard of the above invitation he sought Archbishop Bancroft of England, and soon thereafter, the good Bishop finding that certain subjects were preparing to depart "in great numbers, obtained a proclamation from the King forbidding any to go without his Majesty's leave."

However, the organization of the Virginia Company under the new charter progressed in spite of all obstacles.

Sir Thomas Smythe was made Treasurer, chosen probably by his associates because of his assumed loyalty to the Patriot cause. He had been, in fact, imprisoned for his part in the rising of Essex. He was regarded as "a good Patriot."

The new charter of 1609 attracted a long list of adventurers and beneficiaries who affiliated with the company in the undertaking. Many of the surnames are familiar in New England history. Here are a few of the names on the roll. Some came to America, others did not.

Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, friend of William Brewster Sr. and his son William Brewster Jr.

Thomas Cecil, Earle of Exeter.

Robert Sydney, Lord Lisle.

John Stanhope, Lord Stanhope — Postmaster of England. Davison wrote to Stanhope in 1590 regarding the Scrooby Post for William Brewster.

Sir Thomas Smythe
Sir Oliver Cromwell
*Sir Thomas Gates
Sir Robert Kelligrew
Sir Edwin Sandys
Sir Warwicke Heale
Sir Francis Bacon
Sir Samuel Sandys
*Sir George Somers
Sir Baptist Hicks
*Capt. Christopher Newport
Capt. John Martin
Capt. Thomas Button
Esq. John Moore
Esq. Thomas Sandys
Esq. Richard Sandys, son of Sir Edwin Sandys
Esq. William Brewster
Edward Brewster, son of William Brewster
John Robinson
Richard Hakluyt, Minister and Geographer
John Merrick, Merchant
John Pory—an old Cambridge friend of William Brewster. Visited him at Plymouth in 1622.
George Sandys, Gentleman
Nicholas Ferrar
Ralph Hamor
George Yeardley, Gentleman
Peter Latham, Gentleman
John Fletcher
Gabriel Archer
Francis Covell
Richard Rogers
Martin Freeman
William Strachy
Stephen Hopkins, Clerk to Minister
Henry Paine
William Martin
Christopher Martin

These are only a few of the long list of Englishmen who had become vitally interested in the 1609 charter.

After many meetings, most of them at the spacious home of Sir Thomas Smythe, Treasurer and Governor of the Virginia Company, a fleet of ships were obtained and fitted out for the expedition.

The American Genealogist Vol 41 Brewster

BREWSTER ADDENDUM

At the bottom of page 2 in this issue it was stated that the notes written in 1590 by Davison had not, to Mr. Hunt's knowledge, been heretofore printed. However, a slightly variant version of these notes was read by Charles Deane many years ago and printed in the Proceedings, Massachusetts Historical Society, first ser., vol. 12, p. 101, in which Deane failed to note that the final six lines attributed to Davison are not in his handwriting. As Brewster is known to have gone down to London to secure his father's post around this time (in August 1590: ibid.), it seems likely that Davison would have showed Brewster the notes he had written on Stanhope's letter and would have asked Brewster to add reasons why he should be retained. These final six lines are likely in the writing of Brewster of Scrooby, whose cursive script remains in rare instances. His known signatures invariably appear in a printed script, leading one to suppose that he may have been trained as a scrivener; even his usual motto, "Hebel est omnis Adam," was customarily hand-printed by him.

John G. Hunt

Milton Rubincam, F.A.S.G., W. Hyattsville, Maryland.
Walter Lee Sheppard, Jr., M.S., F.A.S.G., Havertown, Penna.
Noel ... ornia
Fred
Fred

T ... the general pol-
icie ... er costs of pub-
lica ... quarterly nor
the ... rrors of fact or
opin ... ved errors will
glad ... ributing Editors,
as we ... articles pub-
lishe

Pu ... 0 per volume.
Singl ... each. Owner and
publi ... usiness address:
Box ... 515.

Se

It remains to be sorted out how much of John Hunt's data & research reached the right conclusion. Much of published data is contradicted by many other genealogists.

CAVEAT
See note at left.

THE AMERICAN GENEALOGIST

Whole Number 161 Volume 41, No. 1

January 1965

Brewster

NEW LIGHT ON THE BREWSTERS OF SCROOBY AND NEW ENGLAND

By John G. Hunt, B.S.C., of Arlington, Virginia

In the Dictionary of American Biography, R. G. Usher ells us that the Brewsters first came to Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, in 1571, and that receiving news of the llness of William Brewster, Sr., the son and namesake returned to Scrooby in 1589. He served as his father's eputy until the latter's death in 1590 and then was imself appointed to the position of bailiff and postaster." Also that he married in 1591 Mary ——, by hom he had before 1620 six children.

True it is that Scrooby records[1] first list William rewster (Sr.) as one of three men assessed in 1571, ut no fact has been cited to show that the Brewsters ad not come there earlier. Yet it seems likely that illiam Brewster, Sr., was grandson of William Brewster f Bently cum Arksey, next Doncaster, Yorkshire, some ine miles north of Scrooby, administration[8] of whose oods was dated 1521. The William Brewster of Bentley um Arksey taxed in 1524 may have been father of William Brewster who in 1571 was taxed at Scrooby, as anks[2] suggests.

That Banks was correct in this is suggested by the act that by 1579 William Breuster and Mary his wife ued in chancery[3] William and Francis Hobson, claiming ife settlement of lands in Doncaster, late of John ymkinson, formerly husband of said Mary. This Breuser is not named in other records of the area of Donaster; he is thought to have removed to Scrooby. William Brewster, Jr., who received his father's post at crooby in 1589, was in Leyden in 1609 when before its ldermen he came, aged about forty-two years, as guardan of Ann Peck, native of Launde [nest Scrooby], when hey granted to Thomas Sinkinson of Hull, merchant, the ower to receive seven pounds sterling that Ann had eft in the hands of William Watkin, pastor of Clarorough [six miles south-east of Scrooby] when she left ngland.[4] That she was Brewster's niece is apparent, or it seems that her parents were Prudence (born Brewter?) and Robert Peck of Everton [some two miles east f Scrooby] which Robert in his will dated 1598, proved t York the same year, named wife Prudence and left his daughter Ann seven pounds, six shillings, eight pence [New England Hist. and Gen. Register, 111:319-20].

John Symkinson and Mary his wife are first named in Yorkshire Fines in the year 1556 re lands in Wakefield while they are last named during his lifetime in a fin of the year 1562 re lands at Wakefield. Although he seems to have had residence[7] at one time in York, he clearly seems to have been akin to Thomas Symkinson, alderman of Doncaster, whose will[8] was proyed at York in May 1560, and whose widow Isabel's will[8] was proved there in May 1571. Thomas Sinkinson of Hull died in 1612, administration[8] of his goods, dated 29 July of that year, having been granted to Thomas Sinkinson, merchant, supposedly his son [Harthill Act Book].

The inference that we[6] receive from the foregoing facts is that William Brewster, who in 1571 was of Scrooby, had married about 1564 Mary, widow of John Symkinson of Dancaster, and that they were parents of William Brewster who removed by 1609 to Leyden and in 1620 to New England. It seems that Mary may have had son Thomas, styled Sinkinson (c.1560-1612) [half-brother to Elder William Brewster of Leyden and later of Ne England]. While many have assumed that William Brewster of New England was son of Prudence, no evidence has been found on this point, though we know that Prudence was his father's relict.[5]

Contrary to Usher's statement, young Brewster was given the appointment of post at Scrooby more than 18 months before 22 Aug. 1590, the circumstances perhaps arising during a stay at Scrooby about January 1589 by Thomas Randolph (1523-1590), who had been appointed postmaster general[9] in or about 1566, and his assistan Thomas Milles (whose will was proved in 1627), who had traveled together to Scotland[9], doubtless returning over the post road, stopping, it now seems certain, at Scrooby, where accommodations were surely more comfortable than at most of the stations on the road.

In the Calender of State Papers, Domestic Series, 1581-90, at page 686, under date of 22 Aug. 1590, we find printed the following:

"48. Mr. John Stanhope to Mr. Secretary Davison. Regrets he cannot comply with his request. On the death of old Bruster, one Samuel Revercotes had writte to him for the place of postmaster at Scroby, with which he had complied. States his reasons for not conferring the place on young Bruster, who had served in that place for his father, old Bruster."

On the back of this letter are the following notes in Davison's hand. To our knowledge these notes have not hitherto been printed.

That Brewster ought not to be displaced more than the rest of the postes. If he were possessed of the place by Mr. Randolph's guifte longe before his fathers death, no good cause now to except against him then ought he more to be displaced than the rest of the postes. But he was possessed of the place by Mr. Randolph's guifte longe before his father's death as may appear by the:

Enm^t. of his name in the rolls amongst the other postes:
by receipt of the fee the yeare and halfe;
the testimony of his m^r that recommends him thereunto.
Mr. Mills that was privie to the guifte and did
both register his name and pay him the wages
his exercise of the place now above a yere and a half &
w^ch may be testified by the postes his next neighbours.

Neither is there any just otherwise cause now to except against him either in respect of his:

honestie
sufficiency for the service
discharge thereof hitherto
or other reason whatsoever.

[In a different hand:]

Therefore he ought to be no more displaced than the rest of the postes.

Other reasons:

The charge he hath been at for provision this hard year proveth dear.

The loss he should susteyn or rather to be bearing by being suddenly dispossessed.

The enrollment of the example.

From the researches of Lewis Edwin Neff, former Governor General of the General Society of Mayflower Descendants, two other old facts, obscured for generations, have lately come to light. He has discovered[10] that in 1597 a church court was in session, considering simony charges against James Brewster, vicar of Sutton cum Launde, Notts. Before the Rev. Mr. John Benet, L.L.D., "appeared William Brewster, gen., brother of the aforesaid James Brewster, cleric, which William gave assent to the findings of the court, by which the salary of said cleric was to be withheld."

Clearly, the style "gen." used in the Latin of the transcript cited means generosus, or well born. So two facts are newly uncovered: first, William Brewster and James Brewster were brothers. This fact, long suspected, had eluded proof.[11] Second, they were well born. This too had escaped searchers,[12] but that James was of the gentry had seemed probable from the fact that his wife was a Welbeck, of an old gentry family.[13] We are now on firmer ground in supposing that William Brewster who removed to New England did, as Burgess thought,[14] marry Mary, daughter to Thomas Wentworth who preceded the older William Brewster as bailiff at Scrooby. For:

a. Both William and Mary were of the status "well born."

b. Both lived in the same Scrooby manor house, possibly during overlapping periods, before Brewster's marriage, which may well have taken place about 1589.

c. His father in 1575 succeeded her father in the office of bailiff-receiver at Scrooby.

d. Mary's aunt, Alice (Gascoigne) Newcomen, was grandmother of John Newcomen of Colchester, Essex, who was orphaned by 1630. He seems identical[15] with that Newcomen murdered in 1630 in Plymouth, New England; if so, he may well have been there as ward of the Brewsters.

e. William Brewster of the New World had a son Jonathan, whose daughters included Mary, Grace and Elizabeth. These were the names of Wentworth's three daughters, who in 1590 were alive, as was their mother.[15]

f. In his MSS,[16] Col. Banks supposed that William Brewster of the New World was akin to the Saviles or the Wentworths, either through his wife or his mother.

g. The said William's brother, Rev. James, was related by marriage[17] to Cordell Savile,[13] whose last wife, Jane, was daughter of Katherine Gascoigne, sister of Grace Gascoigne, wife of Thomas Wentworth, aforesaid

Notes and References

1. Rev. Joseph Hunter, Collections concerning the church.... of Protestant separatists formed at Scrooby..." (1854), p. 19.

2. Charles Edward Banks, The English Ancestry and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers (1929), pp. 35-39.

3. Public Record Office, Proceedings in Chancery, C 2 Eliz. B 31/1, a bill addressed to Sir Nicholas Bacon, Lord Keeper (d. 1579).

4. Walter Burgess, John Robinson, the Pastor of the Pilgrims (1920), p. 102; New England Hist. and Gen. Register, 111:319-20.

5. Banks, op. cit.

6. Mr. Lewis E. Neff suggested the similarity of Sinkinson to Symkinson, after the contributor had forwarded to him an abstract of the chancery proceeding involving the Hobsons, supra.

7. Public Record Office, Court of Requests, 2/163/97, petition by Henry Lister of Yorkshire concerning a debt of twelve pounds owed to John Simkinson of York.

8. Wills at York Registry.

9. Dictionary of National Biography, sub Milles, Thomas, and Randolph, Thomas. Randolph married Anne, sister of Francis Walsingham, long associated with William Davison.

10. Act Book of the York Diocese Chancery Court, 1595-1599, R. VII. AB. 46, ff. 104 v, 122, 131. The Latin reads, "cum consensu et assensu Willelmi Brewster gen. fratris dicti Jacobi Brewster clerici."

11. Burgess, op. cit.

12. Banks, op. cit., p. 36.

13. Hunter, op. cit., passim; Clay's Peerages, p. 191; Welbeck pedigree in Metcalfe ed., Visitation of Suffolk; William Peck, A Topographical History and Description of Bawtry and Thorne, Yorkshire (1813), pp. 19-32.

14. Burgess, op. cit., pp. 80-81.

15. New England Hist. and Gen. Register, 113:68-69.

16. In the Rare Book Room, Library of Congress.

17. Gascoigne pedigrees in Foster's Yorkshire Families; in Thomas Dunham Whitaker's Loidis and Elmete (1816), pedigree at page 338; and Flower's Visitation in 1563/4 (Surtees Society Publications, vol. 133, p. 44). Cordell Savile was seemingly steward for Sir William Cordell in 1574 at Sutton cum Lounde; see pages 11, 12, Parish Reg. of Sutton cum Lounde in vol. 21, Notts. Parish Registers. Sir William Cordell's sister was mother of the wife of Sir John Stanhope named above (Thoresby, Ducatus Leodiensis...A Topography of Leeds (1816), p. 168; cf. Dictionary of National Biography, sub Stanhope, John, and Cordell, William). Katharine Gascoigne's daughter, Jane Beaumont Savile, in her will proved at York in 1615, left a legacy to her cousin Winifred, wife of "the right worshipful John Armitage of Kirklees." The cited Sutton cum Lounde registers show in 1611 the marriage of John Armitage to Ann Brewster, she having been daughter, without doubt, of Rev. James Brewster and his Welbeck wife; Hunter, op. cit., pp. 203-204. Armitage was probably akin to the man of the same name of Kirklees, named above.

THE HOUSE OF CUNEDDA

By G. Andrews Moriarty, A.M., LL.B., F.S.A.

Persons with mediaeval descents usually can trace lines from the early Welsh Princes of the race of Rhodri Mawr (died in 878), branches of which ruled in the Welsh principalities and whose daughters married into the Anglo-Norman houses of the Welsh border. Rhodri Mawr descended in the female line from the race of Cunedda, which ruled in Wales from the fifth century until it became extinct in the person of Hywel ab Rhodri Molwynog ab Idwal, who died in 825.

The value of Welsh pedigrees, unsupported as they are by record evidence, is usually open to much doubt, and the distinguished historian of Norman England, the late Dr. J. Horace Round, once delivered a blistering attack on them in The Ancestor (vol. 5, p. 47 seq.). The Welsh, like their kindred Celts in Ireland and Scotland, were ardent genealogists and a special group, the Bards, were trained to memorize and carry on the pedigrees of the great houses. Under the early Welsh laws of Howel Dha, the pedigree was a necessity for land title, and even today many Welshmen of quite humble station can recite accurately their descent for many generations. When the Welsh chronicles commence in the ninth and tenth centuries, the pedigrees of the ruling

NER 128 Brewster

MARY STUBBE—A CONNECTION OF ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER?

By John G. Hunt, of Arlington, Virginia

In her *Group Portrait . . . introduction to the Pilgrims and the world they lived in* (1973), at page 54, Ruth Terhune Huestis states of Edward Pickering that he "was a son in law of Elder William Brewster. At least he was married to a step-daughter of the Elder."

The quoted statement may yet prove to be most important to those who seek the identity of Elder William Brewster's wife Mary whose maiden surname has persistently defied proof (compare The Register, 124:250 ff).

It has been shown by Henry Martyn Dexter and his son Morton Dexter in their *The England and Holland of the Pilgrims* (Boston and New York, 1905), pp. 628, 629 and 635, that Edward Pickering married Mary Stubbs of Stromse, at Leyden, 15 Dec. 1612. A footnote there surmises that Stromse might have been Strumpshaw, in Norfolk. That this surmise is correct appears below.

As the will of Edward Pickering of London (abstracted in Henry F. Waters, *Genealogical Gleanings in England*, 1025), dated 1 July 1623, and proved the same year, P.C.C. Swann 86, names his father, John Pickering, then living, it does not appear that Edward considered himself stepson of Elder William Brewster. Pickering's will names, also, wife Mary, her brothers Francis Stubb and Mr. John Stubbe, and the testators' children: John, Sinceare, and Mary, as well as a friend, Randall Thickens. The widow married, as her final spouse, the said Thickens, and returned to Leyden where, as Mary Thickens, she witnessed the marriage of her daughter Sinceare to Elias Arnold in 1636 (Dexters, *op. cit.*).

It may be of interest to note in passing that Randall Thicken's father, Ralph, was a member of the Thicknes family formerly of Balterley, Staffordshire, as proved by a study of the pedigrees of that family recorded in the several visitations of Staffordshire, as well as the wills of Ralph Thickens of St. Mary Matfelon, London, London Commissary Court, 20:284, dated 1606; the will of his son Richard, ca. 1632, whitebaker of St. Giles Cripplegate (London Commissary Court, 26:324,35); and the will of Ellen Roper of the same parish, dated 1595 (Dean & Chapter of St. Pauls, 1593-1606,f.15). Her cousin was John Chetwynd of Grays Inn. She named in her will cousins Ralph Thickens, the company of whitebakers, and Randall Thickens of Heathend, Staffordshire. Ellen was of the family of Thicknes of Balterley, of which one Ralph had a daughter Katherine, mother of John Chetwynd, Esq. (Visitations of Staffordshire, 1614, 1663, p. 79 n., and 1583, *sub* Thicknes. Note also the Dexters, *op. cit.*, p. 636).

Just who were the parents of Mary Stubbe? As the Dexters surmised, she was of Strumpshaw, Norfolk, a village lying almost midway between Norwich and Great Yarmouth. The clue that led to proof of this lay in the British Public Record Office, *Lists and Indexes*, vol. 47, Chancery Proceedings, *tempore* James I, p. 317, F-2, no. 60, noting the suit of Clement Fenn against Francis and John Stubbe concerning lands and tenements in Strumshawe, Bradiston, Lingwood, Blofield, and Buckingham, Norfolk.

On the assumption that the above Francis and John Stubbe might be identical with the two brothers of those names of Mary Stubbs, named by the Dexters and by Henry F. Waters, *op. cit.*, as wife of Edward Pickering of Leyden and London, it was decided to obtain the following wills from Norwich, England. The Norfolk Archives Office furnished photocopies that reveal the following data:

1. Norwich Consistory Court Wills: 260 Rowland, proved 1607, is that of Awdrie ffenne of Strumpshawe, Norfolk, dated 2 Feb. 1607. In it she named her two brothers Francis Stubbe, gent., and Edmund Stubbe, and her brother-in-law, Clement Fenne. She named sister Anne, wife of her brother Francis Stubbe, and several nephews and nieces, children of the said Francis and Anne: John, who was to receive her lands, Edmund, Francis, Anne and Marie. She also nuncupatively devised certain heirlooms to these nephews and nieces, leaving the niece Marie Stubbe ten pounds of money and a silver spoon.

2. The will of Clement Fenn of Clare, Suffolk, dated 14 Dec. 1608 and proved the same year in the Consistory Court of Norwich, no. 122, refers to his daughter Audrie, wife of Robert Sharpe of Strumpshawe, Norfolk, and names his father John Fenn [whose will made in 1584 refers to three sons: George, John and Clement]. From this it may be assumed that Audrey Fenne, the testatrix of 1607, was the widow of either George or John Fenne.

The will of Edmund Stubbe, Esq., of Lincolns Inn, Middlesex, dated 14 Dec. 1613, refers to wife Mary, and nephews John, Edmund and Francis, sons of the testator's brother, Francis Stubbe (Reference, P.C.C., 1614, 3 Lawe).

The account of Francis Stubbes given in the Venns' *Alumni Cantabrigienses*, part 1, vol. iv (Cambridge, 1927), p. 178, shows that he "matriculated pens. from Trinity, June 27, 1568, probably son of John, of Buxton, Norfolk . . . . If so married Anne Coke (sister of Chief Justice Coke. Brother of Edmund (1568) and of John 1555; probably father of Edmund."

Disregarding the mixed-up account of the Stubbe family given by Walter Rye in his *Norfolk Families*, II, 858-861, and the erroneous account of John Stubbe 'scaeva," in the *Dictionary of National Biography*, which wrongly states "scaeva" died in 1591, we summarize below an account of three illustrious uncles of Mary (Stubbe) Pickering Thickens:

1. Her maternal uncle was Edward Coke, the famed and recalcitrant figure in English law, whose persistent defiance of the desires of his sovereign earned him a natural enmity on the part of many courtiers. Sir Edward Coke (1552-1634), educated at Norwich and Cambridge, judicially resisted the king as early as 1610. It may well be that there was great sympathy between him and those, including William

Brewster, who settled in 1608 in the Netherlands. The appearance of Coke's niece in Leyden in or by 1612 seems a natural consequence of such sympathy.

2. Mary Stubbe's paternal uncle, John Stubbe, noted Puritan zealot, B.A., Cambridge, 1561, suffered the loss of his right hand for condemning Queen Elizabeth's proposed marriage to the Duke of Anjou. Stubbe, who was later identified with Great Yarmouth, Norfolk, is known to have had sisters Alice* and Audrey. His will, 25 Sept. 1589, names his brother Edmund Stubbe; also names the testator's wife Anne (will of John Stubbe, "scaeva," of Thelveton, Buxton, etc., Norfolk, P.C.C. 40 Drury, pr. 1590). The above Alice, in her will cited below, names her brother "Master Francis Stubbe," while Audrey must be the testatrix of Strumpshaw, named herein before.

3. Mary Stubbe's paternal aunt Alice was married to the illustrious Thomas Cartwright, Elizabethan Puritan, whose reputation and work Elder William Brewster was at some pains to preserve. (See the Rev. A. F. Scott Pearson's *Thomas Cartwright and Elizabethan Puritanism, 1535-1603,* Cambridge, 1925, pp. 305-307, re: Stubbe. On p. 484 is the abstract of Alice Stubbe Cartwright's will. See also pp. 210, 211 wherein he shows that Brewster almost certainly met Cartwright at Flushing in 1585.)

Considering these prominent uncles of Mary Stubbe and their bases for mistrusting the prelatical authorities in England, we may with reason suppose that she came to Leyden in sympathy with the views of her kinfolk.

* Note that the Visitation of Norfolk, Harleian Society *Publications*, vol. 32, pp. 273, 274, assigns John Stubbe brothers Edmund and Francis as well as the above sisters.

THE TRUE DATE OF THE BIRTH AND DEATH OF ELDER BREWSTER.

[By Rev. Henry M. Dexter, of Boston.]

Read at the Monthly Meeting of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society, in October, 1863.

It is somewhat remarkable that a great degree of uncertainty should have so long rested upon the two dates of most importance in the life of so prominent a man as Elder William Brewster, of the Plymouth Colony. If the exact time of his birth had been solely in the keeping of tradition, one would think the era of his disappearance from the Plymouth Company must have left an exact and ineffaceable trace. In point of fact, however, two different years have been heretofore assigned as those of his death, and four as those of his birth.

Gov. Bradford, in his *History*, [p. 408] records his death as occurring "about" the 18th of April, 1643. Morton, in his *Memorial*, expressly copies Bradford, and gives the same date [1*st ed'n*, p. 117]. These are followed by *Hubbard*, [p. 663], and *Hutchinson*, [vol. ii: p. 411]; and lately by the editor of Bradford's *Manuscript*, in a note to that work [p. 408]; by Savage, [*Gen. Dict'y of New Eng.*, vol. i, p. 246] who, however, changes the day to the 16th of April; by Palfrey [*Hist. New Eng.*, i: 598]; and by Freeman, [*Hist'y Cape Cod*, i: 169].

On the other hand, Morton, in copying from Bradford's *Manuscript* History upon the Plymouth Church Records, [*Bk. i. fol.* 38] dates Brewster's death as "about the 16th of April, 1644." In this he has been followed by Belknap, [v. ii: p. 163]; Eliot, [p. 87]; Cotton, in his History of the Plymouth Church; [*Mass. Hist.*, coll. iv: 113]; *Baylies*, [v. ii: p. 4]; Holmes [*Annals*, i: 276]; Winsor, [*Hist. Duxbury*, p. 234]; Mitchell, [*Hist. Bridgewater*, p. 361]; Thacher, [*Hist. Plym.*, p. 268]; Steele, [*Chief of the Pilgrims*, p. 383]; and Felt, [*Eccl. Hist. N. Eng.*, v. i, p. 549.]

There are three circumstances which incline me to the conviction that Bradford was in error, in his History, and that the true date of the elder's death *was* in April, 1644:

1. Bradford himself says, in the appendix to his history, where he gives some account of the "increasings and decreasings" of the first comers [p. 451], that Mr. Brewster had "lived some 23 or 24 year here in ye countrie." But the addition of the *lesser* of these numbers to the date of December, 1620, would carry us eight months beyond April, 1643; so that here is so much evidence that 1644 was the true date of Brewster's death.

2. Bradford, in a letter to John Winthrop, published in the lately issued volume of *Winthrop Papers* of the *Mass. Hist. Collections*, [vol. xxxvi, p. 161] says—writing apparently in the last of winter or beginning of spring—"Sundry have been sicke amongst vs this winter, and some still are. God hath taken away Mr. Atwood and Mr. Jeney by death." The letter has no date. *Savage* says Jenney died *early* in 1644, [v. ii: p. 546]; and Morton says Atwood died in 1644. I infer then that Jenney and Atwood died in the winter ending with the spring of 1644, and that Bradford wrote this letter after their

decease, but before Elder Brewster's death, in April of that year because it is not probable that Bradford would have written Winthrop within a year of the elder's decease, and have made no reference to it, especially when speaking of the losses of the colony by death. I may add that the letter contains internal evidence that some considerable time had passed since Bradford had written Winslow before.

3. But the strong reason for discrediting the date given by Bradford, and by Morton in the *Memorial*, in favor of that inserted by Morton in the Church Records, is found in entries upon the Colony Records. Letters of administration were granted on Elder Brewster's estate, June 5th, 1644, [*Plym. Col. Rec.*, ii. p. 73]; the Inventory of his Library bears date 18th May, 1644, [*B'k of Wills*, v. i: 53]; and the final settlement took place 20th Aug., 1645, [*B'k of Deeds*, p. 115]. If the elder died in April, 1644, all this becomes natural, and is just what we should expect; if he died in April, 1643, we are thrown upon vain conjecture for some reason for so unusual a course as the delay of more than a year before taking any recorded steps toward the settlement of his estate.

I deem it certain, then, that the true date of the elder's *death* is April, 1644.

Two causes have thrown uncertainty upon the year of his *birth* the one, this doubt as to the year of his death; the other, a like doubt as to his age at death.

Morton, in the *Memorial*, [1st ed., p. 117] professes to copy Bradford's *Manuscript*, and says: "The Lord upheld him [Brewster] to a great age; he was *fourscore and four* years of age when he died." But Bradford's *Manuscript*, as it comes out in print in the Collections of the Historical Society, gives this passage thus: "The Lord upheld him to a great age. He was *nere fourskore years of age* (*if not all out*) when he died" [p. 408.] And when Bradford's *Manuscript* was copied by Morton upon the Plymouth Church Records, it was done accurately, for there we find the elder stated as "nere foreskore" when he died [*Young, Plym. Chron.*, p. 461.]

Here we have the data for three different birth-years. Morton, in the *Memorial*, gives us the formula 1643 — 84; which leaves 1559. Bradford's History gives 1643, less "near fourscore"; which produces 1563. Morton, in the Church Records, gives us 1644, less "near fourscore"; which carries us to 1564; which year *Young* adopts, [*Chronicles of Plym.*, p. 469,] though he contradicts himself by adding in the next sentence that the elder was 60 when he landed at Plymouth — when this birth date would make him only 56.

The Rev. Ashbel Steele, in his valuable, but by no means so-good-as-it-ought-to-have-been work, entitled "The Chief of the Pilgrims," makes still another combination. Assuming 1644 as the true date of the elder's death, and Morton's "fourscore and four" as the period of his years, he gets 1644 — 84 = 1560; which he confidently states as the year of birth. This had been previously set down as the true date by Winsor [*Hist. Duxbury*, p. 234], and Mitchell, [*Hist. Bridgewater*, p. 361]; but without naming any authority for the statement.

Recapitulating, we have, then, these four dates, each backed by some respectable authority, viz:

Morton, in the *Memorial* - - - -	1559
Steele, Winsor and Mitchell - - -	1560
Bradford - - - - - - - - - -	1563
Morton's Bradford, in the *Ch'h Recd's*	1564

Belknap and Eliot give 1560 without remark; as if it were unquestioned. Allen presumes it to be that, [*Biog. Dic.*, p. 136]; and Hunter leans toward the same date, [*Founders of New Plym.*, p. 57].

I have lately come to the knowledge of a document which, in my judgment, ought to settle this question for all the future, by assigning a new date for the birth of the elder, and that upon evidence of the most unimpeachable character.

I received by the steamer of the last week from M. Elsivier — archivist of the city of Leyden, — whose invaluable aid I have had the good fortune to secure in pursuing certain researches in regard to the life of the pilgrims in Holland — the statement that he has just discovered in the *Registry of Affidavits*, in that city [*Letter k, fol.* 26] the record of a declaration made before the magistrates of Leyden, 25 *June*, 1609; in which William Brewster, Englishman, *aged* 42 *years*, Mary Brewster, his wife, aged 40 years, and their son, Jonathan Brewster, aged 16 years, declare that they have received some cloths, which Bernard Rosse, Englishman, living at Amsterdam, had sent to them. They reside at Leyden, in the street called St. Ursule.

This document is formal, and to be presumed, therefore, to have been carefully drawn; it is legal, and therefore must have been conscientiously dictated; it is from the cotemporaneous suggestion of the parties themselves, and therefore combines the highest probabilities of accuracy; while its scope is so entirely alien from the immediate point before us as to give to its testimony the eminent value of being purely incidental. I see no reason, then, why it should not be decisive in evidence.

These names of wife and son identify this as *our* Wm. Brewster. But if he was 42 years of age in June, 1609, he must have been born in 1566–7, or from two to three years later than the latest date before supposed. This, counting to 1644, would make him only 77 or 78 when he died.

If it be objected that this is violently inconsistent with Morton's statement that he was 84, I reply that Morton's claim to accuracy is vitiated by his own and contradictory statement in the Church Records that Brewster died at "near fourscore," which, taken literally, would be at 79, or scarcely two years at variance with his true age; and which taken loosely, would be quite consistent with the accurate computation, since it would not be unnatural for any of us to speak, in a general way, of a man of 77–8 as being "near fourscore."

It is true that Bradford, in his *Appendix*, [p. 451] says Elder Brewster was "about 80 years" when he died. But Bradford wrote this many years after the elder's death, and, from his guarded manner of statement, evidently had no *exact* knowledge on the subject. *Seventy-seven* or *eight* was a good old age, and answers — in venerableness — all the demands of the subject.

I take it, then, as proven by sound and sufficient evidence, that Elder Brewster was born in 1566–7, and died in 1644, at the age of 77, or possibly 78.

BOSTON, Oct. 1.

of New London (*N. L. Town Rec.*), son of Dr. Thomas and Rachel Starr, b. probably in Mass., about 1640. "No will, inventory or record of the settlement of his estate has been found, but a deed was executed Feb. 2d, 1687-8, by Hannah, widow of Samuel Starr, and it is probable that her husband had then recently deceased." "She was in full communion with the First Church, New London, Nov. 25, 1691." "Samuel Starr was one of the early settlers of New London and a prominent man in the town, holding the honorable office of county marshal (high sheriff) from 1674 to his death. He lived on the old Buttonwood corner." *Chn.* 2-4 *b. at New London:*

1 Samuel^4 Starr, b. Dec. 11, 1665; was living in 1687.

2 Thomas Starr, b. Sept. 27, 1668; d. at Groton, Conn., Jan. 31, 1711-12; m. Jan. 1, 1693-4, Mary, dau. of Capt. James and Mary (Vine) Morgan, of Groton; b. March 20, 1670; d. Sept. 14, 1765, the widow of William Peabody. Thomas Starr "was one of the patentees of New London, Conn., Oct. 14, 1704; soon after settled in Groton on his large farm bordering the river; was a shipwright and built a sloop called the *Sea Flower*." 7 chn.

3 Comfort Starr, b. Aug. 7, 1671; prob. d. yg.

4 Jonathan Starr, b. Feb. 23, 1673-4; d. at Groton, Aug. 26, 1747; m. there Jan. 12, 1698, Elizabeth Morgan, sister of Mary, who m. his brother Thomas. She was b. at G., Sept. 9, 1678; d. at Norwich, Conn., Sept. 8, 1763. Res. Groton. He was a land trader. "He was elected constable at the first town meeting in Groton, 1705; deputy to the General Court, 1712-14, and member of the Governor's Council, 1711-14." 10 chn. His widow m. Dea. Thomas Adgate, of Norwich.

Ref. auth.—Photos. of pages in Brewster Book; Winsor's Hist. Duxbury, Mass., 235; *Pilgrim Republic* 274; *Deane's Hist. Scituate, Mass.; Hist. Hingham, Mass.; Caulkins' Hist. New London Conn.,* 65-6, 276-9, 285-6, 307-8, 317-19, 343-44, 350, 363, 368; *Plymouth Colony Rec.; N. E. Reg.* liii. 112-13; *Town Church and Probate Rec. of Scituate and Hull, Mass., and Norwich and New London Conn.; Starr Gen.,* 5, 14-17, 43; *Denison Gen.; "Descendants of Humphrey Turner"; "Prince Family"* (pamphlet), and *g. s. inscriptions.*

our line

3 PATIENCE^2 BREWSTER (*William*^{1}), came in the ship *Ann* in July, 1623. She married at Plymouth, August 5, 1624, as first wife, THOMAS PRENCE,* who was born at Lechdale, England, and died at Plymouth, March 29, 1673, in his seventy-third year. She died at Plymouth, in 1634.

Thomas Prence came in the *Fortune,* in November, 1621; removed from Plymouth to Duxbury, in 1635, to Eastham, Mass., in 1644, and later returned to Plymouth, where he died and was buried. "His farm in Eastham was extensive, embracing some two hundred acres of the best land." ✓

"Thomas Prence Esquire Gov^r: of the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth Died the 29th of March 1673 and was Interred the 8th of Aprill following; after hee had served God in the office of Gov^r: sixteen yeares or neare therunto hee finished his Course in the 73 yeare of his life; hee was a worthy Gentleman very pious; and very able for his office and faithfull in the Discharge therof studious of peace a welwiller to all that feared god; and a terrour to the wicked, his; Death was much lamented, and his body honorably buryed att Plymouth the Day and yeare abovemensioned" (*Plym. Col. B. M. B.,* p. 39).

There is a transcript of Governor Thomas Prence's will and inventory in *The Mayflower Descendant,* vol. iii. pp. 204-16.

Children born at Plymouth:

i THOMAS^3, went to England and died there in early life, leaving a widow and daughter, Susannah^4 Prence, who, in 1677, is styled "of Catheren Gate, near the Tower, singlewoman." She is mentioned in the will of her grandfather, Governor Prence, who "had a maiden sister, Susannah, living at St. Catherine's Gate, near London Tower."

ii REBECCA, m. Apr. 22, 1646, as first w., Edmund Freeman, Jr., son of Edmund and Elizabeth Freeman, of Plymouth. He was b. in Eng. She "died soon after giving birth to her only child." Res. Sandwich, Mass. "He was deputy to the General Court from Sandwich, 1669, seven yrs." *Ch., b. at S.:*

1 Rebecca^4 Freeman, d. Apr. 16, 1738; m. Ezra Perry, who d. Jan. 31, 1729-30. 7 chn.

iii HANNAH, m. 1st, Feb. 13, 1649-50, Nathaniel Mayo, son of

---

* Thomas Prence m. 2d, Apr. 1, 1635, Mary Collier, a sister of Sarah, wife of Love^2 Brewster (William^1).

Rev. John and Thomasine Mayo. His will was proved March 4, 1661. M. 2d, as second w., Capt. Jonathan Sparrow, son of Richard and Pandora Sparrow, who d. March 21, 1706-7, æ. 73. Res. Eastham. Nath. Mayo was a prominent townsman and Jona. Sparrow was "a deputy, representative and magistrate many yrs., also, a military man." *Chn:*

1 Thomas^4 Mayo, b. Dec. 7, 1650-1; d. Apr. 22, 1729; m. June 13, 1677, Barbara, dau. of Richard and Ruth (Bower) Knowles, of Plymouth, b. Sept. 28, 1656. Res. Eastham. 9 chn.
2 Nathaniel Mayo, b. Nov. 16, 1652-3; d. Nov. 3, 1709; m. 1st, June 28, 1678, Elisa Wixam; m. 2d, June 10, 1708, Mercy, wid. of Nathaniel Young. 7 chn. of first w.
3 Samuel Mayo, b. Oct. 12, 1655; d. at Eastham Oct. 29, 1738; m. twice. 6 chn.
4 Hannah Mayo, b. Oct. 17, 1657.
5 Theophilus Mayo, b. Dec. 12, 1659.
6 Bathsheba Mayo, m. Thomas Freeman.
7 Jonathan Sparrow, b. July 9, 1665; d. March 9, 1739-40; m. ———. 5 or more chn.
8 Elizabeth Sparrow, m. (*Freeman Gen.*, p. 356, says "Feb. 5, 1654." The yr. is prob. 1684, as the first ch., Priscilla, was b. Oct. 27, 1686) as first w., Capt. and Dea. Samuel Freeman, son of Dea. Samuel and Mercy (Southworth) Freeman, of Eastham, b. March 26, 1662; d. Jan. 30, 1742-3. Res. Eastham. "He was a man of large property, always much engaged in public affairs and a liberal supporter of education and religion." 2 chn.
9 Patience Sparrow, m. Joseph Paine, and had chn.
10 Richard Sparrow, b. March 17, 1669-70.
11 Lydia Sparrow, m. William Freeman, a des. of Edmund Freeman.

✓ iv MERCY, d. Sept. 28, 1711, aged 80 years (g. s. at Eastham); m. Feb. 13, 1649-50, Major John Freeman, brother of Edmund Freeman, Jr., who m. her sister Rebecca. He was b. in Eng.; d. Oct. 28, 1719, in the 98th year of his age (g. s. at Eastham). Res. Eastham. He is mentioned in records as "among the early settlers, with Governor Prence." "Was many years prominent in public affairs, and has to this day been regarded as one of the fathers of Eastham." "He was deputy from 1654, eight yrs.; selectman from 1663, ten yrs.; assistant in the Government from 1666, several yrs., and Dec. 7, 1692, was appointed to the Bench of the Court of Common Pleas. Was a deacon of Eastham church many yrs. and was somewhat conspicuous in the military, doing service in the Indian wars. Through life he was a large land holder." *Chn., b. at Eastham:*

1 John^4 Freeman, b. Feb. 2, 1650; d. inf.
2 John Freeman, b. Dec., 1651; d. July 27, 1721; m. 1st, Dec. 18, 1672, Sarah, dau. of Ensign William and Rebecca Merrick, b. at Eastham, Aug. 1, 1654; d. at Brewster, Apr. 21, 1696; m. 2d, 1701, Mercy Hedge, wid. of Capt. Elkanah Watson, of Plymouth. She d. Sept. 27, 1721, æ. 63. Res. Harwich, now Brewster, Mass. "He was one of eight persons who constituted the original church in H., Oct. 17, 1700." 11 chn.
3 Dea. Thomas Freeman, b. Sept., 1653; d. Feb. 9, 1715-16; m. at Harwich, Dec. 31, 1673, Rebecca, dau. of Capt. Jonathan and Rebecca (Bangs) Sparrow, of Eastham, b. at Yarmouth, Oct. 30, 1655; d. at H., Feb. 7, 1740. Res. Harwich, now Brewster, Mass. He was a deacon of First Chh. of H.; was the first town clerk, also treasurer and selectman. 10 chn.
4 Patience Freeman, d. Feb. 15, 1745; m. Jan. 31, 1682-3, Lieut. Samuel Paine, son of Thomas and Mary (Snow)* Paine, of E. He d. Oct. 13, 1712. Res. Eastham. "He was a prominent citizen, and from 1697 selectman several yrs." 9 chn.
5 Lieut. Edmund Freeman, b. June, 1657; d. at Eastham, Dec. 10, 1717; m. Sarah, dau. of Samuel and Thomasine (Lumkin) Mayo. Res. Eastham. "He was a man of distinction, and many years selectman of E." 12 chn.
6 Mercy Freeman, b. July, 1659; d. 1744 (g. s. at Eastham); m. Dec. 16, 1679, Samuel Knowles, Esq., son of Richard and Ruth (Bower) Knowles, of Plymouth, b. there Sept. 17, 1651 (*T. Rec.*); d. June 19, 1737 (g. s. at E.). Res. Eastham. He "was a deacon of the chh. in E., and some time selectman and rep." 10 chn.
7 William Freeman, b. abt. 1660; d. 1687; m. abt. 1684-5, Lydia, dau. of John Sparrow. 2 chn.
8 Hannah Freeman, "d. Feb. 15, 1743-4, æ. 79" (g. s.); m. Apr. 14, 1681, John Mayo, bro. of Sarah, who m. her

---

* Mary^3 Snow, Constance^2 Hopkins, Stephen^1 of the *Mayflower*.

bro., Edmund Freeman. He was b. Dec. 15, 1652; d. Feb. 1, 1725-6. Res. Hingham, then Harwich. He was representative to the General Court six yrs. and town treasurer three yrs. 8 chn.

9 Prince Freeman, b. Feb. 3, 1665-6; d. yg.

10 Nathaniel Freeman, Esq., "youngest son," b. March 20, 1669; d. at Eastham, Jan. 4, 1760; m. abt. 1690, Mary, dau. of Zoeth and Abigail Howland, b. Feb. 23, 1666; d. Jan. 29, 1743. Res. Eastham. He was a justice of the Court of Common Pleas, also town clerk and selectman of E., and "long prominent in public affairs." 6 chn.

✓ 11 Bennet Freeman, b. March 7, 1670-1; d. May 30, 1716; m. March 14, 1689, as first w., Dea. John Paine, son of Thomas and Mary (Snow)* Paine of Eastham, b. March 14, 1660-1; d. Oct. 18, 1731. 13 chn.

Ref. auth.—Winsor's Hist. Duxbury, 293; *Freeman Gen.,* 23, 26-29, 31, 34-39, 41-44, 356, 359-60; *Freeman's Cape Cod,* 361; "*Gravestones in Old Burial Ground in Brewster Mass.,*" 46-47, 67-69; *T. Rec.; g. s. ins.*

4 FEAR^2 BREWSTER (*William*^{1}), came in the ship *Ann,* in July, 1623. She married before May 22, 1627, as second wife, ISAAC ALLERTON, who died at New Haven, Conn., between February 1st and 12th, 1658-9. She died at Plymouth, December 12, 1634.

Isaac Allerton was of the Allerton family of Suffolk, England, and was born in 1585 or 1586, "as we learn from a deposition made September 26, 1639, in which he is described as 'Isaacke Allerton, of New Plimmouth in New England, Merchant, aged about 53 years.'" He came in the *Mayflower,* in 1620, accompanied by his first wife, Mary Norris, and children Bartholomew, Remember, and Mary.†

"He is named in the Leyden Records as being 'of London.' . . . He was admitted to citizenship in Leyden, February 7, 1614. He was one of the four signers of the letter from the Leyden Church to Carver and Cushman, June 1, 1620. . . . He was reputed to have been at one time the richest man of the colony, and was from the outset active in its affairs. When Bradford was chosen governor, after Carver's death in the spring of 1621, Allerton was made assistant, or deputy governor, an office which he held alone until 1624, when the number of assistants was increased to five, and in 1633 to seven, of whom he was one. He was one of the 'Undertakers' in 1627, and 'made five voyages to England as agent for the colony. . . . In 1632-33 he had a trading-post at Machias, which was pillaged by the French. In 1635 his fishing station at Marblehead was burned.'"

"Isaac Allerton was the only one of the Pilgram Fathers who became a resident of New York. . . . He was actively engaged in business in the Massachusetts colonies from 1631 until 1637 or 1638. The New Amsterdam Records show that he was there in February, 1639, and he probably became a resident in the fall of 1638, thus being one of the first English settlers, . . . and from that time for twenty years Isaac Allerton played a prominent and honorable part in the political and business life of the Dutch colony. During the earlier years of his life there he was associated in business with Govert Loockermans, one of the leading and most interesting figures in the history of those times, and it is quite possible that he lived at Loockerman's house on the Hoogh Straet (the present Stone Street) when at Amsterdam. He was then a widower, the first known mention of his third wife, Joanna, being in 1644. . . . In April, 1647, Isaac Allerton purchased from one Philip de Truy the land lying between the Highway, now Pearl Street, and the shore line of the East River, which was then west of the present location of Water Street. This strip, which was probably not more than a few feet in width, extended from the present location of Peck Slip southerly, nearly if not quite, to where Fulton Street now is. At the upper end of this property, where it appears to have been the widest and where a small bay or cove ran into the land just north of it, he increased the width by filling in and building a wharf, and on this he erected a large building for a warehouse, with a smaller one adjoining it on the west for a residence, and from that time on until long after his death 'Allerton's Buildings' were a prominent landmark in the Dutch city. . . . All the available evidence tends to prove that Allerton's buildings and wharf covered nearly the site now occupied by Nos. 6, 8, 10 and 12 Peck Slip.

"Although Isaac Allerton became a resident of New Haven at about the same time when he purchased the lands of de Truy, seats in the Meeting House there being assigned to him and his wife on March 10, 1646, and where he built himself 'a grand House

---

* Mary^3 Snow, Constance^2 Hopkins, Stephen^1 of the *Mayflower.*

† Mary^2 Allerton (Isaac^1), who m. Elder Thomas Cushman, d. Nov. 28, 1699. (*Plym. T. Rec.,* i. 203.) She was the last surviving passenger of the *Mayflower.*

"Moore and Allied Families" – by L. E and A. L. De Forest (1938)

Powers, The Powers-Banks Ancestry (*1921*), *226, 235, 236.*
Records of the State of Connecticut, 1:215.
Savage, Genealogical Dictionary of New England, 1:233, 234.
Smith, History of Chenango and Madison Counties, New York (*1880*), *199, 200.*
Tuttle, Descendants of William and Elizabeth Tuttle (*1883*), *147, 148.*
Willard, Memorial to Henry Augustus Willard and Sarah Bradley Willard (*1925*), *27-30.*
Williams, Ancestry of Lawrence Williams (*1915*), *207.*

BREWSTER

WILLIAM BREWSTER—MARY (?)
LOVE BREWSTER—SARAH COLLIER
SARAH BREWSTER—BENJAMIN BARTLETT
ICHABOD BARTLETT—ELIZABETH WATERMAN
ELIZABETH BARTLETT—JAMES FORD
JAMES FORD—RACHEL BACKUS
NATHANIEL FORD—CAROLINE REES
CAROLINE FORD—WILLIAM HENRY MOORE
NATHANIEL FORD MOORE—RACHEL ARVILLA BECKWITH
WILLIAM HENRY MOORE—ADA WATERMAN SMALL

ABOUT WILLIAM^1 BREWSTER, that noble character among the Pilgrim Fathers, so much has been written that it seems unnecessary to give here an exhaustive biography. His part in the settlement of Plymouth alone would take long in telling if all the extant testimony were used, and before that venture there lay a career in England and Holland.

It is strange that despite the wealth of anecdote about Brewster, there still remain mystery and uncertainty about some of the most important events of his life. It is not known exactly when or where he was born, nor when he married, nor even whether MARY, who was his wife in Holland and New England, was the mother of his children, probable as that is.

The Brewster pedigree begins with the father of William Brewster and the facts about this man are quite definite, although his parentage is unknown. Banks attempted to discover the earlier Brewsters but ended his search with the suggestion that two generations of Brewsters in Bawtry and Bentley, both in Yorkshire, offered the "logical and most hopeful clue." Even if these Brewsters carried the line back to the great-grandfather of the Pilgrim Elder, the results would not be impressive. There is nothing to show that the family had any particular social position, although the father of the Elder was at least once styled in a public record as a "gentleman," and certainly was a man of great importance in his district.

William Brewster, the senior, was the father of the Pilgrim and the mother was named Prudence. The father is first of record on January 4, 1575, when Archbishop Grindal of York granted "to our trusty and well-beloved servant William Brewster" the office of "Receiver of our Lordship or Manor of Scrooby, and of all the liberties of the same in the County of Nottingham." In the Manor of Scrooby, an exempt estate belonging to His Grace of York, about that time (certainly in 1582) there were about seventeen towns and it was Brewster's work to collect the revenues. Scrooby Manor House was a fairly large but unpretentious mansion. It was favorably situated as it was near to the royal forest of Sherwood and was also on a main highway to Scotland, and on the main road from London to York. In or about the year 1588, William Brewster, Sr., was also made postmaster under the Crown. At that time a postmaster did not handle personal or business correspondence, which was carried by private hands, such as drovers. The postmaster was simply an agent to assist in the forwarding of government dispatches. In order to hold such an office the postmaster was required to keep some sort of an inn for those who travelled on the post, and also to furnish horses. William Brewster, Sr., was a busy man as receiver, bailiff, postmaster, innkeeper, and also, as the legal representative of the owner of the Manor, he must have presided over the Manorial Courts and had custody of the Manorial records.

All these duties are of interest to recall, as William Brewster, Jr., was soon to inherit them. The son was born in 1566 or 1567, a time arrived at by means of an affidavit he made at Leyden in Holland on June 25, 1609, when he said he was then aged "about forty-two years." It is not known where he was born. His father is believed to have arrived at Scrooby in 1571. The son matriculated at Peterhouse (Saint Peter's), Cambridge University, on December 3, 1580, but did not graduate and may have remained only a few months. In some way he went to the royal Court and received a position in the service of William Davison, a Secretary of State under Queen Elizabeth. He was much in Davison's confidence, served him in confidential matters, and twice accompanied him to the Low Countries, where Davison had been sent as an Ambassador. He remained with Davison even after that statesman fell from royal grace at the time of the death of Mary, Queen of Scots. The period with Davison is supposed to have extended from 1583 to 1589. Davison went to prison as the scapegoat for Queen Mary's death and William Bradford stated that Brewster continued to serve him during his troubles. It happened that William Brewster, Sr., fell ill and remained an invalid for some time before his death. The son, apparently, began to take over his father's duties in 1589 and he continued to hold them for many years. The father died in 1590. He left no will but the papers relating to the settlement of the estate showed that William, Jr., was apparently the only son. Certainly he inherited his father's chief possessions and took over the care of his mother.

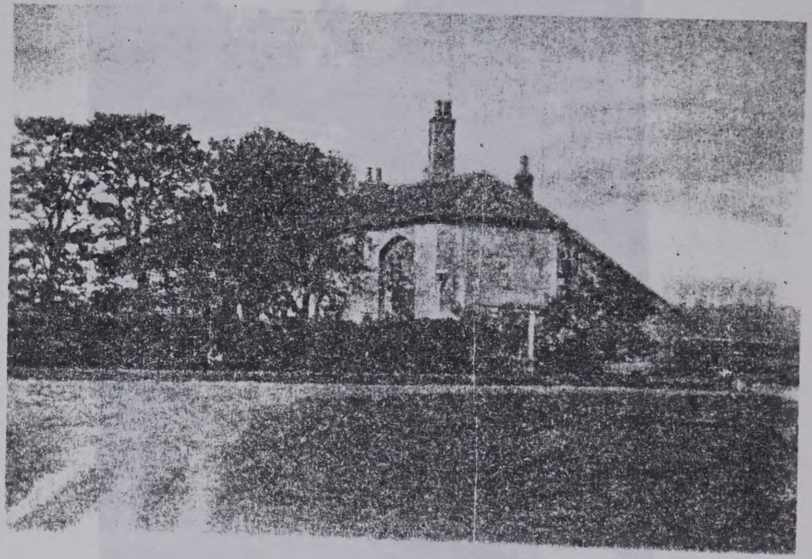
When William Brewster, Jr., became the tenant of Scrooby Manor he was only about twenty-three years old, and the duties must have been heavy for him. He neglected to get his appointment as postmaster confirmed and it was given to another man, but Brewster's friends at Court intervened for him and he duly received the office, which he faithfully held for seventeen years. Once, in 1603, he almost lost the Manor House as King James tried to get it from the Archbishop of York by exchange, the sovereign coveting the place as convenient to Sherwood Forest and also on the road to Scotland which he often used. The king referred to the house as "exceedingly decayed" and of little real value to others, but, for some unknown reason, the deal was never made and Brewster remained undisturbed, until religious difficulties made it better for him to leave.

Brewster showed an intense interest in religion and did much to further and promote religious feeling in his community. He took upon himself the matter of bringing good preachers into the neighborhood. He gradually began to find fault with the tyrannical acts of the bishops and to align himself with those dissenters called the Separatists, who separated from the Established Church late in 1606. A small group began to hold their own Sunday services in the Scrooby Manor House and Brewster was the principal member and the protector of this little band. In fact it was in Scrooby Manor in 1606 that there was born the congregation which was to become the Pilgrim community of Plymouth in New England.

Brewster began to fall into trouble with the authorities. He was one of these Separatists, also called "Brownists," who were ordered before a court on December 1, 1607. He failed to appear and was fined twenty pounds, which he was forced to pay. After this episode the group, according to Bradford, "resolved to go into the Low Countries, where, they heard, was freedom of religion for all men." By the end of September in 1607 Brewster had resigned his office as postmaster at Scrooby. It was not easy to get away, as has been often told. Brewster was one of those taken off a ship at Boston in Lincolnshire and put in jail, and he was one of the seven kept in prison for some time. Before he finally escaped Brewster was nearly impoverished. He reached Amsterdam in 1608, and there a church was organized, with John Robinson as pastor, and John Carver as deacon. This small religious community was moved to Leyden in Holland in April of 1609. About this time William Brewster was elected to the office of "Ruling Elder" of the church, an office he continued to hold in New England.

Brewster was very poor for a time in Holland but before long found ways to use his real abilities. He began to teach English, chiefly to the sons of Danes and Germans, and about 1616 he began a press. This famous printing establishment was continued for the twelve years spent in Holland, and the books recognized as outputs of this plant are now highly valued. Brewster published books in both Latin and English, not always putting his name on them. He fell into serious difficulties over the printing of Puritan pamphlets and the King of England instructed his Ambassador in Holland to press for Brewster's arrest. Brewster, by remaining in hiding, escaped. This was in 1619 and apparently Brewster spent some time in seclusion in England. The full story of Brewster and his companions in Holland has been too thoroughly covered by Dexter, Arber and Burgess for repetition here.

The steps leading to the voyage of the ship *Mayflower* and its famous passage to New England have been the subject of a great literature. It is sufficient to say here that William Brewster was the spiritual leader of that momentous adventure. He was not the pastor of the flock, even though Robinson had remained behind, but as the Senior Elder he represented the church and led the people not only by right but by the example of his own behavior. With him on this journey were his wife and his sons Love and Wrestling.



WILLIAM BREWSTER'S MANOR HOUSE AT SCROOBY

(Copyright by A. S. Burbank, Plymouth)

WILLIAM BREWSTER, PRINTER

While the Pilgrims were living at the Green Gate in Leyden before coming to New England, Elder William Brewster set up a publishing house, financed by his young friend, Thomas Brewer, who has been described as "a Gentleman of a good house, both of land and living...." Together they established an office and print shop in Choir Alley, the Koorsteeg, now better known in its Latin form, Vicus Chorali. According to George F. Willison, [*Saints and Strangers* (New York 1945), pp. 93-101] the printing office fronting on Choir Alley was simply an extension in the rear of Brewster's house which faced the Stincksteeg, or Stink Alley. Brewster and Brewer hired a master printer from London, named John Reynolds, who brought with him an assistant "of very active genius," named Edward Winslow.

At least three books were published in 1617 bearing the imprint:

Lugduni Batavorum
Apud Guiljelmum Brewsterum
In vico Chorali

But these books were apparently only a cover for the print shop's main purpose, which was "to print prohibited books to be vented underhand in His Majesty's kingdoms." According to Willison, it was the publication of a Calvinist work, the *Perth Assembly*, that brought the printing venture to grief. Mayflower Society member Mary B. Sherwood, in her recently published book *Pilgrim, A Biography of William Brewster* [Great Oak Press, Falls Church, VA 1982] reports that William Brewster never admitted publishing the book. She adds the information that the author was David Calderwood, a leader in the Scottish independent Presbyterian Church "which was still resisting the efforts of King James to impose English church uniformity in Scotland.... The manuscript was smuggled to Holland and set in type there, either by Brewster or by some printer with simil views."

Willison states that copies of *Perth Assembly* were smuggled into Scotland in vats of French wine and were widely disseminated and read. King James and the English authorities were so enraged that the English ambassador to Holland, Sir Dudley Carleton, insisted that the Dutch authorities imprison Thomas Brewer, eventually forcing him to return to London to face tri

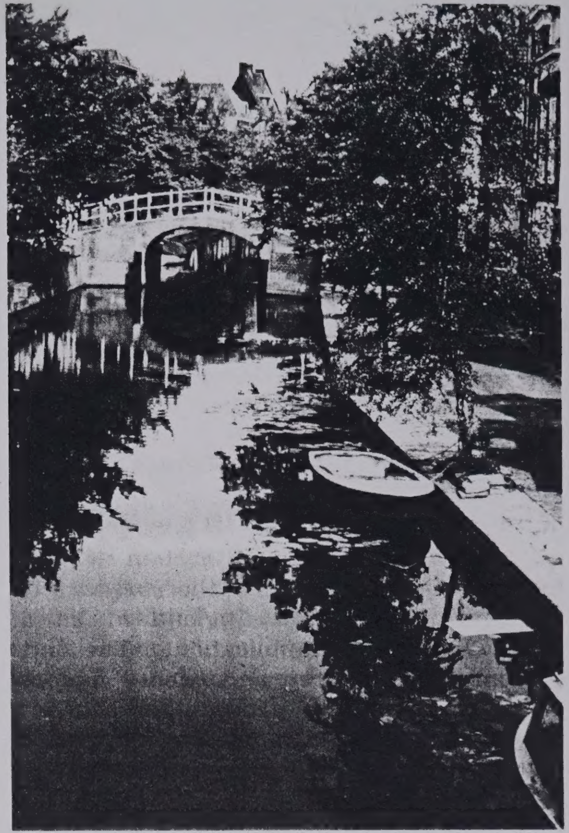


Photo by Jean Damisch

View from rear of William Brewster's home in Leyden.

and imprisonment. William Brewster went into hiding. His printing equipment was seized and impounded by Dutch authorities and was never returned. So ended the publishing venture of the Pilgrims in Leyden, a year and a half before the *Mayflower* sailed for a new life in the strange new land of New England.

Richard J. Damisch, Deputy Governor of the Illinois Society, recently visited Leyden with his wife, Jean, and children, Diane and Richard. Jean took an unusually beautiful picture of the canal, shown above, as seen from the site of the Choir Alley Press, behind Brewster's old home on the Stincksteeg.

Elizabeth P. White, *Editor*

The volumes are so tightly bound that a center section could not be recorded!

ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER

Part I

by Donald B. Ward, D.D., LL.D.

THE Pilgrim movement had its roots in William Brewster's h It was called Scrooby Manor. It was a mansion of pa dimensions in that tiny village in Nottinghamshire in Engl northeast midlands. William Brewster's father was appoi bailiff of the manor which was a sort of administrator for estate. The old post road that ran from Scotland down London passed within sight of Scrooby Manor so Brewster's father was also t postmaster, handling messages that passed back and forth from London to Edi borough and also providing bed and board for weary travellers.

William Brewster was born about 1567. When he was eight or nine his fam moved to Scrooby Manor. The manor already had a notable history. Marga Tudor, daughter of King Henry VII, slept there one June night in 1503. Cardi Wolsey spent three summer months at the Manor in 1530. Henry VIII held Privy Council meeting at the Manor in 1541. When the Brewsters arrived t place was considerably run down, which may have been a happy circumsta that I will touch on later.

When he was only 13, William Brewster left the Manor to enroll at Cambri University where he found a rich, stimulating, intellectually challenging at sphere. He got a good taste of free thinking philosophy and an excellent Bib background that would prepare him well for his future dangerous and courage role as a Separatist leader.

After Brewster left Cambridge he had a fascinating few years on the edg Queen Elizabeth's court. His mentor was William Davison, one of the que diplomats. History doesn't tell us how Ambassador Davison chose Brewster a apprentice in his office. But Brewster was most fortunate to capture Davison's and respect and it became almost a father-son relationship.

Brewster must have attended functions that put him in the presence of Q Bess. But it all ended when William Davison found himself in the Queen's g disfavor. He was an innocent victim of the Queen's chicanery over the executio Mary Queen of Scots. After much indecision the Queen finally ordered Daviso draw up the document authorizing the execution of her cousin, Mary, who plotted to overthrow the queen. After the execution Elizabeth turned ag Davison claiming it was his fault - that he had goaded her into signing so terri document. Elizabeth wanted to accept none of the blame for Mary's executio shifted it to Davison most unjustly and unfairly.

She ordered him into confinement in the Tower of London, and Brewster, his faithful aide, brought him food and all the news he could gather o comings and goings in the world of high court intrigue. Even though Daviso later released his career was ended. Brewster went back to Scrooby Man assume the duties of his ailing father as administrator and postmaster.

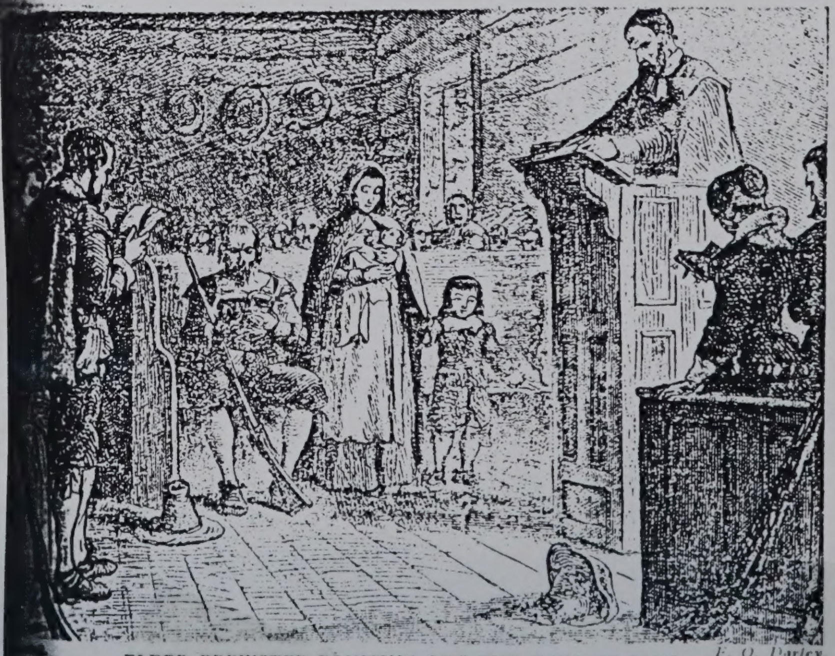
Undoubtedly he had learned much in the service of William Davison - much at would later make him a most successful and conciliatory leader of the lgrims. All of his life Brewster was sympathetic and compassionate toward those ho were in misery, particularly those who had fallen from positions of high rank ecause of undeserved oppression. He had seen the merciless and conniving side f his monarch which must have given him an even greater resolve to dedicate his ife to the pursuit of religious freedom.

But there was certainly much room for love in his life. We're not sure of the exact ear but it was probably 1591 or 92 that Brewster married Mary Wentworth.

Mary Wentworth indeed must have been a most remarkable woman. We don't ave much biographical material but it can be strongly inferred that she shared er husband's growing interest in religion; she shared his ability to adjust to adical changes. Her health was apparently good. She lived through that dreadful rst winter at Plymouth, and she survived the births of at least six children at a me when many women died in childbirth.

She *managed* when William was in prison or hunted by the authorities. She must ave been a capable and well-loved mother. All the children except one who died a baby, lived to become adults. The older children remained in the Netherlands en the Mayflower sailed for America. They came over to join their parents as on as they could. There are no indications of family disharmony.

In keeping with the times William and Mary Brewster named their children om Biblical inspiration. Their first born, Jonathan, was named for King Saul's urageous son and loyal friend of David. Their first daughter was named Pance, from the theme of patiently waiting for God's will to be known. Then came other daughter named Fear, with fear of God as the theme for her life.



ELDER BREWSTER POINTING OUT THE NARROW WAY.

F. O. Darley.

In 1611, after they moved to Holland, a baby boy was born whom they name Love, probably reflecting the spiritual love they all felt for each other in tha struggling fellowship in a strange land. In 1614 their last child was born to whom they gave the most fascinating name - Wrestling, a name indicating the obligatio to wrestle with temptation.

Patience, Love, Fear and Wrestling - a quartet of names unique in the annals of nomenclature. I trust that Love would triumph over all as Love was the Brewster offspring through whom I am descended.

It is fascinating that William Brewster began the Mayflower journey as a fugitive. We can only be proud of an ancestor who went to jail for espousing such a noble cause. It is better that he be jailed for that than to stay out of jail because he remained silent.

In Jerome Lawrence's play *The Night Thoreau Spent In Jail*, he had committed an act of civil disobedience in not paying a tax that supported the Mexican War Ralph Waldo Emerson came to visit him in jail and said, "Henry, what are you doing in jail?" And Thoreau said, "What are you doing out of jail?" . . . a reminder that sometimes social justice is achieved through civil disobedience.

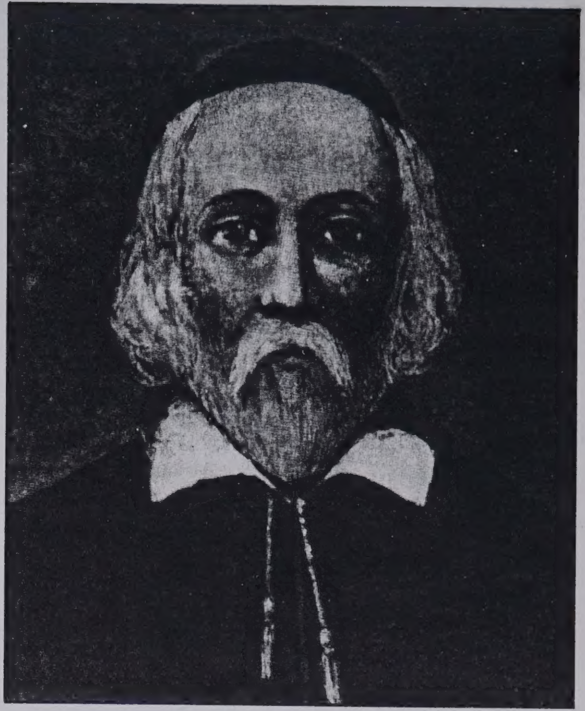
As you remember, the Scrooby Separatists escaped to Holland in 1608 in their quest for religious freedom. During their Holland sojourn William Brewster made his living as a printer of books and pamphlets. One book he published was called *The Perth Assembly* which was highly critical of King James' attempt to remake the Church of Scotland in the image of his English Church. He held an assembly of Bishops at Perth in Scotland to bring it about. When the king learned tha William Brewster had printed this subversive and seditious book he flew into royal rage and ordered an immediate manhunt for its publisher.

At the time Brewster was in London helping another Separatist leader negoti for a government land grant in Northern Virginia. When word reached him tha he was a wanted man he went immediately into hiding.

In the book *One Small Candle*, Thomas Fleming describes what the punishme was for publishing such clandestine writing. "For printing a similar book arou the same time, a Scottish minister was fined 3000 pounds and sentenced to whipped and set in the pillory at Westminster to have one of his ears cut off his nose slit, to be branded in the face with the letters SS (for Stirrer of Sediti to be whipped and pilloried again on a marked day in Cheapside, to have other ear cut off and be imprisoned for life. The king did not take religi dissent lightly."

So it is little wonder that William Brewster went into hiding. He had to smuggled aboard the Mayflower. The Captain, Christopher Jones, would n have embarked on the journey if he had known he had a fugitive on board would himself be liable to prosecution for harboring a criminal.

There was a movie made about the Mayflower crossing. There was that some, nail-biting scene in which the King's officers searched the ship just b sailing, having heard that fugitive Brewster might be on board. They did no him, but he almost suffocated in cramped space behind a storage cabinet that is just one example of the price paid and the threatening of life th Pilgrim ancestor and many others endured to uphold their precious re freedom.



Copyright, 1987 by Elder Brewster Press — RLH Editor:

ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER

There were plenty of oubts about the wisdom of the journey in the first place. It could simply be too dangerous. Stephen Hopkins had made the trip to Virginia back in 1609 and it had been a disaster, the ship floundering off the coast of Bermuda. The Pilgrims had that sort of discouraging news to deal with.

William Bradford demonstrated his doubts by refusing to ake his son with him. Others certainly did ake their children. Mary Brewster brought nly her two youngest, Love and Wrestling, aving her two older ughters and her son, nathan, who was then 17 years old.

Do you remember where the name Pilgrim came from? It came from Bradford's ries, when he wrote about their departure from Leyden where they had lived in lland. "And so they left that good and pleasant city, which had been their ing place near 12 years; but they knew they were pilgrims, and looked not ch on those things, but lifted their eyes to the heavens, their dearest country, quieted their spirits." And where did Bradford get his inspiration to call them rims? From the Bible, of course. From Chapter 11, verse 13 of the Epistle to Hebrews which reads:

> *These all died in faith, not having received the promises but having seen them afar f, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were ngers and pilgrims on the earth.*

Continued in next issue

ld B. Ward, D.D., LL.D., *received his education at Northwestern, Chicago Theologi- inary and Oxford University (Mansfield College). An eleventh generation Congre- list, he has served many Congregational parishes including Evanston, Los Angeles, and Glen Ellyn, IL. Dr. Ward was also president of Yankton College for eight years; ndfather founded the college in 1881. He is currently a member of the Executive ttee of the Congregational Christian Churches. Dr. Ward is a descendant of Brewster, rd, Alden, Warren, Hopkins and Rogers. Donald and his wife, Verna, have three and five grandchildren; their address is Park Alhambra 56, Alhambra, CA*

ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER

Part II of III Parts

by Donald B. Ward, D.D., LL.D.

TYPICAL WINDMILLS

WILLIAM BREWSTER had worked also as a teacher in Ho land. He may have set up a school on the Mayflower. He wa the perfect man for the job. He had a charming and gentle disposition. Bradford described him as always cheerful. He had brought along a library of almost 200 books and was probably the ship's librarian. We can assume he doled them out to anyone who asked. As for Bible study they used the Geneva Bible, the first Bible to be divided into numbered verses.

Of course the ship came close to foundering more than once. Waves 50 feet high came smashing down upon them and even the sailors prayed. One can visualize William Brewster reminding them that they had gone through worse experiences on the Speedwell when they almost sank on their earlier voyage from England to Holland in 1608. Even the Captain and the crew had despaired, but the pilgrims cried out in prayer - "Yet Lord thou canst save, Yet Lord thou canst save!", and quite miraculously the wind had died down and they were able to limp into the Amsterdam port, having survived what seemed like certain death.

On the Mayflower, in another heavy storm, William Brewster was urging them to remember that earlier miracle and call upon God again with the same faith. They gathered their faith and through the howling wind they sang the 23rd Psalm - a quite different reading of it from our familiar version, and I want you to hear it - it is so interesting a comparison.

Jehovah feedeth me I shall not lack.
In grassy folds he down dooth make my lye.
He gently leads me in quiet waters by,
He dooth return my soul; for his name's sake
In paths of justice leads me quietly.
Yea though I walk in dale and deadly shade
Ile fear none ill; for with me thou will be
Thy rod thy staff eke, they shall comfort be.
Fore me, a table thou has ready-made
In their presence that my distressers be.

The word "eke" is fascinating. It means "sufficient." Thy rod thy staff eke - i sufficient to protect me.

During the later storm they survived the birth of a baby. Elizabeth Hopkins fully expected to have her child in a warm new home in the new world, but all the delays in planning and sailing placed her final labor in that cold, heaving cabin without warm water. The experienced older women - Mary Brewster and Catherine Carver - came to the rescue. They had assisted in many births in Holland During that long labor period William Brewster again lead prayers for Elizabeth Hopkins. And then came Mary Brewster out of the cabin holding the small bundl that was a lusty, yowling baby boy! Because he was a veritable son of Neptun Stephen Hopkins promptly named him Oceanus Hopkins.

William Brewster certainly served as their minister from the moment they left Holland. Their so-called regular minister was John Robinson who felt it necessary to remain in Holland to tend the larger flock there. In Robinson's farewell message to the voyagers he spoke that immortal phrase of great hope that rings as true today as it did them. *There is yet more truth and light to break forth from God's holy word.*

William Brewster was not ordained but had been named Elder of the congregation which placed him in the category of teacher for the church. But he ministered to them as much, if not more, than any ordained person could do. Bradford wrote that he was an excellent preacher, that "in his teaching he was very stirring and moving of the affections; also very plain and distinct in what he taught; by which means he became the more profitable to the hearers. He had a singular good gift of prayer . . . in ripping up the heart and conscience before God . . . He always thought it were better for ministers to pray oftener, and divide their prayers, than to be long and tedious in same."

That means he may have prayed as little as half an hour. That would be one of their short prayers. It was not uncommon for a minister to pray for two hours and the people had to stand during the prayers. So today, when you go to church - count your blessings.

Toward the end of that grueling Mayflower voyage you can imagine the joyous relief to hear the lookout yell "Land Ho!" It was 7:00 A.M. on November 9, 1620, that the call brought sleepy and exhausted passengers up the ladders to the main deck, refusing to believe until they saw it for themselves. And there it was - in hazy distance - a long stretch of strand and dark forest. It was actually in sight. In tearful relief many thanked God on their knees.

William Brewster said, "Let us sing a song of gladness and gratitude," and in joyous unison they sang the 100th Psalm which begins with the familiar "Make a joyful noise unto the Lord."

When they first anchored in what is now Provincetown harbor they faced a peculiar problem that lead to the creation of the Mayflower Compact. William Brewster was the fourth signer behind Carver, Bradford, and Winslow. It was the first state paper of America. It was the grandfather document that spawned the great statements of freedom that would later declare our independence. There's no doubt in my mind that Brewster had a strong hand in its composition.

Winston Churchill called it "one of the remarkable documents of history, a spontaneous covenant for political organization."

New Amsterdam

Professor Irving Kristol wrote, in an article in *American Heritage:* "The primordial American social contract was signed and sealed on the Mayflower - literally signed and sealed. The subsequent presence of all those signatures appended to the Declaration of Independence, beginning with John Hancock, are but an echo of the original covenant."

There was a seemingly radical thought about the Mayflower Compact. It begins last summer when I visited Babworth in the Northern Midlands of England. It is near Scrooby. The rectory of the Church at Babworth is where the Pilgrim movement really began. In the late 16th and early 17th century the rector of the Babworth Church was Richard Clyfton, who might have gone down in history as the father of the Pilgrim movement had he not later deserted the movement in Holland - but that's another story.

Richard Clyfton was one of those non-conformist ministers, dissenting from the crown's authority over the church. He found sympathetic friends in John Robinson, William Bradford and William Brewster. They would gather on Sunday evenings in the Babworth rectory and discuss possible strategies of establishing a worshiping community free of government control. It was out of those conversations that they gathered an underground church at Scrooby Manor made up of those early Pilgrims who would eventually flee to Holland and finally on the Mayflower to the new world. One historian of the Pilgrim story, Professor Arber, states "So going back to the ultimate facts we say that the Pilgrim Movement originated in the Rectory and Church of Babworth in Nottinghamshire."

Last summer the author met the current rector of Babworth who put into his hands a silver chalice which he said had been authenticated as having been used by The Rev. Mr. Clyfton in administering the sacraments. One can imagine the tingly feeling that invaded every pore of my body. I thought it was almost certain that my ancestor, William Brewster, had received holy communion from that chalice. I was holding a holy relic in my hands and was deeply moved by it.

Now - an interesting irony - the previous rector of Babworth was The Rev. Edmund F. Jessup who died just a few years ago. We had hoped to visit with him on a previous visit to Babworth several years ago but he had just recently left that historic post. But he wrote a book entitled *The Mayflower Story.* It is little more than a pamphlet, but one evaluates it as being the best short version of our ancestors' story. Typical of good English literature, it's rhetoric is impeccable.

After the booklet was published Rev. Jessup was interviewed by a literary reporter who asked him why he had spent 35 years of research before writing it. His answer was to me a most exciting statement that I think should mean a great deal to all of us. He said, "Next to the founding of Christianity itself, the Mayflower Story is the greatest story in history."

Continued in next issue

Donald B. Ward, D.D., LL.D., *received his education at Northwestern, Chicago Theological Seminary and Oxford University (Mansfield College). An eleventh generation Congregationalist, he has served many Congregational parishes including Evanston, Los Angeles, Denver, and Glen Ellyn, IL. Dr. Ward was also president of Yankton College for eight years; his grandfather founded the college in 1881. He is currently a member of the Executive Committee of the Congregational Christian Churches. Dr. Ward is a descendant of Brewster, Bradford, Alden, Warren, Hopkins and Rogers. Donald and his wife, Verna, have three children and five grandchildren; their address is Park Alhambra 56, Alhambra, CA 91801.*

EPITAPHS FROM OLD BURIAL HILL PLYMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS

Ninth of a Series

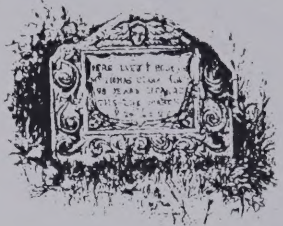
THERE are six ancient gravestones bearing dates before 1700 A.D. These stones are for Edward Gray, 1681 (MQ, May 1989, p. 119); William Crowe, 1683/4; Hannah Clark, 1687; Thomas Cushman, 1691 (MQ, Aug. 1988, pp. 184-5); Thomas Clark, 1697; and the ten children of John and Josiah Cotton, 1699. There is a possible seventh stone; but it is a defaced and illegible marker of Nathaniel Thomas who died in 1697. Featured are the remainder of the oldest markers from the 17th century.

Here lies buried
ye body of Mr.
WILLIAM CROWE
Aged About 55 years
who decd January
1683-4

---

second of the 17th century tombstones is that of Thomas Clark/Clarke who is ften spoken of as the Mate of the Mayflower. History, however, tells a different tory; it is known that the name of the first officer of the ship was John Clark. The tone is of the purple cast Welsh slate and reads:

Here lyes ye body of Mr. Thomas Clark
aged 98 years
departed this life March ye 24th 1697



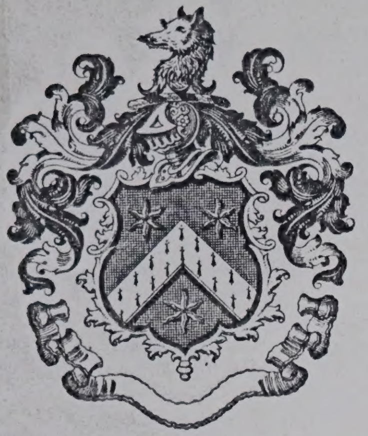
A huge bolder has been replaced on the side of the grave and a metallic plate secured to it reads:

> *Here lies buried ye body of Mr. Thomas Clark aged 98, Departed this life March 24, 1697. Thomas Clarke came to Plymouth from England in the ship Anne 1623. He married Susan Ring of Plymouth, 1634. Their children were Andrew, James, William, Susanna, Nathaniel, and John. From whom descended a numerous posterity. He married his second Mrs. Alice Hallett Nichols of Boston, in 1664. He lived for some years in Boston, and also Harwich, of which town he was one of the original proprietors. He died in Plymouth, having lived in the reigns of six British sovereigns and the Com'th. This stone erected in his memory by his descendants A.D. 1891.*

The gravesite of the Cotton children are marked with the following words.

Samuel H   Josiah ye   n John Cotton   Josiah Anonymus Edward Josiah Edward Richard Roland 7 sons of Josiah
Cotton who died between ye year 1712 & 1734

BREWSTER


BREWSTER

Elder William Brewster, born 1566-67, was the son of William Brewster appointed by Archbishop Sandys in January, 1575-76, as receiver of Scrooby, and bailiff of the manor house in that place, belonging to the Archbishop, being given a life tenure of both offices. As the parish registers do not begin until 1695, no record of the son's birth, baptism or marriage has been found after careful research.[39] An affidavit made at Leyden, June 25, 1609, states that Elder William Brewster, his wife and son Jonathan declare their ages be respectively forty-two, forty and sixteen years. William Bradford's statement that Brewster was "nere fourskore years of age (if not all out) when he dyed," agrees with the affidavit. Therefore he was born in 1566 or 1567, and he "dyed at Plymouth in New England the 10th of April, 1644."[40]

"He matriculated at Peterhouse, Cambridge, December 3, 1580, but it does not appear that he remained there long enough to take his degree.[41] He is next found as a 'discreete and faithfull' assistant of William Davison, Secretary of State to Queen Elizabeth, accompanying that gentleman on his embassy to the Netherlands in August, 1585, and serving him at Court after his return, until his downfall in 1587. After the retirement of Davison, Brewster returned to Scrooby, where he lived 'in good esteeme amongst his freunds, and ye gentlemen of those parts, espetially the godly and religious, doing much good in promoting and furthering Religion.' In 1590 he was appointed administrator of the estate of his father who died in the summer of that year, leaving a widow, Prudence. His father was 'Post' at Scrooby, at the time of his death, and it is said that the Elder's grandfather held the same office.[42] Sir John Stanhope, who became Postmaster General in June 1590, appointed one Samuel Bevercotes to succeed the deceased Brewster. Through the influence of Davison, however, the old postmaster's son William, was appointed to the office, which he held until September 30, 1607, (O. S.). His residence at Scrooby was the old manor house.[43] In this house the

harbor, December 16, 1620 (O. S.). At Plymouth, Brewster bore an important part in establishing the Pilgrim Republic, not shrinking from even the severest manual labor, and 'when the church had no other minister, he taught twise eury saboth and ye both powerfully and profitably, to ye great contentment of ye hearers'" . . .

He signed the Mayflower Compact; was member and Chaplain of the first military company organized at Plymouth Colony, under Captain Myles Standish, and served against the Indians; Deputy, 1636.

"His wife Mary, whose maiden name has not been discovered, 'dyed at Plymouth in new England the 17th of Aprill, 1627.'[44] Bradford says that though she died long before her husband, 'yet she dyed aged,' but by her affidavit of 1609, she was less than sixty years of age, and it is probable that the 'great & continuall labours, with other crosses and sorrows, hastened it (i. e. old age) before ye time.' Elder Brewster survived his wife many years. . . . August 20, 1645, a final division of the Elder's estate was made by Bradford, Winslow, Prince and Standish, between 'Jonathan and Loue his onely children remayneing.'"[45]

As has been said, on the voyage to America, Elder Brewster was accompanied by his wife and two younger sons, whose names were Love and Wrestling. Jonathan, his eldest son, came in the *Fortune* 1621, and his daughters, Patience and *Fear* in the *Ann,* 1623. Patience married Thomas Prince, Governor of Plymouth Colony 1634, and *Fear* married (second wife) **Isaac Allerton**, Deputy-Governor of Plymouth Colony. Their son **Isaac**, married second, ***Elizabeth Willoughby.***

Pub. 1910 for Colonial Dames of America R929.1C71 Ancestral Records & Portraits p 791-3

Brewster

Clip pgs

ACKLEY - BOSWORTH GENEALOGY pg 133

ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER

PLYMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS

William[1] Brewster, born in England, probably at Scrooby, co. Nottingham, about 1566, died at Duxbury, Mass., 10 Apr. 1644; married in England, Mary [perhaps Wentworth], born about 1568, died at Plymouth, 17 Apr. 1627.

He was son of William and Prudence (———) Brewster of Scrooby. He matriculated at St. Peter's, Cambridge University, but did not graduate. He entered the service of William Davison, whom he accompanied on a diplomatic mission to Holland, 1585-6. His father was steward of the Manor of Scrooby and before 1588 had also become "Post" there on the great North Road from London to Scotland. Returning home after Davison was thrown into the Tower, William aided his father as Post, and succeeded him after his father's death in 1590.

He managed the post-house until 1607. During this period he adopted the tenets of Puritanism and became a leader in the Separatist movement, the object of which was to separate church and state. He printed forbidden religious matter and once was sent to prison. He fled to Holland late in 1607 and was elected ruling elder in Leyden not later than 1613. Here he continued his printing of "heretical" books, sometimes making secret trips to England.

He was chosen to lead the first band of Pilgrims to America, and is believed to have been the author of the Mayflower Compact, which he was the fourth to sign. He was Chaplain of the first military company organized at Plymouth under Myles Standish, and was teaching and Ruling Elder at Plymouth Plantation for many years.

In a deposition at Leyden, 25 June 1609, he stated his age as 42, that of his wife Mary as 40, and that of his son Jonathan as 16. His wife and sons Love and Wrestling accompanied him on the *Mayflower*, Jonathan came on the *Fortune* in 1621, and Patience and Fear on the *Ann* in 1623. Bradford wrote of him as having "many children." Probably he had one or more children who remained in England.

Children of William and Mary (———) Brewster:

i. A son[2], a Conformist in England in 1619; probably Edward who was in Virginia 1610-18.

ii. Jonathan, b. at Scrooby, 12 Aug. 1593; d. at New London, Conn., 7 Aug. 1659; m. (1) at Leyden, ———, bur. there 10 May 1619; m. (2) at Plymouth, 10 Apr. 1624, Lucretia Oldham, who d. at New London, 4 Mar. 1678/9.

+ iii. Patience, b. probably by 1600; d. in 1634; m. at Plymouth, 5 Aug. 1624, (Gov.) Thomas Prence, b. abt. 1600, d. 29 Mar. 1673.

iv. Fear, d. at Plymouth, 1 Dec. 1634; m. abt. 1626, as his second wife, Isaac Allerton.

v. Love, d. at Duxbury, late in 1650; m. 15 May 1634, Sarah Collier, dau. of William; she m. (2) 1 Sept. 1656, Richard Parks.

vi. Wrestling, d. after 22 May 1627, a young man, unm.

vii. A child, bur. at Leyden, 20 June 1609.

Clarence Almon Torrey

BREWSTER, Benjamin (1633-1710) & Ann (ADDIS) DARTE (-1709), w Ambrose; 28 Feb 1659/60; Norwich, CT/Preston, CT
BREWSTER, Benjamin (1673-1744) & Mary SMITH; 17 Dec 1696; ?Norwich, CT/Lebanon, CT
BREWSTER, Daniel (1666/7-1735) & 1/wf Hannah GAGER (1666-1727); 23 Dec 1686; Norwich, CT/Preston, CT
BREWSTER, Daniel (1662-) & Anna/Anne JAYNE (1676-); ca 1693; Setauket, LI
BREWSTER, Francis & Lucy _?_, m/2 Thomas PELL; in Eng, ca 1617; New Haven, CT
BRUSTER, John & Mary [?KNIGHT]/[?SHERBURNE]; 6 Jul 1652; ?Portsmouth, NH
BREWSTER, John & Mary [SLOPER]; b 1690; Portsmouth, NH
BREWSTER, Jonathan (1593-1659) & 1/wf _?_ (-1619); b 1610; Leyden/Holland
BREWSTER, Jonathan (1593-1659) & 2/wf Lucretia OLDHAM (-1679); 10 Apr 1624; Plymouth/Duxbury
BREWSTER, Jonathan (1664-1704) & Judith STEVENS, m/2 Christopher HUNTINGTON 1706; 18 Dec 1690; Norwich, CT/Preston, CT
BREWSTER, Love (-1650) & Sarah COLLIER (-1691), m/2 Richard PARK; 15 May 1634; Plymouth
BREWSTER, Nathaniel (-1690) & 1/wf Abigail [REYNES]; in Eng, ca 1644; New Haven, CT
BREWSTER, Nathaniel (-1690) & 2/wf Sarah [LUDLOW]; in Ireland, ca 1656; Boston/New Haven/etc.
BREWSTER, Nathaniel (-1676) & Sarah _?_, m/2 Robert HIXON; ca 1660/65; ?Duxbury
BREWSTER, Timothy & Mary [HAWKINS]; ca 1685; Brookhaven, LI
BREWSTER, William (?1567-1644) & Mary [WENTWORTH?] (-1627); in Eng, b 1593; Plymouth
BREWSTER, William (1625-) & Mary PEAME/PERME; 15 Oct 1651; London
BREWSTER, William (-1723) & Lydia PARTRIDGE (-1743); 2 Jan 1672; Duxbury
BREWSTER, William (1669-1728) & 1/wf Elizabeth READ (-1692); 8 Jan 1692, 1691/2; Norwich, CT
BREWSTER, William (1669-1728) & 2/wf Patience _?_ (-ca 1740, Coventry, CT); ca 1694; Norwich, CT/Lebanon, CT
BREWSTER, Wrestling (-1 Jan 1696/7) & Mary _?_ (1661-1742), Kingston, m/2 John PARTRIDGE; b 1679; Duxbury/Kingston

---

Pioneers of Massachusetts Charles Henry Pope

pg 67

BREWSTER,

Mr. William, son of William Brewster, receiver of Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, Eng. and bailiff of the manor house. He deposed at Leyden June 25, 1609, ae. 42 years; his wife being then 40 and his son Jonathan 16.

Educated sometime at Cambridge in Latin and Greek; private secretary to Davison, sec. of State; appointed post-master at Scrooby; the Pilgrim Church met at his house generally, and he entertained them. Was a leader in the removal to Holland; one of those imprisoned at Boston, Lincolnshire. Ruling elder at Leyden. His printing press was a great help. He bore his part with this poor persecuted church above 36 years. He often preached and otherwise greatly helped the church. He came in the Mayflower; signed the Compact. With him came his wife Mary and 2 sons, Love and Wrestling; the rest of his ch. were left behind and came over afterward. Wrestling d. a young man. The daus. that came over were d. in 1650, but left sundry children. With him came also Richard More, a boy apprenticed to him, who lived at Plymouth, and a bro. of Richard who d. the first winter. [B.] He res. at Duxbury. His wife Mary d. aged, before 1627. "He had many children." [B.] His dau. Fear m. Isaac Allerton. Patience m. Thomas Prence.

He d. April 10, 1644, ae. 80 years. Admin. gr. to his sons, Jonathan and Love June 5, 1644. The inv. showed 63 Latin books and between 300 and 400 English books. [Reg. IV, 174, and LIII, 109.]

Clippings — Brewster

Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England - James Savage
Vol I

BREWSTER, BENJAMIN, New London 1654, s. of Jonathan, m. Feb. 1659, Ann Dart, sis. perhaps, of Richard of the same, had Mary, b. prob. at N. L. Dec. 1660; at Norwich, Ann, Sept. 1662; Jonathan, Nov. 1664; Daniel, Mar. 1667; William, Mar. 1669; Ruth, 16 Sept. 1671; Benjamin, 28 Nov. 1673; and Eliz. 23 June 1676. He d. 10 Sept. 1710. Caulkins, Hist. Norwich, 115.

FRANCIS, New Haven 1640, was from London, prob. with w. Lucy and fam. in all count. nine heads; and lost with Gregson, Lamberton, and others, going home in the ship built at New Haven, Jan. 1646. He may well seem to have been f. of Nathaniel, gr. in the first class at H. C. 1642, and of Joseph. His wid. m. Thomas Pell, and was d. Sept. 1669. Above ten pages of N. H. Col. Rec. are occup. with trifling details on a trial of her for slander, but this was bef. her m. to sec. h. and may have contribut. to produce it in order to obt. manly protection. His est. was good, amt. of inv. £555.

JOHN, Portsmouth 1665. See Bruster.

* JONATHAN, Plymouth, eldest s. of Elder William, b. at Scrooby, in Co. Notts, on the road to Doncaster in Yorksh. from wh. it is only 12 or 13 miles dist. in a manor belong. to the archbp. of York, under wh. his gr.f. was tenant on long lease, had been instruct. only by his glorious f. either in his native ld. or the doz. yrs. resid. in Holland, where he was left by the Elder to take care of two sis. with his own fam. Without the sis. he came in the Fortune 1621, in June 1636, was in command of the Plymouth trading ho. on Conn. riv. and gave notice to John Winthrop, gov. of the fort at Saybrook, in a letter in my possess. of 18 June, of the evil designs of the Pequots;

rem. to Duxbury, of wh. he was rep. 1639, the earliest assemb. of deputies in that Col. thence to New London, bef. 1649, there was selectman, d. bef. Sept. 1659, hav. in Sept. 1656 project. to ret. to Eng. with his fam. By w. Lucretia, he had William, and Mary, both, prob. but the first, certain. b. in Holland; Jonathan; Benjamin, bef. ment.; also, Grace, Ruth, Hannah, and perhaps Eliz. some of these b. prob. at New London. Mary m. 12 Nov. 1645, John Turner of Scituate; Eliz. m. a. 1654, Peter Bradley; Grace m. 4 Aug. 1659, Daniel Wetherill; and Ruth m. John Picket, and next, Charles Hill, and d. 30 Apr. 1677.

JONATHAN, Duxbury, s. of the preced. is seen among the freem. in 1643, with his br. William, but prob. they both went to New London with their f.

JOSEPH, New Haven 1646, s. of Francis.

LOVE, Plymouth, s. of Elder William, b. prob. in Holland, possib. in Eng. came, with his f. in the Mayflower, rem. to Duxbury, m. 15 May 1634, Sarah, d. of William Collier, had Sarah, wh. m. 1656, Benjamin Bartlett; Nathaniel; William; and Wrestling. He d. not long after his will of 1 Oct. 1650, and his wid. m. Richard Park of Cambridge, and, after his d. 1665, went back to Duxbury.

NATHANIEL, New Haven, one of the earliest gr. of Harv. prob. s. of Francis, brot. from London, went to Eng. sett. as min. at Alby, in Co. Norf. had the degr. of B. D. from Dublin Univ. came back after the restorat. and preach. some time from Oct. 1663, at the first ch. in Boston; at last was sett. at Brookhaven, L. I. 1665; m. Sarah, d. of Roger Ludlow, d. 1690, leav. s. John, Timothy, and Daniel, whose descend. are still found there. The extravag. tradit. a. his age giv. by a gr.s. as if he were 95, when only 48 yrs. from H. C. is in John Adams' Works, II. 441. It is not prob. that Francis was neph. of the disting. Elder, and any remoter relat. is uncert. Indeed that of Francis, and of Joseph, is found. on conject. only, but very prob.

NATHANIEL, Duxbury, s. of Love, liv. not long after reach. manhood, for I see nothing of his serv. exc. with his br. William on two coroner's inq. in Dec. 1673, and he d. bef. Nov. 1676, when by Plymouth Rec. it appears, that admin. on his est. was giv. to Robert Vixon of Eastham; but wh. was R. V. is not seen. Perhaps V. was a creditor, and Nathaniel may have gone to live at E.

WILLIAM, Plymouth, the famous Elder, claim. of liberal Christians everlast. gratitude, as the earliest of disting. Puritan laymen in Eng. came in the Mayflower, 1620, with his w. two younger s. the w. of the eldest, and her s. William. He was b. 1563 (prob. but earlier by some computa.) at Scrooby, in Nottinghampsh. at the manor hall of wh. vill. belong. to the archbp. of York, he afterwards long resid. the same house at wh. Cardinal Wolsey had made his last stop, bef. reach. home in his final journey, on compulsory retirement from court, after banishm. by King Henry VIII. thirty yrs. earlier. His f.

prob. William, was tenant under liberal lease from archbp. Sandys, and the s. was educ. some time at Cambridge Univ. and his f. bec. as sub-tenant of Scrooby manor, the possessor of that very resid. of the Cardinal, and the s. therein worship. God accord. to the simple forms of the chief protestants of Protestantism. After very honora. serv. with Davison, secr. of Queen Eliz. he partook in the fall of that statesman, the conseq. of the Queen's heartless deception and treachery; and abandon. 1587, political life. Devot. hims. for many yrs. to relig. he was the first promin. layman wh. reject. conform. to the ceremon. of the ch. of Eng. He was in the employm. of the crown, however, as post-master bef. Apr. 1594, at Scrooby, above a doz. yrs. after leav. London; there he m. the w. Mary. With his young friend, Bradford, after a doz. yrs. to be made Gov. of New Plymouth, and others, he pass. a. 1607 or 8, into Holland for enjoym. of worship without the many idle forms, on wh. King James had set his heart, and was rul. Elder of the ch. at Leyden of wh. John Robinson was teach. as he had been prob. at Scrooby. His ds. Patience and Fear, came in the Ann, 1623; and on 5 Aug. of next yr. Patience m. Thomas Prence, afterwards the gov. and d. 1634; and Fear m. 1626, Isaac Allerton, as his sec. w. and d. 1633. His w. d. bef. 1627; and Gov. Bradford says the s. Wrestling d. bef. him, never m. He had early rem. to Duxbury, and there, under the same roof with Love, d. 16 Apr. 1643, after one day's illness. His inv. has proof in the titles of the books of honora. regard for letters. See Geneal. Reg. IV. 174. Bradford's Memoir of him is in Young's Chron. of the Pilgr. 461. See, also, Davis's Morton; Hunter's First Colonists of N. E., of wh. the best impres. is in 4 Mass. Hist. Coll. I. 52; and Shurtleff's Recollect. of the Pilgr. in Russell's Guide to Plymouth. It may be useful to mark the error of so valua. an auth. as Baylies, in II. 6, where he gives to our most glorious of the Mayflower's passeng. three ch. Lucretia, Mary, and William, and is even so rash as to say, two of them were b. in America. Yet if b. on our side of the water, he ought to have presum. they could not, from his age, be ch. of the Elder. The first was w. others, ch. of Jonathan. WILLIAM, Duxbury, s. of Jonathan, was prob. b. at Leyden, went in Aug. 1645, under serg. Nash, as part of the forty men to be furnish. by this smallest Col. to repress the peril from the Narragansets, and encourage the friendsh. of Uncas [see Bradford's Hist. 431–6], and serv. in that exped. 17 days, was count. among the freem. in 1643, and prob. went with his f. to New London. *WILLIAM, Duxbury, s. of Love, m. 2 Jan. 1673, Lydia, d. of George Partridge, and d. 3 Nov. 1723. Whether he had ch. is not kn. but he was in good esteem, and was rep. 1675. WRESTLING, Plymouth, youngest s. of the gr. Elder, b. prob. at Leyden, in Holland, came with

his f. in the Mayflower, d. "a young man unm." bef. his f. says Gov. Bradford, but Caulkins, in Hist. of Norwich, 115, refers to an idle tradit. that makes him ancest. of Sir Christopher Brewster of our days. Sir Christopher perhaps may descend from a gr.s. of the Elder, and youngest s. of Love, wh. rec. this name, prob. sev. yrs. after d. of his uncle. In a very agreea. Memoir of the "Life and Time of Elder Brewster," by Rev. Ashbel Steele, Phila. 1857, the author too easi. assum. that this s. of the great Elder was of Portsmouth 1629, and built up his case on three piles of fictitious paper: The first, a forged deed of 6 Dec. 1629 (wh. fell on Sunday), of ld. in Portsmouth, that was not so call. bef. May 1653, but always Strawberry Bank, with prob. false grantor and witnesses, and writ. in language of one hundred and fifty yrs. later use; next, a fabricat. fam. rec. whereby it is shown, that Wrestling B. was m. 1630 to E. S. had s. John, b. 20 Jan. 1631, and daur. 3 May 1636, nam. Love Lucretia!!! and the w. d. in childbed, thirty-eight yrs. after (perhaps the ch. had it liv. would have seem. to require double name, and so been bapt. Mephistophiles Beelzebub); that E. S. the w. is call. d. of Augustine Story, one of the illustrious grantees in the more ambitious forgery of the Wheelwright deed of all New Hampsh. from the Ind. made also on Sunday in an *earlier* mo. of the *same* yr. and little more than eight yrs. after Wrestling came over the Atlantic, with his f.; and the third fountain of evidence is from many, near. all spurious, accounts of business transactions, wh. by patient investigat. are found to be almost wholly fanciful. In his new Ed. Mr. Steele will, no doubt, correct those childish fictions of the last century. WRESTLING, Duxbury, br. of Nathaniel of the same, had, with his br. William, gr. of lds. (in honor of the rever. serv. of their gr.f. dec.) at Swanzey, provid. they went there to liv.; but I presume neither of them accept. the favor, as they cont. at D. By w. Mary he had sev. ch. and d. 1 Jan. 1697. He was constable in 1680, and serv. on jury in 1682 and 4. Ten of this name had been gr. at N. E. coll. in 1834.

NEHGR Oct 1970 CXXIV

THE MOTHER OF ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER OF THE MAYFLOWER

By John G. Hunt, of Arlington, Virginia

Discovery of Elder Brewster's maternal ancestry came about after noting, on the one hand, that, in 1609, while at Leyden, he gave to Thomas Simkinson of Hull, Yorkshire, power to receive money that Anne Peck (Brewster's ward) had left in England[1]; and, on the other hand, finding the record of a chancery proceeding several decades earlier than 1609, linking the surnames of Brewster and Simkinson at Doncaster, Yorkshire (seven miles north of Scrooby, Nottinghamshire, boyhood home of Elder William Brewster).[2]

Led on by this coincidence, a study was made of the will of Thomas Simkinson, alderman of Doncaster, dated 29 Jan. 1558/9, proved 2 May 1560 (York P & E court, vol. 16, f. 46). Therein he left his estate to his daughter Jenet Fenton; should she die without issue, it was to pass to young Thomas Simkinson, who in any event was to get a silver cup, while the lad's sister Dorothy was to have twenty shillings; these two were children of John Simkinson to whom the testator left "my best gown". He also left money to Thomas Smythe, Edward Stere, John Wormeley, John Grene of Barnby, John Parke of Stainforth, John Smythe of Hull, William Trymingham, Alice (widow of Christopher Man), and William Smythe (who was a witness to the will).

In the light of this testament, and the power of attorney cited above, it seemed appropriate to study the wills of persons named John Smythe of Hull; that of John Smythe, alderman of Hull, dated 8 Aug. 1592, proved in October following, was most illuminating.[3] From it and wills of kinfolk, it became plain that Thomas Simkinson and Elder William Brewster were uterine brothers. The wills of other legatees named in the will of Thomas Simkinson, above, proved enlightening.[4] The will of Christopher Man of Scrooby added other data of value.[5]

On the basis of these documents and other facts about the family already known, the pedigree of Brewster of Scrooby shapes up thus:

1. **William Brewster**, taxed in 1524 at Bently cum Arksey[6] (next Doncaster), Yorkshire, seems to have married long before 1558 Maude, sister of Christopher Man of Scrooby.[5] Their sons seemingly were:

2. i. **William** [II], b. ?1535.
ii. **Henry**, b. ?1537, d. ?1600, vicar at Sutton on Lound, co. Notts., 1565-1594; his wife Agnes was buried there 15 March 1597/8. No children are known.[7]

2. **William Brewster** [II], b. ?1535, d. 1590, is likely that William Bruister [!] who in 1558 witnessed the will of his supposed uncle, Christopher Man, at Scrooby, the other witnesses being Mr. Thomas Simkinson and John Simkinson, both of whom were of Doncaster.

in the area of Donegal on the Susquehanna River, Pennsylvania. It would seem that James remained in New England with his wife's people; the other brothers went to Pennsylvania. James apparently took a trip south as the warning indicates.

The first Doak child, Robert, was baptized in Boston by the same Mr. Foxcroft ("The Records of the First Church in Boston, 1630-1868"—Colonial Society of Massachusetts *Publications,* vol. 40 (1961), p. 396).

The records for the Doaks in New Hampshire are scant indeed. Deeds indicate that James and Martha Doak lived in Nottingham, N. H., from 1730 to 1734 but moved back to Londonderry about 1735. Hugh Rankin also was at Nottingham in 1729 and for a few years afterwards. He may have lived with James and Martha.

On 11 Sept. 1755 James Doak, Robert Boyes, and James Cochran all witnessed the will of Allan Anderson. Doak, Cochran and Anderson had married Rankin sisters. Boyes' daughter Jane (or Jannet) and Doak's son James, Jr., eventually married. It should be noted that James Doak, Jr., first appears in the records in 1769, but in 1776 and later no distinction appears, so James, Sr., probably died about 1775-76. He and Martha were both alive in 1758 when they signed a deed, and on 30 March 1768 James Doack witnessed the will of Robert Boyes.

Child, named Sterling:

i. Hugh, b. about 1720-25, perhaps in Boston.

Children named Doak.

ii. Robert, bapt. 14 May 1728 at First Church in Boston by the Rev. Mr. Foxcroft.

iii. John, 2nd son according to Major Samuel Gregg; of Londonderry 1765-67 when sued for an unpaid note (#7836); cordwainer; not in 1790 census.

iv. James Doak, 3rd son (Gregg, *op. cit.*); mar. Jane (or Jannet) Boyes, dau. Robert and Sarah, b. 11 Sept. 1744. They were married by 1768 when Jane Doak protested the accounting of her father's estate. "James Doak and his wife" were heirs. James Doak was at Londonderry in 1790 with one male over 16, three males under 16, and seven females. He was the only Doak in New Hampshire, Vermont, or Maine in the Federal Census of 1790. He signed his will in 1812. Children, all but Sarah and Robert recorded in Londonderry: 1. *Sarah,* b. 1769. 2. *Margaret,* b. 1771. 3. *Martha,* b. 1773. 4. *Fanny,* b. 1775. 5. *Robert,* b. 177–. 6. *Bettey,* b. 1781. 7. *John,* b. 1785. 8. *Nancy,* b. 1788. Gregg, *op. cit.*, calls Margaret "eldest daughter", and includes an Esther whom he calls "3rd daughter".

He was probably that William Brewster who in 1564 was "dwelling in Scrooby" when he was mentioned in the will of Bartholomew Bryan of Scrooby, dated May 6, 1564 (York P & E, 17:389). It is clear that he had at least two wives: the earlier was Mary, daughter of William Smythe of Stainforth, parish of Hatfield, next Doncaster[4], and sister of John Smythe, alderman of Hull.[8] She was the widow of John Simkinson of Doncaster.[9]

William II Brewster by his first wife, Mary, had issue:

3. i. **William** [III], b. about 1565, d. 20 April 1644, named with Thomas Simkinson as an executor in the lengthy will of their uncle, John Smythe of Hull, 1592,[3] in which he mentions practically every one of his nieces and nephews. The fact that no Brewsters figure therein leads one to suppose that Mary had no other children by Brewster; if this is true, she must have died soon after 1566.

Apparently William Brewster [II] had a second or later wife, Prudence (perhaps born Perkins or a widow of that name) who survived him.[10] By her he may have had further issue:

ii. **James**, b. ?1568, d. 1613, who matriculated at Cambridge in 1582[11], succeeded Henry Brewster (?his uncle) as vicar at Sutton on Lound in 1594[7]; he is known to have been brother to William Brewster [III][12]. Details of James' marriage and issue are known.[13]

iii. **Prudence** [? married Robert Peck of Everton, Notts.; they had Robert and Anne, both wards of their supposed uncle William Brewster at Leyden[14]].

? iv. **John**, who in 1595 and 1613 was identified with Myssen, Notts[15].

3. **William Brewster** III, b. about 1565, died in Plymouth, Mass., 20 April 1644, was to become the ruling elder on the Mayflower and at Plymouth in New England. In 1580 he matriculated at Peterhouse College in Cambridge, at which University, in St. John's College, his uncle Francis Smythe, ?1540-?1604, vicar of Crowle, co. Lincoln, had been schooled, and two of his first cousins, Edward Smythe ?1553-1585,[16] Bachelor of Divinity, and John Grene "of Barnby upon Don", ?1555- after 1591, were likewise students.[11] Is it not likely that one or more of these kinfolk had influence in aiding Brewster to get employment in the service of William Davison? The latter was friend of Thomas Cartwright,[17] eminent puritan, also identified prominently with St. John's College, and author of the book Brewster printed at Leyden, a copy of which is now in the headquarters building in Plymouth, Mass.

As to the identity of the wife (or wives) of Elder William Brewster, proof has been wanting; if he had a daughter Elizabeth (perhaps the child buried in Leyden 20 June 1609), the will of Robert Hartley of Austerfield, dated 11 April 1606[18], leaving a small legacy to Elizabeth Brewster, may prove to be clue to her mother's maiden name.

On the other hand, William Dean Howells asserted in 1905 that William Brewster's wife was born and bred in Duke Street, London, although he gave no proof.[19] Duke Street, then styled "the Duke's place", was in the locale where several Mayflower passengers had ties,[20] hence this may be a clue worth investigating.

NOTES AND REFERENCES

1. Walter H. Burgess, *John Robinson, the Pastor of the Pilgrims*, London, 1920, p. 102; cf. THE REGISTER, vol. 111, p. 319-320, Oct. 1957; The American Genealogist, 41: 1-2, Jan. 1965.

2. Gt. Brit. Public Record Office, ref. C 2 Eliz. B 31/1, an undated proceeding addressed to Sir Nicholas Bacon, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal (1558-1579): "Bill of Complaint by William Bruester [!] and Mary his wife, the late wife of John Symkinson late of Doncaster, Yorks. The said John was seized of lands in Doncaster and in his lifetime did convey them to the said Mary then his wife for the term of her life and afterwards he died at Doncaster."

3. York P & E court, 25:1051-1052. John Smythe, alderman of Hull, directed that he be buried in Trinity Church "next where Jane my late wife was buried." The principal legacy was a bond for £300 made by the testator's deceased son Mr. Edward Smythe, at the time the latter was assigned the testator's lands, which were to be delivered to said Edward's daughter, Frances, when she should marry or arrive at the age of 18 years (cf. note 16, below). The testator left his wife Anne £120, and other legacies to his son John Trimingham, naming also "the four children of my late nephew, William Smythe of Stanforth, deceased; the goods late belonging to my brother Thomas Smythe . . . John Parke, late of Stanforth deceased, and Agnes his wife, my sister . . . my cozen Thomas Drax of Stanforth . . . my cozen Master Francis Cresay of Hewell . . . my neece Jennet Drax and her children . . . my neece Alice Bladworth of Thorne . . . my neece Mary Brodryke . . . to Thomas Levens of Stanforth and Dorothy his sister . . . my sister Saile of Smeaton . . . to Dorothy of Scrobie my neece . . . to my brother Sr. Francis Smythe who saith he hath an obligation of myne . . . let him render into the hands of the executors of this my will the said bond and desiring of God he maie become obedyant to the lorde's words . . . and to obey her Majesty's views, then I will that my said brother have five marks toward the releving of him . . . to my cozen Francis Steare x s. . . . to Xopher Durembroke, who now dwells in Holland five pounds to be allowed to him upon the clearing of his accompte and debts which he is owing unto me . . . the balance [uncollected debts] I leave to John Grene, John Smythe, William Brewster and Thomas Simkinson, my nephews, whom I doe make, constitute and ordeyn my full executors."

In a codicil, the testator named Richard Knowls (whose daughter his son, Edward Smythe, had married).

4. Will of William Smythe, elder, of Stanforth in parish of Hatfield, dated 25 Jan. 1558/9 and proved 2 May 1560 (York P & E court, 16:46): He requested burial in the church of our Lady of Hatfield, and left legacies for the poor of Hatfield, Woodhouse, Stainforth, Thorne, Fishlake, Sykehouse, Barnby, Bramwith, Armthorp, Kirk Sandal and Stristhorp. Naming two servants, he provided that "Cecilie Hunsworth have x s. and the use of the house she lives in so long as she lives, and to have of my son Thomas when he shall forten to come thither every bakyn & brewinge as she hath had affore . . . to my son Francis Smythe vicar of Crowle [various furniture and] 17 pounds, a cowe, a calfe and a meare . . . to my sons Thomas and Richard [various property and some money] . . . to my son John Smythe of Hull . . . my brother in lawe Symkinson . . . to every one of the children of my sons and daughters a yew and a lamb . . . the rest of my goods not bequest, I geve to John Grene and Jenet his wife; John Parke and Agnes his wife; John Symkinson and Marie his wife; and Thomas Saile and Margaret his wife whom I make executors." Note: in addition to the four sons and four daughters before listed, there seems to have been a son, Cuthbert Smythe of Fishlake. whose will was proved 2 Oct. 1551 (York P & E court, 13:767): because he named only two brothers, Francis and Richard, two sisters Marie and Margaret, and left lands at Hatfield and Stanforth, it is believed that Cuthbert may have been a brother of the full blood of the said brothers and sisters, which could indicate that Thomas, John, Janet and Agnes were older children, and indicated that their father, William, the testator of 1559, had two wives, and issue by each.[21] John Grene made his will in 1559 (proved 1562, York P & E, 17:138); his widow Jenet took for her final spouse Nicolas Cressy; her will (York P & E, 19:840), dated 27

Sept. 1575, proved 6 Oct. following, refers to her son John Grene, and leaves several legacies, including an ewe to Dorothy Simkinson, her niece. John Parke's will, proved 7 June 1582 (York P & E, 22:268), names wife Agnes, and several daughters. Thomas Smythe of Stainforth made his will 24 March 1568 (proved 22 July 1569, York P & E, 18:157), naming brothers John, Richard and Francis Smythe, and sons William and John. The last named William of Stainforth, made his will in 1591, proved the same year (York P & E, 24:738), naming sons John and Robert, and daughters Dorothy and Elizabeth; this Elizabeth died in 1617, testate, of Stainforth (York P & E, 34:598). Wm. Parke of Staynforth in his will, July 24, 1551, proved 1551 (York P & E 13:768), named brother John Parke, brother in law Thomas Smythe, sister Chapman . . . "my father & mother . . . Wm. Smythe my father in lawe . . . supervisors, Sir Francis Hastings, Kt., my master; Wm. Smythe, John Parke, and Francis Parke my son . . . to my wife Johane, lands in Whaith, late of Thomas Recard." The said Sir Francis Hastings ["Haistings"] made his will Oct. 22, 1558, proved in 1566 (York P & E 17:523); among his executors was John P'ke (i.e. Parke), and a witness to this will was Thomas Smythe, yeoman, seemingly Parke's brother-in-law. From the foregoing, one might suppose that Wm. Smythe, sr., of Stainforth, had taken for his second wife before 1551 the mother of John and William Parke, aforesaid, and that she may have arranged the marriage of her stepson Thomas Smythe to her daughter by her first husband, Parke; also that her son John Parke married her step-daughter, Agnes Smythe. Was this supposed second wife of Wm. Smythe some connection of Sir Francis Hastings? The appointment of her supposed son as an executor in his (Sir Francis') will, in company with Francis Frobysher and Martin Anne, was rather important; Frobysher was married to Christian, sister of the said Sir Francis; Martin Anne, Esq., was nephew of Alice Anne who was wife of Thomas Grene, brother of John Grene who married the aforesaid Wm. Smythe's eldest daughter, Jennet.

The Hastings had long held important holdings in Hatfield & Doncaster (*cf.* Joseph Foster's edition of Robert Glover's *Visitation of Yorkshire* in 1584/5 and 1612, p. 372-3; Surtees Society Publications, vol. 45, p. 273-278 incl., and the aforesaid will of Sir Francis, in which he left money to the parish of Hatfield).

5. Will of Christopher Man, dated 11 Oct. 1558, proved 13 Jan. following (York P & E court, vol. 15, pt. 3, fo. 186): "my bodie to be buried within the church or churchyard of St. James in Scrowbie . . . to my daughter Christian ioys [?wys] 3/6/8 . . . to Wm. Watson xl s . . . to Isabel my sister 6/8 . . . to Annis my sister 6/8 . . . to my sister Maud Bruister 6/8 . . . to my brother Wm. Man 6/8 . . . Alice my wife . . . Avery and John and John [!] my children." Witnesses: Mr. Thomas Simkinson, William Bruister [!] and John Simkinson.

6. Charles Edward Banks, *The English Ancestry and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers* (N. Y., 1929), p. 35-39.

7. *Nottinghamshire Parish Registers*, vol. 21, Marriages at "Sutton on Lound," p. 11, 12. See also, will of Richard Ellis, made there in March 1586 (York P & E, 23:227), which was witnessed by Henry Brewster, clerk, and James Brewster, clerk, presumedly his nephew and his successor as vicar.

8. Thomas Gent, *History of Kingston upon Hull* (Hull, 1869) p. 121-125, showed that John Smythe was mayor of Hull in 1563, 1572, and 1583. *Yorkshire Archaeological Journal*, 14:199, 202, reports the burial at Hull of Thomas Simkinson and his relict Ann, in 1611 and 1634, respectively, she having been that Ann Wilkinson of Donnington in Lincolnshire who married him at Lincoln 12 Oct. 1598 (*Lincoln Marriages*; cf. *Mayflower Quarterly*, vol. 36, p. 55-57).

9. Her first husband, John Simkinson of Doncaster (see note 2, above), was buried there 25 Dec. 1562, as shown in the parish register. By him, Mary was mother of Thomas Simkinson, ?1555-1611, merchant of Hull (see note 8, above), and of Dorothy Simkinson, b. ?1557 — d. after 1591, doubtless that "Dorothy of Scrowbie" styled niece in the will of John Smythe of Hull, 1592 (see note 3 above).

10. *The American Genealogist,* 41:1-5, 63, Jan. 1965; cf. The Register, vol. 111, p. 319-320, Oct. 1957.

11. John Venn and J. A. Venn, *Alumni Cantabrigienses*, part I, under the names: Brewster, William; Brewster, James; Grene, John; Smith, Francis; Smith, Edward.

12. *The American Genealogist,* 41:3-4, Jan. 1965.

13. The Rev. Joseph Hunter, *Collections concerning . . . the founders of New Plymouth . . .* (London, 1854), p. 203-205; *cf.* Wm. Peck, *History of Bawtry and Thorne* (1813), p. 19-32.

14. The Register, vol. 111, p. 319-320, Oct. 1957.

15. *York Fines,* IV, p. 31 (Yorkshire Archaeological Society, Record series VIII); will of Simon Fowe of Myssen, Notts., dated 1613 (York P & E wills, 30:121).

16. Will of Edward Smythe, bachelor of Divinity, of Cambridge, 20 March 1584, bequeathed to wife Frances his property in Kingston upon Hull . . . witnesses: Harry Rands, John Green, and Richard Worcester (P.C.C. 53 Brudenell). The probate sentence names "Richard Knowles de Coldashby in co. Northampton", who was probably that Richard who left a will dated 2 Jan. 1601/2, proved at Northampton, wherein the only legacy was to a grandson Richard who was to be in ward to testator's son-in-law Francis Belgrave. The arms of this Knowles are the same as those of the great Sir Francis Knollys (c. 1514-1596) except for a canton in the shield. This might have indicated that they were cousins; if so, the Smythe-Knowles marriage might have brought Brewster's cousin into the circle of kinship of the important Knollys who in 1584 was vehemently supporting Thomas Cartwright's stand against the bishops' ambition and covetousness; see *Dictionary of National Biography* under Knollys, Sir Francis. As Cartwright was a friend of Davison, this might have had a part in the employment of Brewster by Davison. *Cf.* Charles H. Cooper, *Anthenae Cantabrigienses* (1861), 2:148.

17. A. F. Scott Pearson, *Thomas Cartwright and Elizabethan Puritanism, 1535-1603* (Cambridge University Press, 1925), p. 210, 211, 436-438.

18. York P & E Court, 30:177.

19. William Dean Howells, *London Films* (London, 1905), p. 189-191.

20. Charles Edward Banks, *op. cit.*, p. 11-16, especially p. 12 and the map facing it.

21. In Joseph Hunter's *South Yorkshire. The History and Topography of the Deanery of Doncaster* (London, 1828-1831), vol. 1, p. 150, there is an account of a perambulation of the Level of Hatfield Chase made by 25 "regarders of the chase." Among these were William Smith and John Parke whose names appear consecutively. On page 190 of the same volume Abraham de la Pryme (1672-1704) is said to have recorded, among other inscriptions, the following as found in Hatfield Church: *Orate pro animabus Willielmi Smith et Catherinae et Agnetis uxorum ejus.* One of these (? Agnes) would seem to have been a Simkinson, judging from the wills abstracted above.

ADDENDUM

THE GRENE FAMILY OF BARNBY-UPON-DON, YORKSHIRE

The mention of members of the Grene family in the wills cited above and their association with the Brewsters through the Smythes and Simkinsons suggests a hypothesis, namely that the Grene family of Barnby-upon-Don, Yorkshire, may have been the progenitors of that John Green who settled in Charlestown, Massachusetts, in 1632 whose first wife was the daughter of the Rev. Francis Johnson (James Savage, *Genealogical Dictionary*, vol. 2, p. 301-302; Thomas Bellows Wyman, *The Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown* (1879), vol. 1, p. 435). The Rev. Mr. Johnson was at one time in Amsterdam and probably knew Elder William Brewster there. If this proves to be the case the following are pertinent.

This family, of which I find no trace after 1592, was earlier of consequence. In the will of Katherine Anne of Hoten Pannell, made in November 1532 (see *Publications*, Surtees Society, vol. 106, p. 9, 10) she names, among others, her daughters Alice Grene and Elizabeth Otes; sons-in-law Thomas Grene and Brian Otes; William Grene and Katherine Grene (seemingly grandchildren of the testatrix). By 1538 the aforesaid Elizabeth Otes had taken a second spouse, Richard Kippax, and had married thirdly, Thomas Tattersall of Wakefield (Gt. Brit. Public Record Office, *Lists & Indexes,* 50:291); was she the mother of Brian Ottes of Thorpe, par. Whitkirke, whose will in 1562 left John Bayrstow of Halifax "a fatt sow" trusting him to be friend to the testator's children (York P & E wills 17:258)? Note that one Thomas Grene, Esq., was the escheator in an inquisition taken at Pontefract in July 1527—see William Brown, ed., *Yorkshire Deeds,* vol. 2, p. 108 (Yorkshire Archaeological Society, Record series, vol. 50, 1914).

Thomas Grene's wife Alice and her nephew, Martin Anne, of Frickley, Esq., are named in the Anne pedigree given in *Visitations of the North,* part 2, p. 123 (*Publications,* Surtees Society vol. 133).

In his will, dated Aug. 3, 1550, proved April 16, 1551 (York P & E, 13:728), Thomas Grene of Barnby-upon-Don left "to brother John Grene one ringe of gold which I had of the gifte of my brother Anne whose soule God pardon . . . to Alice my wife . . . to William my son . . . ."

William Grene in his will, made Sept. 28, 1556, proved Feb. 17 following (York P & E, 15:159), asked that he be buried in the church of Barnby-upon-Don "nigh to the sepulture of my father . . . to Marie my wife . . . a horse I bought of the baily of Wilton . . . to Thomas my son all my harness & habilment made for the warre . . . to Wm. Grene my son . . . to my godson John Grene . . . my sister Browne . . . to Bridget Whittington . . . to Robert Newsome . . . to John Robinson one foale . . . to Richard Pecke my brother in law . . . my brother Palmer . . . my brother Fulthorpe . . . to Leonard Rayner, 2 acres of land for his life . . . Sir Francis Hastings, my uncle John Grene, and John Peke and my cosin Martin Anne shall receive the profitts of [certain messuages] for 7 years after my death for the preferment in marriage of my daughters (to have each one hundred marks) . . . lands in Wilton & Snaith . . . my children's uncle, William Hothom" [For the last named see Philip Saltmarshe, *History . . . of the Hothams . . .* (York, 1914), p. 97].

The will of the uncle, John Grene, gent., of Barnby-upon-Don, dated Sept. 26, 1559, proved Dec. 21, 1562 (York P & E 17:138) leaves: "to John Grene my son my signet ring . . . to Johane Pke my drinking cup . . . to Anne my daughter ten marks to her marriage . . . to Thomas Grene my godson my gowne . . . to Thomas Browne my godson one quye . . . to my brother in law Thomas Smythe my damask jacket . . . to John Parke my brother in law my sattin jerkyn . . . to my sister in law wife to John Pke one ringe . . . to my sister in law wife to John Symkinson one gold ring which I weare of my little finger . . . to the same John Symkinson my velvet jerkyn . . . to my brother in law Thomas Saile my best cloak and to my sister in law the wife of Thomas Saile my [?diamond] ringe of gold . . . to John Robinson my svt. and Jenet his wife 2 stotts . . . to John Burges my best jacket, my fustian dublet, and paire of hoise and my boots . . . to Bridget Whittington 2 ew sheepe . . . to Adam Whittingham my bay horse . . . to Marie Nevill my gowne lined with damask to make her a gowne of . . . to every child of my nevew Wm. Grene one ewe shepe . . . to every child of Jenet Wayte, Agnes Nodell and Thomas Gunbye a ewe lamb . . . to Thomas Gunbye and his wife, Thomas Nevill & his wife, and Agnes Nodell, all the money they owe me . . . to Jenet Shilleto my clothe gowne lined with lam . . . to Bridget Whittington my russet gowne . . . residue to Jenet my wife, John Grene my son . . . my dec'd brother Thomas Green's tenements [listed] and lands in Hatfield & Staynforth of the demise & graunt of Wm. Grene for term of years . . . in trust for the children of Wm. Grene. . . ."

THE DESCENDANTS OF THOMAS FRACKER, SHIPBUILDER OF BOSTON

By Stanley Black Fracker, of Washington, D. C.

[Continued from page 198]

16. **Edward Giles**[4] **Fracker** (*William*[3], *Thomas*[2], *Thomas*[1]) was born at Chelsea, Mass., 8 Dec. 1832, and died at or near Boston 9 March 1921.

He was married 6 Nov. 1855 to **Christina E. Krader**. Edward was a woodcarver from 1860 to 1894, living at Chelsea, later at Allston, Mass.

Children:

i. **Eleanor Marie**[5] (**Nellie**), b. 18 Jan. 1860; d. about 1925; mar. 21 June 1882 **Lewis A. Kendall**, d. 16 Dec. 1900. She lived at Allston with her parents after the death of her husband. When they died she removed to Duxbury, Mass. No issue. Nellie had a wide acquaintance in the Fracker family and was very popular.

28. ii. **Charles Edward**, b. 1 Sept. 1862.

17. **James Albert**[4] **Fracker** (*William*[3], *Thomas*[2], *Thomas*[1]) was born at or near Boston 5 Dec. 1838, and died at Manchester, N. H., 16 Feb. 1912.

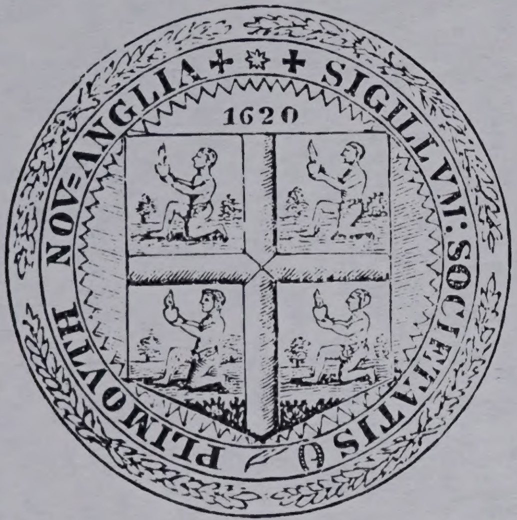
He married first, 30 Jan. 1861 **Mary Elizabeth Ward**, and secondly 13 Feb. 1895 **Mrs. Sarah Elizabeth Robie**, who survived him and in 1919 moved to Spokane, Wash.

James was a woodcarver in Chelsea during the 1860's, but moved in 1869 to Manchester where he became a stenographic clerk in the counting room of the Amoskeag Manufacturing Company; later a private secretary to officers of the company.

Children, all of first marriage:

Billington Sea is a lake of about six miles in circumference, about two miles south-west of the village, and from it issues the town brook. It was discovered by Francis Billington, about the first of January, 1621, while mounted on a tree standing on a hill. It was in the midst of a thick forest, and when seen at a distance Billington supposed it to be another sea. In this pond there are two small islands; the largest, containing about two acres, has been planted with apple trees. The pond is stocked with pickerel and perch, and the eagle is frequently seen cowering over it, having its nest in the vicinity. The fallow deer occasionally visits this pond for drink, and to browse on its margin. For many years this place was a favorite resort for social parties.

In the south part of the town of Plymouth, bordering on Sandwich and Wareham, there is a tract of country, nearly twenty miles square, chiefly covered with wood. This place has always been well stocked with deer, but they are annually thinned off by hunters. In January, 1831, a heavy snow, laying about three feet deep, so impeded their motions as to prove fatal to a large proportion of the stock. The hunters provided themselves with snow-shoes, pursued the deer, and killed and captured two hundred, of which about forty were taken alive. There are on the road to Sandwich, in the woods, two rocks, called *Sacrifice Rocks*, which are covered with sticks and stones, which have been accumulating for centuries. It was the constant practice for the Indians, when passing by, to throw on the rock a stick or stone. The Rev. Mr. Hawley, who spent many years among the natives at Marshpee, endeavored to learn from them this singular rite, but could only conjecture that it was an acknowledgment of an invisible Being, the unknown God whom they worshipped, this pile being their altar.



The annexed is a reduced copy of the Old Colony seal, taken from the book of laws, published in 1685. Underneath are fac similes of the hand-writing of distinguished persons in the colony.

William Bradford Willm Brewster

ed a fort 150 feet square, str
the whole circuit of this fort
view presented from this emi
the country. Beyond the poi
great bay of Massachusetts o
southern extremity by the pen
appears the village of Duxbu
once the property and reside
commander of the Plymouth
from its being used as the bury
matter of some surprise that six
a grave-stone was erected to the
It is probably owing to their p
siderable number of the oldes
oldest monument in the yard
merchant, whose name is oft
inscription is, " Here lies the
about fifty-two years, and d
1681." The following are als
on Burying Hill.

Here lyes y^{e} body of y^{e} Honorable W
1703–4, aged 79 years.

He lived long, but wa
And in his country's
After a life well spent
His very name and m

Here lyeth buried y^{e} body of that pre
who, after he had served his generation
the church of Plymouth, for many yea
Jesus, December y^{e} 10th, 1691, and in

PLY

This town is situated in th
was originally the north-weste
corporated as a town in 1707.

Sir Edwin Sandys interceded for the Pilgrims with Sir Robert Naunton, secretary of state to James I, seeking permission for them "to enjoy their liberty of conscience under his gracious protection in America."

Edward Winslow explains the first glint of interest on the part of the king in their cause:

> This his Majesty said was a good and honest motion, and asking what profits might arise in the part we intended (for our eye was upon the most northern parts of Virginia,) 'twas answered, "Fishing." To which he replied with his ordinary asseveration, "So God have my soul, 'tis an honest trade; 'twas the Apostles' own calling," &c. But afterwards he told Sir Robert Naunton (who took all occasions to further it) that we should confer with the bishops of Canterbury and London, etc. Whereupon we were advised to persist upon his first approbation, and not to entangle ourselves with them; which caused our agents to repair to the Virginia Company, who in their court demanded our ends in going; which being related, they said the thing was of God, and granted a large patent, and one of them lent us £300 gratis for three years, which was repaid.[8]

Brewster's familiarity with the court and officials in the offices of the secretary of state proved valuable in establishing this friendly contact with Sir Robert Naunton.

Some six weeks later the Virginia Company acted favorably on a motion to grant a patent of land to the Pilgrims in the extreme north of the company's territory. This patent was issued to John Wincomb, a Puritan minister in the service of the Countess of Lincoln, and not to the Pilgrims direct. The following February the patent was superseded by a new one issued to John Peirce, a London clothier, an associate of Thomas Weston. The text of this patent has been lost, but it no doubt was more liberal than the Wincomb patent and replaced it as the basic grant to the Pilgrims. On June 1, 1621 a second Peirce patent was issued by the council for New England.

The Virginia Company was divided at this time. King James refused to permit the company to reelect Sandys as treasurer since he was the leader of the opposition in Parliament. It was suggested that the Pilgrims wait until a proper New England Company be formed and sail under their auspices. The Pilgrims were confused, as was their agent, Robert Cushman.

Other difficulties arose with Weston, who altered the conditions that had been agreed on in Leyden. Deacon Cushman had consented, apparently in desperation, to these changes,

> seeing else that all was like to be dashed and the opportunity lost, and that they which had put off their estates and paid in their moneys were in hazard to be undone. They presumed to conclude with the merchants on those terms, in some things contrary to their order and commission and without giving

Cushman / Brewster

> them to go on and not to meddle with the Dutch or too much depend on the Virginia Company; he and such merchants as were his friends, together with their own means, would get them forth; and they should make ready and neither fear want of shipping nor money; for what they wanted should be provided.[5]

To this end "they were to draw such articles of agreement." Carver and Cushman

> were to receive the moneys and make provision both for shipping and other things for the voyage. . . . So those that were to go prepared themselves with all speed and sold off their estates and (such as were able) put in their moneys into the common crock, which was disposed by those appointed, for the making of general provisions.

William Bradford, indispensable recorder of these events, sold his home in 1619. So once again there was a confusion of sales and auctions carried out in the spirit of sacrifice for a dream of better days that they hoped might lie ahead.[6]

Robert Cushman wrote from London, May 8, 1619 to Master Robinson and the Leyden congregation: "The main hindrance of our proceedings in the Virginia business is the dissensions and factions (as they term in) amongst the Council and Company of Virginia, which are such, as that ever since we came up no business could by them be dispatched."

He explained how Sir Edwin Sandys had been elected as the new treasurer, but a certain faction had divided the company directors. He went on to relate the tragic report of Elder Blackwell and his Amsterdam company, who encountered storm, disease, and almost total extermination on their crossing to Virginia. Then, thinking of his Leyden friends who were preparing for a similar voyage: "Heavy news it is, and I would be glad to hear how far it will discourage. I see none here discouraged much, but rather desire to learn to beware of other men's harms and so amend that wherein they have failed." His letter concluded:

> Mr. B. [Elder Brewster who was then hiding in England from the police of James I] is not well at this time, whether he will come back to you or go into the north, I yet know not. For myself, I hope to see an end of this business ere I come, though I am sorry to be thus from you. If things had gone roundly forward, I should have been with you within these fourteen days. I pray God direct us and give us that spirit which is fitting for such a business. Thus having summarily pointed at things which Mr. Brewster, I think, hath more largely writ of to Mr. Robinson, I leave you to the Lord's protection.
>
> London, May 8 — Yours in all readiness, etc.
> Anno 1619 — Robert Cushman[7]

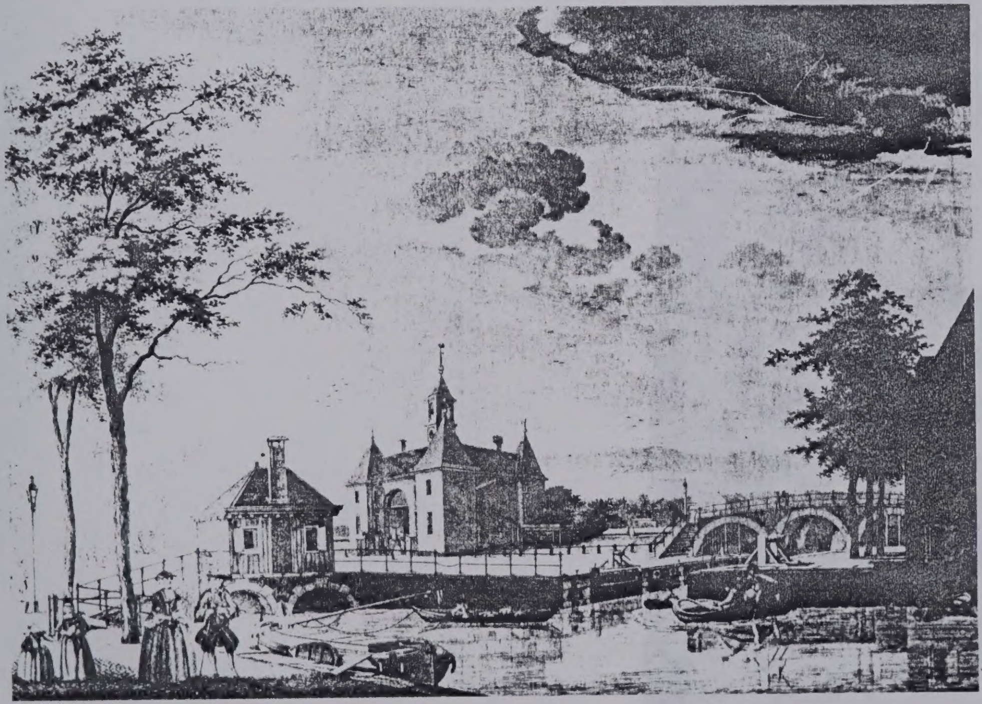
ble and an authority on Aristotle, developed into a close friend of Robinson. Anthony Thysius taught poetry and eloquence and edited the Greek and Latin classics.

The Cambridge historian Mullinger called Leyden "the most famous Protestant seat of learning in the seventeenth century." The university drew students from all parts of the Low Countries and also from England, France, Germany, Hungary, Poland, and Russia. The streets were enlivened by the colorful presence of these young people. Robinson felt at home with the cosmopolitan outlook.[10]

A college of theology had been established in 1592 to train competent leaders for the Dutch Church. The head of this school, which was closely related to the university, Peter Bertius, had studied in England. The Walloon Church had also opened a college for French students in May 1606. These centers of learning provided Leyden with an influential corps of intellectual leadership and a company of well-educated ministers and laymen.

The school of Dutch painters, who were to portray ordinary people, their houses, farms, food, and pleasures, presenting the solid qualities of Dutch life, was coming into being. The artist Esaias van de Velde was working in Leyden. Adrien van der

View of the port of Leyden (eighteenth century)



in a foreign land, struggling to be at home in the language and to acquire some knowledge of the crafts.

They put their hands to "such trade & improvements as best they could." That they were willing to tackle almost any honorable job is evidenced by the list of their occupations: baai-worker, saai-worker, wool-comber, wool-carder, stocking-weaver, twine-spinner, hat-maker, block-maker, cabinet maker, tailor, tobacco-pipe maker, brewer, baker, mason, and carpenter. Due to their dependable qualities "they came to raise a competent & comfortable living, but with hard and continual labor," and with sore "conflicts and misgivings in some." A few became shopkeepers and merchants.[8]

William Brewster taught English to the continental students at the university. His knowledge of Latin was an aid in tutoring the German, Danish, Belgian, French, and Dutch pupils. He developed an English grammar "to learn it by, after the Latin manner" and "many gentlemen, both Danes and Germans, resorted to him, some of them being great men's sons." So it was noted that "his outward condition was mended, and he lived well and plentifully." He soon established the Pilgrim Press, encouraged by Robinson and others who were eager to publish books that were forbidden in England and were needed to carry on reform there. Young Edward Winslow served as his editor and Robinson his advisor in the perilous enterprise.

Robinson visited the halls and library of the university, which had been founded at the request of the citizens in one of the gloomiest periods of Dutch history, during the war with Spain. As a reward for their courage they were offered freedom from taxation or a university. They chose "to erect a free public school and university." It was endowed with substantial revenue, derived in large measure from the old abbey at Edmont and "was provided with a number of professors, selected for their genius, learning and piety, from among the most distinguished scholars." The new institution was consecrated in 1575.[9]

The Cambridge professor was impressed by the conclave of minds assembled at the university. Lambert Danaeus and Francis Junius had held the chair of theology, Justus Lipsius the chair of history, and John Drusius, sought after by both Cambridge and Oxford, oriental studies. Philip Marnix St. Aldegond had been famous as a diplomat and a writer on religion; Scaliger had served as professor of belles-lettres. Peter Molinaeus taught natural philosophy; Francis Gomar, the Calvinist, and Jacob Arminius, the liberal, had expounded theology. Arminius died some three months before Robinson's arrival; Simon Episcopius took his post.

Erpenius was the orientalist; Cluverius, who spoke ten languages, the geographer; Gerhard Johannes Vossius lectured in belles-lettres and chronology; Peter Paauw was the founder of the university botanical gardens; Daniel Heinsius was an editor and translator; Cornelius de Groot, father of Hugo Grotius, was the outstanding scholar of law. Festus Hommius was a regent and pastor in Leyden. Anthony Walaeus, Flemish translator of the Bi-

(pages 96-97)
View of Leyden (seventeenth century)

journ is important in the development of the Pilgrim le and Brewster spent time over their books (because bot good libraries) and in discussion of Cambridge ties, reli politics. They must have strolled through the hamlet of homes and barns with their tile roofs and prosperous along the sleepy Ryton to the old Monks Mill, which ha the village for over 700 years. Ducks and geese hau marshes about the placid stream. Cuckoos called fro along the lanes and sleek cattle grazed in the pasture lan

The association of these two minds was of prime imp the Pilgrim story. Brewster stood out in this era of fanati man of sound judgment and common sense. As the l of the Scrooby-Leyden-Plimoth enterprise he complemer inson and helped implement his ideas.

Two groups soon developed: one in Gainsborough ar Scrooby. It was more convenient for those in the Scroob meet there in the manor house of William Brewster. It cult to conceal their journeying back and forth from who checked their movements. Bradford records:

> These people became two distinct bodies or churche regard to distance of place did congregate severally; were of sundry towns and villages, some in Notting some in Lincolnshire, and some of Yorkshire where th nearest together.[9]

Robinson, Brewster, Clyfton, and their associates end secution for a time and then decided as the "Lord's fre that they possessed a God-given right to withdraw Church of England and form their own congregation.

It has not been determined exactly at what point th oped the famous covenant. It was probably at Scrooby ir Bradford recalls:

> So many, therefore, of these professors as saw the evi in these parts, and whose hearts the Lord had touc heavenly zeal for His truth, they shook off this yok christian bondage, and as the Lord's free people joir selves (by a covenant of the Lord) into a church esta fellowship of the gospel, to walk in all His ways mac or to be made known unto them, according to their deavors, whatsoever it should cost them, the Lord them. And that it cost them something this ensuing h declare.[10]

So in secrecy in 1606 the Scrooby church was forn consenting to the covenant, the members chose Richar as minister, John Robinson as teacher, and William Br elder.

Providence brought another kindred spirit, young Bradford of Austerfield, who by mind, character, and

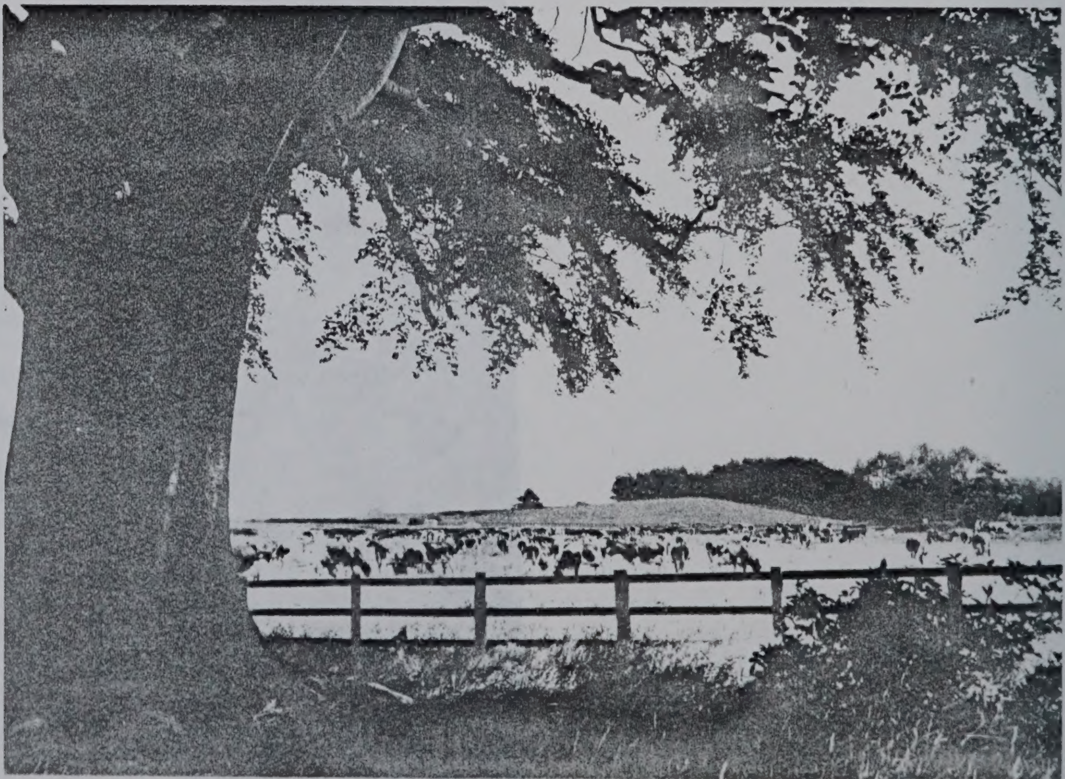
Saints Church was built there in 1290. Richard Clyfton, a graduate of Christ's College, Cambridge, was appointed minister in 1586. William Brewster on his home visits from the queen's court had heard Clyfton preach. He liked his ideas and often journeyed the seven miles from Scrooby to hear him on Sundays, taking with him others who were dissatisfied with the state of the national church.

Clyfton was soon in trouble because of his Separatist teachings. Reprimanded by his bishop, he was at length deprived of his living in 1605. He then moved to Scrooby at the invitation of his friend Brewster. He and Robinson had met at some of the secret gatherings at Gainsborough and Scrooby and may have visited together in the Old Rectory at Babworth.[8]

Brewster also welcomed John Robinson after he was deprived of his post in Norwich, and no doubt took the lead in securing him a salary from friends in the area. Without this financial support Robinson might have been forced to continue in some Church of England post until he entangled further with the bishops and was shipped away to prison.

One may be reasonably sure that John and Bridget and their children lived in Brewster's compound for a year or so. This so-

Sturton le Steeple countryside



> and provoking and encouraging of others, but by procuring of good preach[illegible] to all places thereabouts, and drawing on of others to as[illegible] and help forward in such a work; he himself most commonly deepest in the charge, and some times above his ability.[6]

The secret groups "ordinarily met at his (Brewster's) house on ye Lord's Day, . . . and with great love he entertained them when they came, making provision for them to his great charge."[7]

In addition to Scrooby and Gainsborough, a third neighboring village, Babworth, played a role in developing the Pilgrim Church. Babworth lies in Nottinghamshire midway between the Idle and the Ryton, the rivers that form part of the Valley of the Trent. All

St. Wilfrid's Church, Scrooby (rebuilt in 1380)

ted William Brewster's father as his steward and bailiff r at Scrooby in 1576[illegible]lliam, Junior, had met Sir Edwin ;, one of the six son[illegible] the archbishop, while he was in 1. Sir Edwin had traveled widely in Europe where he wrote k *Europae Speculum*, reporting on the state of religion and astical affairs. His views on religious tolerance were ahead time. (John Robinson owned a copy of this book which iis own signature on the title page, and it may be seen in Hall, Plymouth.) In his treatise Sir Edwin stated that he n every country men who believed in and hoped for the ig of controversy and the increase of unity among Chris- Sandys was later to prove a friend to the Pilgrims. As a r of Parliament and a promoter of the Virginia Company ed them plan their crossing to America.

oby was a quiet village on the Great North Road about y between London and Scotland on the Ryton near the here it joins the gentle Idle. These pokey streams flow in- Humber watershed that drains the moors of East Anglia.

ddition to a small cluster of houses, there was a parish St. Wilfrid's, "well builded" of stone and a great "tym- nor house set on the Ryton and surrounded by a moat. *day Book* recorded in 1086 that it was a manor of some oms, a chapel with a great hall where the Archbishop of eld court. In Brewster's time there was the manor house, pel, bake house, brewhouse, the gallery, the house that t the east end of the orchard, and other buildings in the urt, the house at the east of the great court, which had e archbishop's office, along with the barns and stables.

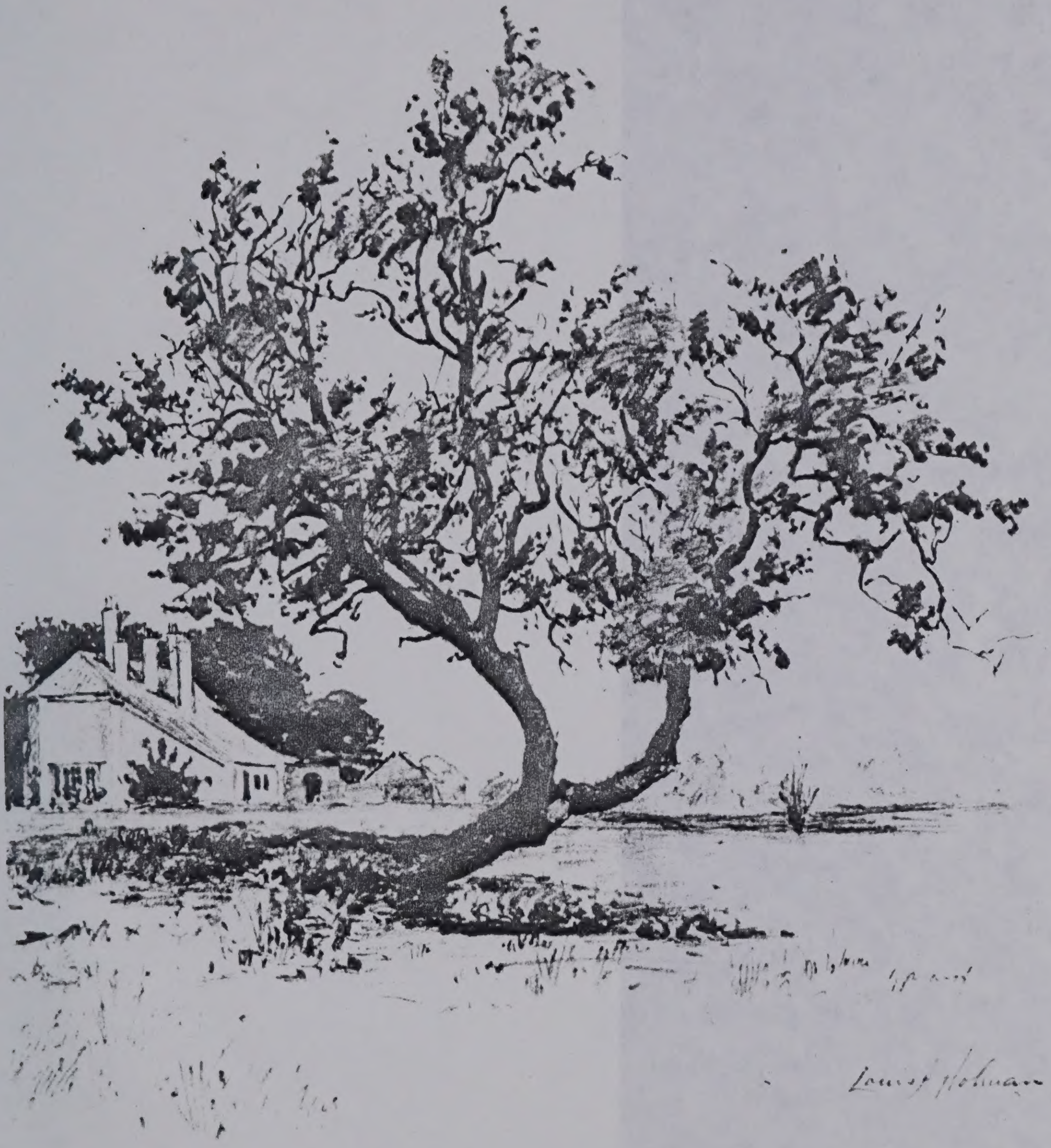
m Brewster was the genial host at Scrooby Manor, the squire who was manager of the estate, bailiff, postmaster, gistrate. He was respected for his university training, dge of the world, ample income, and friendly nature. He d bed, food, and drink for travelers, and feed and shelter r animals. As postmaster he was required to keep ready ant use three "good and sufficient horses" with "furni- and belonging," such as saddles, bridles, dispatch bags, ee horns "to blow by the way." Wayfarers usually arrived vith pistol, sword, or dagger for defense against highway-

y guests enjoyed the welcome of Scrooby Manor—oak logs in its huge fireplaces, a mug of hot toddy or buttered ale r their roast beef and Yorkshire pudding. Fynes Moryson 1617:

> e is no place in the world where passengers may so freely nand as in the English inns, and are attended for them- s and their horses as well as if they were at home, and aps better, each servant being ready at call in hope of a reward in the morning.[5]

ford wrote of Brewster:

> ved . . . in good esteem among his friends, and the good emen of those parts especially the godly and religious. He nuch good in the country where he lived, in promoting and ering religion; and not only by his practice and example,


Louis A Holman

ament, did not sacrilegiously pull down the ancient half- bered body with its oa[illegible]ofed banqueting hall.[1]

n Smyth was an alumnus of Christ's College, Cambridge, ad been chosen preacher of the city of Lincoln in 1600. He eposed in 1602 "for having approved himself a factious man city by personal preachings and that untruly against divers f good place."[2] He was in Gainsborough in a state of doubt sted nine months. Here, under threats and illness, he be- a Separatist and the leader of the Gainsborough indepen- fellowship. He was "a man of able gifts and a good ler," William Bradford records.

inson met with Smyth and the Gainsborough company, dis- g what they believed and what they should do. The little welcomed the Cambridge scholar to their secret gatherings, to hear the story of his encounter with the bishops and re- rom the outside world. In this company of friends probably Thomas Helwys, John Murton, Hugh and Ann Bromhead, atherly" Richard Clyfton, Richard Jackson and Robert ster from Scrooby, Francis Jessop of Worksop with his wife, s, youngest sister of Bridget Robinson, William Brewster of by, and possibly young William Bradford from Austerfield.

inson also met with a similar small group in Scrooby, ed there around William Brewster, who was about ten his elder. They were both Cambridge men and they struck deep and enduring friendship. They shared a passion for al freedom and a broad religious outlook.

am Brewster, born about 1566, spent his boyhood in com- d plenty on the vast acres of Scrooby Manor, which his managed for the Archbishop of York. He studied at ouse, Cambridge's oldest college. In 1584 or 1585 he was to join Sir William Davison, who was to become secretary e under Queen Elizabeth, as his youthful secretary. In their e to throw off the yoke of Spain, the United Provinces of therlands sought help from England. Queen Elizabeth dis- d Davison to Holland with financial aid. Brewster lived m in The Hague, Leyden, and other Dutch cities. Bradford that "the secretary found him so discreet and faithful that sted him above all others that were about him. He only em- him in all matters of greatest trust and secrecy."[3]

n Elizabeth resolved to execute Mary Queen of Scots in Davison was assigned the burden of the legal process, and een made him the scapegoat. He was tried before the Star er Court and committed to the Tower. Brewster "remained r. Davison some good time after he was put from his place, him many faithful offices of service in the time of his s."[4]

adened by his residence in Holland, and disillusioned by the es of the court, Brewster made his way back to Scrooby the year 1590. Through Davison's efforts he received the appointment as postmaster and took over his father's posi- t the ancient manor. Sandys, Archbishop of York, had

Manor, Scrooby, Nottinghamshire

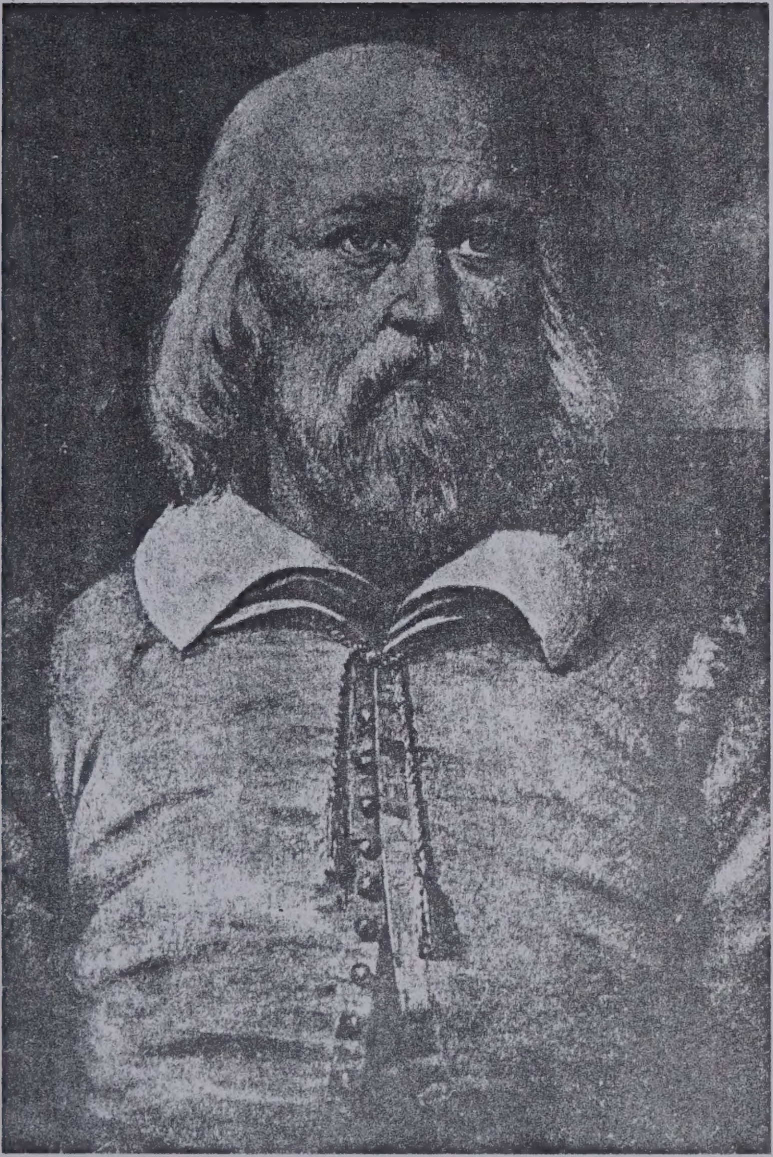
He now sensed day after day the peril of those who
challenge the power of the Establishment. He realize
thought of Bridget and the children the price they wer
for freedom. Some of his Cambridge associates were in p
parishes with generous stipends and handsome rectories
families. In contrast, he was isolated in an obscure villa
out an existence, working with a small company of hum
ple who faced harassment and danger of imprisonment.

In his *Dialogue* Bradford wrote about sixty English ci
knew who had been arrested for their religious beliefs:
them neither meat, drink, fire or lodging, nor suffering a
hearts the Lord would stir up for their relief, to have an
to them, so as they complained that no felons, traitors,
derers in the land were thus dealt with." Spies were hir
crown and bishops to visit prisoners, engage them in
tion, and try to lure them into saying something that
used as evidence against them.[16]

> But after these things they could not long continu
> peaceable condition, but were hunted and persecuted
> side, so as their former afflictions were but as flea-
> comparison of these which now came upon them.
> were taken and clapped up in prison, others had the
> beset and watched day and night, and hardly esca
> hands; and the most were fain to flee and leave the
> and habitations, and the means of their livelihood.[17]

Ref 974.4 B291 (CE71)

"The Pilgrim Way" Robt M Bartlett
United Church Press/Pilgrim Press



ELDER WILLIAM BREWSTER

Family Record

Family No.

Surname

Father – (Governor) Thomas PRENCE 1621 "Fortune" Plymouth

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1600	○	Lechdale,	Gloucestershire,	England		○
Death	29	Mar	1673	○	Plymouth	Plymouth Colony	New England		○
Buried	8	Apr	1673	○	"	"	"		○
Married	5	Aug	1624	○	"	"	"		○

Occupation Gov. of Plymouth Colony Military Church Pilgrim ○

Places Lived ○

Other Wives ② 1 Apr 1635 Mary Collier (dau Wm) ○
③ before 1662/8 Apphia (Quicke) Freeman - div. Samuel ○
④ before 1 Aug 1668 Mary (Burr?) Howes, wid Thomas

His Father's Name Thomas Prence (Corrigo indiss) ○

His Mother's Maiden Name Elizabeth Tolderby ○

Mother – Patience Brewster 1623 "Fortune" Plymouth

Event	Day	Month	Year		Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1605	○	Scrooby	Nottinghamshire	England	Sherwood Forest nearby	○
Death	abt 12	Dec	1634	○	Plymouth	Plymouth Colony	New England		○
Buried		(epidemic)		○					○

Occupation Military Church Pilgrim ○

Places Lived ○

Other Husbands ○

Her Father's Name (Elder) William Brewster ○

Her Mother's Maiden Name Mary ○

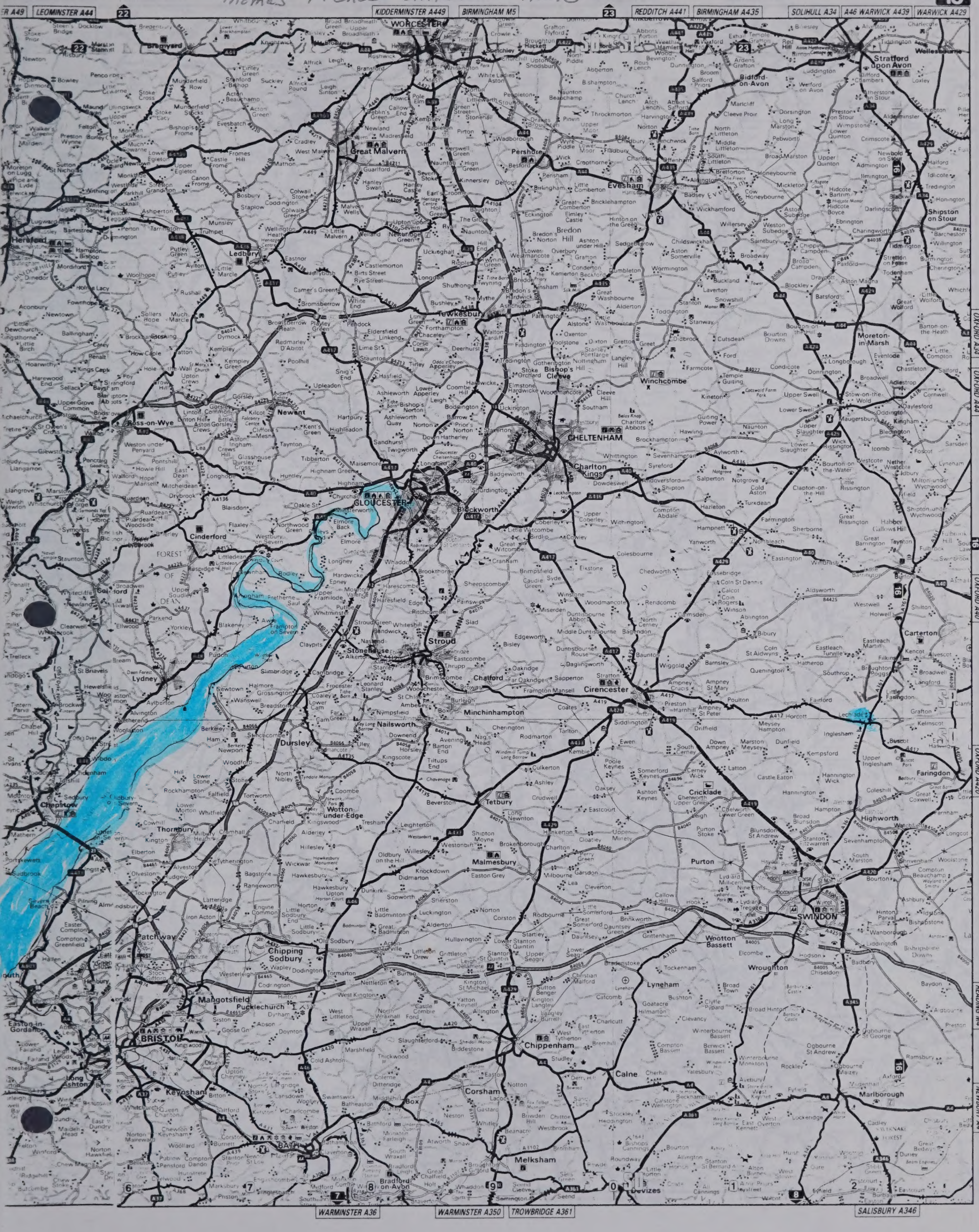
Children

Sex	Full Given Name		Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
	1. Rebecca Prence (died soon after giving birth to only child, Rebecca Jr) m. Perry	○	Birth			1625/6	Plymouth			○
			Death	18	July	1651	"			○
	Spouse - Edmund Freeman, Jr (1620-1701)	○	Married	22	Apr	1646	Eastham			○
	2. Thomas Prence III had dau Susan	○	Birth		ca	1627	Plymouth			○
			Death	c. 13	Mar	1672	St Catherine's Gate near London Tower, England			○
	Spouse - Susanna	○	Married			16			England	○
+	3. Mercy Prence	○	Birth		ca	1631	Plymouth			○
			Death	28	Sep	1711	Eastham			○
	Spouse - John Freeman (bro. of Rebecca's husband)	○	Married	13	Feb	1649	Plymouth			○
	4. Hannah Prence	○	Birth			1629	"			○
			Death	before	Nov	1698				○
	Spouse - ① Nathaniel Mayo (- 1662) ② (Capt) Jonathan Sparrow (1633 - 1707)	○	Married	① 13 ②	Feb ca	1649 1669	Eastham "			○
	5.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	6.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	7.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	8.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	9.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○
	10.	○	Birth							○
			Death							○
	Spouse -	○	Married							○

○ In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.

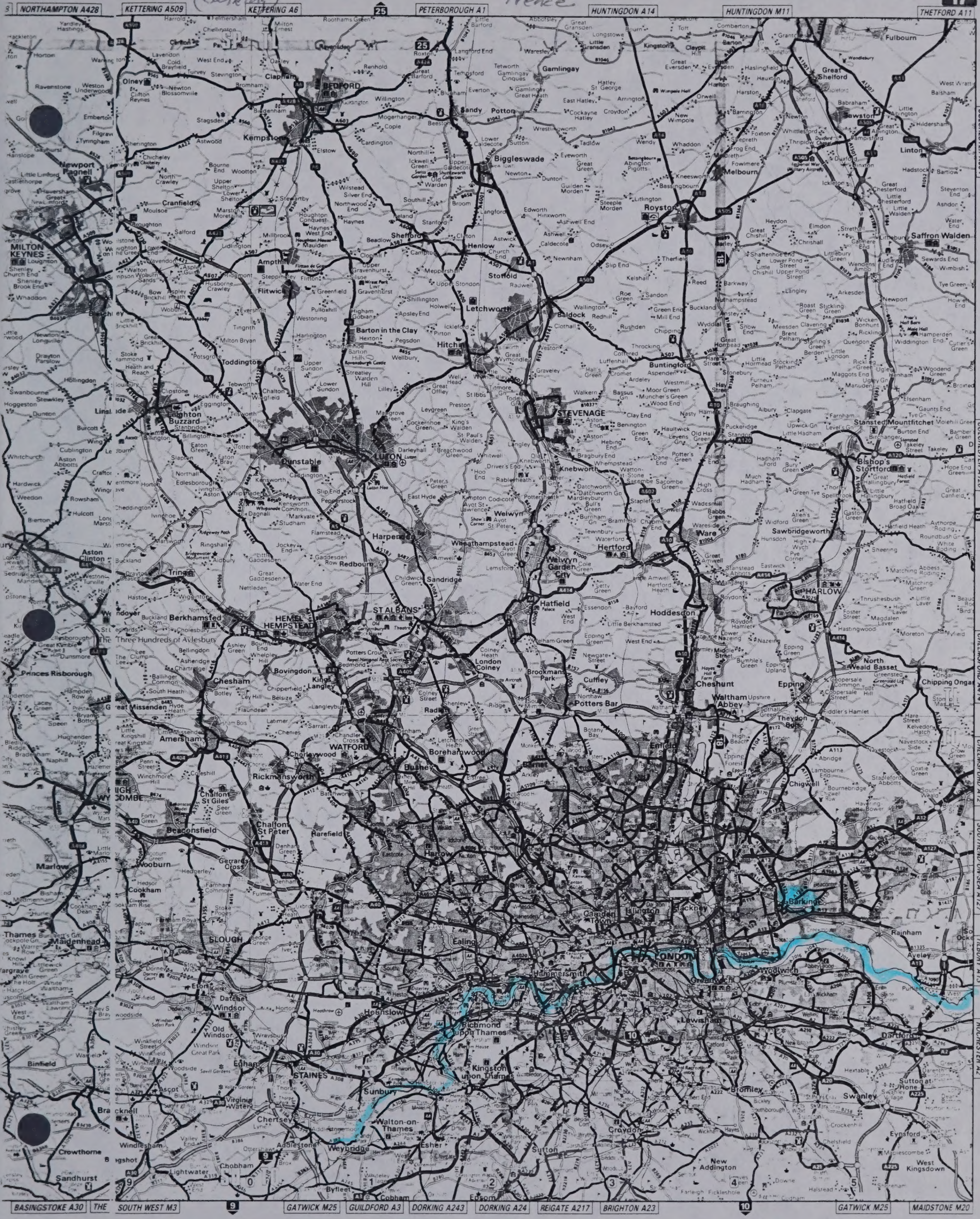
☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

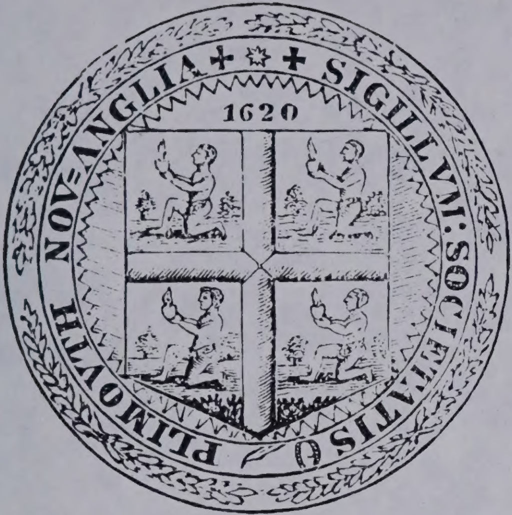
Thomas Prence childhood home


LEOMINSTER A44
KIDDERMINSTER A449
BIRMINGHAM M5
REDDITCH A441
BIRMINGHAM A435
SOLIHULL A34
A46 WARWICK A439
WARWICK A429
22
23
OXFORD A34
OXFORD A44
OXFORD A40
OXFORD A420
READING M4
NEWBURY A4
16
WARMINSTER A36
WARMINSTER A350
TROWBRIDGE A361
SALISBURY A346
6
7
8
9
0
1
2
Worcester
Great Malvern
Stratford upon Avon
Hereford
Ledbury
Pershore
Evesham
Tewkesbury
Ross-on-Wye
Newent
Winchcombe
Cheltenham
Gloucester
Cinderford
Lydney
Stroud
Cirencester
Dursley
Nailsworth
Chepstow
Tetbury
Malmesbury
Chipping Sodbury
Mangotsfield
Bristol
Keynsham
Bath
Chippenham
Corsham
Calne
Melksham
Devizes
Swindon
Wootton Bassett
Faringdon
Highworth
Lechlade
Burford
Stow-on-the-Wold
Moreton-in-Marsh
Shipston on Stour
Chipping Campden
Marlborough
Bradford-on-Avon
Thornbury
Wotton-under-Edge

(Barking)

Prence


NORTHAMPTON A428
KETTERING A509
KETTERING A6
25
PETERBOROUGH A1
HUNTINGDON A14
HUNTINGDON M11
THETFORD A11
COLCHESTER A604
COLCHESTER A120
18
CHELMSFORD A414
CHELMSFORD A12
SOUTHEND-ON-SEA A127
TILBURY A13
ROCHESTER A2
BASINGSTOKE A30
THE
SOUTH WEST M3
9
GATWICK M25
GUILDFORD A3
DORKING A243
DORKING A24
REIGATE A217
BRIGHTON A23
10
GATWICK M25
MAIDSTONE M20
LONDON



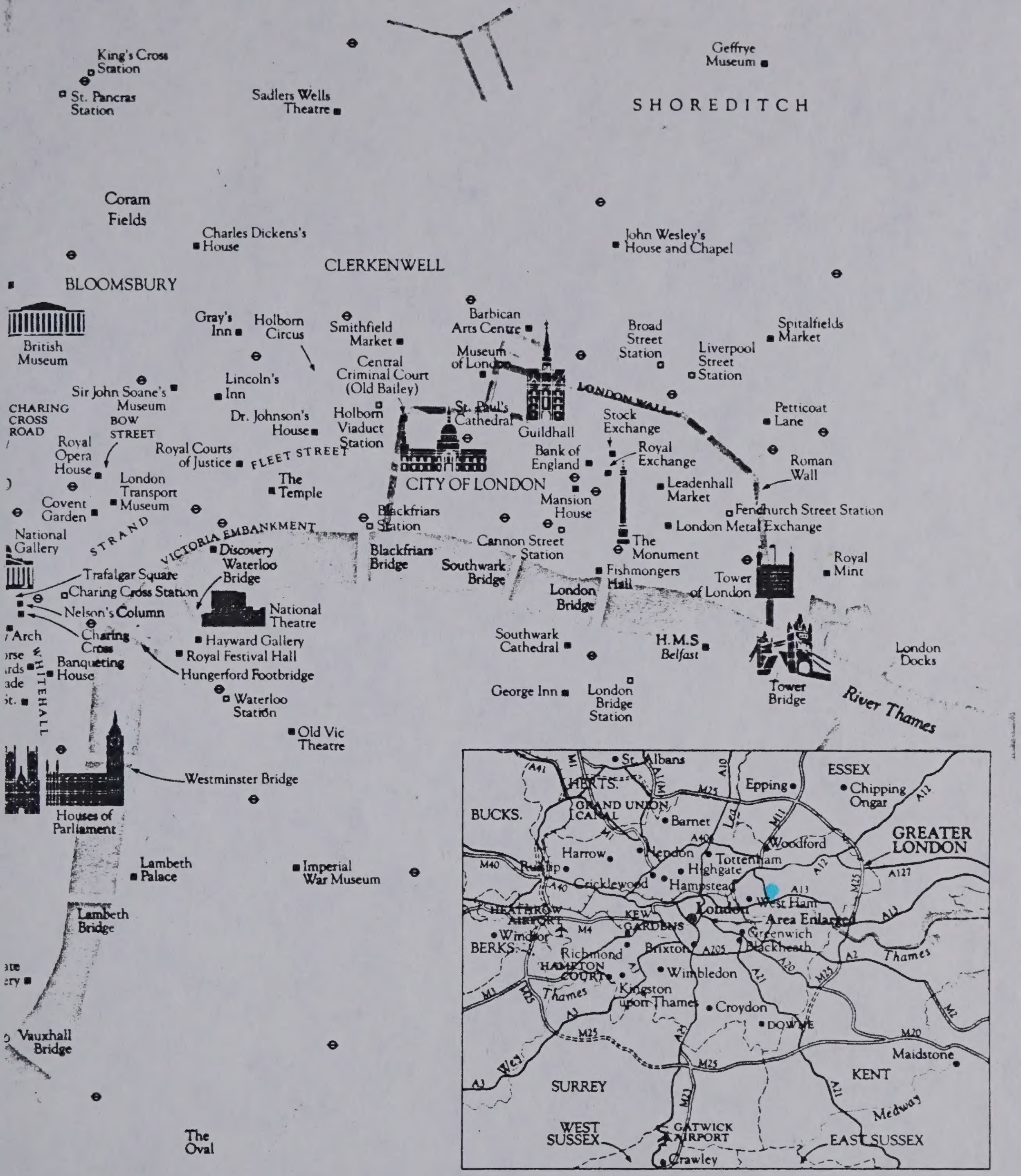
The annexed is a reduced copy of the Old Colony seal, taken from the book of laws, published in 1685. Underneath are fac similes of the hand-writing of distinguished persons in the colony.

William Bradford Willm Brewster

Tho: Prence Nathaniel Morton

Myles Standish Edw: Winslow.

Immediately in the rear of Plymouth village is Burying Hill, formerly Fort Hill. It embraces about eight acres, and rises to the height of 165 feet above the level of the sea. On the summit of the south-western side, the Pilgrims at first erected some slight defences; but in 1675, on the approach of Philip's war, they erect-


King's Cross Station
St. Pancras Station
Sadlers Wells Theatre
Geffrye Museum
SHOREDITCH
Coram Fields
Charles Dickens's House
John Wesley's House and Chapel
CLERKENWELL
BLOOMSBURY
British Museum
Gray's Inn
Holborn Circus
Smithfield Market
Barbican Arts Centre
Broad Street Station
Liverpool Street Station
Spitalfields Market
Museum of London
Central Criminal Court (Old Bailey)
Lincoln's Inn
Sir John Soane's Museum
CHARING CROSS ROAD
BOW STREET
Dr. Johnson's House
Holborn Viaduct Station
St. Paul's Cathedral
LONDON WALL
Guildhall
Stock Exchange
Petticoat Lane
Royal Opera House
Royal Courts of Justice
FLEET STREET
Bank of England
Royal Exchange
Roman Wall
London Transport Museum
The Temple
CITY OF LONDON
Leadenhall Market
Covent Garden
Mansion House
Fenchurch Street Station
National Gallery
STRAND
VICTORIA EMBANKMENT
Blackfriars Station
London Metal Exchange
Discovery
Waterloo Bridge
Cannon Street Station
The Monument
Blackfriars Bridge
Southwark Bridge
Fishmongers Hall
Royal Mint
Trafalgar Square
Charing Cross Station
London Bridge
Tower of London
Nelson's Column
National Theatre
Arch
Charing Cross
Southwark Cathedral
H.M.S. Belfast
London Docks
Hayward Gallery
Royal Festival Hall
Banqueting House
Hungerford Footbridge
WHITEHALL
Waterloo Station
George Inn
London Bridge Station
Tower Bridge
River Thames
Old Vic Theatre
Westminster Bridge
Houses of Parliament
Lambeth Palace
Imperial War Museum
Lambeth Bridge
Vauxhall Bridge
The Oval
St. Albans
HERTS.
ESSEX
Epping
Chipping Ongar
GRAND UNION CANAL
BUCKS.
Barnet
Woodford
GREATER LONDON
Harrow
Hendon
Tottenham
Highgate
Ruislip
Hampstead
Cricklewood
West Ham
HEATHROW AIRPORT
London
Area Enlarged
KEW GARDENS
Greenwich
Windsor
Blackheath
BERKS.
Brixton
Richmond
HAMPTON COURT
Wimbledon
Thames
Kingston upon Thames
Croydon
DOWNE
Maidstone
KENT
SURREY
Medway
WEST SUSSEX
GATWICK AIRPORT
EAST SUSSEX
Crawley
Wey
M1
A1
A10
M25
A41
A406
M11
A12
A127
M40
A40
A13
M4
A205
A2
A20
A21
M3
A3
M20
M2
M23
A23

Thos. Prence, Sr. carriage maker who had come from "Lechdale, co. Gloucester (& elsewhere before that) was living in All Saints Parish, Barking, Greater London in 1630, when he made his will.

Dawes-Gates Genealogy by Mary Walton Ferris

PRENCE*

THOMAS^{1} PRENCE, son of THOMAS† of Lechlade, co. Gloucester, England,[2] was born[1, 3, 11, 21] probably at that place[9] about 1600–1 and emigrated in 1621 to the New World in company with Jonathan^{2} Brewster (Elder WILLIAM^{1}) on the "Fortune," which sailed[16] from London in the early part of July, 1621, but was unable to clear the channel until the end of August and did not arrive at New Plymouth until November 9 of that year. This vessel[9] failed to bring a store of supplies for the use of its passengers until the next harvest and, since the colonists were already short, it became necessary to put the entire colony on half rations at once, in order that their food might last until the following July. Nor was this the only time that they looked famine in the face. THOMAS^{1} PRENCE was a welcome addition to the Pilgrim colony, being highly moral, educated, dignified and well-to-do, though, as it developed, he was non-Pilgrim and indeed pro-Puritan and stricter in religious matters than the leaders themselves.[9] He was an unusual man; a man of great usefulness and ability; a man fearless in making stern decisions, yet prone to show mercy;[9] but, in the light of our day, a man of intolerance in matters of religion. That very intolerance, however, was motivated by a conscientious adherence to duty.

His residence was first at Plymouth,[9, 13, 18] but before the spring of 1632 he had followed his father-in-law, WILLIAM^{1} BREWSTER, to Duxbury, where PATIENCE^{2} BREWSTER, the wife of THOMAS^{1} PRENCE, died in 1634 and where the residences of these two families continued until 1644, at which time the beloved Elder WILLIAM^{1} died and THOMAS^{1} PRENCE removed with his family to Nauset on the Cape. In this change he was accompanied by six other families, including those of JOHN^1 DOANE, *Josiah^1 Cooke** and EDWARD^1 BANGS, a total of forty-nine souls. There he was instrumental in forming the fourth church in the infant colony[18] and in 1651 the settlement was renamed Eastham. While THOMAS^1 was still resident in Duxbury, and aged only about thirty-four, he was elected governor in 1634, serving then for the term of one year. In 1638 he was again the recipient of the same honor, but five years previously a law had been passed requiring the governor to reside in Plymouth, so he declined the office. On the insistence of the court he agreed to accept the position if the residence clause were waived. That request was granted, and he served during the year 1638. For more than forty years after 1632 he continuously served as an assistant or magistrate, except while holding the chief office of governor.[19]

---

*This name was often spelled "Prince."

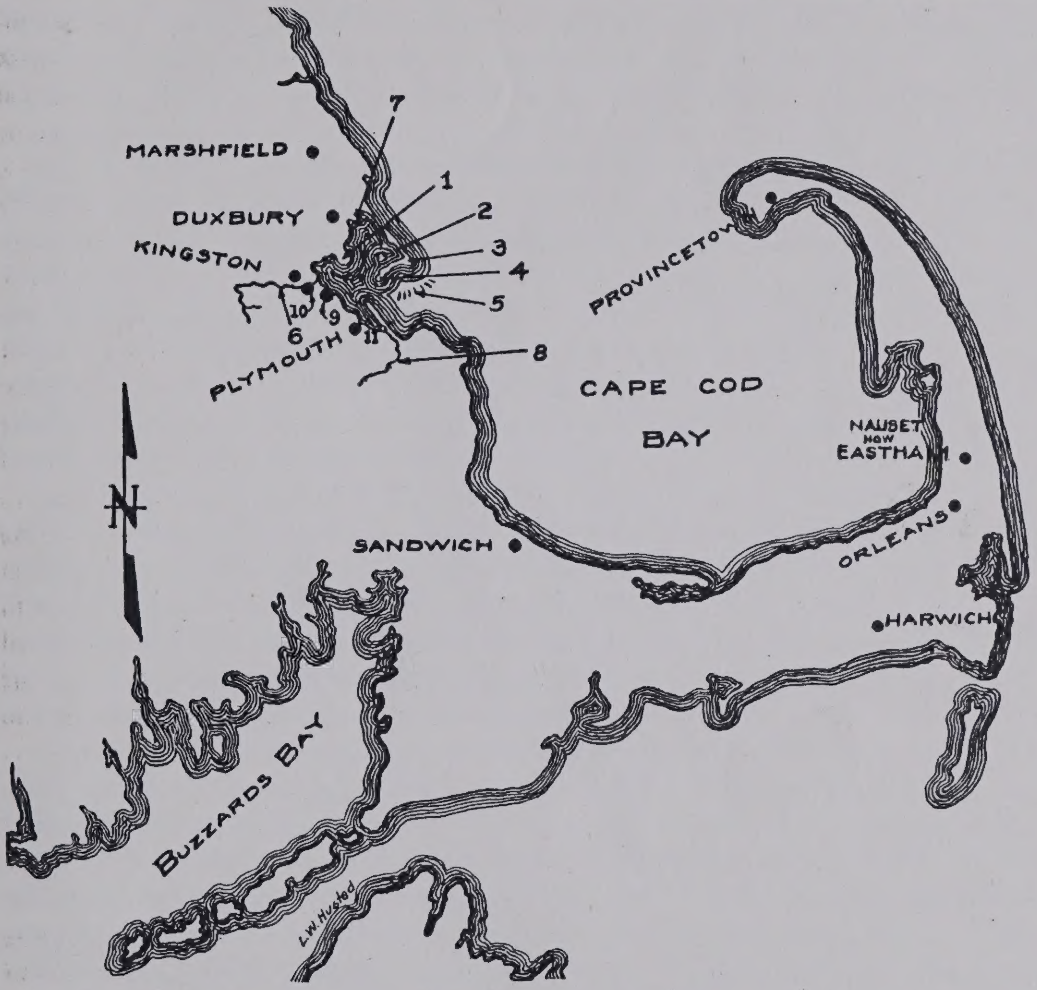
†THOMAS PRENCE, senior, removed from Lechlade at an unknown date to All Saints, Barking, London, where he carried on the trade of carriage-maker, and where on July 31, 1630, he made his will, which was probated on August 14, following. It made bequests to daughter Katherine Crayford, daughter Rebecca Diple, and "to son THOMAS PRENCE now remayninge in New England in the pts beyond the seas one beere bole of silver and alsoe my seale Ringe of gold to be del^{d} to him at his next return . . ."[10]

While resident in Eastham, and immediately following the death of Governor Bradford, THOMAS^1 PRENCE was unanimously chosen to succeed him, and thereafter for sixteen consecutive years, or until his own death in 1673, he held the office of governor.[19] On his election in 1657 the court again granted him the special concession of waiver of residence, permitting him to continue to live at Eastham,[14] where he had a farm of at least two hundred acres of the richest land in the vicinity. He was doubtless loath to exchange this for the more rocky land and poorer agricultural possibilities at Plymouth.

The court arranged for conveyance for him to travel between his home and the seat of government at Plymouth, about fifty miles distant, but the inconvenience to both finally operated to bring about his removal to Plymouth. This occurred[9] probably by June 1, 1663, for on that date the court ordered[25] "that a convenient, hansome rome bee aded to the Goūnors house [presumably in the officially approved town], and that the charge of the building thereof bee defrayed out of the pay for Kinebecke . . ." [see p. 688]. His return occurred certainly[25] before October, 1665, when they further compensated him for it by unanimously voting him an annual salary of £50 during his encumbency, in addition to the use of a home furnished by the colony which should be his while in this office; should be free to his family for at least a year following his decease if he died during such term; or should be his for at least a year following the completion of such service.[25] This home overlooked the sea at what was then called "Plain Dealing" but is now known as Seaside [see map on p. 685]. In June, 1668, he proposed to the court that

---

*Believed to have been the ancestor of MARY COOKE, wife of CALEB^2 JOHNSON [see Addendum to Johnson pp. 502–5].


7
MARSHFIELD
1
DUXBURY
2
KINGSTON
3
4
5
10
9
6
11
PLYMOUTH
8
PROVINCETOWN
CAPE COD
BAY
NAUSET
NOW
EASTHAM
N
SANDWICH
ORLEANS
HARWICH
BUZZARDS BAY
L.W. Husted

DETAIL OF PLYMOUTH VICINITY, GIVING EARLY LOCAL PLACE NAMES AND ILLUSTRATING BREWSTER, COOKE, FREEMAN, HOPKINS, PRENCE, ET AL

1. Captain's Hill
2. Clark's Island
3. Gurnets Nose
4. Saquish Head
5. Brown's Island Shoals
6. Jones River
7. Powder Point
8. Eel River
9. Plain Dealing, now Seaside
10. Rocky Nook
11. Hobs Hole or Wellingsley

he should buy this place. They agreed, and set a price of £150 payable in instalments, with the privilege of its refusal if he later chose to sell, and with the stipulation of refund to him in such case for any improvements he had made.[25] In June and July, 1673, after his death, this agreement became effective and his home reverted to the colony on payment to the heirs of £50, the amount he had paid on the purchase price or for repairs. About 1658 there was an admitted intent, or at least a thought, on the part of an Indian named "Repent" to shoot Thomas^1 Prence as he returned to his home. The culprit was whipped.[25]

The summary of his service[9, 19, 20] shows that he held the office of governor in 1634, 1638 and 1657–73; assistant or magistrate at least twenty-two years, in 1632, 1635–7, 1639–56; treasurer 1636–7; commissioner for Plymouth for the United Colonies for thirteen years, 1645, 1650, 1653–8, 1661–3 and 1670–2; that he was a member of the council for war in 1637 (against the Pequots), in 1642–3, 1646, 1657–8 and 1667, being president of that council during the last four terms;[19, 20] and he also held various special civil and military trusts.[9] In 1637 he was sole member of the council for war when Plymouth voted to assist Connecticut Colony against the Pequots. On June 7 Plymouth decided to raise a company of thirty land soldiers (besides those who would handle the vessel) and directed Thomas^1 Prence to accompany them. Forty-two men, including Jacob^2 Cooke [see Cooke, p. 244], volunteered for this service, but before they were ready a decisive encounter had occurred in which the Connecticut men were victorious, so the Plymouth company was not sent.[19]

Thomas^1 Prence, during his long encumbency as governor, faced[23, 24, 27] many difficult problems and made, or assisted in making, various decisions and plans which bore far-reaching results. Moreover, with a handful of others, he carried for about twenty years an almost unbelievable burden of personal financial responsibility in behalf of the colony. Against this fine record only one trait of Thomas^1 Prence—that of intolerance—seems to call for apology. A summary of his extensive service to the colony shows that it covered a wide scope:

(1) His handling in 1661 of the first instance of witchcraft excitement in Plymouth was sane and peremptory and effectually discouraged a recurrence.

(2) The comparative infrequency of Indian troubles in Plymouth was brought about largely by the humane attitude of Thomas^1 Prence and other leaders toward the natives. Thomas Mayhew, missionary to the

Indians, wrote of the "gentle and kind dealing" of Prence with them. His stern and impartial justice is shown in the case of the three white men who were tried before him and were hung in 1638 for the robbery and fatal beating of an Indian.

(3) The treatment by Thomas^1 Prence of the unjust demands of certain Massachusetts men [see Grant, p. 374, and Olmstead, p. 612] to a tract of land on the Connecticut River [now Windsor] was tolerant and generous. This land had previously been purchased by Plymouth and settled upon in the fall of 1633 by a Plymouth group under Jonathan^2 Brewster (Elder William^1). In this matter Prence entered into an agreement in May, 1637, which practically closed all disputes and ended within a year, entirely without profit, all Plymouth's claim on the Connecticut. He also served helpfully in forming the confederation of the united colonies.

(4) The administration of Thomas^1 Prence is noted for his vigorous stand in favor of education and is said to have been "rendered illustrious, by his zealous efforts to introduce a regular system of free schools into the colony." The colony had not lacked schools earlier but they had depended upon individual tuition-fees. During the Prence regime free schools were established by law and supported by rental of common lands, by a share of the fishery money, or by specified taxes.

(5) Probably the greatest service rendered by Thomas^1 Prence, associated with William^1 Brewster and six other leading Plymouth men, and one which cost each of these men an enormous amount of anxiety, responsibility and material outlay, was the personal assumption by them in 1626–7 of the entire debt of the colony and its ultimate payment [indeed, one should say its *over*payment], which was not entirely accomplished until about 1645. Letters and other documents are of record, showing[17, 24, 27] that these eight Plymouth men, in behalf of the colony, were the victims of many unavoidable misfortunes; of theft and piracy by enemies; of dishonesty and disloyalty by employees and friends; of poor judgment and poorer bookkeeping; and finally, in the ultimate settlement with their three English associates, of their submission to a manifest fraud, when they made the payment of £1200, and later of an additional £400, not really owed, for the sake of an acquittance in full and a clear record.

When the Pilgrims came to America in 1620 it was as members of a stock company which had two classes of stockholders: the men in England who had invested money and were called "adventurers" and the people who emigrated, venturing their lives and labor and such funds as they had, who were called "planters." Everything was to be held in common for seven years, after which time the assets would be divided between these two classes; the planters having in the meantime had their living and the adventurers having profited by furs and produce exported from New Plymouth to England. Endless misfortunes [such as shipwreck of vessels with cargoes, or capture by pirates, etc.] befell the colonists, and the profits reaped by the adventurers in England were considerable but fell far short of what they had hoped for. In 1626, as the year of settlement and division approached, the colonists realizing that they could not meet their obligation anxiously studied the matter and decided that only through the acquisition of furs by an extensive trade with the Indians could they hope to liquidate their debt, for which in any event they must have an extension of time. To that end they[24, 27] sent Isaac Allerton to England in 1626, as well as on several later occasions, and through him acquired from the disappointed "adventurers" two concessions which the Plymouth leaders felt would save the life and integrity of the infant colony. These were (a) a patent for land on the Kennebec River, being a strip fifteen miles wide on each side of that stream, extending [apparently from its mouth] northward to the vicinity of the present Skowhegan, or a distance of about sixty miles in an air-line. Over this they were to have absolute control on land and water as to trade, fishing, settlement and government. This constituted the unique situation of a colony owning a colony, and from this possession the Plymouth men hoped to earn enough to pay their obligations in England and also to finance the emigration of various Leyden friends.[11] The other concession was (b) a contract whereby the "adventurers" turned over their entire interest and right in the colony for £2400, which covered a purchase price of £1800 and a standing debt of £600 for supplies. Since the "planters" as a company were unchartered, it was necessary that individuals should bind themselves in this amount if this solution of their difficulties was to be accepted. Consequently eight of the leading men of the colony—William Bradford, Myles Standish, Isaac Allerton, Edward Winslow, WILLIAM' BREWSTER, John Howland, John Alden and THOMAS' PRENCE, obligated themselves in the sum of £2400 which was to be paid at the rate of £200 per annum, and thereby became owners of the colony as far as the liens and titles of the former "adventurers" went. They stipulated, however, and the colonists agreed, that individuals should refrain from trade with the Indians during the pendency of this obligation. These eight men, presently joined by four men* of London [who had earlier been among the "adventurers"] were commonly called the "undertakers," though sometimes "partners.". In order to protect the rights of the colonists the new owners decided to form an equal partnership in the colony, consisting of all heads of families and all self-supporting single men [including non- and even anti-church members]. These were to be called "purchasers" and were each to receive one share in the public belongings, with the right to acquire an additional share for a wife and for each child. These shares were bound for so much of the public debt as the trade (above) should not earn, and to them belonged everything pertaining to the colony except personal effects. The service rendered by these eight leaders was great indeed. Not only were they and their estates liable for the debt, but, while it remained unpaid and overdue, they would each have been menaced with imprisonment if they had ventured to visit England. The responsibility was wholly theirs, while coöperation was frequently lacking, and in the end they each gave up houses and lands in large amounts and quite beyond the contribution of the colonists as a whole. This personal obligation on the part of these eight men ran on actively for about fifteen years and was not wiped out until about twenty years had passed. Latterly much dissatisfaction arose on both sides and the Plymouth men declared that many credits due them from their London associates (now reduced to three) were omitted and goods were sent them which they had never ordered. Finally in October, 1641, with the assistance of Edmond^{1} Freeman, they inventoried every smallest asset and outstanding account, drew up new articles of agreement, and gave new bonds to the amount of £2400 for the payment of £1200 [unjustly said to be due the London partners] which would wipe out all earlier obligations. Not until June, 1642, was a release signed for this £1200 claim and then by only two of the three London men. The third man, Beauchamp, was expected to sign but later demanded[27] for himself £400 additional and made Edmond^{1} Freeman his attorney; "so no end was made with him till 4 years after . . ." In 1645 the final release by Beauchamp through Freeman was delivered and recorded. What relief it must have been to the responsible partners to be finally free from so great a burden, and that burden undertaken for the common cause rather than personal gain! In the final settlement each of the partners [the heirs of William^1 Brewster in behalf of his estate] transferred various tracts of land which they personally owned to clear the account.[17, 24, 27] In this instance Thomas^1 Prence contributed a house and land at Plymouth and a farm at Jones River which presently sold at £32 and £75 respectively.

---

*These were James Sherley, John Beauchamp [brother-in-law of Edmond^{1} Freeman], Richard Andrews and Timothy Hatherley, who later came to America, as did also his sister Eglin, our ancestress [see Foster chapter, Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines, Vol. I]. Hatherley became a most valuable member of Plymouth Colony, and Sherley, Beauchamp and Andrews rendered invaluable service from London by their financial assistance; but their later conduct greatly lessened the appreciation in which they had been held.

To offset this long and valuable service we must admit one unhappy trait in the character of Thomas^1 Prence—his religious intolerance, and that mainly against the Quakers. He had no more than succeeded Bradford as governor when the forerunners of that faith began to appear, and some of them, unlike later members of their kind, seemed really to crave trouble and to thrive upon persecution. The conflict between Puritan (which Thomas^1 Prence really was) and Quaker has been described as an attempt to subdue one kind of fanaticism with another, Reason soon controlling both when she became their guide.[9] Evidence that Thomas^1 was wholly sincere in his belief that the Quaker influx was a menace to government and church is found in the fact of his complete and permanent break with two leading and most useful members of the colony, namely: Isaac^1 Robinson, son of the Leyden pastor, and James^1 Cudworth, whose standing in and service toward the colony was fully as excellent as that of Prence himself. In 1659 Robinson, John^2 Cooke (Francis^1) and others were constituted a committee to attend a Quaker meeting with the intent of showing the interlopers the error of their ways; but the result was entirely unforeseen, since Robinson himself became convinced of their righteousness and wrote to the court, urging against the existing anti-Quaker laws as unwise and unjust. James^1 Cudworth also wrote and spoke in similar strain. Effort was made to induce them to recant, but in vain, so they were both disfranchised—Robinson in 1659 and Cudworth in 1660. This deprived them of civil and military rights but did not interfere with church membership. This ban was never lifted while Thomas^1 Prence lived, but it is gratifying to know that one of the first acts of his successor as governor, Josiah Winslow, was the reëstablishment of their rights as freemen.[9, 22] Perhaps it was the irony of fate which ruled that Thomas^1 Prence should have in his immediate family an application of the Quaker problem. Arthur^2 Howland (Arthur^1 of Quaker sympathy and faith) had the temerity, yet good taste, to aspire to marriage[21] with Elizabeth^2 Prence, daughter of the governor, and won her personal approval. He learned her father's views plainly, however, when he was haled before the court on March 5, 1666, the governor himself presiding, and it is recorded that "Arthur

Howland, Juni^r, for inveigling of Mistris Elizabeth Prence and makeing motion of marriage to her, and procecuting the same contrary to her parrents likeing, and without theire consent, and directly contrary to theire mind and will, was centanced to pay a fine of fiue pounds and to find surties for his good behauior, and in speciall that hee desist from the vse of any meanes to obtaine or retaine her affections as aforesaid." On the same date the offending lover was bound over to the next term of court six months later, in the sum of £50, to "for the future refraine and desist from the vse of any meanes to obtaine or retaine her affections . . ." Presumably his word held good but his affections did not wane, for on July 2, 1667, it was again recorded that "Arthur Howland, Juni^r, did sollemly and seriously engage before this Court, that hee will wholly desist and neuer apply himselfe for the future, as formerly hee hath done, to Mistris Elizabeth Prence in reference vnto marriage." It would be interesting to know just how the young people won their point, for they were married the following December. Strangely enough, friendly feelings seem to have been established between the families and Arthur appears to have enjoyed greater tolerance than most Quakers, for in 1671 he held the office of constable, frequently served in juries, and named one son "Thomas" and another "Prince" in honor of their maternal grandfather; and in 1673 his wife, Elizabeth, was a beneficiary[5, 10] by the will of her father. It is evident, however, that Arthur retained his faith, for later (at least during the years 1679–84) he was sorely persecuted by the authorities and his wife suffered with him.[21]

Another situation annoying to Thomas^1 Prence arose in connection with the marriage, about 1653, of Edward Perry to Mary [called Freeman] who was a close acquaintance of his own daughter Mercy (Prence) Freeman. Perry was a Quaker and persistently declined the proffered service of either clergyman or magistrate to legalize his marriage. Indeed, the court order that Thomas^1 Prence should "see his [Perry's] marriage ratified as hee goeth home" [to Eastham] failed to impress or move Perry, so a fine of £5 was laid upon him, which was to be repeated at each succeeding general court[21] until the law was complied with. The public services of Edmond^1 Freeman, himself, were curtailed for years because of his sympathy with the Quakers [see Freeman, p. 352].

Perhaps the truest summary of the life of Thomas^1 may be found in these excerpts from the Plymouth Church, Colony and town records.[28]

"In 1673; was a very awfull frowne of God upon this chh & colony in the death of m^r Thomas Prince the Governour in the 73d yeare of his Age: when this colony was in a hazardous condition upon the death of Govr Bradford, the lott was cast upon m^r PRINC[E] to be his successour, God made him a repairer of breaches & a meanes to setle those shakings that were then threatning, he was excellently qualifyed for the office of a Governour, he had a countenance full of majesty & therein as well as otherwise was a Terrour to evill doers, he was very amiable & pleasant in his whole conversation & highly esteemed of the saints & acknowledged by all; In the time of his sicknesse the chh sought God by Fasting & Prayer, but God would not be intreated any longer to spare him, but he dyed on March, 29: & was honourably interred, April, 8:"

"Hee was a worthy gentleman, very pious, and very able for his office, and faithfull in the discharge thereof, studious of peace, a welwiller to all that feared God, and a terrour to the wicked. His death was much lamented, and his body honorably buryed att Plymouth . . ."

" . . . God made him a great blessing to his people . . ." "His integrity was proverbial . . ." " . . . had he been only a private Christian, there would yet have been seen upon him those ornaments of prayerfulness, and peaceableness . . . and a strict walk with God, which might justly have been made an example to a whole colony."[28] His last illness was not of long duration, for he presided at General Court on March 4, 1672–3, only twenty-five days before his death. A pear-tree[26] planted by THOMAS^1 PRENCE on his old Eastham farm lived and bore fruit through seven generations, certainly until after 1844 and, it is said, until nearly 1890.

THOMAS^1 PRENCE married[6] first at Plymouth[11,18] [it being the ninth marriage in the colony] on August 5, 1624, PATIENCE^2 BREWSTER [see Brewster, p. 155]. He married secondly[6,10] April 1, 1635, Mary Collier, called the daughter of William^1 Collier of Duxbury.[3,4] He married thirdly[6] before December 8, 1662, Mrs. Apphia (Quicke[29]) Freeman, widow of Samuel Freeman, Sr., and married fourthly[6] after February, 1665–6, but before August 1, 1668, and probably before February 9, 1667–8, Mrs. Mary (——) Howes, widow of Thomas^1 Howes of Yarmouth. This wife became his widow and died[6] December 9, 1695. He made his will[5,10] on March 13, 1672–3, and added a codicil March 28, 1673. The document was probated on June 5, 1673, and covered a large estate. It specified that his son JOHN^2 FREEMAN should receive "Speeds Cronicle and Wilsons Dictionary and the abridgment; and Simpsons history of the Church and Newmans Concordance."[5]

The children of THOMAS^1 and PATIENCE (BREWSTER) PRENCE, born in unknown order, were[5,6,7,8,10,11,12,13,14]

i. Rebecca^2, eldest child, b. before the division[7] of cattle June 1, 1627; d. before[15] July 18, 1651, when her husband married again; m. April 22, 1646, as his first wife, Edmond^2 Freeman (Edmond^1).

✓ ii. Mercy^2, b. at Plymouth about 1631; d. at Eastham[15] September 28, 1711, aged 80 years; m.[6] [recorded[7] at Eastham as February 13, and at Sandwich as February 14] February 13 or 14, 1649–50, John^2 Freeman [see Freeman, p. 356]. Apparently she and her sister Hannah^2 had a double wedding.

iii. Hannah^2, d. before November 23, 1698 when her husband married again; m. 1st, February 13, 1649–50, Nathaniel^2 Mayo (Rev. John^1); m. 2nd, as his second wife, after June 5, 1667, and probably after February 12, 1667–8, but before September 11, 1671, Jonathan^2 Sparrow (Richard^1).

iv. Thomas^2, d. before March 13, 1672, in England;[5,6] m. (——).

The children of Thomas^1 Prence and his second wife, Mary Collier, were

v. Jane^2, b. November 1, 1637, at Duxbury;[11] m. at Eastham, as his second wife, January 9, 1660–1, Mark^2 Snow (Nicholas^1).[6,7,8]

vi. Mary^2, m. John^2 Tracy (Stephen^1) of Duxbury.[5]

vii. Sarah^2, b. about 1643–6; d. at North Dennis, March 3, 1706–7, in her sixtieth year; m. at Plymouth[11] her stepbrother, Jeremiah^2 Howes (Thomas^1) of Yarmouth.[5,6]

viii. Elizabeth^2, m. December 9, 1667, Arthur^2 Howland[21] (Arthur^1)[5,8] of Marshfield.

ix. Judith^2, m. 1st, December 28, 1665, Isaac Barker;[5,7,8] m. 2nd,[13,14] 1691, William Tubbs.

REFERENCES

1. Savage, I, 245–6; III, 477–8.
2. Ancient Land Marks of Plymouth, W. T. Davis, 1899, part 2, p. 209.
3. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1856, p. 362.
4. New England's Memorial, N. Morton, 1826, pp. 421–5.
5. Mayflower Descendant, III, 203–16.
6. Ibid., VI, 157–63, 230–5; XXIV, 129–30; New England Register, LIX, 217; LXVI, 357–8.
7. Plymouth Colony Records, VIII, 9, 26, 28, 31, 34.
8. Mayflower Descendant, II, 182; VII, 14; XVII, 201; XVIII, 56, 193.
9. Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1889, pp. 196, 292–9, 368–9, 477–8, 480, 490, 500, 506; Mourts' Relation, with notes by H. M. Dexter, 1865, p. 139.
10. Pope's Pioneers, pp. IX, XVI, 372; Gleanings of English Records, J. A. Emmerton and H. F. Waters in Essex Institute Historical Collections, XVII, 103–4.
11. Register of the Society of Mayflower Descendants in Illinois, 1925, pp. 239, 315, 342, 424–5.
12. Brewster Genealogy, E. C. B. Jones, 1908, I, 21–4.
13. History of Duxbury, Mass., J. Winsor, 1849, pp. 9–10, 17, 64, 99–101, 293.
14. History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, I, 131, 219–20, 254, 276; II, 348, 362–4.
15. Freeman Genealogy, F. Freeman, 1875, pp. 23, 26–30, 350–3; Plymouth Colony Records, II, 98.
16. Chronological History of New England, T. Prince, 1826, p. 198.
17. New England Family History, 1908–9, II, 289–306.
18. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, I, 232, 347, 407; II, 152, 216–24, 263, 368, 402–3; Plymouth Colony Record, XII, 5.
19. King Philip's War, G. M. Bodge, 1896, pp. 11, 455–64; Plymouth Colony Records, I, 21, 32, 36, 48, 60–1, 79–80, 116, 140; II, 8, 15, 33, 40, 47, 52, 56, 64, 71, 83, 100, 115, 123, 153, 166; III, 7, 26, 28, 30, 48, 67, 77, 99, 114–5, 117, 134–5, 138, 162, 187, 214; IV, 13–4, 36, 60, 90, 122, 142, 147, 179–80; V, 17, 34, 54–5, 89–90, 107; VII, 12–9, 21–4, 30–41, 43, 45, 54–5, 58, 63–4, 66, 68, 71, 73, 76, 78, 80; X, part 1, 31, 161, 187–8; part 2, 78, 113, 153, 178, 197, 254, 271, 290, 351–2; XI, 25.
20. Register of the Massachusetts Society of Colonial Dames, 1927, p. 447.

21. Howland Genealogy, F. Howland, 1885, pp. 38–42; The Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 598–9; Freeman Genealogy, F. Freeman, 1875, pp. 22–30; Plymouth Colony Records, III, 124–6; IV, 140–2, 158–9; New England Quarterly, 1928, I, 331–2.

22. Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 477–90, and see index; Plymouth Colony Records, III, 183, 189; V, 124, 126; XI, 124; History of Martha's Vineyard, Mass., C. E. Banks, 1911, II, West Tisbury Chapter, p. 61; History of Cape Cod and Annals of Barnstable County, Mass., F. Freeman, 1869, I, 233, 240, 302; II, 265–6; New England Judged, George Bishope, 1702–3, pp. 163, 168–77, 181, 185–204, 388; New Light on the Pilgrim Story, Rev. T. W. Mason, London, 1920, pp. 34–7; History of Scituate, S. Deane, 1831, pp. 245–8; Quakers in the American Colonies, R. M. Jones, 1911, pp. 58–64.

23. Winthrop's Journal, 1853, I, 134–5, 162, 182, 198, 201, 204; Plymouth Colony Records, I, 96–7; Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 197, 392–6, 493–7, 546–7; History of Windsor, Conn., H. R. Stiles, 1891, I, 19, 24–56; History of Hartford County, Conn., J. H. Trumbull, 1886, I, 29–34; I, Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, VI, 196, 203–5; VIII, 220; History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, II, 216–24, 232 et seq.

24. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, II, 18, 28–31, 174, 182, 204–5, 212, 223, 269–71, 288–300, 314, 330–41; Mayflower Descendant, I, 215–9; Maine Historical Society Collections, 1847, II, 275–6; Johns Hopkins University Studies in Historical and Political Science, Ser. 4, IV, chapters XI-XII, 11–7; Pilgrim Republic, J. A. Goodwin, 1888, pp. 302–3, 477–8; Plymouth Colony Records, II, 144; III, 43–4, 95, 105, 170; VII, 257; XI, 35; XII, 127–8, 132.

25. Plymouth Colony Records, III, 138; IV, 44, 108, 184; V, 117, 124, 148–9; XI, 212, 239; Ancient Land Marks of Plymouth, W. T. Davis, 1899, pp. 153, 347–8.

26. History of Eastham, Mass., E. Pratt, 1844, pp. 12–6; Story of the Pilgrims and Puritans, J. D. Sawyer, 1925, II, 161.

27. History of Plymouth Plantation, William Bradford, 1912, II, 288–300; Plymouth Colony Records, XII, 90, 127–8, 132–3; Mayflower Descendant, I, 215–9.

28. Plymouth, Mass., Town Records, I, 198; Mather's Magnalia, I, Chapter II, 115–6; Plymouth Colony Records, VIII, 34; Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, XXII [Plymouth Church Records I], 147.

29. Mss. purchased from the late Mr. E. L. Smith ("Nauset") of Brookline, Mass.

The Great Migration Begins - by Robert Charles Anderson

THOMAS PRENCE

ORIGIN: All Saints Barking, London [EIHC 17:103-04]
MIGRATION: 1621 on *Fortune*
FIRST RESIDENCE: Plymouth
REMOVES: Duxbury by 1637, Eastham 1644, Plymouth by 1665

FREEMAN: In the "1633" Plymouth list of freemen Thomas Prence was just after the councillors, and ahead of those admitted on 1 January 1632/3 [PCR 1:3]. "Thomas Prence, gen.," is in the 7 March 1636/7 list of Plymouth freemen [MBCR 1:52]. In the list of assistants at the head of the "1639" list of Plymouth Colony freemen, but as this list was revised and annotated his name was included in the "Nawsett" portion of the list [PCR 8:173, 177]. In Eastham section of 1658 list of Plymouth freemen, and in Plymouth section of list of 29 May 1670 [PCR 5:274, 8:201]
EDUCATION: His inventory included a long list of books valued at £14 2d., including two great Bibles and "100 of psalm books."
OFFICES: Plymouth Governor, 1634, 1638, 1657-72 [MA Civil List 35]. Assistant, Plymouth Colony, 1632-33, 1635-37, 1639-56 [PCR 1:32, 36,

48, 116, 140, 2:8, 15, 33, 40, 52, 56, 71, 83, 115; MA Civil List 37-38]. Treasurer, 1637 [PCR 1:48; MA Civil List 36]. Council of War, 1637 [PCR 1:60, PTR 1:16]. Commissioner for the United Colonies, 1645, 1650, 1653-58, 1661-63, 1670-72 [MA Civil List 28-29].

In Plymouth section of 1643 Plymouth Colony list of men able to bear arms [PCR 8:188].

ESTATE: In the 1623 Plymouth division of land Thomas Prence received one acre as a passenger on the *Fortune* [PCR 12:5]. In the 1627 Plymouth division of cattle Thomas Prince, Patience Prince and Rebecca Prince are the tenth, eleventh and twelfth persons in the fifth company [PCR 12:10].

In the Plymouth tax list of 25 March 1633 Thomas Prence was assessed £1 7s. [PCR 1:9]. He was omitted from the list of 27 March 1634. His cattle mark was three marks on the outer side of the ear [PTR 1:2].

Thomas Prence received grants of land, 1 July 1633, 14 March 1635/6, 20 March 1636/7 meadow at Jones River; 6 March 1636/7 land between two cedar swamps at Island Creeke Pond; 5 February 1637/8 all the land between Greenes Harbor and South River; 2 April 1638 a garden place; 5 November 1638 ten acres of land "in some convenient place about the town"; 3 December 1638 an acre and a half at Smilt River; 2 December 1639 a parcel between John Barnes's garden and George Watson's field; 16 September 1641 an enlargement at the head of his Joanes River lot; 17 October 1642 an additional six acres at Joanes River; 2 October 1650 granted rights to bass fishing at Cape Cod [PCR 1:14, 40, 51, 56, 77, 83, 102, 103, 136, 142, 145, 163, 2:26, 49, 161]. He exchanged land with John Combe, Phinehas Pratt and John Barnes [PCR 1:25, 30, 12:197].

On 14 September 1638 Mr. Thomas Prence purchased two acres of land on the south side of the second brook from Ellinor Billington and Francis Billington [PCR 12:37]. On 29 May 1643 he contributed 6d. to buy drumheads and £14 to buy bread [PTR 1:14-15]. About 1645 Mr. Thomas Prence acknowledged that he had sold to Mr. Edmond Freeman all his house and garden place and barn in Plymouth, ten acres of upland in the woods and five acres in the second brook, and eleven acres by John Barnes's land and one farm at Joanes River [PCR 12:129-30]. On 11 July 1649 Mr. Thomas Prence of Nawset, gentleman, sold to Jacob Cooke of Plymouth, planter, forty acres of upland in Rocky Noocke with three acres of marsh [PCR 12:175]. On 13 July 1649 Mr. Thomas Prence of Nawset, gentleman, sold to Richard Church of Nawset, carpenter, and to Anthony Snow of Marshfield, feltmaker, upland and marsh at Marshfield and forty acres of upland received by grant dated 5 February 1647 [PCR 12:176].

On 13 June 1655 Thomas Prence of Eastham sold to "Mr. Edward Buckley" of Marshfield five acres of marsh in Marshfield [MD 9:234, citing PCLR 2:1:155]. On 12 July 1655 Thomas Prence of Eastham sold to John Browne of Rehoboth "my half share with other purchasers situate and being near Rehoboth and Sowamsett" [MD 10:16, citing PCLR 2:1:159]. On 31 August 1658 Thomas Prence sold to John Cooke of Plymouth two acres of marsh meadow at Jones River [MD 13:44, citing PCLR 2:2:6].

On 5 February 1665 the town of Plymouth granted Mr. Thomas Prence six acres of upland meadow on the west side of Jones River meadow and on 16 March 1667[/8] twelve acres more there [PTR 1:83, 97].

On 8 December 1662 Thomas Prence deeded to "my son [i.e., stepson] Samuell Freeman and Mercye his wife the house and land Samuel now dwelleth in" [PCLR 3:201]. On 20 September 1664 Thomas Prence deeded to John Freeman of Eastham "all that his upland and meadow lying on the southeast side of great Namskekett, viz: a parcel of upland containing eight acres ... with five acres of meadow"; also two acres of meadow with ten acres of upland [PCLR 3:28]. On 14 November 1669 Thomas Prence exchanged one hundred acres "of upland lying upon Pachague Neck on the southerly side of Teticutt River" with "Mrs. Alice Bradford the executrix of Mr. William Bradford," receiving in return "a half share of Purchase Land at Satuckett, be it forty-five acres more or less, and also the one-half of twenty-five acres of meadow" [PCLR 3:171]. On 2 May 1670 Thomas Prence of Plymouth, Gent., sold to Thomas Paine of Eastham, cooper, "all my one-half share of Purchase Land at Paomett," with the consent of "Mrs. Prence" [PCLR 5:480]. On 25 July 1672 Thomas Prence, Esquire, Governor of New Plymouth, deeded to John Freeman Sr. of Eastham "one parcel of land containing thirty acres"; "another parcel of land containing eight acres ... of swamp and upland"; "one other parcel of marshland, containing twenty-four acres"; "also forty acres of upland"; "also [another] forty acres of upland"; "also fifteen acres of upland"; and "also five acres of upland" [PCLR 3:278].

In his will, dated 13 March 1672/3 and proved 5 June 1673, "Thomas Prence being at present weak in body" bequeathed to "Mary my beloved wife ... such household goods of any kind as were hers before we married, returned to her again, after my decease, and if any of them be much impaired or be wanting, that she shall make it good out of my estate in such goods as she desireth"; to "my said loving wife my best bed and the furniture thereunto appertaining, and the court cupboard that now stands in the new parlor with the cloth and cushion that is on it, and an horse and three cows such as she shall make choice of, and four of my best silver spoons, and also during her natural life, I give her the rents and profits of my part of the mill at Satuckett, and of the lands adjoining, and my debts and legacies being first paid, I do further give unto my said wife a full third part of my personal estate that remains"; to "my daughter Jane the wife of Marke Snow my silver tankard"; to "my daughter Mary Tracye a silver wine cup and a dram cup"; to "my daughter Sarah Howes my biggest beer bowl"; to "my daughter Elizabeth Howland my silver salt"; to "my grandchild Theophilus Mayo and to the heirs of his body lawfully begotten, the one half of my lands and meadows at or near Namassakett in the township of Middleberry"; "I give unto my grandchild Sussanna Prence the daughter of my deceased son Thomas Prence, the other half of my above mentioned lands and meadows at Middleberry aforesaid"; in the absence of an heir of these grandchildren, the abovesaid lands to revert to "my daughters, or such of them as shall be then surviving, or their heirs if all my daughters should be dead"; "to my said grandchild Theophilus, and to his heirs forever, my part of the mill and lands adjacent at Satuckett after the decease of my wife, and this I give for his encouragement to proceed in learning"; residue divided between "my seven daughters, Hannah, Marcye, Jane, Mary, Elizabeth, Sarah and Judith, and my above mentioned grandchild Susanna Prence"; Mary "my beloved wife sole executrix"; "my loving friend Major Josias Winslow to be helpful therein." A codicil to the will bequeathed "to Mr. John Freeman *Speed's Cronicle* and *Wilson's Dictionary* and the abridgement, and *Simpson's History of the Church* and *Newman's Concordance*"; to "my daughter Elizabeth Howland a black heifer"; a little yellow heifer to Lydia Sturtivant; to "my daughter Jane a bed, and another bed to my daughter Elizabeth Howland"; to "my grandson Theophilus Mayo all my books fit for him in learning, and if he carry it well to his grandmother I then give him a bed"; also "I desire my brother Thomas Clarke to be helpful to my wife as need may require" [MD 3:204-06, citing PCPR 3:1:58-59].

The inventory of "Thomas Prence Esqr. lately deceased" was taken 23 April 1673 and totalled £422 10s. 7d. [MD 3:206-16, citing PCPR 3:1:60-70]. Real estate was listed at the end of the inventory, but unvalued: "one hundred acres of land lying in the town of Middleberry at or near Winnapaukett pond and the brook going from it"; "one share of meadow lying in a certain tract of meadow called the Major's meadow that lieth upon Namassakett River, betwixt the pond and the weir"; "one hundred acres of land lying on the northerly side of Teticutt River"; "a considerable tract of land that lieth on the easterly side of Namassakett River between Winnapauckett pond and a tract of land called the Major's purchase"; "eight acres of land on the westerly side of Namassakett River"; "a grant of ten or twelve acres of land and a small parcel of meadow at Jones River meadow in the township of Plymouth"; "ten acres of land lying on the south side of a cart way that goeth to Lakenham, called Prence bottom in Plymouth"; "the one half of fifty or sixty acres of land and three acres of meadow between him and Major Winslow in Middleberry"; "twenty acres of land and three acres of meadow at Tonsett in the township of Eastham"; "eight acres of land lying on Pochey Island in the aforesaid Eastham"; and "one fourth part of a mill at Satuckett anc lands adjoining to it" [MD 3:215-16].

On 10 June 1673 John Freeman, Jonathan Sparrow, John Tracy, Mark Snow, Jeremiah Howes, Arthur Howland and Isaac Barker receipted tc "our mother-in-law Mrs. Mary Prence late wife and executrix to our father Thomas Prence Esquire deceased" for their shares of the estate ol Thomas Prence [MD 33:97-100 (with photograph of the unrecordec original)].

On 10 June 1676 Josiah Winslow, Esquire, "attorney for ... Susanna Prence at Catheren Gate near the Tower in London ..., singlewoman"; and John Freeman in the right of Mary his wife and as attorney foı "Mary Prence, relict and executrix of the last will and testament of the honored Thomas Prence, late Governor ... deceased," and of Jonathan Sparrow and Hannah his wife, Marke Snow and Jane his wife, and Jeremiah Howes and Sarah his wife, daughters of the said Thomas Prence; and John Tracye and Mary his wife, Arthur Howland and Elizabeth his wife, and Isacke Barker and Judith his wife, daughters alsc of the said Thomas Prence, sold to Constant Southworth, treasurer and agent of Plymouth Colony, "all that our dwelling house, messuage oı tenement" in Plymouth "at a place commonly called Plain Dealing"; signed by Josiah Winslow, John Freeman, John Trasye, Arthur Howland and Isack Barker [PCLR 4:124].

BIRTH: About 1600 based on age at death, son of Thomas Prence, carriage-maker, of Lechdale, Gloucestershire. In his will, dated 31 July 1630 and proved 14 August 1630, Thomas Prence, carriage-maker, ol Lechdale, Gloucestershire, left a legacy to his son Thomas Prence "now remaining in New England in the parts beyond the seas" [EIHC 7:103-04, citing PCC 70 Scroope].
DEATH: Plymouth 29 March 1673, in his 73rd year ("Thomas Prence, Esquire, Governor of the jurisdiction of New Plymouth, died the 29th ol March, 1673, and was interred the 8th of April following. After he had served God in the office of Governor sixteen years, or near thereunto, he finished his course in the 73 year of his life. He was a worthy gentleman, very pious, and very able for his office, and faithful in the discharge thereof, studious of peace, a wellwiller to all that feared God, and a terror to the wicked. His death was much lamented, and his body honorably buried at Plymouth the day and year above mentioned" [PCR 8:34; see also MD 3:203-04]).
MARRIAGE: (1) Plymouth 5 August 1624 Patience Brewster [Prince 229], daughter of WILLIAM BREWSTER; she died late in 1634 (in a letter to his son John Winthrop Jr. dated 12 December 1634, JOHN WINTHROP reported that "the pestilent fever hath taken away some at Plimouth, among others Mr. Prence the governor his wife ..." [WP 3:177]).

(2) Plymouth 1 April 1635 Mary Collier [PCR 1:34], daughter of WILLIAM COLLIER; she died perhaps by 1644.

our ancestress in the (Quick) Freeman line ✓

(3) After 1 July 1644 (when she witnessed Rev. George Phillips's will as Apphia Freeman in Watertown [NEHGR 3:78]) and certainly some considerable time before 8 December 1662 (when Thomas gave land to her son) Apphia (Quick) Freeman, former wife of SAMUEL FREEMAN, daughter of William Quick of London [TAG 11:178].

(4) After 26 February 1665[/6] and by 1 August 1668 Mary (_____) Howes, widow of Thomas Howes [MD 6:157-65, 230-35]. She died 9 December 1695 [MD 6:230, citing YarTR 3:328].

CHILDREN:

With first wife Patience Brewster:

i REBECCA, b. say 1625 (living at time of cattle division in 1627 [PCR 12:10]); m. Plymouth 22 April 1646 Edmund Freeman [PCR 2:98].

ii THOMAS, b. say 1627 (in the 1627 Plymouth division of cattle is a second Thomas Prence, inserted at the end of the tenth lot; this may be the son Thomas Prence, born at about the time this list was compiled, and added separately from his family); m. _____ _____ (an appendix to the fifth edition of Morton's Memorial refers to letters from the widow and daughter of this Thomas Prence, in London, to his father, the immigrant [pp. 424-25]; these letters have apparently never been published, but copies of some of them are held by the Massachusetts Historical Society).

iii HANNAH, b. say 1629; m. (1) Eastham 13 February 1649/50 Nathaniel Mayo [PCR 8:26]; m. (2) by 1671 Jonathan Sparrow [MD 14:193-203].

✓ iv MERCY, b. say 1631; m. Eastham 13 February 1649/50 John Freeman [PCR 8:26].

With second wife

v JANE, b. Duxbury 1 November 1637 [MD 6:230]; m. Eastham 9 January 1660[/1] Mark Snow [PCR 8:28], son of NICHOLAS SNOW.

vi MARY, b. say 1639; m. by about 1661 John Tracy [Tracy Gen 26].

Perhaps with third wife

Apphia (Quick) (Freeman) Prence

vii JUDITH, b. say 1645; m. (1) Plymouth 28 December 1665 Isaac Barker [PCR 8:31], son of ROBERT BARKER; m. (2) after 1693 William Tubbs [PPR 1:168; PLR 2:123].

viii ELIZABETH, b. about spring 1647 [WP 5:169]; m. Marshfield 9 December 1667 Arthur Howland [MarVR 10], son of Arthur Howland [NGSQ 71:90-91].

3 daughters

ix SARAH, b. about 1648 ("departed this life March the 3d 1706 in the 60th year of her age," tombstone, Yarmouth, which conflicts with YarVR [NEHGR 59:217]); m. by about 1669 Jeremiah Howes (birth of child estimated by child's date of marriage), her stepbrother [MD 6:233; NEHGR 59:217-18].

COMMENTS: For many years it was believed that Prence had married only three times and that his last wife was "Mary" Freeman, but this was straightened out in 1904 by Ella Florence Elliott, who divided the erroneous construct into its proper wholes, revealing divorcee Apphia Freeman and widow Mary Howes as Prence's last two of four wives [MD 6:230-35].

Establishing the probable date of marriage for Apphia and Thomas Prence has significant implications for the parentage of Prence's last three children. Apphia is last seen as a Freeman 1 July 1644, about a year before the birth of Prence's seventh child, and at the end of a six-year hiatus in the birthdates of his children. She is called "Mrs. Freeman" as late as 15 October 1646 in a deed where she appears as an abutter, but this does not necessarily imply that she had not remarried by this date, since it was not unusual for archaic bounds to be used in this sort of description [SLR 1:78].

In a letter dated at Plymouth 8 June 1647, Thomas Prence wrote to John Winthrop that "since my parting company [with you] I have almost met with Jacob's trial in his travel between Bethel and Ephrath: God's having been heavy upon my wife and that for diverse months and is not yet removed" [WP 5:169]. In Genesis 35:16-19 Jacob's favorite wife Rachel died between Bethel and Ephrath after giving birth to a son she named Benoni, but he called Benjamin. Prence here is referring to the birth of his own daughter Elizabeth, apparently a difficult childbirth.

On 6 March 1637/8, having been elected governor, Thomas Prence was excused from the requirement that the governor live in Plymouth, and was permitted to retain his residence in Duxbury [PCR 1:79]. When he was again elected governor, in 1657, he was allowed to maintain his residence in Eastham, but in 1663 the court ordered that the governor's house at Plymouth be enlarged, and by 1665 Prence again became a resident of Plymouth [Dawes-Gates 2:684].

BIBLIOGRAPHIC NOTE: Perhaps due to the fact that Thomas Prence had no grandsons that carried the Prence surname, little attention has been directed to this family. A very brief account of his family was prepared in 1852 by David Hamblen and a more substantial treatment was published in 1931 by Mary Walton Ferris [Dawes-Gates 2:682-94].

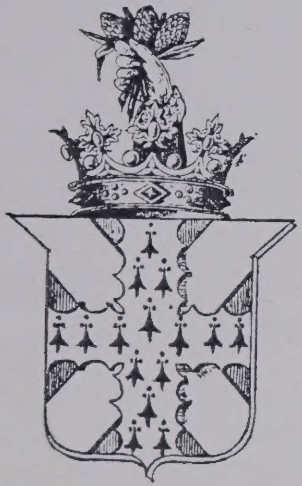
An example of Prince/Prence Arms not claimed to be ours.

Prince

The emigrant was *John* PRINCE, Ruling Elder of the Church of Hull, Massachusetts, who came from a family ranking among the gentry of Co. Berks, England.

His father was the *Rev. John* PRINCE, *Rector of East Shefford*, in the above-mentioned county; and the English heraldic works show that the arms we give were granted in 1584 to the PRINCES *of Shrewsbury and Abbey Foregate*, Co. Salop.

A member of the American family, the *Rev. Thomas* PRINCE, obtained in 1710 an official copy of the original grant.



ARMS: Gules, a saltire, or, a cross, engrailed, ermine, over all.

CREST: Out of a ducal coronet, or, a cubit arm, habited, gules, cuffed, ermine, holding in the hand, proper, three pineapples, gold, stalked and leaved, vert.

No example of Governor Prence's Arms has survived, but his family was armigerous – he inherited his father's signet ring, as shown below.

The English Ancestry and Homes of the Pilgrim Fathers – Charles A Banks (GPC)

Clippings

Gov. Prence had 9 daughters but no sons to carry on the name. Therefore, no long Prence Genealogy exists

Prence

THOMAS PRENCE

HE was the son of Thomas Prince of All Hallows, Barking, London, carriage maker, and had just reached his majority when he emigrated. His father had lived at Lechlade, Gloucestershire, before coming to London, but the parish records, such as survive in transcripts, do not indicate that this was the original home of the family. Interesting contemporary letters concerning the father and grandfather of Governor Prence are in the collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society. Thomas Prince, Senior, of All Hallows, in his will of 1630 mentions "my son Thomas Prence now remayninge in New England in parts beyond seas" (*P. C. C. 70, Scrope*). As he bequeaths a "seale Ringe of Gold" to his son, it may be presumed that the family was armigerous. The future Governor was brought up in the neighborhood whence came so many of the passengers of the first two ships, and the *Mayflower* must have taken her passengers in sight of his home, near the Tower.

The proper spelling of this surname is Prince and it was so written by his immediate and collateral forebears, but he chose to write it as Prence. He lived in the hamlet of Ratcliffe, parish of Stepney, as a boy and probably remained there with his parents until his emigration.

Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England - James Savage, Vol III ; 477

PRENCE, §‡THOMAS, Plymouth, came in the Fortune, 1621, was s. of Thomas of Lechlade, in Co. Gloucester, near Cricklade, in Wilts, m. 5 Aug. 1624, Patience, d. of Elder William Brewster, had Thomas, Rebecca, Hannah, Mercy, and Sarah, of none of wh. are dates of b. kn. His w. d. 1634, and he rem. to Duxbury, m. 1 Apr. 1635, Mary, d. of William Collier, and was chos. Gov. that yr. and for two or three yrs. aft. an Assist. and Gov. again in 1638, afterwards an Assist. many yrs. By this w. he had Jane, b. 1 Nov. 1637; and prob. Mary, Eliz. and Judith; in 1645 rem. to Eastham, there again chos. Gov. 1658, and there his w. d. A third w. Mary in 1662, was wid. of Samuel Freeman, ✓ sen. and he rem. again, 1663, to Plymouth, there he d. 29 Mar. 1673, aged 72, leav. wid. Mary. The s. Thomas went to Eng. m. and d. young, leav. wid. and d. Susanna. Of the ds. all were m. and we kn. the dates of all but one, and the name of her h. is obscure, even after the inquiries of Mr. Hamblen. Rebecca m. 22 Apr. 1646, Edmund Freeman, jun.; Hannah m. 13 Feb. 1650, Nathaniel Mayo, and sec. h. Jonathan Sparrow; Mercy m. 13 or 14 Feb. 1650, John Freeman; ✓ Sarah m. 1650, Jeremiah Howe of Yarmouth; Jane m. 9 Jan. 1661, Mark Snow; Mary m. John Tracy of Duxbury; Eliz. m. 9 Dec. 1667, Arthur Howland, jr.; and Judith m. 28 Dec. 1685, Isaac Barker of Duxbury. See Morton's Mem. by Davis, 421–5; Mitchell's Bridgewater; Winsor; and Geneal. Reg. VI. 234.

Pioneers of Massachusetts Charles Henry Pope - pg 372

PRENCE, PRINCE,

Mr. Thomas, gent., came in the Fortune in 1621 to Plymouth. Was chosen governor in 1633; re-elected repeatedly. A partner in the Trading Co. [B.] "A wellwiller to all that feared God and a terrour to the wicked." [Plym. Col. Rec.] Rem. to Eastham before 1649. Wife [Patience] d. in 1634. [B.] He m. April 1, 1635, Mary Collier. Ch. Rebecca, (m. 22 April, 1646, Edmund Freeman, Jr.,) Mercy, (m. Feb. 13, 1649, John Freeman,) Hannah, (m. Feb. 13, 1649, Nathaniel Mayo,) Jane, (m. 9 Jan. 1660, Mark Snow,) Judith, (m. 28 Dec. 1665, Isaac Barker). Other ch. named in the will.

He d. March 29, 1673, in his 73d year. Will dated 13 March, prob. 5 June, 1673, beq. to wife Mary goods that were hers before marriage; to his seven daus. Hannah Marcye, Jane Marsh, Jane, wife of Mark Snow, Mary Tracye, Sary Howes, Elizabeth Howland and Sary Howes, Elizabeth Howland and Judith Barker; to gr. ch. Theophilus Mayo and Susanna Prence, dau. of his son Thomas, deceased; to son John Freeman. Bro. Thomas Clarke to be a help to the wife.

N. B. Thomas Prince of All Saints Barking, London, carriage maker, in his will, dated 31 July, prob. 14 Aug. 1630, beq. to "my son Thomas *Prence* now in New England" a silver bowl and a seal ring of gold, to be delivered to him at his next return; also beq. to dau. Rebecca, wife of Thomas Dipple, citizen and merchant tailor, of London, etc. [Em. and W.]

Mayflower Planters by Leon C Hills —(GDC)

PRENCE

I. **Prence**, Gov. Thomas¹, born (?) Lechlade Co., Gloucester, England, 1600-1, died Mar. 29, 1673, will dated Mar. 13, 1672-3, proved June 5, 1673; married 1st at Plymouth (it being the 9th marriage in the Colony), Patience² **Brewster**, Aug. 5, 1624, died 1634, daughter of William¹ **Brewster**; married 2nd Mary² **Collier**, Apr. 1, 1635, died before Dec., 1662, daughter of William¹ **Collier** of Duxbury; married 3rd Apphia (Quicke) **Freeman** before Dec. 8, 1662, she was the widow of Samuel **Freeman**, Sr.; married 4th Mrs. Mary **Howes** 1665-68, died Dec. 9, 1695, widow of Thomas **Howes** of Yarmouth.

He was another able business man to arrive in Plymouth on the "Fortune" in 1621, and became Governor of Plymouth Colony for 20 years, serving at times from 1634 to 1673. He followed his father-in-law, William Brewster, to Duxbury in 1632, and finally removed to Nauset (Eastham) in 1644 with six other families, returning later to Plymouth where he died.

CHILDREN BY PATIENCE BREWSTER

a. Rebecca, b. before 1627; d. before July 18, 1681; m. Edmund **Freeman**.
✓ b. Merey, b. (?) 1631; d. Sept. 28, 1711; m. John **Freeman**.
c. Hannah, b. ; d. before Nov. 23, 1698; m. 1st Nathaniel **Mayo**; m. 2nd Jonathan **Sparrow**.
d. Thomas, b. ; ; d. before Mar. 13, 1672; m. had family in England.

CHILDREN BY MARY COLLIER

e. Jane, b. Nov. 1, 1637; d. ; m. Mark **Snow**.
f. Mary, b. ; d. ; m. John **Tracy**.
g. Sarah, b. 1643-6; d. Mar. 3, 1706-7; m. Jeremiah **Howes**.
h. Elizabeth, b. ; d. ; m. Arthur **Howland**.
i. Judith, b. ; d. ; m. 1st Isaac **Barker**; m. 2nd William **Tubbs**.

Note Later researchers are of the opinion that the last three daughters were by Apphia (Quicke) Prence, divorced wife of Samuel Freeman of Watertown (both parents of Saml Jr, our ancestor in either line)

THOMAS PRENCE

PLYMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS

ORIGIN

✓ Thomas Prence, a carriage-maker from Lechdale, co. Gloucester, England, settled in All Saints Parish, Barking, London. His will, made 31 July 1630, proved 14 Aug. 1630, named his daughters Katherine Crayford and Rebecca Diple, and gave legacies to his son Thomas Prence, "now remayninge in New England in the pts beyond the seas." Lechdale was not the original home of the ✓Prince family, which is believed to have been armigerous, and it was probably not the birth-place of the son Thomas.[a]

I. GOVERNOR THOMAS PRENCE[b]

Thomas^1 Prence, born in England about 1600, came to Plymouth in the *Fortune* in 1621. Here he married first, 5 Aug. 1624, **Patience Brewster**, daughter of Elder William, and sister of his fellow-passenger on the *Fortune*, Jonathan Brewster. By 1632 he had followed the Brewsters to Duxbury, Mass., where Patience died in 1634. He married second, 1 Apr. 1635, **Mary Collier**, daughter of William. He married third, before 8 Dec. 1662, **Apphia (Quicke) Freeman**, widow of Samuel Freeman, Sr. He married fourth, about 1667, **Mary (———) Howes**, widow of Thomas Howes of Yarmouth; she died 9 Dec. 1695. He died at Plymouth, 29 Mar. 1673.

In 1632, Thomas was elected an Assistant of Plymouth Colony, and held that office continuously until 1657, except while serving as Governor in 1634 and again in 1638. In 1644 he was among the settlers at Nauset on Cape Cod, which was soon renamed Eastham. He was Treasurer, 1636-7; a member of the Council of War, 1637 (Pequot War), and several times thereafter; and Commissioner for the United Colonies, 1645, 1650, 1653-58, 1661-63, and 1670-72. Although a resident of Eastham, the stipulation that the governor must reside in Plymouth was waived in his behalf, and he held that office (in addition to the two earlier terms) from 1657 until his death in 1673. A few years before his death, probably by 1663, he again established his residence in Plymouth.

The services of Mr. Prence to the infant colony were very great, and in performing them he displayed no mean order of ability. He was one of the eight men who in 1627 personally assumed the debt of the colony to the English stock company of "adventurers" who had financed the planting of the colony. This was done for the public benefit and at their own private risk, and the debt was finally liquidated and the colony saved only after the lapse of nearly a score of years and at considerable loss to the public-spirited "underwriters" of the debt.

As Governor, Mr. Prence showed political wisdom, and sometimes political generosity, in steering the helm of state; the only adverse criticism which (by present-day standards) could be made of his administration was his intolerance towards the Quakers, but in this he shared the prejudice of most Puritans of his own generation. The two greatest achievements of his administration were perhaps the establishment of free schools, and his fairness in dealing with the Indians, which helped greatly to keep Plymouth Colony clear of those Indian troubles which vexed some of the colonies.

His will, dated 13 Mar. 1672, codicil 28 Mar. 1672, proved 5 June 1673, named his wife Mary; daughters Marcye, Jane wife of Marke Snow, Mary Tracye, Sarah Howes, Elizabeth Howland, and Judith Barker; grandchild Theophilus Mayo; grandchild Susannah Prence, daughter of deceased son Thomas Prence; son, John Freeman, to have Speed's Chronicle, Wilson's Dictionary, and other books; Lydia Sturtivant to have a little yellow heifer; and he desired "my brother Thomas Clarke to be healpfull to my wife." He left a large estate, inventoried 23 Apr. 1673 at £422.10.07, less debts of £54.09.06, but this was exclusive of his large holdings of realty.[c]

A receipt was given, 10 June 1673, by John Freeman, Jonathan Sparrow, Jeremiah Howes, John Tracie, Mark Snowe, Arthur Howland, and Isaac Barker, to their mother-in-law [stepmother], Mary Prence, late wife and executrix "to our Father Thomas Prence Esqui^r Deceased."[d]

Children of Gov. Thomas and Patience (Brewster) Prence:

i. Rebecca^2, b. [say 1627]; d. abt. 1650; m. 22 Apr. 1646, **Edmund Freeman**.
ii. Hannah, b. [say 1629]; d. before Nov. 1698; m. (1) 13 Feb. 1649/50, **Nathaniel Mayo**; m. (2) by 1671, **Jonathan Sparrow**.
✓+ iii. Mercy, b. abt. 1631; d. at Eastham, 28 Sept. 1711, aged 80; m. 13 Feb. 1649/50, **John Freeman**.
iv. Thomas, b. [say 1633]; d. in England before 13 Mar. 1672; m. ———.

Children of Gov. Thomas and Mary (Collier) Prence:

v. Jane, b. at Duxbury, 1 Nov. 1637; m. at Eastham, 9 Jan. 1660/1, **Mark Snow**.
vi. Mary, m. **John Tracy**, of Duxbury.
vii. Judith, m. (1) 28 Dec. 1665, **Isaac Barker**; m. (2) in 1691, **William Tubbs**.
viii. Elizabeth, m. 9 Dec. 1667, **Arthur Howland**, of Marshfield.
ix. Sarah, b. [say 1646]; d. at North Dennis, 3 Mar. 1706/7 in her 60th year; m. **Jeremiah Howes**, her stepbrother.

---

[a] *Essex Institute Historical Collections*, 17:103-4.
[b] Mary Walton Ferris, *Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines*, 2:683-94, *q.v.* for many references.
[c] *The Mayflower Descendant*, 3:203-16.
[d] *Ibid.*, 33:97-100.

PRENCE

Classification: Maternal Line

IMMIGRANT ANCESTOR: THOMAS PRENCE
Came To America On "THE FORTUNE", In A.D. 1621

*I. (1-a) (a) THOMAS PRENCE/PRINCE, Immigrant Ancestor, b. in Lecklade, County Gloucester, near Cricklade, in Wilts, England, abt. 1600/1601, and was the sone of Thomas Prince of All Hallows, Barking, London, England, who was a carriage maker, who was living at Lecklade, Gloucestershire, near Cricklade in Wilts, England, when young Thomas was born. Later the family lived at the hamlet of Ratcliff, parish of Stepney, in England, before moving to London. The proper spelling of the surname was "Prince", but young Thomas chose to spell it as "Prence." In London, young Thomas Prence grew up in the neighborhood abt. a quarter of a mile from Henage House, near the Tower of London, and in sight of the place from where the first two ships, and the "Mayflower", must have departed for America, as they were just outside London Wall, beyond Aldgate. It was in this same Ward that Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his family lived, and also the Guildhall of the Ironmongers Company to which Thomas Weston, Chief of the Merchant Adventurers who financed the voyage of the "Mayflower", belonged, was located there, so early in his youth, Thomas Prence became inspired to seek his fortune in America, and by coincidence just as he turned 21, he came to America on "The Fortune" in 1621. Thomas Prince, Sr., of All Hallows, in his Will dated 1630, mentioned his son "Thomas Prence, now remayninge in New England in parts beyond seas", and bequeathed a "seale Ringe of Gold" to him, indicating that the family was armigerous. Thomas Prence, Immigrant Ancestor, a Governor of Plymouth Colony, d. Plymouth, Massachusetts, 29 March, 1673, m. (1), in Plymouth, Massachusetts, with Elder William Brewster performing the ceremony, in the 9th marriage in Plymouth Colony, 5 August, 1624, Patience Brewster, b. Scrooby, England, d. Plymouth, Massachusetts, not long before 12 December, 1634, and they had issue, of whom more later. Patience Brewster was the dau. of Elder William Brewster and his wife Mary Wentworth, who was called "Elder Dame Brewster", both of whom came to Plymouth, Massachusetts, on the "Mayflower" in 1620, with their 2 sons, Love and Wrestling Brewster, who were the brothers of Patience Brewster. Elder William Brewster, was the Ruling Elder, and first Minister of the First Congregational Church in Plymouth, which was dedicated 11 December, 1620, and was Chaplain of the Plymouth Military Company, and served in many official capacities and offices, being much loved and respected. Patience Brewster came to Plymouth Colony in 1623 on "The Ann/Anne", and was said to have been her father's favorite child, or at least his favorite dau. After her death in December, 1634, Thomas Prence m. (2), in Plymouth, Massachusetts, 1 April, 1635, Mary Collier, dau. of Mr. William Collier, Immigrant Ancestor, of Duxbury, Massachusetts, and she was b. in England, d. in Eastham, Massachusetts, after 1658, and before 8 December, 1662, and they had issue, of whom more later. Thomas Prence m. (3), Eastham, Massachusetts, 8 December, 1662, Mary/Apphia (Quicke) Freeman, widow of Samuel Freeman, Sr., b. ___, d. ___, prob. after February, 1665/1666, but before 1 August, 1668, and there were no children mentioned of this union. He m. (4), abt. 1 August, 1668, Mary (___) Howe, widow of Thomas Howe of Yarmouth, Massachusetts, and she was b. ___, d. after 29 March, 1673, as Governor Thomas Prence, d. 29 March, 1673, and he was survived by his widow, Mary (___) Howe Prence. There were no children mentioned of this union also. Thomas Prence came to Plymouth, Massachusetts, in 1621 on "The Fortune", and moved to Duxbury, Massachusetts in 1635, later moving to Eastham, Massachusetts, in 1644. His farm in Eastham, was described as extensive, "embracing some 200 acres of the best land." After his marriage to Mary Collier, who was his 2nd wife, Thomas Prence was chosen Governor of Plymouth Colony, and they moved to Eastham, Massachusetts in 1644, where he was again chosen as Governor in 1658. Governor Thomas Prence later returned to Plymouth, Massachusetts, where after many years of devoted public service to Plymouth Colony, he d. 29 March, 1673, and is bur. there. The children of Governor Thomas Prence by all of his marriages were as follows:

This is my [illegible]

Children by 1st marriage to Patience Brewster, 5 August, 1624, were:

1-a-1) 1. Thomas Prence, b. Plymouth, Massachusetts, d. England, before 13 March, 1672, m. England, ___ ___, b. ___, d. after 13 March, 1672, and they had a dau. named Susannah Prence. It was noted that he removed to England, where he d. young, leaving a widow, and a dau. named Susannah Prence.

(1-a-2) 2. Rebecca Prence, b. Plymouth, Massachusetts, before 1 June, 1627, d. before 18 July, 1651, m. 22 April, 1646, Edmund Freeman, b. in England, d. ___, and he was the son of Edmund Freeman, Immigrant, and Elizabeth ___, his wife. Rebecca Prence and her husband Edmund Freeman had 1 child only, a dau., as follows:

our Mercy Prence 2nd child m John Freeman

1. Rebecca Freeman, b. ___, d. 16 April, 1738, m. Ezra Perry, b. ___, d. 31 January, 1729/1730, and they had 7 children.

Mercy's [illegible]

a-3) 3. Hannah Prence, b. Plymouth, Massachusetts, d. before 23 November, 1698, m. (1), 13 February, 1650, Nathaniel Mayo, b. ___, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 1661/1662, Will proved 4 March, 1661/1662, and they had issue, of whom more later. He was the son of Reverend John Mayo, Immigrant Ancestor, and his wife Thomasine (___) Mayo. After the death of her 1st husband Nathaniel Mayo, Hannah Prence m. (2), as his 2nd wife, Captain Jonathan Sparrow, b. ___, d. 21 March, 1706/1707, at the age of 73 years. They also had issue. All 11 of her children by both marriages were born there, for during both of her marriages, Hannah Prence resided in Eastham, Massachusetts, and where like her illustrious father, her 1st husband Nathaniel Mayo was a prominent townsman. and her 2nd husband Captain Jonathan Sparrow, who was the son of Richard Sparrow, and his wife Pandora was a deputy, representative, magistrate there for many years, and was also a military man. Although Hannah Prenc had 5 children by her 2nd marriage to Captain Jonathan Sparrow, we are listing here only the 6 children of Hannah Prence and her 1st husband Nathaniel Mayo, who were as follows:

Children by her 1st marriage to Nathaniel Mayo, were:

(1-a-3a) 1. Thomas Mayo, b. 7 December, 1650, d. 22 April, 1729, m. 13 June, 1677, Barbara Knowles, b. 28 September, 1656, d. ___. She was the dau. of Richard Knowles, Immigrant, and his wife Ruth (Bower) Knowles, and she was the sister of John Knowles, who m. Apphia Bangs, a twin dau. of Edward Bangs, Immigrant Ancest Thomas Mayo and his wife Barbara Knowles, had 10 children.

Note: For further information regarding the children of Thomas Mayo and his wife Barbara Knowles, please refer to CHAPTER XVI, MAYO, I. (a), specifically to (a-5-1) and proceed through (a-5-1a), (a-5-1b), (a-5-1c), (a-5-1d), (a-5-1e), (a-5-1f), (a-5-1g).

(1-a-3b) 2. Nathaniel Mayo, b. 16 November, 1652, d. 30 November, 1709, m. (1), 28 June, 1678, Elizabeth Wickson/Wixam, and they had issue; m. (2), 10 June, 1708, Mercy (___) Young, widow of Nathaniel Young, b. ___, d. ___. No mention made of any children of this union.

Note: For further information regarding the children of Nathaniel Mayo and his 1st wife Elizabeth Wickson/Wixam, please refer to CHAPTER XVI, MAYO, I. (a), specifically to (a-5-2) and proceed through (a-5-2a).

(1-a-3c) 3. Samuel Mayo, b. 12 October, 1655, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 29 October, 1738, m. Ruth Hopkins, b. ___, d. ___, dau. of Giles/Gyles Hopkins, Mayflower Passenger, and his wife Catherine Welden; and granddau. of Mr. Stephen Hopkins, Immigrant Ancestor, Mayflower Passenger, 14th Signer of "The Mayflower Compact", and his 1st wife Constance Dudley, and they had issue.

Note: For further information regarding the childre of Samuel Mayo and his wife Ruth Hopkins, please refer to CHAPTER XVI, MAYO, I. (a), specifically to (a-5-3) and proceed through (a-5-3a), (a-5-3b), (a-5-3c), and also (a-5-3c-1).

3rd child

(1-a-3d) 4. Hannah Mayo, b. 17 October, 1657, d. ___.
(1-a-3e) 5. Theophilus Mayo, b. 12/17 December, 1659, d. ___.
(1-a-3f) (3) 6. Bathshua Mayo, b. 28 September, 1662, d. ___.

(1-a-4) ✓ 4. Mercy Prence, b. Plymouth, Massachusetts, 1631, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 28 September, 1711, aged 80 years, and is bur. at Eastham, Massachusetts, m. 13 February, 1650

✓ Major John Freeman, b. England, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 28 October, 1719, in the 98th year of his life, and is bur. in Eastham, Massachusetts. Mercy Prence, and her husband Major John Freeman had a double wedding with her sister, Hannah Prence and her 1st husband Nathaniel Mayo. Major John Freeman was also the brother of Edmund Freeman, Jr., who m. Rebecca Prence, sister of Mercy and Hannah Prence.

✓ Major John Freeman was mentioned in the early records of Eastham, Massachusetts, as having been an early settler with Governor Thomas Prence. He was considered one of the founding fathers of Eastham, and was prominent in its public affairs, serving as deputy for 8 years from 1654; selectman from 1663 for 10 years, Assistant from 1666 for several years, and was appointed on 7 December, 1692, to a Bench of the Court of Common Pleas. He was a Deacon in the First Congregational Church of Eastham, and was always a large landholder. He served in the Indian Wars. Mercy Prence and her husband Major John Freeman had 11 children, and all of them were b. in Eastham, Massachusetts.

Note: The 5th child of Mercy Prence and her husband Major John Freeman was:

1-a-4a) 5. Lieutenant Edmund Freeman, b. June, 1657, d. Eastham, Massachusetts, 10 December, 1717, m. (1), Sarah Mayo, dau. of Samuel Mayo and his wife Thomasine (Lumpkin) Mayo; and she was b. Boston, Massachusetts, 1660, d. ___, and they had issue; he m. (2), Ruth Merrick, b. ___, d. ___, and they had issue. Lieutenant Edmund Freeman, resided in Eastham, Massachusetts, where he served many years as a selectman, and was a man of distinction. He was the father of 12 children, and 1 of them was:

1. Thankful Freeman, b. ___, d. ___, m. Jonathan Snow, b. ___, d. ___, and they had:
    1. Isaac Snow, b. ___, d. ___, m. Thankful King, b. ___, d. ___, and they had:
        1. Jonathan Snow, b. ___, d. ___, m. Hannah Burgess, b. ___, d. ___.

The 8th child of Mercy Prence and her husband Major John Freeman was:

'-a-4b) 8. Hannah Freeman, b. ___, d. 15 February, 1743/1744, at the age of 79 years, m. 14 April, 1681, John Mayo, b. 15 December, 1652, d. 1 February, 1726, and they had 8 children. John Mayo was first a resident of Hingham, Massachusetts, later moving to harwich, Massachusetts. He was representative to the General Court for 6 years, and town treasurer for 3 years.

Note: For further information regarding John Mayo, and his wife Hannah Freeman, and their 8 children, please refer to CHAPTER XVI, MAYO, and refer specifically to (a-1) 2. then

(I neglected to copy the next page at Salt Lake City)

"Cape Cod Library of Local History + Genealogy" - ed. by Leonard H. Smith

THE SETTLERS.

THOMAS PRENCE.

Thomas Prence was the most distinguished of the settlers of Eastham, though not the best educated. At the time of his removal in 1645, he was holding the position of an assistant to Gov. Bradford, and had twice been chosen governor of the infant colony —first election in 1634, and second election in 1638. He was a native of Lechlade, a parish in Gloucestershire, England, it is understood, and born about the year 1600. He came to Plymouth in the ship Fortune, in November, 1621. At the time of his removal he was residing in Duxbury. His farm at Eastham contained many acres. It was situated northwest of Town cove, in that part now included within the present town of Eastham. His house stood on the east side of the county road, near where Mr. E. Doane's house now stands. It is said his farm comprised the "richest land" in the place. The famous old pear tree planted by him while a resident, and which was blown down in 1849, stood but a few rods westward from the site of his house. He was a large land-owner. He owned land in what became afterwards Harwich and Truro, besides tracts at Tonset and other localities in the Colony. He disposed of most of his landed estate before his death. His tracts at Sauquatucket, now Brewster, which came to him by grant, on the account of having been a "Purchaser or Old-Comer," he sold to his son-in-law, Major John Freeman, in 1672. His "half share" at Paumet, both "purchased and unpurchased," lying between "Bound Brook," at Wellfleet, and "Eastern Harbor or Lovell's Creek," he sold to Mr. Thomas Paine in 1670.

Mr. Pratt, in his History of Eastham, says the homestead of Gov. Prence was given by will to his son-in-law, Samuel Freeman, but the statement is not supported by documentary evidence. Records show that Gov. Prence did sell to his "beloved son-in-law, Mr. Samuel Freeman, Jan. 12, 1671, for thirty pounds" his "house lot situated and being in the town of Eastham" and "containing eighteen acres of upland, be it more or less," bounded "at the northeasterly end" by a creek, together with other upland and meadows in other parts of the town. Records also show that Gov. Prence provided a place of abode for his son-in-law, Samuel Freeman and Mercy his wife, soon after their marriage, and that in December, 1662, it was conveyed to them. They were then residing upon it. It was the place the governor purchased of Mr. Josiah Cook, a "gentleman" of Eastham. The position of this house lot the writer cannot give, but undoubtedly it was near Gov. Prence's place.

Gov. Prence continued in the office of an assistant by successive elections till 1657, when he was unanimously elected to the office of governor, as successor to Gov. Bradford, who died that year. As the law required the governor to reside at the seat of government, a dispensation was obtained for him, and he was allowed to remain at Eastham, as he desired. Mrs. Bradford was engaged to entertain him and his assistants while at Court; an attendant was appointed to attend him in his journey to and from Plymouth, and Mr. Allyn of Barnstable was engaged to accommodate him and his attendant in his house with private rooms when passing "to and fro." In 1665, Gov. Prence removed to Plymouth, and occupied the place provided by the government at a place called Plain Dealing, which the late Judge John Davis, a native of Plymouth, says was "nearly two miles from the centre of the town on the road to Boston." The late William Russell in his Guide to Plymouth, says the place called Plain Dealing "extended it is believed to Kingston line"; and that Gov. Prence's house was near "Mr. Hedges," and in the vicinity of "Starts Hill." At this place, while occupying the gubernatorial chair, he died March 29, 1673, in his 73d year. He was "honorably interred at Plymouth, April 8th." Judge Davis says: "The Plymouth church records, in expressing Mr. Prence's character and his amiable and pleasant conversation, depart from their usual course by an indication of his personal appearance, from which it may be supposed that it was peculiarly dignified and striking. He was excellently qualified for the office of governor. He had a countenance full of majesty, and therein, as well as otherwise, was a terror to evil doers. Besides holding the office of governor, Mr. Prence was a great number of years an assistant of Gov. Bradford. He was one of the commissioners of the United Colonies many years; colonial treasurer and one of the council of war. He was one of those who stood bound to the adventures for the payment of the sum they demanded for their interest in the stock, trade, etc., of the Colony, when the purchase was made in behalf of those who came in the three first ships, viz: Mayflower, Fortune and Ann.

The first marriage of Gov. Prence was with Patience, daughter of Mr. William Brewster, the elder of the Plymouth church, who came in the Mayflower in 1620. It occurred August 5, 1624, and was the ninth marriage in Plymouth Colony, according to the accurate chronologist, the Rev. Thomas Prince. Miss Patience Brewster did not come over in the Mayflower, with her father, but deferred her coming till 1623, when with her sister, Fear, she arrived in the Ann. Mrs. Patience (Brewster) Prence, it is reported, died in 1634, leaving children. Among them it is certain, were Thomas, Rebecca, Mercy and Hannah. The governor again united in marriage with Mary Collier, according to the Old Colony records, April 1, 1635. It has been asserted that he was subsequently married, but there appears no conclusive proof of the fact. The assertion rests upon two significant declarations which are yet inexplicable. First, the declaration of Gov. Prence in 1662 and 1671 that Samuel Freeman of Eastham was his "beloved son-in-law," and secondly, upon the injunction of Captain Thomas Howes of Yarmouth, in 1676, upon going forth in the expedition to the Narraganset country to fight the Indians, to allow "Mother Prence to enjoy without molestation, during her natural life, the house she now lives in."

The births of the children of Gov. Prence, by his wives Patience and Mary, are not recorded either at Plymouth or Eastham. Besides those already mentioned, viz: Thomas, Rebecca, Mercy and Hannah, his children were (though we know not the order of their nativity), Jane, Mary, Judith, Sarah and Elizabeth. Thomas was born before 1627 and went to England early, where he died. He left a widow and a daughter, Susanah. Rebecca, also born before 1627, married Edmond Freeman, Jr., of Sandwich, April 22, 1646, who died soon after. Mercy, born about 1631, married John Freeman of Sandwich, Feb. 13, 1649-50, and settled at Eastham, where she died Sept. 28, 1711, aged 80 years. Hannah married first, Nat. Mayo of Eastham, Feb. 13, 1649-50; second, Captain Jonathan Sparrow of Eastham. Jane, born November, 1637, married Mark Snow of Eastham, Jan. 9, 1660; she died in Harwich, now Brewster, in 1712. Mary married John Tracy of Duxbury. Judith married Isaac Barker of Duxbury, Dec. 28, 1665. Sarah, born in Eastham about 1646, married Jeremiah Howes of Yarmouth and died, according to grave stone, in 1706, aged 60 years. Elizabeth married Arthur Howland, Jr., of Marshfield, a son of a Quaker, much against the feelings of the puritanical governor, Dec. 9, 1667.

Soon after the death of Gov. Prence, the widow removed to that part of Yarmouth now North Dennis, and occupied a house belonging wholly or in part to Captain Thomas Howes, brother of Jeremiah Howes, who married Sarah Prence. Here she died. The Yarmouth book of records has this entry respecting her death: "Mrs Mary Prence wife of the late Governor Thomas Prence, died upon the ninth day of December, 1695, and was buried upon the eleventh day of ye said 1695.' It is not known where she was interred; if at Yarmouth, doubtless in the old Howes Yard at North Dennis.

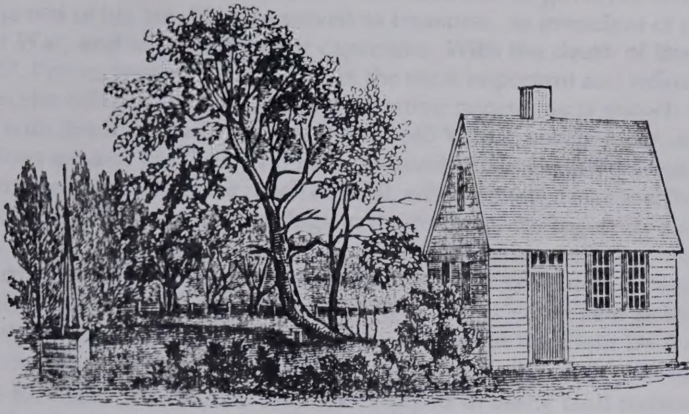
Gov. Prence's will bears date March 13th, 1673, and codicil March 28th, 1673. He appointed his wife, Mary, executrix, and desired that his brother, Thomas Clark, and Mr. Josiah Winslow be her advisers. To his wife Mary, he gave the profits of his part of the mill at Sauquatuckett, now West Brewster, with the land adjacent to it, which he desired at her death to go to his grandson, Theophilus Mayo, who was living with him. This, he said, he gave him for his encouragement to proceed in learning. He also gave him all his "books fit for him in learning." He enjoined him to "carry it well with his grandmother," and, in case he did so, to have a "bed." How dutiful he was to his aged grandparent, we have no means of knowing. He doubtless removed with her to Yarmouth. From what can now be gathered he did not survive her. His death, it is supposed, took place about 1678. He was the youngest son of Nathaniel and Hannah (Prence) Mayo, and it would seem, at the death of his father, was taken by the governor into his family. The governor also gave him one-half

(See over)

"Historical Collections of Every Town in Massachusetts"
by John Warner Barber

EASTHAM.

THE original Indian name of Eastham was *Nauset.* After being purchased from the natives, it was granted by the court to the settlers at Plymouth, in 1644. This included the present townships of Eastham, Wellfleet, and Orleans. Some of the principal settlers were Thomas Prince, John Doane, Nicholas Snow, Josias Cook, Richard Higgins, John Smalley, and Edward Bangs: these persons are said to have been among the most respectable inhabitants of Plymouth. The settlement commenced the year (1644) the grant was made, and was incorporated as a town in 1646. A church was gathered soon after their arrival, but the inhabitants were not sufficiently numerous to support a minister till 1672, when Rev. Samuel Treat, of Milford, Con. was ordained.



Ancient Pear Tree in Eastham.

The above is a representation of an ancient pear tree, on the land now owned by Mr. Nathan Kenny, twenty-one miles from Barnstable court-house. It was brought from England by Thomas Prince, for many years governor of Plymouth colony. Governor Prince removed from Duxbury to Eastham in 1640 or 1645, and, leaving Eastham, returned to Plymouth in 1665, so that this tree, planted by him, is now probably about two hundred years old. It is still in a vigorous state. The fruit is small, but excellent; and it is stated that it yields annually, upon an average, fifteen bushels of fruit. Governor Prince's house stood about thirty or forty rods eastward of this place. Mr. Treat, the first minister, lived about one fourth of a mile to the north-east. The house seen in the engraving stands on the site formerly occupied as a garrison house.

This town is situated on a narrow part of the peninsula of Cape Cod, and the soil, for the most part, is but a barren waste of sand. In an account given of the town in 1802, it is stated, "On the west side, a beach extends to Great Pond, where it stretches

across the township almost to Town Cove. This barren tract, which does not now contain a particle of vegetable mould, formerly produced wheat. The soil, however, was light. The sand, in some places, lodging against the beach grass, has been raised into hills fifty feet high, where twenty-five years ago no hills existed. In others, it has filled up small valleys and swamps. Where a strong-rooted bush stood, the appearance is singular: a mass of earth and sand adheres to it, resembling a small tower. In several places, rocks which were formerly covered with soil are disclosed, and, being lashed by the sand, driven against them by the wind, look as if they were recently dug from a quarry." There are two churches, one Methodist and one Congregational. Population 1,059. Distance, twenty-three miles north-easterly from Barnstable, and, in a straight line, sixty-eight miles from Boston. In 1837, there were fifty-four establishments for the manufacture of salt, which produced 22,370 bushels; thirteen vessels employed in the cod and mackerel fishery; 1,200 quintals of cod-fish and 4,550 barrels of mackerel were caught.

Mr. Treat, the first minister in this town, was distinguished for his evangelical zeal and labors, not only among his own people, but also among the Indians in this vicinity; and he was the instrument of converting many of them to the Christian faith. He learnt their language, and once a month preached in their villages, visited them at their wigwams, and, by his kindness and affability, won their affections: they venerated him as their pastor, and loved him as their father. In 1693, Mr. Treat states that there were four Indian villages in the township under his care. These Indians had four teachers of their own choice and four schoolmasters. They also had of their own people six magistrates, who regulated their civil affairs; they held stated courts and punished criminals. There were five hundred adult persons in the villages, all of whom attended public worship. But notwithstanding every exertion made for the benefit of the Indians, they wasted away by fatal diseases and other causes, so that in 1764 they were reduced to four individuals only. Mr. Treat, having passed near half a century of most active labor, died soon after the remarkable storm, distinguished in the annals of New England by the name of the *Great Snow*, in February, 1717. The wind blew with violence; and whilst the grounds about his house were left entirely bare, the snow was heaped up in the road to an uncommon height. It was in vain to attempt making a path. His body was therefore kept several days, till an arch could be dug, through which he was borne to the grave; the Indians, at their earnest request, being permitted in turn to carry the corpse, and thus to pay the last tribute of respect to the remains of their beloved pastor. The second minister of Eastham was the Rev. Samuel Osborn, who was educated at the University of Dublin, and ordained here in 1718; the next year, the church being divided into two, Mr. Osborn removed into the south part of the township, and Rev. Benjamin Webb was ordained pastor of

"Plymouth Colony - Its History + Its People 1620-1691" by Eugene A Stratton (1986) pages 340-1

PRENCE, THOMAS – Thomas Prence was born ca. 1600, for he was in his seventy-third year at his death on 29 March 1673 (*PCR* 8:34). His father was Thomas Prence (or Prince – the Plymouth man always spelled it Prence) who had lived at Lechlade, Gloucestershire, but was a carriage maker of All Hallows Barking, London, when he made his will 31 July 1639 and named his "son Thomas Prence now remayninge in New England" (*Dawes-Gates* 2:683, gives an excellent documented account of Prence's life). Prence arrived at Plymouth Colony in 1621 on the *Fortune*, and from the beginning seemed to have taken a leading role in Plymouth affairs. Of the eight Plymouth Undertakers, who seemed to be the most important men in the colony in 1627, Prence was the only one who had not arrived on the *Mayflower*. He became governor in 1634, and was elected an Assistant in 1635, and from then on he was either an Assistant or governor every year for the rest of his life. He also served as treasurer, as president of the Council of War, and in various other capacities. With the death of Bradford in 1657, Prence became without doubt the most important and influential man in the colony. He was of a conservative nature, as is shown by his siding with Bradford and Winslow in the 1645 Vassall controversy, and by his actions against the Quakers. He was involved in several law suits which were decided in his favor, such as 1650, when Strong Furnell of Boston submitted a written humble apology to the court for having evilly slandered Mr. Prence after the latter sued him for £200 damage (*PCR* 2:152). In 1665 as compensation for having required Prence, as governor, to reside in Plymouth, the court ordered that he would be paid £50 per year as long as he remained governor, and he was given a house in the Plain Dealing area of Plymouth as a residence (in 1668, at his request, the court sold him that house for £150) (*PCR* 4:108, 184). He engaged in many land transactions, and he died a wealthy man, leaving a personal estate in excess of £400 and some eleven tracts of land, at least two of them containing 100 acres each (*MD* 3:206).

He married (1) Patience Brewster, daughter of Elder Brewster on 5 August 1624 (2) on 1 April 1635 Mary Collier, daughter of William Collier; (3) between 1662 and 1668 Apphia (Quicke) Freeman; and (4) before 1 August 1668 Mary (__________) Howes, widow of Thomas Howes (Ella Florence Elliot, "Gov. Thomas Prence's Widow Mary, Formerly the Widow of Thomas Howes, and the Inventory of Her Estate," *MD* 6:230; *Dawes-Gates* 2:692 gives other dates for (3) and (4) and supplies the name Quicke). His children by Patience Brewster were Rebecca, who married Edmond Freeman; Mercy, who married John Freeman; Hannah, who married (1) Nathaniel Mayo and (2) Jonathan Sparrow; and Thomas, who died before 13 March 1672/73 in England. His children by Mary Collier were Jane, who married Mark Snow as his second wife; Mary, who married John Tracy; Sarah, who married Jeremiah Howes; Elizabeth, who married Arthur Howland; and Judith, who married (1) Isaac Barker and (2) William Tubbs (*Dawes-Gates* 2:693). In his will dated 13 March 1672/73, proved 5 June 1673, he named his wife Mary; his seven surviving daughters, Jane, the wife of Mark Snow; Mary Tracy; Sarah Howes; Elizabeth Howland; Judith Barker; Hannah; and Mercy; his grandson Theophilus Mayo; his granddaughter Susanna Prence, the daughter of his deceased son Thomas; his son John Freeman; Lydia Sturtevant; and his brother Thomas Clarke (*MD* 3:203). His chagrin over Arthur Howland's eventually successful suit for the hand of his daughter Elizabeth is related in the text, and he probably was not happy over the marriage of two of his daughters to sons of Edmond Freeman. The mention in his will of his deceased son Thomas's daughter Susanna Prence would indicate that he died without surviving male issue in the Prence line.

Mary Walton Ferris makes the point in *Dawes-Gates* 2:686-87 that his reputation for intolerance, particularly toward the Quakers, has clouded over his extensive service to the colony. She especially notes that he presided over the court in the very sane and reasonable handling of Plymouth's first witchcraft trial in 1661; that he dealt in a humane way with the Indians, and missionary Thomas Mayhew wrote of his "gentle and kind dealing" with them (Prence also presided over the court as governor in 1638 when the momentous decision was made to execute the white men who had murdered an Indian); that he showed wisdom in 1637 when he negotiated with the Massachusetts men who unjustly demanded much of the land on the Connecticut River that Plymouth had purchased from the Indians; and that he advocated and brought about a free school system in the colony.

Page 157 - Re: Power of high officials in Plymouth Colony

It has already been related how the grand jury in 1638/39 dared to ask by what authority the governor and Assistants held the power to dispose of lands. In most countries of this time such effrontery could have led to serious punishment, but in Plymouth it led to the surrender by the governor and Assistants of their power to make land grants. In some cases in Plymouth it can be deduced that Bradford and other high officials were not above the law by what did not happen rather than what did. In October 1636 Bradford went to court to charge four men with trespass; that he won his case is not so important as the fact that he had to go to the court in the first place, for he was not powerful enough on his own to get his way. In 1647 Thomas Prence won a case of trespass against Edward Holman and Nicholas Hodges, and in 1650 Prence won a case of slander with the defendant, Strong Furnill, making a public apology, but Prence was obviously not powerful enough by himself to get such an apology – he had to rely on the law to do it.[4]

- cont'd over -

p 307

HONEYWELL, WILLIAM—On 25 July 1633 William Honeywell contracted to serve Thomas Prence as an apprentice for seven years, at the end of which time Prence would give him twenty-five acres of unmanured land and twelve bushels of corn (*PCR* 1:16). Though this time was extended because Honeywell at various times absented himself from service, Prence agreed on the last day of February 1639/40 to release him from the contract on consideration of his working some acres Prence owned in return for half the crop. Honeywell would stay with Thomas Atkinson, whom Prence would pay for room and board (*PCR* 1:139-40). On 1 June 1641 Honeywell was granted the land due him for his service (*PCR* 2:16). On 6 March 1665/66 William Honeywell was tried on suspicion of buggery with a beast, but denied it, and there being insufficient evidence, he was freed (*PCR* 4:116). No record has been found of his having a wife or children in Plymouth Colony.

"Cape Cod, Its People & Their History"
by Henry C Kittredge

exasperating in their 'holier than thou' attitude. Morton says truly that 'they placed their justification upon their patience and suffering for their opinions, and on their righteous life and retired demurity, and affected singularity both in word and gesture.' Furthermore, contempt of court was quite as often the cause of their being punished as their 'corrupt and damnable doctrines.' Governors and magistrates were to them no more than farmers or tanners. Nor did the Quakers always adhere to that 'retired demurity' of life on which they so much prided themselves. Robert Harper undoubtedly got what he deserved when he was whipped for 'intolerably insolent conduct at Barnstable in railing against Mr. Wally and at Sandwich against Mr. Wiswall.' Even to-day there would be a sensation if a high official were called in public 'an impudent man and a pitiful governor.' Yet that is the language that a Sandwich Quaker used toward his chief magistrate; and he went on to taunt the Governor, asking him 'why he did not send him to gaol since his back had long itched to be whipped.' But the limit in abusive language was reached when Humphrey Norton, addressing Governor Prince before the assembled Court, said, 'Thomas, thou liest; Prince, thou art a malicious man.' And again, 'Thy clamorous tongue I regard no more than the dust under my feet.' 'Thou art like a scolding woman.' Imprisonment or whipping for such silly insolence was just enough.

By quick stages the persecution of Quakers began to cease. They first appeared on the Cape about 1656. King Charles's letter of 1661, enjoining all Colonial Governors to cease persecuting them, was followed three years later by a commission which arrived in New England in response to repeated Quaker appeals, to look the situation over, try certain cases, and recommend toleration. The commissioners were respectfully greeted by representatives from Plymouth; the King's men felt no real enthusiasm about the Quaker question; the Plymouth men felt no interest in enlightening them. They talked pleasantly but vaguely; the commissioners began to sigh for the fleshpots of London, and soon sailed back home to the satisfaction of every one but the Quakers. It cannot be asserted, therefore, that either the King's letter or his commission put an end to the persecutions, but they undoubtedly gave the authorities pause.

If the Quakers had the royal ear, it might be as well to walk circumspectly. The death of Governor Prince in 1673 and the succession of Josiah Winslow was another step toward peace, for Winslow was far more tolerant than his predecessor. From this date the policy of leniency grew, in spite of Hinckley's uncompromising attitude, until, in 1717, we find Yarmouth voting in a town meeting that no Quaker need contribute to the support of the Orthodox minister.

Why, it may be asked, was the Court and not the Church the power that punished the Quakers? The answer is twofold. In the first place, Quaker demonstrations were almost always breaches of the peace rather than heresy, and as such they came under the jurisdiction of the Court. In the second place, the worst penalty the Church could inflict was excommunication, which was no punishment at all to the Friends. Furthermore, for a long time there was almost no distinction between the Church and the civil government — certainly nothing like the gulf that separates them to-day. And this was natural, for the Bible in the minds of the Pilgrims was an adequate source of government; they consulted the Mosaic Law, it will be remembered, for the answers to knotty questions in jurisprudence. More often than not new settlements were made by churches, not by scattered individuals. It was Lothrop's church that came with him and settled Barnstable; it was half the Plymouth church that made the town of Eastham. Membership in the church was a requisite for civil distinction and even for the right to vote. The personnel of the parish and of the civil government was identical. It is not surprising, therefore, that for many years parish business was transacted in town meetings. In 1703, when Falmouth decided to dispense with the preaching of Mr. Shiverick, the action was taken in a town meeting because every man at the meeting was necessarily a member of the church. Another Falmouth minister, Mr. Isaiah Mann, died in 1789, and the town voted a supply of wood and rye for his widow. All the early town records are full of ministers' salaries and other church affairs.

The Church, nevertheless, maintained disciplinary powers quite distinct from the Court and held the right to excommunicate brethren who refused to follow what it decreed even

R 929.72 F88

20. Mercy Southworth, *b.* 1638, *m.* May 12, 1658, Deacon Samuel Freeman, *b.* May 11, 1638, at Watertown, Massachusetts, *d.* at Eastham November 25, 1712, and had:

21. Constant Freeman, *b.* at Eastham, Massachusetts, March 31, 1669, *d.* at Truro June 8, 1745, where he settled in 1705, and was treasurer of the town, August 1, 1709, and in 1715 chosen its representative at the general court, and was commander of the military company. He *m.* October 11, 1694, Jane, *b.* December 6, 1675, *d.* September 1, 1729, daughter of Rev. Samuel Treat, of Eastham, 1648–1716, son of Robert Treat, governor of Connecticut, 1686, *d.* at Milford, Connecticut, 1710, and his wife, Jane Tapp, and had:

bro. of Capt Samuel Freeman III

22. Robert Freeman, *b.* August 12, 1696, *d.* at Pomfret, Connecticut, September 27, 1755. He *m.* April 5, 1722, at Eastham, Mary, *b.* February 1, 1695–6, *d.* September 25, 1755, daughter of Elisha Paine, *d.* at Canterbury, Connecticut, February 7, 1735, son of Thomas Paine, 1611–1706, and Mary, daughter of Nicholas Snow and Constance, daughter of Stephen Hopkins, who was a passenger in the *Mayflower*, and had:

bro. of Deacon John Paine + uncle of Lt Samuel Freeman

thus he was cousin to both the Freeman & the Paines (two lines) America

23. Robert Freeman, *b.* December 31, 1727, at Truro, *d.* at Amenia, Dutchess County, New York, September 29, 1798. He served in the Revolution as captain and major in Colonel Sutherland's regiment, New York Line. He had by his wife Anna, *d.* September 4, 1809, whose surname is unknown:

24. John Freeman, *b.* 1754, in the Amenia precinct, New York, *d.* at Amenia, November 8, 1815. He was a soldier in the Revolution and the War of 1812, and *m.* about 1780, Sybil, born July 29, 1753, *d.* July 18, 1812, daughter and co-heiress of Edward Lewis, of Ashford, Connecticut, and had:

Lt Samuel Freeman's wife Mary Chase, had Chase cousins in Ashford CT.

25. Susan Freeman, *b.* about 1783, *d.* May 21, 1827, at Schodack, New York, who *m.* Leonard Rowe, *b.* July 27,

The Freeman/Ellis Family
of
Sturbridge, Massachusetts

for better understanding of this report about our progenitors:

Samuel and Mary Freeman
Samuel and Abigail Ellis
& their children
Jedediah and Martha Ellis
their grand-daughter
Keziah Ellis
who married
Levi Dodge

we start with the place they all lived:

STURBRIDGE.

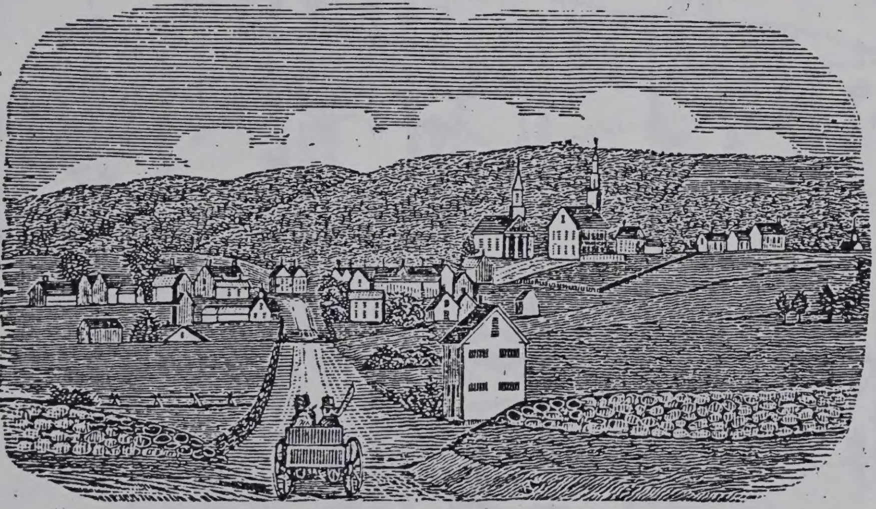
The land of this town was originally granted, in 1729, to several petitioners of Medfield, and many of the first settlers were from that town, and hence the place was called New Medfield, until its incorporation in 1738, when it received the name of Sturbridge. The following, respecting the first settlers, is from Rev. Joseph S. Clark's Historical Sketch of Sturbridge, published in 1838:

> "Henry Fiske, one of the original proprietors. and his brother Daniel. pitched their tent near the top of the hill which has ever since borne their name. They had been at work for some time without knowing which way they must look for their nearest neighbor, or whether indeed they had a neighbor nearer than one of the adjacent towns. At length on a clear afternoon they heard the sound of an axe far off in a southerly direction, and went in pursuit of it. The individual whose solitary axe they heard had also been attracted by the sound of theirs, and was advancing towards them on the same errand. They came in sight of one another, on opposite sides of the Quinebaug river. By felling two trees into the stream, one from each bank, a bridge was constructed on which they were able to meet and exchange salutations. The unknown man of the axe was found to be James Denison, one of the proprietors, who, in the absence of a better home, had taken lodgings in a *cave*, which is still to be seen not far from Westvill. In that lonely den he continued his abode, it is said, till a neighboring wolf, who probably had a prior claim to the premises, signified a wish to take possession, when Mr. Denison peaceably withdrew and built him a house of his own.
>
> "For some time after the work of clearing the forest had been undertaken, no one had ventured to spend the *winter* in a place so desolate and distant from the track of man. The proprietors, or whomsoever they employed, usually came in the spring, and returned to their respective towns in the autumn. Joseph Smith, with no other companion than his faithful dog, was the first who encountered the rigors of winter in Sturbridge. Alexander Selkirk was not more secluded from human society on the island of Juan Fernandez, than Mr. Smith was in this place during four months, having neither seen nor heard from a human being in all that time. The cellar which protected his frugal store from the frosts of that dreary winter may still be seen on the farm of Jabez Harding, Esq., not far from an aged pear-tree, which Mr. Smith is said to have planted soon after he came."

The proprietors built a meeting-house, which was consecrated, in 1733, by Rev. Joseph Baxter, of Medfield. In 1736 the Rev. Caleb Rice was ordained pastor. About 1747, a number of his church, conceiving they had received *new light*, different from the rest of the people, separated from him. Mr. Rice died in 1759. He was succeeded by Rev. Joshua Paine, who was ordained in 1761. Rev. Otis Lane, the next minister, was ordained in 1801, and was succeeded by Rev. Alvan Bond, in 1819. Rev. Joseph S. Clark succeeded Mr. Bond in 1831. The persons who separated from Mr. Rice's

church formed themselves into a Baptist church about 1750. The first meeting-house of this society was built on Fisk's Hill, in 1784. Rev. William Ewing was their first minister. Rev. Jordan Dodge was ordained their pastor in 1784, and was dismissed in 1788. The next minister, Rev. Zenas L. Leonard, was ordained in 1796. His successor, Rev. Addison Parker, was installed in 1833. Rev. Isaac Merriam and Rev. O. O. Stearns have been the succeeding pastors.

The central village lies in a valley between two hills, which are about two miles apart. The soil in this valley is fertile. The village consists of about 30 dwelling-houses, a Congregational and Baptist church. The engraving shows the appearance of the village as it appears when seen from the north-east, upon the Charlton road. Population, 2,004. Distance, 18 miles from Worcester, and 58 from Boston. The Quinebaug has its source in this town; it originates from near Lead-mine pond, takes a circuitous course into Union, Holland, Brimfield, and back into Sturbridge. Upon this stream are considerable tracts of interval and meadow lands. There are a number of ponds in this town, near one of which, called Lead-mine pond, a number of adventurers from Europe, many years since, dug deep for ore, a considerable quantity of which they carried with them to England. They never, however, returned.

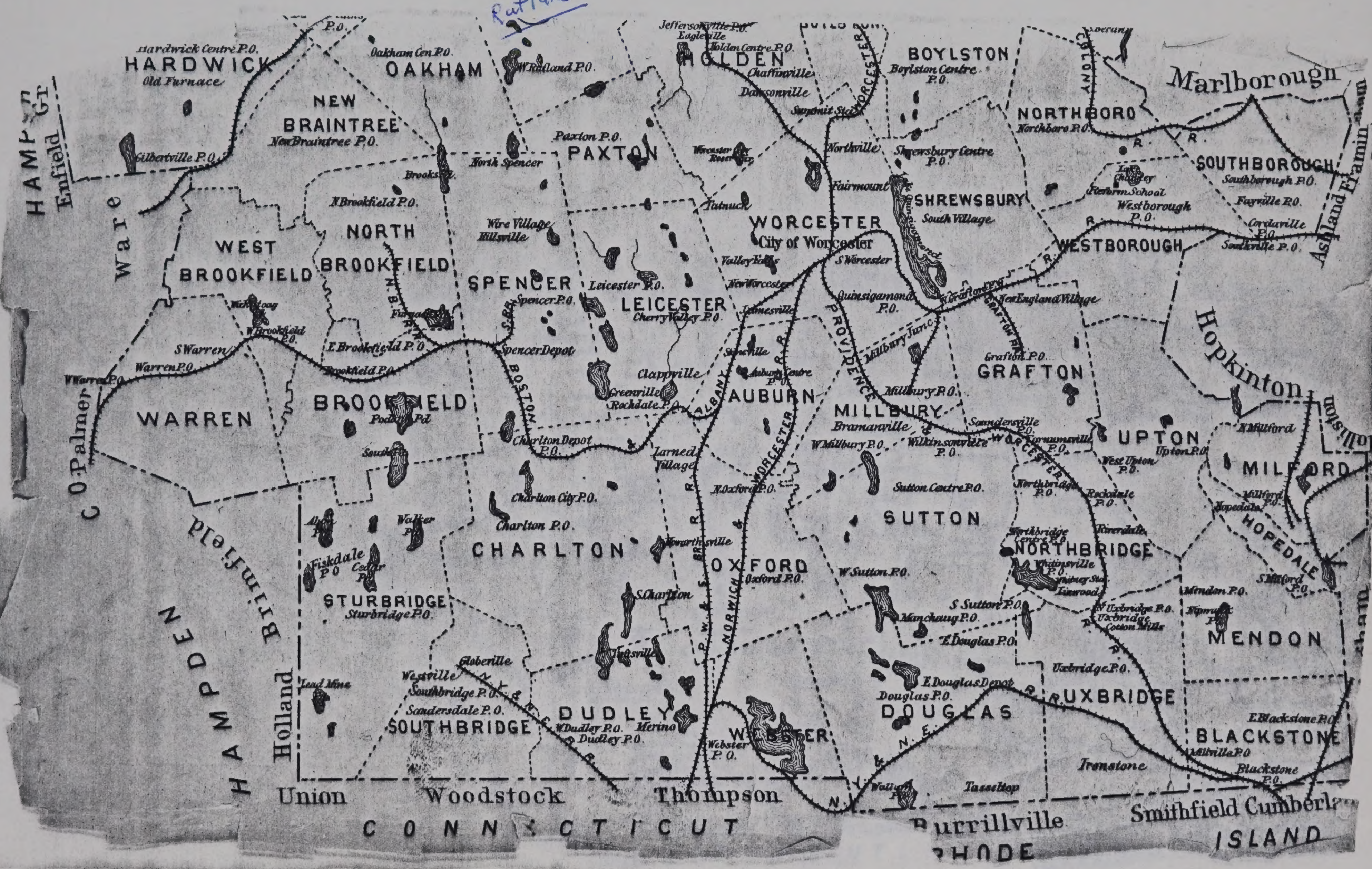


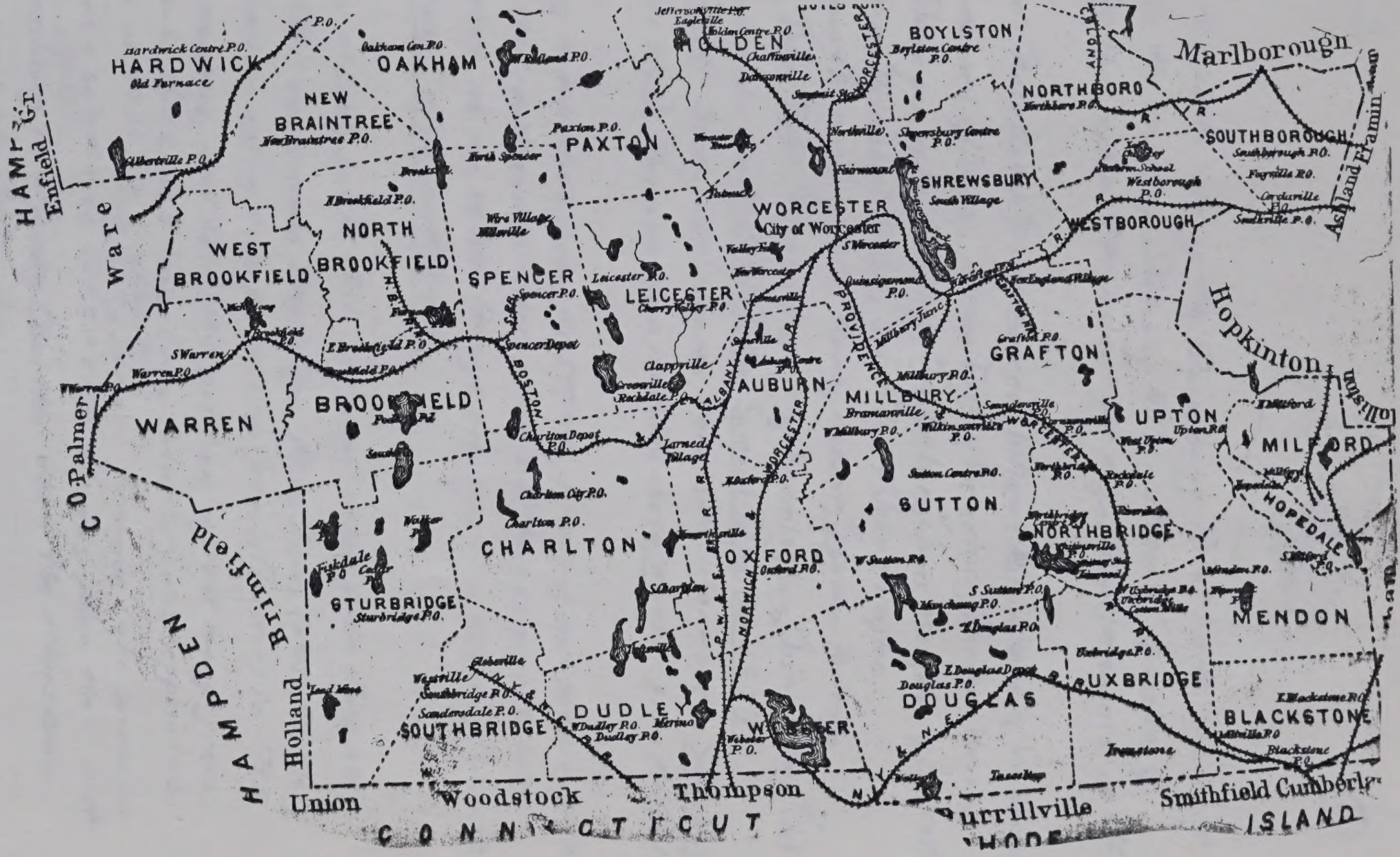
View of the central village in Sturbridge.

In 1837 there were 6 cotton mills, 8,664 spindles; 829,749 yards of cotton goods were manufactured; value, $117,134; males employed, 71; females, 117; there were manufactured 2,220 pairs of boots, and 12,660 pairs of shoes; value, $18,306 40; males employed, 35; females, 15; value of pocket rifles manufactured, $20,275; hands employed, 36.

In the southern part of the township is an extensive tract of broken land, called Breakneck, near which the Breakneck pond in Union, Conn., takes its rise. A ledge of rocks in this tract extends about a mile, which, in some places, is 100 feet perpendicular. This ledge has been a great place for rattlesnakes. It is stated that an old lady, the wife of an extensive farmer by the name of Howard, living in this vicinity, after her dairy business was done in the morning, in the Month of May, used to go out and kill rattlesnakes; and that she had been known to have killed as many as 16 in one morning. These snakes, some years ago, were made considerable use of for medicinal purposes; the oil as a remedy for the quinsy and sprains, the skin for rheumatism and head-aches; and the gall was also used in medicinal preparations. They were worth from about 50 to 75 cents per head, and it was for the profit of the business that it was followed by the old lady. The only instance known of any person being bit here by a rattlesnake was that of a lad—his father filled his mouth with tobacco juice and sucked out the poison, so that the effects of the bite were scarcely perceptible. Black snakes, upwards of nine feet in length, have been killed in the Breakneck region.

The Southern Half of Worcester Co., MA


Rutland
HARDWICK
Hardwick Centre P.O.
Old Furnace
Gilbertville P.O.
OAKHAM
Oakham Cen P.O.
W Rutland P.O.
NEW BRAINTREE
New Braintree P.O.
HOLDEN
Jeffersonville P.O.
Eagleville
Holden Centre P.O.
Chaffinville
Dawsonville
Summit Sta.
BOYLSTON
Boylston Centre P.O.
Marlborough
NORTHBORO
Northboro P.O.
SOUTHBOROUGH
Southborough P.O.
Fayville P.O.
Cordaville P.O.
Southville P.O.
Ashland
Framingham
HAMPDEN
Enfield
Ware
WEST BROOKFIELD
NORTH BROOKFIELD
N Brookfield P.O.
Brooks Pd
North Spencer
PAXTON
Paxton P.O.
Worcester Reservoir
Northville
Shrewsbury Centre P.O.
SHREWSBURY
South Village
Fairmount
Tatnuck
WORCESTER
City of Worcester
Valley Falls
New Worcester
S Worcester
Quinsigamond P.O.
WESTBOROUGH
Westborough P.O.
Reform School
Lake Chauncy
New England Village
Grafton P.O.
Wire Village
Hillsville
SPENCER
Spencer P.O.
Spencer Depot
LEICESTER
Leicester P.O.
Cherry Valley P.O.
Jamesville
Wickaboag
W Brookfield P.O.
S Warren
Warren P.O.
W Warren P.O.
E Brookfield P.O.
Brookfield P.O.
Clappville
Greenville
Rochdale P.O.
Stoneville
Auburn Centre P.O.
AUBURN
Millbury Junc.
Millbury P.O.
MILLBURY
Bramanville
GRAFTON
Hopkinton
Holliston
Palmer
CO
WARREN
BROOKFIELD
Podunk Pd
South Pd
Charlton Depot P.O.
Larned Village
W Millbury P.O.
Wilkinsonville P.O.
Saundersville
Farnumsville P.O.
UPTON
Upton P.O.
West Upton P.O.
N Milford
MILFORD
Milford P.O.
Hopedale
HOPEDALE
Brimfield
N Oxford P.O.
Sutton Centre P.O.
Northbridge P.O.
Rockdale P.O.
Charlton City P.O.
Charlton P.O.
SUTTON
Riverdale
CHARLTON
Northbridge Centre P.O.
NORTHBRIDGE
Whitinsville P.O.
Whitney Sta.
Linwood
Fiskdale P.O.
Walker Pd
Cedar Pd
Albion Pd
N Oxford
OXFORD
Oxford P.O.
W Sutton P.O.
S Milford P.O.
STURBRIDGE
Sturbridge P.O.
S Charlton
S Sutton P.O.
Manchaug P.O.
E Douglas P.O.
N Uxbridge P.O.
Uxbridge Cotton Mills
Mendon P.O.
Nipmuck Pd
MENDON
Globeville
Westville
Southbridge P.O.
Sandersdale P.O.
SOUTHBRIDGE
Lead Mine
DUDLEY
W Dudley P.O.
Dudley P.O.
Merino
Webster P.O.
WEBSTER
E Douglas Depot
Douglas P.O.
DOUGLAS
Uxbridge P.O.
UXBRIDGE
E Blackstone P.O.
BLACKSTONE
Millville P.O.
Blackstone P.O.
Ironstone
Tasseltop
Wallum Pd
Holland
Union
Woodstock
Thompson
CONNECTICUT
Burrillville
RHODE ISLAND
Smithfield
Cumberland
BOSTON
ALBANY
WORCESTER
PROVIDENCE
NORWICH &
P. W. & S. R. R.
N.Y. & N.E. R.R.
COLONY
GRAFTON R.R.
N.B. R.R.
S.R.R.
R.R.


HARDWICK
Hardwick Centre P.O.
Old Furnace
Gilbertville P.O.
OAKHAM
Oakham Cen. P.O.
NEW BRAINTREE
New Braintree P.O.
HOLDEN
Holden Centre P.O.
Jeffersonville P.O.
Eagleville
Chaffinville
Dawsonville
BOYLSTON
Boylston Centre P.O.
Marlborough
NORTHBORO
Northboro P.O.
SOUTHBOROUGH
Southborough P.O.
Fayville P.O.
Cordaville P.O.
Southville P.O.
Ashland
Framin
HAMP
Enfield
Ware
WEST BROOKFIELD
NORTH BROOKFIELD
E. Brookfield P.O.
SPENCER
Spencer P.O.
Spencer Depot
North Spencer
Wire Village
Hillsville
PAXTON
Paxton P.O.
LEICESTER
Leicester P.O.
Cherry Valley P.O.
WORCESTER
City of Worcester
Northville
Fairmount
S. Worcester
Valley Falls
New Worcester
Quinsigamond P.O.
SHREWSBURY
Shrewsbury Centre P.O.
South Village
WESTBOROUGH
Westborough P.O.
Lyman School
New England Village
Millbury Junc.
GRAFTON
Grafton P.O.
Hopkinton
S. Warren
Warren P.O.
W. Warren P.O.
WARREN
Palmer
BROOKFIELD
Podunk
Clappville
Greenville
Rochdale P.O.
AUBURN
Auburn Centre P.O.
MILLBURY
Millbury P.O.
Bramanville
Wilkinsonville P.O.
W. Millbury P.O.
UPTON
Upton P.O.
West Upton P.O.
MILFORD
E. Milford
HOPEDALE
Charlton Depot P.O.
Larned Village
Charlton City P.O.
Charlton P.O.
CHARLTON
N. Oxford P.O.
Oxford P.O.
OXFORD
SUTTON
Sutton Centre P.O.
W. Sutton P.O.
S. Sutton P.O.
Manchaug P.O.
E. Douglas P.O.
E. Douglas Depot
Douglas P.O.
DOUGLAS
NORTHBRIDGE
Whitinsville
Rockdale P.O.
Uxbridge P.O.
UXBRIDGE
MENDON
Mendon P.O.
BLACKSTONE
E. Blackstone P.O.
Millville P.O.
Blackstone P.O.
Ironstone
Fiskdale P.O.
STURBRIDGE
Sturbridge P.O.
Globeville
Westville
Southbridge P.O.
Sandersdale P.O.
SOUTHBRIDGE
DUDLEY
W. Dudley P.O.
Dudley P.O.
Merino
WEBSTER
Webster P.O.
Brimfield
Holland
HAMPDEN
CO.
Union
Woodstock
Thompson
Burrillville
Smithfield
Cumberland
CONNECTICUT
RHODE ISLAND
BOSTON
ALBANY
PROVIDENCE
WORCESTER
NORWICH
N.Y. & N.E.

out of date

The first lots were on the north side of the Quinebaug River and the next set of lots south of the river, to the west of Shumway Hills. A second division of land occurred in 1733, and most of the rest in 1740 except for a few small remnants in 1761.

see alpha list

The Association members were: Meletiah + Ezra Bourne; William + Nahum Ward of Southborough, Shubael Gordon, Thos + Ebenezer Learned of Oxford, Nathan Fisk of Watertown, Gershom Keyes of Boston, Zerobabel Eager, John Shearman of Marlborough, Jos. Baker, Jonas Houghton of Lancaster, Thos + Moses + Jonas Gleason, Joshua + Nathaniel Morse, Jos. + Wm. + John Plimpton, Nathaniel Smith of Dedham, Solomon + Ezra + Jas. Clark, Timothy Hamant, Ephraim Partridge, Abraham + Moses + Ichabod Harding, Peter Balch, Francis Moquet of Framingham, Josiah Cheney, John Dwight, Jonathan Boyden, James Davison, Jos. Marsh, Josiah Ellis, Samuel Ellis, David Ellis, Henry Adams; and minister's right. Seven extra shares were sold later - one to Seth Wight for 75 pounds (a heap of money in those days). Where no city is indicated above, member from Medfield.

At least 12 of the 44 members named above came as settlers. A very great number of them, esp. the Medfield ones, sent their children + grandchildren. Others sold their property to settlers. Families living in Sturbridge to whom we are related (through previous generations) include Adams, Chubb, Ellis, Freeman, Smith, ~~and Wight~~

The town was called Dummer at first, but in 1731 so many came from Medfield it became New Medfield. In 1738 it was renamed Sturbridge. Moses Marcy (whose dtr Mary married Jared Freeman in 1774) became acting town proprietor (administrator) in 1735 by power of attorney from the members, and held the position a great many years. Abraham Harding was Town Clerk. Rev. Caleb Rice (wife Priscilla) was appointed first minister of the church in 1736. Our (ancestor) (Lt) Samuel Freeman (who served in the French + Indian Wars) was a selectman 1759 + 1769. He was older than most of the others; evidently he was (already) living in adjoining Charlton when the others came. Part of Charlton was later annexed into Sturbridge.

To illustrate ~~of~~ how young and vigorous most of ~~the settlers~~ of the Fellows were, 40 years later, (in ~~By~~ 1774, on the eve of the Revolutionary War, only 10 of the original family heads had passed away, including Lt Samuel Freeman, and minister (Rev.) Caleb Rice. ~~Most of the settlers were young and vigorous.~~ On 20 Jan 1775 (Mass) General Congress selected a Committee of Inspection whose duty was to prepare the populace for a military alarm, and protect the community and country in case of attack, seeing to it that the men had arms. Seven local men were appointed inspectors, including Benjamin Freeman (the late Samuel's son). By 1777 he was Lieutenant and finally a Colonel in the Revolutionary War. ~~His brother~~ Son Comfort Freeman, was a Captain. Samuel Ellis, Jr., was also a Captain. (our ancestor).

Sturbridge - Cont'd

[illegible]

The first lots were on the north side of the Quinebaug River and the next set of lots south of the river, to the east of [illegible] hills. [illegible] division of land occurred in 1733 and most of the rest in 1740 [illegible] in 1741.

The following proprietors were: Nathaniel [illegible], William [illegible], [illegible] Learned of Oxford, Nathan Fisk of Watertown, [illegible] of Marlborough, [illegible]
Nathaniel Smith of Sutton, [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] Samuel [illegible]
Henry [illegible], and [illegible]
[illegible]

At least [illegible] of the [illegible] named above came as settlers. Many [illegible] of the [illegible] and their children [illegible]
[illegible] Sturbridge [illegible]
[illegible] Smith [illegible]

The [illegible] 1731 [illegible] came from [illegible]
[illegible] Sturbridge [illegible]
[illegible] in 1733
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] 1736 [illegible] Samuel Freeman [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] Sturbridge.

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] Samuel Freeman [illegible]
[illegible] 1738 [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
By 1777 [illegible]
[illegible] Freeman [illegible] Samuel [illegible]
[illegible]).